

SELECT ENGLISH WORKS

OF

JOHN WYCLIF

EDITED FROM ORIGINAL MSS.

BY

THOMAS ARNOLD, M.A.

OF UNIVERSITY COLLEGE, OXFORD

VOL. I

*SERMONS ON THE GOSPELS*

*FOR*

*SUNDAYS AND FESTIVALS*

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD  
LIBRARY

Ⓔxford

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

M DCCC LXIX

[*All rights reserved*]

## INTRODUCTION.

THE present edition of selected works of John Wyclif, English and Latin, was undertaken by the Delegates of the University Press at the earnest instance of the late Canon Shirley, who devoted the best part of ten years of a life, alas! too short, to the study of the works and the age of the English reformer.

At a meeting of the Delegates of the Press, held on the 23rd of March, 1866, a resolution was passed, and recorded in a minute, of which the material portion is as follows:—

‘Dr. Shirley’s proposal to prepare for publication selected English works of Wyclif in three volumes 8vo . . . . was accepted; and he was authorized to negotiate with Mr. T. Arnold . . . . for the editing of the same under his own superintendence.’

Dr. Shirley intended, as general Editor, to have prefixed to the works an elaborate Introduction, in which he would have endeavoured to fix the exact theological position of the writer in reference both to his own and to later times, besides probably settling, so far as the means at our disposal allow, the chronology and authenticity of the immense mass of writings ascribed to Wyclif,—a subject which Bale left in utter confusion, and which Lewis has done very little to elucidate. Such minor matters as the critical collation of MSS., the preparation of a text for the press based on such collation, the verification of references, and the illustration of the text by occasional notes, he desired to commit to the hands of an assistant or assistants; and it was thus that he asked me to take a share

WYCLIF.

b

in the work. I gladly consented,—having indeed already formed the opinion independently, after reading the *Fasciculi Zizaniorum* and Dr. Shirley's admirable Introduction to that strange miscellany,—that the principal works of the reformer, particularly his English works, ought long ere this to have been given to the public. Before, however, any material step had been taken towards the execution of his plans, this good man and ripe scholar was cut off by death. A greater share of the responsibility of the edition has, in consequence, been thrown upon me than was originally intended, or than, to say the truth, I feel myself quite competent to meet. I have however spared no pains to give to the reader a faithful and readable copy of those of the original works, which it has been resolved to print, and for this purpose I have collated, in whole or in part, a number of other MSS., preserved in various libraries, with the excellent Bodleian Codex, upon which the text of the following Sermons is based. I have also entered in the following pages, and shall enter more at length in the Introduction to the third volume, on the critical questions relating to the authenticity of the various works ascribed to Wyclif, so far as the discussion is necessary in order to justify the selection of his writings which has been made.

I desire to take this early opportunity of acknowledging the great and invaluable assistance that I have received in the task of editing from Professor Stubbs, whose learning and judgment, always most kindly and freely imparted, have signally lightened my labours, often directed me into the true path of investigation, and kept me from falling into many errors.

Wyclif wrote both in Latin and English; but his Latin works are far the most numerous and the most voluminous of the two. Ninety-six Latin works are enumerated in Dr. Shirley's *Catalogue*<sup>a</sup>, and only sixty-five English. It is proposed in the following remarks to give some account of the English writings, to show what has been already done towards making them known, and to explain the grounds on which the selection resolved upon in the present work has been made.

<sup>a</sup> *Catalogue of the Original Works of John Wyclif.* Oxford, 1865.

ENGLISH WRITINGS.—Of the sixty-five English works included in the *Catalogue*, there are a few which I have not yet had an opportunity to examine. The most important of these are Nos. 61 and 62, *De Officio Pastoralis* and *De Papa*, the only MS. of which is in the library of Lord Ashburnham. Another is the tract *De Schismate*, No. 59, the only MS. of which is in the library of Trinity College, Dublin. Others are Nos. 58 and 60, short tracts contained in the same manuscript. There are five or six others, one of which, for reasons presently to be given, I do not believe to be authentic, while of the rest I will defer the examination to the Preface of the third volume.

I have only met with one English writing of Wyclif's, large or small, which was not included by Dr. Shirley in his *Catalogue*. This is the *Lincolniensis*, a short tract, the only copy of which, so far as appears, exists in a Bodleian manuscript (MS. Bodl. 647). I have no doubt that this, like most of the remaining contents of that MS., was written by Wyclif.

SPURIOUS AND DOUBTFUL WRITINGS.—For some time after I had begun to read the works which the *Catalogue* ascribes to Wyclif, I was strongly disposed to question the authenticity of a considerable number of them, for various reasons. With regard to some of these, farther inquiry has not removed my doubts, while in the case of others, that internal evidence on which I relied to establish for them the high probability, if not certainty, of a date subsequent to the death of Wyclif, has been proved by fuller investigation to be far less cogent than I had at first supposed. I will take these two classes of probably spurious and doubtful writings separately.

I. No. 1 in the *Catalogue* is marked 'Early English Sermons;' it is a collection of fifty-four sermons on the Sunday gospels, together with five others on great festivals. No one, except Dr. Vaughan, has ever ascribed these sermons to Wyclif; they exist only in two MSS., and the partial examination which I was able to make of them at Cambridge last year, convinced me that they were the production of a traveller in the well-worn track of homiletics, who possessed no spark of the erratic and daring spirit of our author.

Nos. 6-9 are Commentaries on the Gospels of Matthew, Luke, and John, and on the Apocalypse. Even if they were certainly authentic, those on the Gospels, at any rate, could not be considered as worth printing, because the substance of them is wholly taken from the writings of the Fathers, chiefly from SS. Chrysostom, Jerome, and Ambrose, from Theophylact, the Venerable Bede, and Aquinas. The Commentary on the Apocalypse is indeed original, but contains, so far as I have examined it, nothing very remarkable. But there is good ground for believing that no part of these Commentaries, not even the prologues and epilogues, is by Wyclif. This I will first endeavour to prove as regards the Commentaries on the Gospels.

In the prologue to the Commentary on Matthew occurs the following passage <sup>b</sup>:—

‘For þis cause a *synful caytif* havyng compassion on lewed men declariþ þe gospel of Matthew to lewed men in Engliche, wiþ exposicion of syntis and holy writ, and alleggiþ onely holy writ and olde doctours in his exposicion,’ &c.

In the prologue to the Commentary on Luke (MS. Bodl. 143) we read,—

‘Herfore a *caytif* lettid fro prechyng for a tyme for causis knowun of God writiþ þe gospel of Luk in Englysh wiþ a short exposicioun of olde and holy doctours, to þe pore men of his nacioun.’ Farther on the writer again calls himself ‘þis pore caitif;’ and towards the end he breaks forth into fierce denunciations, as does also the writer of the Commentary on Matthew, of the ‘ypocrisie, tirauntrie, and cursidnesse of Antecrist and his meynce,’ by whom he evidently means the hierarchy.

Lastly, in the short prologue to the Commentary on John (MS. Bodl. 243) occurs this passage:—

‘A symple creature of God, willinge to bere in party þe chargis of symple pore men, writiþ a schort glos in English on þe gospel of Joon,’ alleging, as he tells us, his authors ‘in general,’ and remitting

<sup>b</sup> In the Bodleian MS. (Laud, 235); (B. I. 38) is stated by Dr. Shirley to —the MS. at Trin. Coll. Cambr. have a different prologue.

to 'þe grettur gloos writun on Joon where and in what bokis þes doctours seyen þes sentences.'

The strong similarity of style noticeable in these three prologues, particularly in the first and second, point to the conclusion that they and the glosses which they describe all proceeded from the same hand. If so, that hand was certainly not Wyclif's, for he was never 'lettid fro prechyng,' nor would he have been likely to describe himself as a 'caitif,' by which was then meant an abject, obscure, and despised person. One would be rather disposed to ascribe the authorship of these glosses to the same person who wrote a collection of tracts under the title of 'The Pore Caitif,' which Bale, Lewis, and Dr. Vaughan ascribed unquestioningly to Wyclif, but without cause, as Dr. Shirley was the first to show, since Bishop Pecock, a writer nearly contemporary, tells us that they were written by a mendicant friar 'pro suo defensorio'.<sup>c</sup> And that the author belonged to a religious order, and therefore could not have been Wyclif, might with some plausibility be inferred from a passage near the end of the prologue to the Commentary on Matthew, where, in the course of an invective against the 'religiouse,' he says, 'In so myche, that if ony of siche religiouse, bounden to siche privat tradicions, wolde live as Crist and his postlis diden, and edifie truly Cristen soulis bi the gospel, the potestatis of singular novelries crien hym a cursed apostata and eretik distrier of Cristendome.' There is a tone about these words, which certainly tends to make one believe that the writer was describing his own experience.

The Commentary on Luke is based on the 'Catena Aurea' of S. Thomas Aquinas, whom the compiler throughout the prologue calls 'Alquin.' That on St. John's gospel is also based on the Catena.

Bale, in his most inaccurate catalogue of the writings of Wyclif<sup>d</sup>, describes the gloss on Matthew as a 'Translatio Clementis Lanthoniensis.' But the Commentary now in question is certainly no translation from Clement of Lanthony (a monk of the twelfth

<sup>c</sup> *Fasciculi Zizaniorum*, xiii. note 3.

<sup>d</sup> *Illustrium Britanniae Scriptorum Summarium*. Basle. 1559.

century), since its compiler quotes among his authorities Robert Grossetete, who flourished in the thirteenth. Nor again does it appear to be based on the *Catena*; for although there are fewer extracts on the whole, and those which coincide in the two works are usually given more fully in the *Catena*, yet particular extracts may be found which are fuller in the Commentary.

With regard to the Commentary on the Apocalypse, internal evidence is, I think, decisive against its being the work of Wyclif. The Introduction seems to me the work of a man of softer and less robust nature. In his interpretation of chap. xviii., the writer expounds the Scarlet Woman to signify Antichrist, characterized by idolatry, 'mammetrie,' covetousness and lechery; but the seven hills on which she sits are—not Rome, but—the seven deadly sins. As the kings under Antichrist fought against the Lamb, so the kings that now were fought against holy Church, and not only 'in bodily þingis but in goostly also, for þorow þe taliage þat þei maken þei bringen þe simple folk into synne.' This is far enough from the position of the man who thought that the secular power might freely resume Church property, and was bound to do so if it were misused; rather it reminds one of the state of things under Henry III. and Edward I. Again, the host that followed him that sat on the white horse, 'bitoknen hem þat willen fize aȝen þe fend þorow lowness and wiþ conventise,'—i. e. in a conventual life; but Wyclif devoted all his powers during many years to the denunciation of the conventual life in all its forms. Again,—'As longe as Satanus is bounden, holy chirche regneþ, and is free to serve God, *and obedient to þe Prelatis.*' But it was the business of Wyclif's life to declaim against the prelates. Again,—'Þat þe folk schulen gon in his liȝt bitokneþ,' that towards the end of the world, 'þe religious of God schulen weȝe more and more, and men schul forsake worldly blisse for hope of þe blisse above.' But such a prospect of the spread of monkery would have been to Wyclif a most dreary one. The reader will probably think that sufficient evidence has been adduced to prove that Wyclif was not the author of the Commentary on the Apocalypse.

No. 24. entitled 'A Short Rule of Life,' &c. is conceived in a

beautiful spirit, but there is not a particle of evidence to connect it with Wyclif. Even the omnivorous Bale has not included it within the sweep of his catalogue. That it should be found in a MS. volume of tracts bequeathed by Archbishop Parker to Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, and loosely said by him to contain tracts by Wyclif, does not amount to evidence; for some of these compositions can be proved to be of different authorship, and the general statement of Archbishop Parker must not be taken for more than it is worth. Dr. Vaughan indeed says<sup>e</sup>, after quoting a fine passage from this tract, inculcating the purest Christian virtues on different orders of men, 'The preacher whose counsels were of this description was not the man to become the agent of insurrection, after the fashion of John Ball and Wat Tyler, as some of his ingenuous opponents have insinuated.' This is quite true; but it would have been more to the purpose to prove that the tract is by Wyclif, instead of merely assuming it. So far as the evidence of style goes, I am myself greatly inclined to doubt its authenticity.

No. 48, a tract printed by Dr. Todd, in 1851, under the title 'Of Antecrist and his Meynee,' does not appear to be authentic. The style is narrower and more puritanic than that of Wyclif, and the allusions to the persecutions to which the writer and his party were subjected seem more suitable to a later time. Thus (p. cxlviii.) we are told that Antichrist 'harder al day punyschiþ, as al day now men may see.' Again, Antichrist and his followers 'kille treue men in her prison.' On the whole, this language suits a period subsequent to the constitutions of the archbishops Arundel and Chicheley better than the lifetime of the reformer; and as the evidence of style tends the other way, and there is not a tittle of external evidence attributing it to Wyclif, the tract not being included even in Bale's list, I think it may be safely struck out of the catalogue of the reformer's writings.

No. 47, 'Tractatus de Pseudo freris,' found in a single MS. at Dublin, is similarly destitute of all external evidence tending to asso-

<sup>e</sup> *Tracts and Treatises of John de Wycliffe*, p. 48.



ciate it with Wyclif; but as no previous writer has given any other than the most general description of it, and I have not yet been able to examine it myself, the question of its authenticity must be left in suspense. Nos. 51, 61, and 64 must be included in the same category; there is no external evidence in their favour, but from the only MSS. of them being either in private libraries or at Dublin, I have not yet been able to examine them.

It escaped Dr. Shirley's notice that Nos. 49 and 50 are merely extracts from No. 63, which will be considered in the next paragraph.

II. A considerable number of English tracts still remains, chiefly those contained in the well-known C. C. C. manuscript at Cambridge, with regard to which there is indeed some slight amount of external evidence connecting them with Wyclif, but that evidence is not strong enough to establish their authenticity, should the analysis of their contents lead to an opposite conclusion. I propose to enter upon the full examination of the claims of this class to rank among Wyclif's writings in the Introduction to the third or miscellaneous volume of the present collection. I did indeed at one time conceive myself to have found a test, the application of which would in many cases establish the non-authenticity of a treatise without further trouble. In this, however, deeper research has proved that I was mistaken; and as the point is one which bears upon the authenticity of a portion of the sermons in the present volume,—those for the *Commune Sanctorum*,—it must be treated of here.

Relying upon the *consensus* of all the ordinary English historians, including Lingard, I came to the study of the questions affecting the authenticity of writings ascribed to Wyclif with the preconceived belief, that the attempts of the English state and hierarchy to coerce heretical or erroneous opinions had not, previously to the enactment of the famous statute commonly called *De Haeretico Comburendo*, in 1401, proceeded to the length of inflicting capital punishment, either on the gibbet or at the stake, upon the holders of those opinions. The common impression certainly is,—and it was shared by myself,—that no one had suffered death in England for his

religious opinions, by direct infliction at the hands of the magistrate <sup>f</sup>, before William Sawtre, the first victim to the statute above mentioned. If then, in a tract, the style and handwriting of which showed it to belong either to the end of the fourteenth, or to the beginning of the fifteenth century, mention was made of death by burning or hanging as a fate ever impending over such as held the writer's opinions, the conclusion was ready, that the date of that tract must be subsequent to the passing of the statute of 1401, and that accordingly Wyclif could not have been its author. Tried by this test, the tracts numbered 12, 16, 18, 19, 29, 32, 33, 34, 38, and 63 (out of which all but the last, which is in the Bodleian, are found in the C. C. C. manuscript), since they all contain allusions to 'brennyng' as a punishment constantly impending over, or actually inflicted upon, the followers of Wyclif, would be proved to have been composed many years after the reformer's death <sup>g</sup>.

But if this conclusion were to be considered irrefragable, it presently appeared that it would affect other writings, which tradition and common consent, and a fair amount of direct external evidence, had hitherto attributed to Wyclif. Such are the Homilies on the gospels contained in the offices of the Commune Sanctorum, forming the second division of Homilies in the present edition. In Sermon LXIV. (p. 201), in Sermon LXV. (p. 205), and again in Sermon LXVII. (p. 211), occur passages which it is difficult to understand in any other way than as testifying to the fact of a vigorous persecution of Lollards going on at the very time. The passages are subjoined in a foot-note <sup>h</sup>. It immediately became a pressing question,

<sup>f</sup> I use these words, because there is a case, mentioned by William of Newburgh in his history (lib. ii. cap. 13), where some thirty Paulician heretics, having entered England about the year 1163, were condemned at Oxford to be branded, whipped, and turned out of the city; after which, all persons being forbidden to harbour them or give them food, they 'misere perierunt.' For this reference I am indebted to Professor Stubbs.

<sup>g</sup> Wyclif died at Lutterworth in 1384

<sup>h</sup> p. 201. 'oure prelati . . . . . stranglen and killen men, and spoilen hem of her goodis.'

p. 205. 'þis word counfortiþ symple men, þat ben clepid etetikes and enemyes to þe Chirche, for þei tellen Goddis lawe; for þei ben somynned and reprovyd many weies, and after put in prison, and brend or kild as worse þan þeves.'

p. 211. 'alle þese [popes and bishops, helped by secular lords] bitraien Cristen men to turment, and putten hem to deel' for hooding of Cristis lawe.'

whether, in the face of these passages, the authenticity of at least this portion of the Homilies could be maintained.

The first point to be ascertained was whether all the best MSS. contained the passages in question, or whether any omitted them, or showed marks of interpolation. The MSS. of the first class in which these sermons are contained are, besides Bodl. 788, upon which the text of this edition is based, two in the British Museum (Bib. Reg. 18 B. IX. and Cotton. Claud. D. VIII.) and one at Wrest Park (No. 11). I have not had an opportunity of collating the last-named MS., but a reference to those in the British Museum showed that in each of these passages they agreed word for word with Bodl. 788, and exhibited no trace of interpolation. It further appeared that in one of the homilies for the Proprium Sanctorum, a division which in all the copies is associated with that for the Commune Sanctorum, and indisputably formed part of the same work from the first, namely in Sermon CII. (p. 354), mention is made of Richard II. as then reigning. Now, on the supposition that no persecution proceeding to the length of capital punishment had taken place before 1401, how reconcile the mention of Richard, whose deposition and death happened in 1399, with the passages importing that such persecution was actually going on?

Being thus led to examine narrowly the grounds of the supposition above mentioned, I came upon certain facts which tended to throw doubt on their sufficiency to carry the conclusion based on them. Mr. Bond, keeper of the MSS. at the British Museum, was good enough to point out to me a passage in the Chronicle of Meaux, lately edited by him for the Master of the Rolls, which is much to the purpose of the present inquiry. Abbot Burton says (vol. ii. p. 323) that the Franciscans, or a section of them, opposed certain constitutions of Pope John XXII., who thereupon caused many of them to be condemned and burnt, some in France in 1318, others at various places in France, Spain, Italy, and Germany, in 1330; and that among the severities practised on this last occasion, 'in Angliâ, in quadam silva, *combusta sunt viri quinquaginta quinque, et mulieres octo, ejusdem ordinis et erroris.*' This is indefinite,

certainly, but there seems no possibility of questioning its substantial truth; and if it be true, then men and women were burnt in England for heresy before 1401.

Again, though no chronicler records any actual execution in the fourteenth century, there is a passage in Walsingham which proves that it was threatened by at least one bishop, and, considering the imperfect nature of the communications between different parts of the country in that age, and the paucity of records, it would surely be hazardous to assert confidently, merely because the chroniclers are silent, that no such threat was ever carried into effect. Speaking of the Lollards in 1389, Walsingham, after blaming the culpable remissness of most of the other bishops, who instead of exterminating these pests went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise, adds that the Bishop of Norwich, 'sit nomen ejus benedictum in secula!' set an edifying example of zeal for the faith, in that he swore that if any one of that perverse sect should presume to preach in his diocese, he should either be burnt or beheaded ('vel ignibus traderetur vel capite privaretur'). Walsingham adds that no Lollard coveted the honour of martyrdom, and that the diocese accordingly remained uncontaminated by their presence<sup>1</sup>. If the Bishop could threaten this, one may suppose that without any violation of law it could have been done. And in fact, if one reads the statute of 1401 carefully, it becomes plain that the legislature which enacted it was not thinking of introducing forms of punishment hitherto unknown to and unsanctioned by the law, but only regularizing and extending uniformly over the country a penal machinery already existing and legal. The remedy is to be applied, not *de novo*, but 'uberius et celerius' than has been hitherto possible;—and because experience proves that the bishops 'per suam jurisdictionem spiritualem dictos perfidos et perversos absque auxilio dictae majestatis regiae *sufficienter corrigere* nequeunt;' inasmuch as the Lollards, by passing from one diocese into another, can with so little difficulty evade the citations served upon them. In truth, to societies whose evolution for many centuries had been presided over by the Catholic Church, the crime

<sup>1</sup> Walsingham, *Historia*, vol. ii. p. 188: Rolls series.

of heresy appeared so tremendous that no punishment, however agonizing, could be commensurate with its turpitude; and when a provincial council, or even a diocesan court, had once declared the fact of heresy to be proved, and had handed over the culprit to the grasp of lay justice, the sheriff, or mayor, or bailiff, who received him, was little likely, unless there was a speedy and full retraction, to be incommoded by prayers or murmurs from the people that execution might be stayed. That such a monster should both in body and soul be as soon as possible got rid of, erased and annihilated off the face of the earth which he cumbered, was the shuddering desire of the pious and the superstitious alike; and for this, fire offered the readiest means; the miscreant might be reduced to ashes,—those ashes might be scattered to the winds; and while his soul commenced to endure its secular torments, his hateful presence would in no possible shape afflict Christian people more. The legislature, which ordained that obstinate heretics should be burned ‘*coram populo in eminenti loco*,’ was not afraid that any sympathy with them in their sufferings would be exhibited by the people. I have entered into these considerations simply in order to mitigate the *primâ facie* improbability that if any burnings or beheadings had taken place in the last twenty years of the fourteenth century, the chroniclers would have passed them over in silence. Things were changed in the sixteenth century, but at the time we are speaking of such a mode of dealing with heretics appeared to most men so obviously natural and right,—so much a matter of course,—that one can better understand how very severe punishments may have passed over absolutely without record.

On the whole, then, it appears that the mention of ‘*brennyng*’ in these tracts, and also in the sermons for the Commune Sanctorum, is not conclusive against their authenticity. There are, however, in the case of the tracts, or some of them, various other difficulties, the full consideration of which, as was said before, must be reserved for the Introduction to the miscellaneous volume.

THE HOMILIES.—To proceed to the contents of the present volumes. It was Dr. Shirley’s intention, both on account of their

intrinsic importance, and because, among all the longer English writings, there was the greatest weight of evidence in favour of their genuineness, to print the Homilies<sup>k</sup> first. This intention has been carried out, and the first two volumes of the present edition contain the entire collection,—Vol. I. giving the Sermons for the Sunday Gospels, and those for the Commune and Proprium Sanctorum, while Vol. II. contains the Sermons for the Ferial Gospels, and those for the Sunday Epistles. The original arrangement appears to have been, that the sermons for the Sunday epistles and gospels should be intermixed. This I infer, partly from the fact that such is the arrangement in a valuable MS. in the Bodleian (Douce 321), which, imperfect as it is, appears from the forms of the words to be somewhat more ancient than the manuscript I have printed from,—partly from the same arrangement being followed in one of the copies in the British Museum (Claudius, D. VIII.), and also in a curious MS. at Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge,—but chiefly from a discovery, made in the course of my editorial occupations on MS. Bodl. 788, that the copy from which the writer of that manuscript made his transcript, must also have had the sermons so arranged<sup>l</sup>. As, however, the majority of the MSS. adhere to the separate arrangement, and there is no reason to think that the two sets were written at the same time, or are in any way connected as to their contents, it seems upon the whole preferable to print them just as they stand in the MS. which is the basis of the edition.

The authenticity of these sermons, taken as a whole, cannot reasonably be questioned. Although, so far as I am aware, no one

<sup>k</sup> No. 2 in Dr. Shirley's *Catalogue*.

<sup>l</sup> At the bottom of page 62 of Bodl. 788, the scribe had arrived near the end of the *gospel* sermon for the Third Sunday in Lent. On turning the leaf, instead of the concluding portion of the gospel sermon, he has written down a portion of the *epistle* sermon for the *next* Sunday in Lent; nor did he discover his mistake till he had written about half a column; when at last he found out what he was doing, he drew a pen with red ink through the portion of the epistle sermon that he had writ-

ten, and continued the transcript of the gospel sermon from the point where he had broken off. The conclusion is inevitable that the older copy which he was using contained the gospel and epistle sermons intermixed, so that parts of two sermons of each description would often appear on parallel columns, as may be seen to this day in Douce 321; such being the case, the scribe's eye on commencing a fresh page was caught by the wrong column, and thus the present appearance of the MS. is accounted for.

of the numerous and widely separated MSS. which contain them names Wyclif as the author in a handwriting contemporary with the copies themselves, yet they have all come down accompanied by the tradition of his authorship, and have never been ascribed to any one else. Again, the fact that the copies are so numerous attests their high popularity in the times before the invention of printing, and entirely accords with the statement of Leland<sup>m</sup>, that even in his (Leland's) age, many of the reformer's writings, both in Latin and English, were religiously preserved and diligently read by certain persons, 'praesertim illa *vernacula* in plebis gratiam scripta.' Bale names the several divisions of the sermons in his catalogue, though not always in a way sufficient to identify them with certainty. For instance, his 'In Evangelia Dominicalia,' with *incipit*, 'Homo quidam erat dives,' might just as well refer to the spurious collection of sermons described on a previous page<sup>n</sup> as to those in the present collection. Again, the first words of his 'Sermones in Epistolas' do not tally with the opening of the first Epistle sermon in our present copies. But with regard to the sermons for the Commune and Proprium Sanctorum, and those on the Ferial Gospels, it may be held as certain that the works which he has catalogued are the same as those now printed. The authority of Bale indeed,—Bale, who sets down Wyclif's death in 1387, who takes him on a journey into Bohemia, who assigns to him a score of works which it is most certain he never wrote; moreover, who in his article on Chaucer, omits from the list of his works the *Canterbury Tales*, and includes Lydgate's *Falls of Princes*,—is, if uncorroborated, of almost no value. Happily in the present case the weight of internal evidence tends strongly in the same direction; the authoritative tone, the proneness to subtle and recondite distinctions, so completely in harmony with what we know of Wyclif's fame in the schools, the special hostility to the friars, the allusions to contemporary events, such as the crusade of Bishop Spencer, and the grant of papal indulgences to those who engaged in it (p. 136)—events which occurred in 1383, and therefore would have been naturally referred to in a

<sup>m</sup> *Commentarium de Scriptoribus Britannicis*, art. 'Wicoclivus.'

<sup>n</sup> See p. iii.

series of sermons preached in his parish of Lutterworth during the last two years of his life, after he had been compelled to retire from Oxford by the Council of 1382,—lastly, a distinct reference at the end of Sermon XXX. (p. 79) to a Latin work by the writer, which, it can hardly be doubted, was the *De Veritate Scripturæ*,—all these converging proofs, taken in connection with the unbroken tradition surrounding the MSS. which has been already referred to, appear to establish Wyclif in the authorship of these sermons beyond all reasonable doubt.

Assuming them, therefore, to be authentic, the questions which next present themselves for consideration relate, (1) to the form they bear, (2) to the nature of their contents.

1. Prefixed to the Sermons for the Commune and the Proprium Sanctorum, a few explanatory remarks will be found, from which the relation in which those sermons stand to the Sarum Missal, and to the general liturgical system of the Catholic Church in the fourteenth century, may be better comprehended. The collection of sermons for the Sunday gospels (which are for the most part the same as those in the English Prayer-book), needs no explanation. The originator of this style of sermon in the Western Church was Gregory the Great, whose forty Homilies, explanatory of the gospels read on various festivals, are most racy and profitable reading. Several passages in the opening sermons (see pp. 3, 6, 9) make it appear that Wyclif composed these homilies more as drafts, or skeleton sermons, which a preacher might take and fill in *ad libitum*, than as in themselves complete discourses. The curious MS. at Sidney Sussex College is a standing proof that he was sometimes taken at his word; in this MS. the sermon for the Sunday gospel is usually given entire, and followed by a few hortatory remarks enlarging upon Wyclif's hints; to these succeeds a short instruction based on a text taken from the epistle for the same Sunday<sup>o</sup>.

<sup>o</sup> These instructions have been hitherto supposed (see Shirley's *Catalogue*, p. 33) to be identical with the 'Sermons on the Epistles' hereafter to be printed; but a minute examina-

tion showed that such was not the case; they appear to be original compositions, the work no doubt of the amplifier of the Gospel sermons.



2. To form a just estimate of the doctrinal and moral contents of these sermons, to realize and express the exact position which the writer, about whom so much windy declamation has gone forth during the last three centuries, occupied in face of the religious thought and life of his time,—this is a task for a theologian; and I am no theologian, but merely a literary editor. But I may be allowed to point out that the opportunity is now first afforded to the general reader of ascertaining Wyclif's opinions, not from four or five scattered sermons or tracts (some of which the learned editor, Dr. Todd, by clothing them in black letter, has left nearly as undecipherable to ordinary readers as if they were still in MS. <sup>p</sup>), not from pamphlets, such as those so largely analyzed by Lewis, Lebas, and Dr. Vaughan, of which a large proportion are of highly doubtful authenticity,—but from a large collection of sermons, which, if any of Wyclif's English works are so, may be deemed thoroughly genuine. As some assistance to those who wish to embark in this inquiry, it may be mentioned that in this first volume opinions on the following important doctrines and practices will be found at the places indicated:—on justification, at p. 350; on purgatory, at pp. 121, 321; on the sacraments, especially the Eucharist, *passim*, but see in particular pp. 119, 248, 265; on the privileges, graces, and power of Mary, at pp. 246, 257, 345, 356; on Antichrist, at p. 350; on private confession, at pp. 333, 351; and on clerical celibacy, at p. 364.

FORMATION OF THE TEXT.—The following are the MSS. which have been consulted, with a view to the production of a correct text of the Sermons:—

<sup>p</sup> Wycliffe's *Three Treatises on the Church*. Dublin, 1857.

Title of MS.	Distinguishing Letter.	Description.
Bodl. 788.	A.	This truly excellent MS. contains, in a small thick folio, the whole collection of genuine Homilies, numbered 2 in Shirley's <i>Catalogue</i> . As to its history, nothing whatever is known. Not a single leaf is missing, and although of course not free from errors, it is one of those unusually correct and serviceable copies which rejoice the heart of an editor. It is in the same handwriting from first to last, a handwriting probably of the last decade of the fourteenth century. It is on good but thin parchment, sparingly ornamented with blue and red flourishes and head-letters.
Univ. Library Cambr. li. 1. 40.	B.	This MS., a small quarto, is in the University Library at Cambridge. It contains only the sermons for the Sunday gospels and epistles. It is on the finest vellum, and the handwriting is of a very superior description; here and there it is richly illuminated. One may feel certain that it was executed for some wealthy person, who desired that no expense should be spared. I was at first inclined to rate its value very highly, but the remarkable family likeness between it and A soon struck me, and at length I discovered a proof, amounting almost to a demonstration, that one must have been copied from the other. In the text of Sermon LIII., 'Si quis diligit me,' while the MS. Douce 321 refers to the right chapter, John xiv., A and B both fall into the <i>same</i> error, referring to John xviii. The balance of probability against the coincidence being accidental is of course enormously great; either then both MSS. must be copies from some earlier MS., now lost, which contained the error, or else one of them copied it from the other. But the former supposition is gratuitous and improbable: they have then copied each other, and of the two alternatives, it is more likely that B, a partial copy, and a MS. <i>de luxe</i> , is copied from A, than A from B. The general conclusion is that B is of no value as an original authority; it has however the merit of not unfrequently correcting errors of inadvertence or carelessness in A.

Title of MS.	Distinguishing Letter.	Description.
Laud, 314.	C.	This is a small MS. of but little value, in the Bodleian Library, containing, besides the tract called <i>Vae Octuplex</i> , only the sermons for the Sunday gospels. The hand is apparently of a period past the middle of the fifteenth century.
Wrest Park, 11.	D.	This MS. is in the possession of Lady Cowper. It is a double-columned folio; at the foot of page 1 are the words 'Franciscus Comes Bedfordiae,' and the date '1566.' In respect of execution it is of a medium quality; the ornamentation is but slight, and the writing just mediocre. There are two changes of hand; in the first hand all the sermons are written except those for the Ferial gospels, the first portion of which is written in the second, and the remainder in the third hand. The first hand seems to be late fourteenth century; the third I should judge to be some fifty years later. So far as my examination extended, this appeared to be a good and serviceable MS.
Douce 321.	E.	In this MS., which is unfortunately much mutilated, the sermons are arranged in a peculiar order, those for the Sunday gospels and epistles being intermixed, while the <i>Proprium Sanctorum</i> precedes instead of following the <i>Commune</i> . It is a good-sized quarto, written on coarse parchment in a large bold hand, and very little ornamented. From the forms of the words ('schal,' 'gode,' 'pynyd,' &c., instead of 'shal,' 'good,' 'pyned,') it seems to be rather more ancient than Bodl. 788. Its readings are often different from, and not unfrequently superior to, those of Bodl. 788; between which and itself there is no more connexion or resemblance than must subsist between two MSS. of the same work, both good of their kind;—each must be regarded as an independent authority. It is this quality of its readings which makes this MS., for collating purposes, one of the utmost value. Not that it deserves to be ranked on the whole above Bodl. 788; not to speak of its mutilations, it is disfigured by a far greater number of carelessnesses, omissions, and other blunders than its rival. For it must be remem-

Title of MS.	Distinguishing Letter.	Description.
Baroness North.	F.	bered, that since Bodl. 788 has been adopted as the basis of the printed text, every necessary correction of it for which support is found in any other MS. appears at the foot of the page, while the more numerous and more glaring errors of other MSS. are passed over <i>sub silentio</i> . A MS. of medium quality, in the possession of Colonel North, containing only the sermons on the Sunday gospels. From the forms of the words, it appears to be intermediate in point of date between the complete copies already described and Laud, 314.
Bib. Reg. 18. B. ix.	G.	This MS. is in the British Museum. It is a good and carefully written text, having the sermons for the Sunday and Ferial gospels, and the Sunday epistles, arranged in order of the season, commencing with Advent Sunday; then follow the sermons for the Commune and Proprium Sanctorum. So far as I have been able to collate it, its readings differ little from those of Bodl. 788. The sermons in the last division appear to be defective,—twenty-eight only, against thirty-eight in Bodl. 788.
St. John's Coll. Camb. C. 8.	H.	The arrangement of the sermons in this MS., which is very imperfect, at least fifty-five sermons being wanting, is the same as that in G, of which I believe it to be a copy.
Cotton. Claud. D. VIII.	I.	This is a good MS., but imperfect at the beginning. The arrangement is nearly the same as that of the Douce MS. All the first portion of the volume containing it consists of a noble and apparently perfect copy of the 'Statutes, Charters, and Customs' of the university of Oxford.
Wrest Park, 32.	J.	This is a low class MS., somewhat dilapidated, in a hand of about the middle of the fifteenth century. It is inferior in every respect to the MS. at Wrest Park (D) already described.
Trin. Coll. Camb. B. 2. 17.	K.	A handsome folio, moderately ornamented. It is of the same class as Bodl. 788, the arrangement of which it exactly follows, down to the end of the Ferial sermons; the Epistle sermons are wanting. I think it is somewhat later than Bodl. 788. but my examination of it was not

Title of MS	Distinguishing Letter.	Description.
Wrest Park, 38.	L.	long or searching enough to enable me to speak positively. This is a still commoner and poorer copy than J; also decidedly of later date. Its contents correspond to those of K; i.e. it has all the sermons except those on the epistles.
Trin. Coll. Camb. B. 4. 20.	M.	This is a copy, poorly executed, and exhibiting several serious <i>lacunae</i> , of all the sermons except those on the Ferial gospels. The arrangement nearly corresponds to that of Bodl. 788.
Sidn. Suss. Coll. Camb. A. 4. 12.	N.	This is the remarkable MS. above referred to (p. xiv). It is in a rude handwriting, and upon coarse parchment, and conveys the impression of having been prepared by some poor parish priest for his own use.
Trin Coll. Camb. B. 14. 38.	O.	A small volume, containing only the sermons on the Sunday epistles; the hand is rough and difficult, and not of an early date.
Harl 1730.	P.	One of the Harleian MSS. in the British Museum, containing only the Epistle sermons, and ending defective in the sermon for the twenty-second Sunday after Trinity. So far as a brief examination enables me to speak, it appeared to be of no special value.
New Coll. Oxford, 95.	Q.	This MS. contains, besides a complete set of the sermons on the Ferial gospels, seven sermons on gospels belonging to the 'Proprium de Tempore,' but included by Wyclif under the head of Proprium Sanctorum. (See p. 295.) It also has one of the Sunday sermons, No. XXXI. The handwriting is of the first half of the fifteenth century.
C. C. C. Camb. 336.	R.	This MS. (wrongly described in Dr. Shirley's Catalogue) contains the sermons for the Commune Sanctorum, and most of those for the Proprium Sanctorum and the Ferial gospels. My examination of it was too hurried to permit of my forming a definite opinion as to its merits.
St. John's Coll Camb G. 22.	S	This is the MS. containing the homilies criticised on p. iii. Besides these it contains a poor and late copy, much mutilated, of the sermons for the Sundays from Advent to Trinity.

The MS. Bodl. 788 has, as has been already stated, been adopted as the foundation of the text of the present edition,—being absolutely complete, singularly accurate, and probably older than, or equally old with, any of the others, except perhaps Douce 321. The arrangement of its contents has been adhered to in the printing, except that, in order not to break the series of sermons, the tracts *Vae Octuplex* and *Of Mynystris in the Chirche* (Nos. 4 and 5 of Shirley) which follow in the MS., one the Sunday gospel sermons, the other those for the Proprium Sanctorum, are reserved for the third volume. The orthography of the MS. is almost exactly reproduced, the characters þ and ȝ being retained throughout. The only deviations permitted are these: *v* is freely employed in the printing in place of *u* in the MS., wherever the sound appears to require it, because it is manifest that, except at the beginnings of words, the scribe employed the same characters for both sounds. He wrote *loue*, but it would be absurd to doubt that he pronounced *love*. Again, the character *i* is used in the MS. both for that sound and for the sound of *j*; it is always *iust*, *iniurie*, &c., instead of *just*, *injurie*; I have therefore printed *j* instead of *i* wherever the sound seemed to require it.

Like most of its class, the MS. Bodl. 788 contains the bare words of each sermon, and nothing more; there are no capital letters, no division into paragraphs, no punctuation. Passages quoted from Scripture are underlined with red ink. The editor is responsible for supplying the above-named defects, as well as for marginal analyses, biblical references, and the verse of the chapter from which each text is taken.

Of the transcript of the MS. the first part, down to p. 197, was made by the Rev. W. F. Cornish, of Lincoln College, the remainder by Mr. William Sorell; to both these gentlemen I am much indebted for the general fidelity and accuracy with which they performed their work.

In conclusion, I have much pleasure in taking this opportunity of returning sincere thanks to those whose assistance I have

benefited by in preparing the present volumes;—to Professor Stubbs, of whose valuable aid I have already spoken; to the Rev. H. O. Coxe, Bodley's Librarian; the Rev. J. Mayor, the late, and Mr. Bradshaw, the present, Librarian of the Cambridge University Library; to Professor Dunne, of the Irish Catholic University, who kindly examined for me some MSS. in the Library of Trinity College, Dublin; to Mr. Bond, custodian of the MSS. at the British Museum; to the Rev. W. Macray, of the Bodleian Library; lastly, to Mr. Caldwell, Fellow of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, and the Rev. J. J. Perowne, Fellow of the same College.

A complete Glossary will be subjoined to the last volume of the English works.

T. ARNOLD.

OXFORD, *October*, 1868.

# CONTENTS.

## EVANGELIA DOMINICALIA.

SERMON		PAGE
	<i>First Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
I.	Homo quidam erat dives. <i>Luke</i> xvi. 19. . . . .	1
	<i>Second Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
II.	Homo quidam fecit coenam magnam. <i>Luke</i> xiv. 16. . . . .	3
	<i>Third Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
III.	Accesserunt ad Jesum publicani et peccatores. <i>Luke</i> xv. 1. . . . .	7
	<i>Fourth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
IV.	Estote misericordes. <i>Luke</i> vi. 36. . . . .	9
	<i>Fifth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
V.	Cum turbae irruerunt ad Jesum. <i>Luke</i> v. 1. . . . .	12
	<i>Sixth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
VI.	Nisi habundaverit justitia vestra plus quam Pharisaeorum. <i>Matt.</i> v. 20. . . . .	14
	<i>Seventh Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
VII.	Cum turba multa esset cum Jesu, nec haberent quod manducarent. <i>Mark</i> viii. 1. . . . .	17
	<i>Eighth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
VIII.	Attendite a falsis prophetis. <i>Matt.</i> vii. 15. . . . .	19
	<i>Ninth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
IX.	Homo quidam erat dives et habebat villicum. <i>Luke</i> xvi. 1. . . . .	22
	<i>Tenth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
X.	Cum appropinquaret Jesus Hierusalem videns civitatem. <i>Luke</i> xix. 41. . . . .	24
	<i>Eleventh Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XI.	Dixit Jesus ad quosdam qui confidebant tanquam justi. <i>Luke</i> xviii. 9. . . . .	27



SERMON		PAGE
	<i>Twelfth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XII.	Exiens Jesus de finibus Tyri. <i>Mark vii. 31.</i> . . .	29
	<i>Thirteenth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XIII.	Beati oculi qui vident quae vos videtis. <i>Luke x. 23.</i> . . .	31
	<i>Fourteenth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XIV.	Cum iret Jesus in Jerusalem, transibat. <i>Luke xvii. 11.</i>	34
	<i>Fifteenth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XV.	Nemo potest duobus dominis servire. <i>Matt. vi. 24.</i> . . .	36
	<i>Sixteenth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XVI.	Ibat Jesus in civitatem quae vocata Naym. <i>Luke vii. 11.</i>	38
	<i>Seventeenth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XVII.	Cum intrasset Jesus domum cujusdam. <i>Luke xiv. 1.</i> . . .	41
	<i>Eighteenth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XVIII.	Accesserunt ad Jesum Pharisei audientes. <i>Matt. xxii. 34.</i>	43
	<i>Nineteenth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XIX.	Ascendens Jesus in naviculam. <i>Matt. ix. 1.</i> . . .	46
	<i>Twentieth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XX.	Loquebatur Jesus cum discipulis. <i>Matt. xxii. 1.</i> . . .	48
	<i>Twenty-first Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XXI.	Erat quidam regulus. <i>John iv. 46.</i> . . .	51
	<i>Twenty-second Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XXII.	Simile est regnum coelorum homini. <i>Matt. xviii. 23.</i> . . .	54
	<i>Twenty-third Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XXIII.	Abeuntes Pharisei. <i>Matt. xxii. 15.</i> . . .	56
	<i>Twenty-fourth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XXIV.	Loquente Jesu ad turbas, ecce princeps. <i>Matt. ix. 18.</i>	59
	<i>Twenty-fifth Sunday after Trinity.</i>	
XXV.	Cum sublevasset oculos Jesus. <i>John vi. 5.</i> . . .	62
	<i>First Sunday in Advent.</i>	
XXVI.	Cum appropinquasset Jesus Jerosolymis. <i>Matt. xxi. 1.</i> . . .	65
	<i>Second Sunday in Advent.</i>	
XXVII.	Erunt signa in sole. <i>Luke xxi. 25.</i> . . .	68
	<i>Third Sunday in Advent.</i>	
XXVIII.	Cum audiisset Joannes in vinculis. <i>Matt. xi. 2.</i> . . .	71

CONTENTS.

XXV

SERMON	<i>Fourth Sunday in Advent.</i>	PAGE
XXIX.	Miserunt Judaei ab Jerosolumis. <i>John</i> i. 19. . . .	74
	<i>Sunday within Octave of the Epiphany.</i>	
XXX.	Vidit Johannes Jesum venientem ad se. <i>John</i> i. 29. . . .	77
	<i>Octave of the Epiphany.</i>	
XXXI.	Venit Jesus Galilea. <i>Matt.</i> iii. 13. . . . .	80
	<i>First Sunday after the Octave.</i>	
XXXII.	Cum factus esset Jesus. <i>Luke</i> ii. 42. . . . .	83
	<i>Second Sunday after the Octave.</i>	
XXXIII.	Nuptiae factae sunt in Cana Galileae. <i>John</i> ii. 1. . . .	86
	<i>Third Sunday after the Octave.</i>	
XXXIV.	Cum descendisset Jesus de monte. <i>Matt.</i> viii. 1. . . .	89
	<i>Fourth Sunday after the Octave.</i>	
XXXV.	Ascendente Jesu in naviculam. <i>Matt.</i> viii. 23. . . . .	92
	<i>Fifth Sunday after the Octave.</i>	
XXXVI.	Simile est regnum coelorum homini qui seminavit. <i>Matt.</i> xiii. 24. . . . .	95
	<i>Septuagesima Sunday.</i>	
XXXVII.	Simile est regnum coelorum homini patrifamilias. <i>Matt.</i> xx. 1. . . . .	98
	<i>Sexagesima Sunday.</i>	
XXXVIII.	Cum turba plurima. <i>Luke</i> viii. 4. . . . .	102
	<i>Quinquagesima Sunday.</i>	
XXXIX.	Assumpsit Jesus duodecim discipulos. <i>Luke</i> xviii. 31. . . .	106
	<i>First Sunday in Lent.</i>	
XL.	Ductus est Jesus in desertum. <i>Matt.</i> iv. 1. . . . .	109
	<i>Second Sunday in Lent.</i>	
XLI.	Egressus Jesus secessit in partes Tyri. <i>Matt.</i> xv. 21. . . .	113
	<i>Third Sunday in Lent.</i>	
XLII.	Erat Jesus ejiciens demonium. <i>Luke</i> xi. 14. . . . .	116
	<i>Fourth Sunday in Lent.</i>	
XLIII.	Abiit Jesus trans mare. <i>John</i> vi. 1. . . . .	120
	<i>Fifth Sunday in Lent.</i>	
XLIV.	Quis ex vobis arguet. <i>John</i> viii. 46. . . . .	124

SERMON	<i>Palm Sunday.</i>	PAGE
XLV.	Altera autem die quae est post parasceven. <i>Matt. xxvii. 62.</i>	128
	<i>Easter Day.</i>	
XLVI.	Maria Magdalene. <i>Matt. xxviii. 1.</i>	131
	<i>First Sunday after Easter.</i>	
XLVII.	Cum esset sero die una. <i>John xx. 19.</i>	134
	<i>Second Sunday after Easter.</i>	
XLVIII.	Ego sum pastor bonus. <i>John x. 11.</i>	138
	<i>Third Sunday after Easter.</i>	
XLIX.	Modicum et jam non videbitis me. <i>John xvi. 16.</i>	141
	<i>Fourth Sunday after Easter.</i>	
L.	Vado ad eum qui misit me. <i>John xvi. 5.</i>	144
	<i>Fifth Sunday after Easter.</i>	
LI.	Amen, Amen, dico vobis, si quid petieritis. <i>John xvi. 23.</i>	148
	<i>Sixth Sunday after Easter.</i>	
LII.	Cum venerit Paraclitus. <i>John xv. 26.</i>	151
	<i>Whit Sunday.</i>	
LIII.	Si quis diligit me. <i>John xiv. 23.</i>	155
	<i>Trinity Sunday.</i>	
LIV.	Erat homo ex Phariseeis Nychodeme. <i>John iii. 1.</i>	158

## COMMUNE SANCTORUM.

	<i>Vigil of an Apostle.</i>	
LV.	Ego sum vitis vera. <i>John xv. 1.</i>	165
	<i>Common of an Apostle.</i>	
LVI.	Hoc est preceptum meum. <i>John xv. 12.</i>	168
	<i>The same.</i>	
LVII.	Haec mando vobis. <i>John xv. 17.</i>	172
	<i>Common of an Evangelist.</i>	
LVIII.	Designavit Dominus Jesus. <i>Luke x. 1.</i>	175
	<i>Common of one Martyr.</i>	
LIX.	Nisi granum frumenti. <i>John xii. 24.</i>	179
	<i>The same.</i>	
LX.	Si quis vult venire post me. <i>Matt. xvi. 24.</i>	182

CONTENTS.

xxvii

SERMON	<i>Common of one Martyr.</i>	PAGE
LXI.	Qui vos audit, me audit. <i>Luke x. 16.</i> . . . .	185
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXII.	Si quis venit ad me. <i>Luke xiv. 26.</i> . . . .	189
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXIII.	Nihil opertum quod non reveletur. <i>Matt. x. 26.</i> . . . .	194
	<i>Common of one Martyr and Bishop.</i>	
LXIV.	Circuibat Jesus civitates. <i>Matt. ix. 35.</i> . . . .	197
	<i>Common of many Martyrs.</i>	
LXV.	Elevatis Jesus oculis. <i>Luke vi. 20.</i> . . . .	201
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXVI.	Cum persequentur vos in una civitate. <i>Matt. x. 23.</i> . . . .	206
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXVII.	Ponite in cordibus vestris. <i>Luke xxi. 14.</i> . . . .	209
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXVIII.	Descendens Jesus de monte. <i>Luke vi. 17.</i> . . . .	214
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXIX.	Cum audieritis proelia. <i>Luke xxi. 9.</i> . . . .	218
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXX.	Attendite a fermento Pharisaeorum. <i>Luke xii. 1.</i> . . . .	222
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXXI.	Sedente Jesu super montem Olyveti. <i>Matt. xxiv. 3.</i> . . . .	226
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXXII.	Nolite arbitrari. <i>Matt. x. 34.</i> . . . .	231
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXXIII.	Egressus Jesus de templo. <i>Matt. xxiv. 1.</i> . . . .	235
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXXIV.	Dicebat Jesus turbis Judeorum. <i>Luke xi. 29.</i> . . . .	239
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXXV.	Egrediente Jesu de templo. <i>Mark xiii. 1.</i> . . . .	243
	<i>Common of a Confessor and Bishop.</i>	
LXXVI.	Vigilate quia nescitis qua hora. <i>Matt. xxiv. 42.</i> . . . .	248
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXXVII.	Homo quidam peregre proficiscens. <i>Matt. xxv. 14.</i> . . . .	252

SERMON	<i>Common of a Confessor and Bishop.</i>	PAGE
LXXVIII.	Homo quidam nobilis abiit in regionem. <i>Luke</i> xix. 12.	257
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXXIX.	Videte, et vigilate, et orate. <i>Mark</i> xiii. 33.	261
	<i>Common of a Confessor and Doctor.</i>	
LXXX.	Vos estis sal terre. <i>Matt.</i> v. 13.	266
	<i>Common of a Confessor and Abbot.</i>	
LXXXI.	Nemo accendit lucernam. <i>Luke</i> xi. 33.	271
	<i>Common of many Confessors.</i>	
LXXXII.	Sint lumbi vestri praeincti. <i>Luke</i> xii. 35.	275
	<i>The same.</i>	
LXXXIII.	Misit Jesus duodecim discipulos. <i>Matt.</i> x. 5.	280
	<i>Common of one Virgin and Martyr.</i>	
LXXXIV.	Simile est regnum coelorum thesauro. <i>Matt.</i> xiii. 44.	284
	<i>Common of a Virgin not a Martyr.</i>	
LXXXV.	Simile est regnum coelorum decem virginibus. <i>Matt.</i> xxv. 1.	289

## PROPRIUM SANCTORUM.

	<i>Vigil of St. Andrew.</i>	
LXXXVI.	Stabat Johannes. <i>John</i> i. 29.	295
	<i>St. Andrew.</i>	
LXXXVII.	Ambulans Jesus juxta Mare Galilee. <i>Matt.</i> iv. 18.	301
	<i>Octave of St. Andrew.</i>	
LXXXVIII.	Postquam autem traditus est Johannes. <i>Mark</i> i. 14.	306
	<i>Christmas Eve.</i>	
LXXXIX.	Cum esset desponsata. <i>Matt.</i> i. 18.	311
	<i>Christmas Day.</i>	
XC.	Exiit edictum a Cesare Augusto. <i>Luke</i> ii. 1.	316
	<i>St. Stephen's Day.</i>	
XCI.	Ecce, ego mitto ad vos prophetas. <i>Matt.</i> xxiii. 34.	322
	<i>St. John the Evangelist's Day.</i>	
XCII.	Dixit Jesus Petro. <i>John</i> xxi. 15.	325

CONTENTS.

XXIX

SERMON	<i>The Holy Innocents.</i>	PAGE
XCIII.	Angelus domini apparuit. <i>Matt.</i> ii. 13. . . . .	327
	<i>Sixth day after Christmas.</i>	
XCIV.	Erat Joseph et Maria. <i>Luke</i> ii. 33. . . . .	332
	<i>New Year's Day.</i>	
XCV.	Postquam consummati sunt. <i>Luke</i> ii. 21. . . . .	335
	<i>Vigil of the Epiphany.</i>	
XCVI.	Defuncto Herode. <i>Matt.</i> ii. 19. . . . .	337
	<i>The Epiphany.</i>	
XCVII.	Cum natus esset Jesus. <i>Matt.</i> ii. 1. . . . .	339
	<i>The Conversion of St. Paul.</i>	
XCVIII.	Ecce reliquimus omnia. <i>Matt.</i> xix. 27. . . . .	342
	<i>Candlemas Day.</i>	
XCIX.	Postquam impleti sunt dies. <i>Luke</i> ii. 22. . . . .	345
	<i>St. Peter's Chair. (Feb. 22.)</i>	
C.	Venit Jesus in partes Cesarie. <i>Matt.</i> xvi. 13. . . . .	347
	<i>St. Matthias' Day.</i>	
CI.	Confiteor tibi, Pater, Domine. <i>Matt.</i> xi. 25. . . . .	350
	<i>Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary.</i>	
CII.	Missus est Angelus Gabriel a Deo. <i>Luke</i> i. 26. . . . .	353
	<i>St. Philip and St. James.</i>	
CIII.	Non turbetur cor vestrum. <i>John</i> xiv. 1. . . . .	357
	<i>Ascension Day.</i>	
CIV.	Recumbentibus undecem discipulis. <i>Mark</i> xvi. 14. . . . .	360
	<i>Vigil of St. John the Baptist. (Midsummer Eve.)</i>	
CV.	Fuit in diebus Herodis. <i>Luke</i> i. 5. . . . .	362
	<i>St. John the Baptist. (Midsummer Day.)</i>	
CVI.	Elizabeth impletum est tempus pariendi. <i>Luke</i> i. 57. . . . .	364
	<i>Vigil of St. Peter and St. Paul.</i>	
CVII.	Dixit Jesus Symoni Petro. <i>John</i> xxi. 15. . . . .	366
	<i>Octave of St. John the Baptist.</i>	
CVIII.	Dixit Zacarias. <i>Luke</i> i. 18. . . . .	367
	<i>Translation of St. Martin. (July 5.)</i>	
CIX.	Nolite timere, pusillus grex. <i>Luke</i> xii. 32. . . . .	370

SERMON	<i>Octave of St. Peter and St. Paul.</i>	PAGE
CX.	Jussit Jesus discipulos ascendere in naviculam. <i>Matt. xiv. 22.</i> . . . . .	373
	<i>The Seven Brothers. (July 10.)</i>	
CXI.	Loquente Jesu ad turbas. <i>Matt. xii. 46.</i> . . . . .	375
	<i>St. James.</i>	
CXII.	Accessit ad Jesum. <i>Matt. xx. 20.</i> . . . . .	377
	<i>Vigil of the Assumption. (Aug. 14.)</i>	
CXIII.	Loquente Jesu ad turbas. <i>Luke xi. 27.</i> . . . . .	379
	<i>Assumption Day. (Aug. 15.)</i>	
CXIV.	Intravit Jesus in quoddam castellum. <i>Luke x. 38.</i> . . . . .	382
	<i>St. Bartholomew.</i>	
CXV.	Facta est contentio inter. <i>Luke xxii. 24.</i> . . . . .	385
	<i>Beheading of St. John the Baptist. (Aug. 29.)</i>	
CXVI.	Misit Herodes. <i>Mark vi. 17.</i> . . . . .	387
	<i>Nativity of the Blessed Virgin Mary. (Sept. 8.)</i>	
CXVII.	Liber generationis. <i>Matt. i. 1.</i> . . . . .	390
	<i>Exaltation of the Cross, or 'Holy Rood Day in harvest.'</i> <i>(Sept. 14.)</i>	
CXVIII.	Nunc judicium est mundi. <i>John xii. 31.</i> . . . . .	392
	<i>Vigil of St. Matthew.</i>	
CXIX.	Vidit Jesus publicanum. <i>Luke v. 27.</i> . . . . .	395
	<i>St. Matthew.</i>	
CXX.	Cum transiret Jesus. <i>Matt. ix. 9.</i> . . . . .	397
	<i>Michaelmas Day.</i>	
CXXI.	Accesserunt discipuli ad Jesum. <i>Matt. xviii. 1.</i> . . . . .	398
	<i>Vigil of All Saints. (All Hallow Eve.)</i>	
CXXII.	Respiciens Jesus in discipulos. <i>John xvii. 11.</i> . . . . .	402
	<i>All Saints' Day.</i>	
CXXIII.	Videns Jesus turbas ascendit. <i>Matt. v. 1.</i> . . . . .	406

EVANGELIA DOMINICALIA.



HERE BIGYNNEN

ÐE SONEDAI GOSPELIS,

EXPOWNED IN PARTIE.

ÐE FIRSTE SONEDAI GOSPEL AFTER TRINITE SONDAL.

[SERMON I.]

*Homo quidam erat dives.*—LUYK xvi. [19.]

CRIST telliþ in þis parable how richessis ben perilouse, for liztli wole a riche man use hem unto moche lust. A parable is a word of stori, þat bi þat hydeþ a spiritual witt. Ðe stori telleþ;—*Þere was a riche man þat disuside his richesse in pride and in glotonye, for he was clobid in purpur and bise, þat ben prescious clothes boþe rede and white; and so he was an ypocrite, þat shewide him to þe world boþe austerne and clene, as worldly men done. And over þis, ech daie was he fedd shynyngly, boþ for shynyng of vessel and prescious food, and þere was a pore man linyge at his zate þat was clepid Lazarus, full of sore biles; and he wolde be fillid by crummes þat felden fro þe riche mannes bord, but no man gaf him hem<sup>a</sup>, for avarise of þe lord, but þe houndis of þe lord comen, and lickide his biles; and þis signifieþ compassioun of riche mennes servantis, þat þey have of pore men; but þei ben lettid to helpe hem. And it is maad by Goddis wille þat þis begger was deed; and was born by aungelis into Abrahams bosum; þis riche man was dede,*

The parable  
of Dives and  
Lazarus.

<sup>a</sup> This additional clause is found in the Vulgate: 'et nemo illi dabat.'

but not solempnely to God, *and he was buried in helle<sup>a</sup>*, in token þat he shulde ever dwelle there. Abrahames bosum is clepid a place of reste þat holy soulis restiden inne bifore Cristis ascensioun. And here may we see þat þat neiþer riche men ne pore, in þat þey ben sich, be blessid in hevene; sith Abraham þe riche man toke Lazarus into his bosum; but disuse of riches and impacience of pore men ben dampned of Crist; and ellis not siche men; and þei ben not preisid of Crist but bi contrarie virtues. *Þis riche man lifte up hise izen in hise turmentis of helle, and siz Abrahame a ferre, and Lazarus in his lappe; and he criede, Fader Abraham, have mercy on me, and sende þe lazarus hidir, welynge his syngres eende in water to colde my tonge, for I am tormentid in þis flawme.* Þe manner of speche of holy writt is to undirstonde by names of bodi vertues of þe soule, þat dwellen for a tyme in siche bodies; and so, for þis riche man was boostful in speche and likerous in foode, he was tormentid in vertu of his tunge; and þus men in weye to blis, whanne þei traveilen in sutil and medeful werkes, þei swagen in a maner þe peyne of dampned men; for þei have slakyng of þer peyne in þat þat þey hopen to have fewer felowis in helle, to be peyned wiþ hem. *And Abraham seide to þe riche man, dampnyd, Sone, have mynde how þou haddist lust in this lyfe, and Lazar peyne, and þerefore, bi rigt jugement of God, he is now confortid and þou art now turmentid;* for he sufferide peyne patiently and þou toke þi lusts synfulli. And sum men þenken, for þis dampnid riche man clepid Abraham his fadir, and Abraham clepid him aȝen his sone, þat he was an Ebreu, and Abraham was his fadir; but *Abraham answeride him, bi treuþe þat God tolde him, þat þere was a myche void place stablid betwene hem, derke and unordynel, þat lettid dampned men to come to hem, al ȝif þei wolden, or hem come to dampned men:* for þei desiren it not, and ȝif sum seintis coveiten kyndely to comferte þer frendis, þey have stronger wille to confourme hem to Goddis wille, and men may neiþer falle fro hevene to helle, ne flee fro helle to hevene at þer owne wille. But *þe riche man preied Abraham to sende Lazar to his fadir hous, for*

<sup>a</sup> 'Sepultus est in inferno:' Vulg.

he hadde fyve breperen, and he wolde þat þei weren warnid to amenden hem of her lyf; not for charite þat men dampned in helle have to lyvyng men or ellis to dampned men; for as seintis in hevене wanten envye, so dampned men failen in charite; but he dredde him of his peyne þat he shulde have by dampnyng of hise breperen; for he assentide to hem in þer wickide lyf. *But Abraham seide to him þat þei have Moyses and prophetis in þer bokes þat þei writen, heere þei hem spedely, and kepe þei Goddis commandementis; and þis riche dampned man seide to Abraham, Nay, Fadir Abraham, but if ony of dede men wende to hem and warne hem, þei shal do penaunce, and flee þer dampnacioun.* But Abraham seide aȝen, þat *ȝif þei heeren not Moyses and prophetis þat spaken by God, þei shall not trowe to dede men;* for þer wordes ben of lasse evydence, and it falliþ not to God to make a newe lawe and newe miraculis for ech man þat shal be dampned, as Crist wolde not come doun of þe crosse to conferme the fals Jewis.

In<sup>a</sup> þis Gospel may preestis telle of fals pride of riche men, and of lustful lyf of myȝty men of þis worlde, and of longe peynes of helle, and joyful blis in hevене, and þus lengþe þer sermoun as þe tyme axiþ. And marke we how þis gospel telliþ þat þis riche man was not dampned for extorsioun or wrong þat he dide to his neiȝbore, but for he failide in werkes of mercy; and þus shulde we warne boþ o man and oþer how sum men shal be dampnyd more felly for raveyne, and sum shal be dampnyd more softly, for misusinge of Goddis goodis.

Directions to preachers how to enlarge on the parable

FE SECUNDE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER TRYNYTE.

## [ S E R M O N I I . ]

*Homo quidam fecit coenam magnam.*—LUC. xiii. [16.]

Þis gospel moveþ men bi witt of a parable to desire spedely to come to hevене. We shal undirstonde þat eche worde of

The parable of the bidden guests.

<sup>a</sup> The language of this concluding paragraph shows that these homilies were written rather with a view to publication than to delivery from the pulpit.

Goddis lawe is soþ, alȝates if some men undirstonde it falsely; for so þey undirstonden God, and ȝit þei maken him not fals; and so pryve undirstondinge of þis holy Gospel is alȝates soþ, and þe storye boþe. Þe Gospel telliþ þat *þere was a man þat makide a greet soper and clepide þereto many men.* Þis man is Jesus Crist, þat is boþe God and man; and þis grete soper is the grete mangery þat seintis in hevene shall eten of Goddis bord; and þis shall ever last wiþout irkyng or noye, for þere shal noþing faile þat seintis wolen desire. And, for þis shal be þe laste mete, it is well clepid a soper, for soper is þe laste mete þat man takiþ in þe daie. And for foure causis it is a greet soper, for þe Lord is grete þat makeþ þis soper, so þat no man but he may make siche a soper; also the peeple is grete and many þat sitteþ at þis soper; also þe mete is prescious þat þei soupen wiþ, siþ Crist is al maner of mete and drynke, þat þei be fed wiþ; also þe tyme of sitting at þis soper is wiþouten eende. Þis lord clepiþ many to þis soper; for þere nys no man but ȝif he longe sum weie after blise; for ech man longiþ after good, and þe last good and best in which oonly man shulde reste is blisse. But þe gospel seiþ þat many men ben clepid, and fewe ben chosen, for alle men þat God ȝeveþ desiryng to blis ben clepide, but al oonly þese ben chosen, þat lasten in love of God to þer ending day, for to alle siche and oonly siche haþ God ordeyned blisse. *And he sente out his servauntis in houre of þis soper to seie to men clepid hereto to come, for now alle þingis ben redy.* Þe hour of þis soper is tyme of þe Incarnacion, for in þat tyme was heven first persid<sup>a</sup>, and men sett first in hevene wiþ Crist. Þis servant sent out is the manheed of Crist, wiþ hise membris þat here lyveden wiþ him, as Joon Baptist and oþer apostlis and oþer trewe servauntis. Alle þingis were redy; for the Godhede and manhede of Crist was for þat time redy to fede seintes in hevene, and Crist, as Paul seiþ, is alle þingis in alle men þat shal be savyd, and riȝt so his lawe is þe first and þe laste and fully ynouȝ, after which shulde be noon other lawe. For Anticristis lawe, cloutid of many, is full of errors, and disseyveþ many men, as law of Sarasyns and of þese newe

Col. iii. 11.

<sup>a</sup> 'pierced' is used in the sense of penetrated. or forcibly entered.

ordris. And as þe gospel seiþ, *al siche men bygan togipen for to excuse hem*; for al þese men and al oonli siche þat tellen more bi siche lawe þan bi Goddis lawe excusen hem to come þe rizt weye to hevene. And as þere is þre maner of synne, so þre maner men excusiden hem fro þis soper. *Þe first seide þat he hadde bouzt a toun and was nedid to go out and see it*; and þis bitokeneþ proude men, þat for worldly lordship wenden out fro þe weye of God, and occupien her wittes about worldely hey-nesse; and for þe first seide þat þis was nedeful, þerefore *he preide þe lordis messanger to have him excusid*. *Þe seconde seide, þat he hadde bouzt fyve yockis of oxen, and he wente to assay hem, and þerefore he preide him to have him excusid*. Þes fyve yockis bitokenen plente of worldly goodis; for traveil and foure profitis þat comen of oxen; and for þis bisynesse turneþ rundely in hemsilf þerefore it is well seide þat þere ben fyve yockis. And for siche worldly men ben yockid togipere wiþ þe fend and þe world, þerefore the gospel clepiþ hem yockis. *Þe þridde man seide þat he hadde wedded a wyf, and þerefore myzte not come*. Þis þridde bitokeneþ men þat ben overcomen wiþ fleishly synne, as glotonye and lecherie; and þes men more beestly excusen hem, not curteysly, as þese two first diden; but seien shortly, þay may not come. Þe first two men excusiden hem by þis, þat þey wolen be lordly to distroye Goddis enemyes, and þei wolen be riche to helpe pore men; but þe þridde, þat haþ his fleish as his wyf, maister of his soule, is an uncurtais fool; and þerefore he answeride þus. *Þe servaunt turnide azen and tolde his lord þe answeere of þese þre men*; for every creature seiþ to Crist fully himsilf. But þe lord was wroop wiþ excusacioun of þese beden foolis, *and bad his servaunt wende out into stretis of þe citee, more and lasse, and brynge into þis feeste þis þre maner of men, pore feble men, pore blynde men, and pore lame men*. Þese þre ben Goddis prisoneris, þat boþe God and man helpen wiþ almes. And it semeth þat þese and noon oþer shal come to hevene, for who shal come to hevene but if he be pore in spirit; who shal come to heven but 3if he be feble in spirit and nedid to have mercy; who shall come to hevene but 3if he bi liztned of his blindnesse; and who shal come to hevene, but he þat halteþ now hiþe in vertues and now low in synnes?

Certis noon but þe lord of þis feeste; and to siche bodili pore men techen þis gospel men to do her almes; for we shall sue Crist, þat doiþ specialy his greet almes to þese þre men, and of þese þre maner of men many comen to heven. But Goddis servauntis boþe of men and aungelis seien after þis secounde maner of clepyng, *Lord, it is done as þou comandist, and zit þere is a voide place*, for men þat shulden soupe wip þee; for þis maner of clepyng of men to þe joie of hevene filleþ not hevene of men þat God haþ ordeyned<sup>1</sup> to blis, and herfore þe Lord of hevene in his þridde clepyng, þat shal be in tyme nyȝ þe daie of dome, *biddeþ his servantis go out into weyes and hegges and constreyne men to entre þat my hous be fillid*. For now in þe laste daies, whan preestis ben turnid to avarice, stonys shal crye and constreyne preestis þat maken hem a privat religioun as an hegge and oþer men þat suen hem in þe brode weye to helleward,—þese stoonys, þat ben myȝty men in þe worlde, shal constreyne boþe preestis and peple for to entre into hevene bi holding of Goddis lawe, for drede of takinge of her goodis and punishinge of her bodies shal constreyne hem by drede to kepe þis streyte wey to hevene. And so þe noubre of men þat God haþ ordeyned to blisse mut nedis be fillid, maugre Anticrist. But *Crist seiþ to his Apostlis, þat noon of þe firste men þat God clepid to þe mete and wolde not come shal taiste his souper* in ye blisse of hevene. For God haþ ordeyned whiche men shal be saved and which shal be dampned, and boþ þese noubres mote nede be fulfilled; and lordis for her profit moten nedes helpe herto, and Anticristis feynynge mote nedes be knowun.

Directions to  
preachers.

Here may men touche of alle manere of synne, and specialy of false preestis, traitors to God, þat shulden treuly clepe men to blise and telle hem ye wey of þe lawe of Crist, and make knowe to þe peple the cautelis of Anticrist.

<sup>1</sup> So in B; the Bodleian MS. has *ordeyneþ*.



PE ÞRIDDE SONDAY GOSPEL AFTER TRYNYTE SONDAY.

[SERMON III.]

*Accesserunt ad Jesum publicani et peccatores.*—LUC. xv. [1.]

IN þis gospel telliþ Crist two parablis of comfort, how his peple shal be saved alþif preestis grutchen þere azen, boþe prelatiſ and religioſe, for her pryde and coveitise. Þe story of þis Gospel telliþ *how publicanis and sinful men weren comyng to Jesus* to here his lore; and he tretide hem graciously as a good lord; *but scribis and Phariseis gruchiden azens þis and blasfemiden azens Crist, and seiden, He ete wiþ hem unlawfully; and þis dede may figure þingis þat falliþ now, siþ prelatiſ, as scribis, and religioſe, as Phariseis, grutchen azens trewe preestis, membris of Crist, þat communen wiþ commounes as publicanis and seculer lordis, as sinful men; and seien it falliþ not to hem to knowe Goddis lawe.* For þei seien it is so hey, so sutil and so holy, þat al oonly scribis and Phariseis shulden speke of þis lawe. And þes seculer prelatiſ may wele be clepid scribis, for þei boþe more and lasse writen þe money þat þei pilen of þe peple more bisily þan þei prynten in her soulis þe knowyng of Goddis lawe. And þes religioſe ben Pharisees: for þei ben divydid fro þe comoun maner of lyvyng bi hir rotun rytys as Pharisees weren. Þre causis þere ben whi þis heavenly leche resseyvede freely þes synful men and eet wiþ hem,—ffirst, for he wolde converte hem to confusioun of proude prelatiſ þat lettiden þe fredom of Goddis lawes to have hir cours; by þis shulden þei mekely knowe þat heynes of state makip not a man evermore beter to God. Þe seconde cause is, þat Crist wolde 3yve his preestis in tyme of grace lore and ensample to do wisely so, and to stonde for þe fredom of Goddis lawe. Þe þridde cause is,—for Crist wolde shewe his general lordship and savyng not oonly of Jewis but of heþene men in dyverse statis. Þese prelatiſ wolden fayn þat all Goddis lawe were hongyng on hem for to spuyle þe puple; for þanne

Prelates and monks are compared to the Scribes and Pharisees.

Exposition of  
the parables of  
the lost sheep  
and the lost  
piece of money.

wolde þei telle þis lawe, and put þereto fals undirstondinge, as þei myzten have more wynnyng of þe puple.—¶ Þe first parable stondiþ in a question of Crist; he axiþ *which man of hem hadde an hundrid shepe* to kepe, and he were nedid to save hem ech on, *and he hadde lost oon of hem; ne wolde he not leeve fourescore and nyntene in a sikir deserte and go and seke þis lost sheep til þat he fond it; and when he hadde founden it, wolde leien it on his shuldris wiþ joie and whanne he comeþ hoom, he clepeþ togidre his frendis and neizboris, and seiþ to hem, Be ye gladd and þanke me, for Y have founde my sheep þat was perishid. Certis Y seiþ to you þat þere shal be joie in hevene upon oon synful man þat doiþ penaunce, 3he þo more þan upon foure score and nyntene rizt-wise þat have no nede of penaunce.* Þis man is Jesus Crist þat was of þe Jewis, and he was herty and wyse and hadde in his kepyng þe aungelis confirmed in hevene, and wiþ hem mankynde. Nynty and nyne bitokeneþ þes aungelis, for þes nyne ordres þat ben knytted in Crist; and þis oo sheep is mankynde, þat acordiþ more to-gider þan þese nyne ordres of aungels. Þis oo sheep þat was lost perishide by synne of Adam, as þe psalme seiþ. Hevene is clepid disert by many enchesouns, for it is selde visited of men, þat slowly comen þidir, and it is not tilid<sup>1</sup> as is erþe here wiþ us, and it is florishid wiþ goostly trees þat evermore ben grene, for grenesse in virtues may nevere fail in hevene. And þis is a sykry place; for fendis tempten men not þere. Crist lefte þis aungel kynde dwellyng in hevene; for Crist toke not angels kynde but toke here mannis kynde, and bi his greet virtue he suffride peyne as oþer men þre and þritty 3eer, and brouzt mankynde to hevene, and bade þe aungelis his frendis, and man next him in manhede, rejoyeshe hem wiþ him, for he hadde saved mankynde þat was perishide. And bi þis aungels in hevene, mankynde, and feendis, shulde be gladd bi resoun; for þe more þat ben dampned þe more is fendis peyne, and þus is more joie in hevene of þis oo sheep, þan of nyne ordris of aungels þat neden noo penaunce, for þei synneden nevere. Þis o sheep þat is mankynde synede for þe more parte, and

<sup>1</sup> For 'tilled' (?) D has *tylud*; C *tillid*.



was quykid bi Crist, þat was oon wiþ his breþeren; and he, alȝif he myȝte not synnen, suffride peyne for his sheep. And more joie is in hevене of him and his membris þan of nyne ordris of angelis, for þei ben beter and lyveden more medefully as trewe knyztis of God. Þe seconde parable of Crist stondiþ in þis, þat *a wyse womman þat hadde ten dragmes, ȝif she hadde lost oon, she wolde liztne her lanterne, turne up hir house to seke þis lost dragme, and whan she hadde founden it, she wolde make joie as it was seid bifore of him þat lost þe sheep.*—¶ Þis womman is Jesus Crist, wysdom of þe fadir; þese ten dragmes ben his resonable creaturis, for þei ben maid alle to ymage and licesse of þe Trinite. Þe tenþe dragme þat was lost is mankynde, þe lanterne þat was liztid is þe manhede of Crist, þe turning up of þis house is changinge of statis þat ben maid in þis world by manhede of Crist. For þe angel wolde not suffren Joon to knele and worshiþe him, for his lord was Joones broþir, and þe aungelis weren hise servauntis; and so many þingis of þis world weren turnid up so down, siþ evry parte of þis worlde was beterid bi Cristis manhede.

We may touche in þis gospel what spedith men and what þing lettith men for to be saved, for men mote nede do penaunce in berynge of þis sheep, and have lizt of þis lanterne for to fynde þis lost dragme.

Directions to preachers.

ÞE FOURÞE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER TRYNYTE.

[ S E R M O N I V . ]

*Estote misericordes.*—Luc. vi. [36.]

Þis gospel moveþ men to mercy aȝen þe ypocrisyse of þes false Pharisees, and Crist biddiþ first generally men to be *merciful as your fadir is merciful*. For whanne a general word is seid bi himsilf, it shal be taken for þe most famous. Þere ben many fadris, as fadir of kynde, and fadir of lore, but þe mooste propre fadir is he þat makith men of nouȝt, for he is fadir of mennis bodies, and fadir of her soulis, and in vertue

The duty of showing mercy, and the sin of rash judgment

of him worchen all oþer fadir. And þis fadir shulden we sue in alle our werkes, for alȝif we may not atteyne to þis fadir, neþeles þo dedis ben nouȝtis þat ben not ensaumplid and wrouȝt by þis fadir. Þe mercy of þis fadir can we not telle fulli, for he is þe mooste worcher þat may be in þis world, and he cannot worche, but ȝif he medle mercy, for he wrouȝt by mercy whan he made þis worlde, siþ he dide good to angelis, and makide hem perfit, and brouȝte hem to heyer state wiþ-outen her disert. And so when he doiþ good to eny creature, he makip it perfit of his pure grace, siþ God Almiȝty, al witty, and al godely, cannot worche but ȝif he worche by mercy. Be we þan merciful for goodnesse of God. Þe lest mercy of men is among clerkis: þat wolen not ȝyve goodis of grace but ȝif þei sillen hem, and þefore þis synne is heresie before God, þe most and þe first þat parteþ men fro God, for þei weyen her wynnynge more þan þer God. And herfore all þat we done shulde be done in Goddis name, to wirchip of oure God, and profit of his church. ȝhe ȝif we ben holden boþe to God and man by resoun of dette to do a good dede, loke þat þis reson be first hidde in our þouȝt, and so no man may excuse him fro werkes of mercy as no man may wante werkes of a good wille, for þat werke is þe first and heiest in man. First shulde a man have mercy of himsilf, and mercy of his modir, þat is Holy Chirche; and þan haþ he mercy of all his ende kyn<sup>a</sup>. Þe secound word of Crist *forbediþ fool jugement*; and resoun of þis stondiþ hereinne þat God may not folily juge ony man; and so as oure wille haþ nede to be clopid wiþ mercy, so oure undirstondinge haþ nede to have riȝt jugement. For many men wenen to be merciful to ypocritis, and þei done harm to men to which þei wenen do profit; and many men wenen to juge þer breþeren, and ȝit þei jugen falsely and cruely of many; and eche man shulde tempere sich jugement aftir God, for God in his jugement may not faile for resoun. Þe þridde word biddiþ Cristen men *beware of foly dampnyngne up þeyne of þer dampnacion*; and al ȝif þis semeþ no comoun

The clergy  
sellers of  
grace.

The evils of  
rash judgment.

<sup>a</sup> *ende kyn*. There is no difference of reading in the MSS. The phrase seems to mean 'remoter kindred,'

as 'ende-men' signifies 'borderers' in Anglo-Saxon.

synne among men, neþeles al maner of men synnen herynne; and prelatiſ, þat dampnen men in maner of þer cursyng. And ofte tymes þei witen not how þei ben to God; and by reputacion þat shulde be take of Goddis lawe þes men done well as God biddiþ hem do. Lordis jugen ofte tymes þat oþer men done amys, whan þei displesen hem in þir wronge wille; as we dampnen Clement<sup>a</sup> wiþ his fautours, and þei dampnen us, and o king dampniþ his adversarie, and he dampniþ him aȝen, and comounes dampnen proude men and oþers to be ypocrites. And comounly foly jugement is þing þat men knowen not, for þei leden not þer witt after Goddis lawe, for þei presumen as þe fende to kunne þat þei knowen not.—¶ Þe fourþe and þe fifþe word *biddiþ men for ȝyve and ȝyve sum maner of goodis, and so shal God rewarde hem.* And not al oonly God, but seintis in hevене, shal rewarde men, after þat þey have done here to hem. For þese fyve dedis<sup>1</sup> alargid to alle men mut have sum men seintis in hevене. And þese seintis shulen reward men here in abundance of foure þingis; first, þei shal rewarde men *in a good mesure*, for seintis in hevене done beter to men þan þei diden to hem here in þis lyf; and where men diden scarsely good to þir breþeren, seintis fillen trewe men wiþ all manere of goodis; and þis fillyng is not *voide but sadly replenchið*<sup>2</sup>, and at þe laste *it is heepid* as myche as it wole take. And siche metyng of corn, of mele, or oþer þing, wolde be preisid among men fer þe largenesse of þe meter; and þis þing men have here in her bosum, but God filliþ þe substance. For certis *in sich mesure as men mesuren to her breþeren shal it be mesurid to hem* bi jugement of God. ȝif þe mesure be good, þei shal have good aȝen, and ȝif þe mesure be unjust, þei shal have peyne aȝen. And, for defaute in al þis comiþ of ypocrisye of prelatiſ, þat shulden teche pleynly Goddis lawe and not þer erply wyunnynges, þefore seiþ Crist in his parable, þat *ȝif þe blynde lede þe blynde boþe fallen in þe dike.* But for Crist shulde be oure maister, and

<sup>1</sup> After *dedis* D inserts *aren.* A and C agree with B.      <sup>2</sup> *voydid but sadly replenysched*, D.

<sup>a</sup> This allusion fixes the date of the composition of these Sermons to a time between 1378 and 1394, in

which latter year the anti-pope Clement VII died.

we shulden not strange from him, we shulden leeve þes ipocritis and sue þe lore of þis good maister, siþ he may not leve treuþe, ne faile in teching of truþe. And þus shulden men ben perfit, and flei the rote of falskede. And þes prelatiſ have of þere maistris comounly þis manere, *þat þei can see a mot in hir broþer' eye, but a beem in þer owen ize þenke þei not oon.* For þere witt is sett to spuyle and to accuse, and not for to helpe hem ne oþer men, and þerefore her coveitise blindiþ hem þus; but bi lore of Crist men shulden sei to hem, *Ypocrite, cast first þe beeme out of þin owne eye and þan maist þou poke beler þe mot fro þi broþir.*

Directions

Here may men see þat sugettis shulden blame prelatiſ whan þey seen opynly greet defautes in hem, as defaute of Goddis lawe in keeping and teching; for þis is a beeme bi which þe fende bindeþ his hous and þei shulden knowe þes as þei shulden fele the lore þereof.

ÞE FYFÞE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER TRINITE.

[S E R M O N V.]

*Cum turbac irruerunt ad Jesum.*—LUC. v. [1.]

ÞE story of þis gospel telliþ good lore, how prelatiſ shulden teche folk under hem. Þe story is pleyn, how *Crist stood by þe river of Genazereþ, and fisheris comen down to waishe þerynne þer nettes; and Crist wente up into a boot þat was Symonis, and preiede him to move it a litel fro þe lond, and he sate and tauzte the peple out of the boot. And whanne Crist ceesside to speke, he seide to Symoun, Lede þe boot into þe hey see, and late out your nettis to takyng of fishe. And Simoun answeyng seid to him, Comandour, al þe nyzt traveilinge token we nouzt; but in þi word shal Y lose þe nett. And whan þei hadden done þis, þei token a plentenouse multitude of fishe, and þer nett was broken. But þei bekeden to þer felowis þat weren in þe toþer boot, to come and helpe hem; and þei comen and filliden boþ botes of fishe, so þat wel nyzt were þei hope dreynt. And whanne Petre hadde seen þis wounder, he fell*

Peter fishing  
in the Sea of  
Galilee.

down to Jesus knee, and seide, Lord, go fro me for Y am a synnful man. For Petre held him not worpi to<sup>1</sup> be wiþ Crist, ne dwelle in his cumpanye: for woundir came to hem alle in takynge of þes fishes. And so woundriden James and Joon, Zebedes sones, þat weren Symondis felowis. And Jesus seide to Symound, Fro þis tyme shalt þou be takynge men. And þei setten þer bootis to þe londe, and forsook al þat þei hadden, and sueden Crist.—¶ Byfore we go to spiritual undirstonding of þis gospel, we shal wyte þat þe same Cristis disciple þat was first clepid Symoun, was clepid Petre after of Crist, for sadnesse of bileve þat he toke of Crist, which Crist is a corner stoon, and groundiþ al treuþe. Over þis we shal undirstonde þat þe apostlis were clepid of Crist in many degrees; first þei weren clepid and acceptid to be Cristis disciplis; and yet þei turneden aȝen, as Crist himsilf ordeynede, to lyve in þe world. After þei were clepid to see Cristis myracis, and to be more homely wiþ him þan þei weren before; but yet þei turneden aȝen to þe worlde by tymes, and lyveden worldely lyf, to profit of folk þat þei dwelten wiþ. And on þis wyse Petre James and Joon wenten now to fishe. But þe þridde clepyng and þe moost was þis,—þat þe Apostlis forsoken holly þe world and worldly þingis, and turneden not aȝen to worldly lyf, as after þis miracle Petre and his felowis sueden Crist contynnely. It is noo nede to depe us in þis stori more þan þe gospel telliþ, as it is no nede to bisie us what hiȝt Tobies hound. Hold we us apaied on þe mesure þat God haþ ȝouun us, and dreeme we not aboute newe pointes þat þe gospel leueþ, for þis is a synne of curiouste, þat harmeþ more þan profitiþ. Þe story of þis gospel telliþ us goostly witt, boþ of lyf of þe churche and medeful werkis, and þis shulde we undirstonde, for it is more prescious. Two fishingis þat Petre fishide bitokeneþ two takingis of men unto Cristis religioun, and fro þe fend to God. In þis first fishinge was þe nette broken, to tokne þat many men ben convertid, and after breken Cristis religioun; but at þe seconde fishinge, after þe resurrectioun, whan þe nett was ful of many grete fishes, was not þe nett broken, as þe gospel seiþ; for þat bitokeneþ seintis þat God chesiþ to hevene. And so þese nettis þat fisheris fishen wiþ

Degrees of vocation to the apostleship

Tobit vi. 1

Mystical interpretation of the gospel.

<sup>1</sup> om. A.

bitokeneþ Goddis lawe, in whiche virtues and treuþes ben knyttid; and oþer propretees of nettis tellen propretes of Goddis lawe; and voide places betweene knottis bitokeneþ lyf of kynde, þat men han beside vertues. And foure cardynale virtues ben figurid bi knyttung of þe nett. Þe nett is brood in þe bigynnyng, and after streit in ende, to teche þat men, when þei ben turned first, lyven a brood worldely lyf; but afterward, whan þei ben depid in Goddis lawe, þei kepen hem streitlyer fro synnes. Þese fisheris of God shulden waishe þere nettis in þis ryver, for Cristis prechours shulden chevely<sup>1</sup> tellen Goddis lawe, and not medle wiþ mannis lawe, þat is trobly water; for mannis lawe conteyneþ sharpe stones and trees, bi which þe nette of God is broken and fishis wenden out to þe world. And þis bitokeneþ Genasareþ<sup>a</sup>, þat is, an wounderful birþe, for þe birþe by whiche a man is borne of water and of þe Holy Goost is myche more wounderful þan mannis kyndely birþe. Summe nettis ben rotun, sum han hoolis, and sum ben unclene for defaute of waishing; and þus on þree maneres faileþ þe word of preching. And mater of þis nett and brekyng þereof 3yven men greet mater to speke Goddis word, for vertues and vices and treuþis of þe gospel ben mater ynow to preche to þe peple.

ÞE SIXTE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER TRINITE.

[SERMON VI.]

*Nisi habundaverit justitia vestra plus quam Phariseorum.*—

MATT. v. [20.]

It is seide in þe nexte<sup>b</sup> gospel what nettis preestis shulden have for to drawe men fro þe see of þis worlde to þe drye lond of þis lyf. Þis gospel telliþ of þe devylis nett, in which he

<sup>1</sup> *clenli*, B.

<sup>a</sup> Gennesaret is really a corruption of the older name, Chinnereth (Smith's Dict. Bible); but Wyclif

appears to derive it from the Greek γεννῶ or γένεσις.

<sup>b</sup> *nexte*. Meaning *the last*, proximus.

fishiþ and drawt men to helle. Cristis nett is knytt wiþ riȝt-wisnesse to God aboven men, to creatures bineþe men, and to aungels in oþer side of men; and þis clepiþ God fully riȝt-wisnesse, and feyned falsely riȝt-wisnesse of ypocritis clepiþ Crist not riȝt-wisnesse, alȝif ypocritis clepen it so, but of scribis and Pharisees, þat is to seie, unriȝt-wisnesse, feyned as it were riȝt-wisnesse, of scribis and Phariseis. And as Crist seiþ, *But ȝif your riȝt-wisness passe a point þe feyned riȝt-wisnesse of scribis and Phariseis, ȝe shal nevere come to hevене.* We may undirstonde by scribis and Phariseis men of þe fendis chirche, as we diden before; so þat scribis ben clepid seculer prelatis, and Phariseis ben clepid þese newe religious. Þes men maken hem a riȝt-wisnesse bi hemsilf as þei maken hem a lawe of Anticrist; and certis þis law may Crist never conferme; and so, as Poul seiþ, þes Anticristis disciplis heyen hem over Crist, boþ over his godhede and over his manhede. For riȝt-wisnesse generally is fulfillingge of lawe, and so fulfillingge of Goddis lawe is verrei riȝt-wisnesse; and fulfillingge of mannis lawe is Anticristis riȝt-wisnesse. And so þre degrees ben in þe law of scribis; þe first and þe moost is in þe Popis welle; and as men of þe worlde seien, þere is welle of riȝt-wisnesse; but þei gon ofte biside þe riȝt for þer roten ground; þei tristen on riȝt of mannis lawe, and gone ofte biside þe soþe. And ȝit þei excusen þis fals lawe, and seien it mut nede juge fals. for ellis it faillide in his cours, and riȝt of þe worlde were fordone. But þei þenken not how Crist forsoke to juge bi mannis lawe, teching þat eche jugement þat is not done by Goddis lawe, is jugement of þe fend, and we witen not where it be riȝt. And þat man is a fool þat jugiþ after ony law, and woot not wheþir he juge bi God, or ellis by jugement of þe fend; and ȝif men avysiden hem on þis resoun, noone shulde juge bi mannis lawe. And þis fals riȝt is more feyned in consistorie law and in chapitre lawe. For algatis þei supposen þat witnessse may not faile. or ellis þe juge may not faile þat jugiþ after fals witnessse; and of þis roten blasfemye comeþ many fals jugementis. Juge we bi riȝt conscience þat God telliþ or specifiþ and leve we mannis jugement, and suffre we fewe wrongis þat falle, for mo wrongis shulen be don for foli of mannis dome. Þe riȝt of þe Phariseis buriounep

Prelates and friars, like the Scribes and Pharisees, make for themselves a new righteousness and a new law, which Christ will not confirm.

2 Thess ii 4

Consistory law

to harme of þe Chirche, not oonly among hemsilf, þat holden al þing wel done þat is done bi þer ordre, alȝif it be a foly feyned by mannis witt, but how ever þei may gete good bi coloure of þis feyned ordre, þei clepen it hey riȝt-wisnesse. For þe ground good and holy triste we to Cristis religioun, for þat is beter þan þes newe; for ellis we comen not to hevене, but shulen be dampned wiȝ ypocritis. And witt of þese scribis is so myche sett in worldely goodis, þat þei clepen not riȝt-wisnesse but ȝif it be of worldely catel þat is geten by mannis lawe, alȝif Goddis lawe dampne it. And so þe fals Phariseis tauȝten men *þat Goddis lawe defendiȝ<sup>1</sup> not but man-slauȝter or oþer sensible wrong*, and not oþir pryvey wrongs þat is worse roote hereof; and þis were blasfemye in God, to leeve þe worse and dampne þe beter. And herfore declarȝ Crist þre manere of wickid ire. *Þe first maner of ire is whan a man is wrappid wiȝouten resoun, and sich is coupable aȝens God to be jugid to helle.* For þis unkyndely venym aȝen þe state of innocence is roote of malice wiȝoute-forȝ, þat in caas is lesse yvel; and for þis cause men usen whan þei drawen to þer deef to forȝeve men alle wrongis, and axe men mercy of here synne. *Þe secounde degree of þis ire is whanne a man haȝ conseyved wrapþe and brekeþ out in scorneful wordis of his first conseyved ire.* Soþely ire may falle to men for to venge Goddis cause, and so may men scorne oþer, for þei folily synnen in God, as Hely<sup>a</sup> scornede þe preestis of Baal. But boþe þes ben perilous, and herfore he þat scornȝ þus *is coupable to falle in conseile*, where his foli shal be hardid, til þat he falle to more synne. *Þe bridde degree of þis ire is whan a man spekiȝ folily, as he þat sclaudriȝ a man or repreveȝ him falsely; and þat man, as Crist seiȝ, is coupable of þe fier of helle*, for his ire is turned to hate, and as Seint Joon seiȝ, al siche been men sleeris, þat ben worȝi to be dampned. And so shulden men kepen charite boþe in wille and in word, and not oonly spare strokis, as Fariseis falsely seiden. And herfore shulden irrous men axe mekely forȝyvenesse, for ȝif þei wanten charite al is yvel whatever þei do. And þerfore *if þou offre þi*

Matt. v. 29

1 Kin. viii. 27

1 John iii. 15

<sup>1</sup> *forfendiȝ*, B and C.<sup>a</sup> *Hely*. Elias.



*gifte to God, þat þe scribis preisen myche, and þou þenke þat þi broþir, for þi synne, haþ a cause azens þee, leue þi offring at þe auter, and go first to be accordid wiþ him. For meke offringe in mannis herte is betere þan offringe wiþoute-forþ. And ȝif þi broþir be ferre fro þee, Goddis lawe is so resonable, þat it suffisiþ þat þou go out of ire and be recounsiliid in herte wiþ him, and in hool purpos to make aseep<sup>1</sup> as soone as þou goodly mayst. By þis lore may we see how ferre it is fro scole of Crist for to chide or to plede or to fiȝt as men now done.*

ÞE SEVENÞE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON VII.]

*Cum turba multa esset cum Jesu, nec haberent quod manducarent.—MARK viii. [I.]*

FOR alle werkis of Crist ben good lore to Cristen men, to teche hem how þei shal lyve for to gete þe blisse of hevene, þerfore þis gospel of Crist telliþ how he bi boþe his kyndis did a miracle of mercy in fedyng of þe nedy folk. *Whan myche peple was wiþ Jesus, and þei hadden not to ete, he clepide his disciplis togidre and seide, Y have rup upon þe peple, for þei have sued me þree daies, and now þei han not for to ete, and if Y lete hem go fastinge home, þei shal faile in þe weye, for sum of hem comen fro ferre. And his disciplis seiden to him, Whereof myȝte a man fede þis folk here in þis waste place? And Crist axide hem, how many loves þat þei hadden, and þei seiden seven. And Crist commandide þe peple to sitte down on þe erþe; and takynge þes seven loves and doinge þankingis to God, he brak hem, and ȝaf hise disciplis to pull to þe puple, and þei ȝaue þis breed to þe puple. And þei hadden a fewe litil fishis, and hem he blesside and makide his disciplis ȝyve hem to þe peple. And þe peple eet, and was fulfillid; and ȝit þei gudriden seven berlepis<sup>a</sup> of relif þat*

The miracle of the loaves and fishes.

<sup>1</sup> aseep, B; asseþ, D. See Glossary

<sup>a</sup> That is, 'carrying-baskets,' from the A S. 'beran,' to bear. and 'leap' a basket. Both Wycliffite versions have 'leepis' at the same passage.

Mystical interpretation of the miracle

*was laft. And here was of þe puple, hungry and longe fastinge, as it were foure þousand, and Criste lefte hem, and lete hem go home. Þe gospel telliþ of siche two feestis þat Criste maade here in erþe. In þe first weren fyve þousaund fedde, and in þe toþir foure þousand, and þis was þe seconde feste, as seint Mark telliþ. And of greet witt weren þes two, as seintis beren witnesse<sup>1</sup>; for two is þe firste noumbre þat comeþ after oonheed, and herfore men clepen it a noumbre wiþouten fame; for it is þe first noumbre þat partiþ fro unite; and certis, if no man hadde partid from God bi synne, it hadde be noo nede to make siche feestis; for ech man shulde redely have mete whan him nedide, as beestis han gras<sup>2</sup> in plentenous pasture. And so bi þis bodili werk of merci of Crist ben we tauȝt to which men we shulden do sich almes; for Crist techiþ in þe gospel of Luke þat we shulde feden siche þat have greet nede, and if we feden oþir men, biside þe resoun of almes, þe fruyte of oure almes in þat is away. And so curatis þat ben better occupied about spiritual nedis shulden for þer feblenesse, fer fro state of innocence, take bodily almes to perfourme þer office, ȝhe ȝif þei ben stronge in bodi in reward of oþer men; and þis title of almes is mooste acording to preestis; but in state of innocens shulde þis almes be away; for men shulde have redily fruyt þat þai hadden nede of; and þis feblenesse of bodi is falle to men for synne. Crist þat was boþe God and man hadde not þis feblenes, for he myȝt have mete whan and wher he wolde; but we shal wite þat our Jesus Crist dide more miracle, and bad hise disciplis serve þe puple at þe mete, to teche us þat we ben mynystris and not autouris of miracle. And þus he quykide Lazarus, and made his apostolis efte to lose him, to teche þat he forȝeveþ þe synne, and his vikeris shewen it to þe puple. But þei assoilen on oþir weye, as prestis in þe olde lawe telden bi signis of the olde lawe þat men weren cleen of lepre. And ȝif þe Pope and his vikeris wolden studie wel þis mater, þei shulden leve to assoile men so largely in þis fourme, for our bileve techiþ us þat no viker assoileþ here, but in as myche as Crist assoileþ first him whom he assoileþ in virtue of Crist. We shal see moreover*

<sup>1</sup> This is the reading of B. A has *wittis*.

<sup>2</sup> So in B: *gresse*, C: *grace*, A

þat þe folke þat Crist fedde here weren fedde comounly, and not by maner of þis world, for to dampne riche mannis maneris þat feden hemsilf coostly, and ordeyne strange and likerous mete, and in greet multitude, and excuse hem herbi þat relif goiþ to pore men, for pore men myzten many mo be beter fedde wiþ comoun metis; and so þis is a likerous pride, however we gabben to God. But go we nere to þe witt þat þe gospel techiþ us, and we shall see þat eche preest shulde be viker of Crist, and take of him oyle of grace, and so in a maner be Crist, and fede þe puple goostly wiþ þe wordis of God; for neiþer Crist ne hise Apostlis hadden ay bodily mete to fede folk þus; and Crist techiþ us in þis þat goostly fode is beter þan þis, and in token herof þis secounde feste was algatis lasse, but goostly feeste shulde encrease, þat haþ fulli ende in hevene. Þese sevene loves ben sevene bokes of þe newe testament, and foure gospels, and þerwiþ stories of þe Apostlis wisdom, of bokes of Poul, and Apocalips of Joon. Þese fewe litil fishes þat þei hadden to companage ben pistlis of reule of James and Petre and Joon and of Judas. Þe seven berlepis of relif ben alle þe sentences of seintis after, bi which þei feden trewe men by delyng of Goddis lawe. For many ben fedd by relif þat kouden not ete þis hole mete. Þe multitude of just men ben þes foure þousaund men, þat Crist grauntiþ her owne wille to go to þe house of hevene.

ſE EIȒTĒ SONEDAI GOSPEL AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON VIII.]

*Attendite a falsis prophetis.*—MATT. vii. [15.]

Þis gospel biddiþ Cristene men to *be ware wiþ false prophetis, þat comen in cloþing of sheep.* And þes wordis may be applyed unto fals freris; for soþe þis lore of Crist wolde he not ȝyve in tyme of grace, but if siche men weren for to come which þei shulden flec. And so, be þei freris or be þei oþer þat speken falsely in þer preching, oure good maister Crist bad þat we

Attack upon  
the Friars.

shulden be ware wiþ hem. Þei ben prophetis, in þat þei speken aferr of þe dai of dome, of blisse, and of peynes; and þus seiþ Crist þat he sendeþ prophetis to men þat ben of fals feiþ, and þei shal tormente hem. And it is noo doute þat ne siche men ben profetis, and þei ben false prophetis; if þei lyven þus þat þei shapen her lyf and her wordis boþe, more for ypocrisie and wynnynge of þe peple þan for worship of God or helpe of her soule. If þei fynden novelty in þer fals habitis, and 3it lyven as yvel as oþir comoun men, who shulde drede of hem þat ne þei ben fals profetis? Al þer founden signes þei shewen oþir men, þat þei shulden crye þer holynesse over oþir Cristene men. But, Lord, whi shulden þei do þus? siþ holynes shulde be privy, and þei myzten lyve as holy lyf wiþouten siche signes. Certis it semeþ no cause but if it be ypocrisie, þat þei shewen to þe peple þer holynes as Phariseis doen, and so to be more told by, and listlyer to wynne goodis, for take away þis eende, and her signes serven of nouȝt. And as Crist seiþ a good lore to knowe hem were, to *marke þer fruytis*, þat specialy comen of hem. Wel Y wote þat þe Churche profitide before freris camen in, and siþen han ben sownen many fals lores, boþe in þer religioun, and preisyng of scribis; as we seen of þe sacrid oost, of þe begginge of Crist, of lettris of þe brepheed, and oþir worldely lyvyng. Þe knowyng of siche signes shewiþ wel þer fruyte, how þei ben chargeous to þe peple, and fals in þer entent; for greet noumbre and costlewe housis and greet dispensis of þis world, wiþ reulyng of worldely causis, tellen what ende þei worchen fore. And herfore seiþ Crist, þat *þei ben wiþinne wolves of rareyne*<sup>1</sup>; wulves þei ben if þei loven more catel þan mennis soulis, and open þer mouþ to heveneward to feyne preestis power, þat neiþir þei can grounden in þe lawe of God, ne it may not falle to God himsilf, and bi þis power þei spuylen þe puple of þer goodis, and not assoilen hem freely for to save þer soulis. And bi þis fruyte may men knowe þe falshede of þes wolvys, for we shal wite as bileve þat who loveþ more mannis good þan he loveþ helpe of his soule, he is wulf and fendis child. And þis may men wel see by þes preestis'

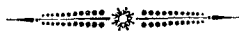
False doctrines introduced by them.

Their covetousness.

<sup>1</sup> So in B. A has *rayne*.

bisynesse; and herfore seiþ Goddis word, þat *men gederen not of þornes grapis*, to glade men goostly wiþ. *ne gidere not figis of breris*, for as þes trees han not of kynde to brynge to men siche fruytis; so siche children of þe fend feden not men goostly, neiþir wiþ figis of bileve ne wiþ grapis of devocioun, but þei han more bisynes to spuyle fro men þer worldely goodis, as boþe þornes and bryres reven fro sheepe þer wolle. And þus *ech good tree* þat God haþ ordeyned to þe hous of heven, *bereþ here good fruyte* and *þe yvel tree berip venym*; for riȝt as Goddis children may not do but good þing, so children of þe fend may not do but harmful þing. For riȝt as fendis semen to do good, and it turneþ at þe ende to þer harm, so Goddis children semen to do yvel, but God turneþ it to þer good. And to þis witt seiþ þe word of Crist, *þat a good tree may not bere yvel fruyte, ne an yvel tree good fruyte*. For þei may not turne as þe wynd, for alle þingis þat shal come mut nedis come as we taken here; and so *ech tree* here in þis world *þat makip not þus good fruyte, shall be fellid and putt to þe fier* to brenne in helle wiþouten ende. And þus bi fruyte of preestis shulen ȝe knowe whos þei ben, and herby bewar wiþ hem, for condicions of her maistris. And *it sufficib not to seie, Lord, Lord*, but it nedip to lyve wele to a mannes lyves ende; and so it sufficib not to preestis to seie, God be wiþ you, but þei mut seie wele in herte and wele in mouþe and lyve wele, for ellis a man shal not be saved ne broȝt to liknes of þe Trinite. Ne þis lore is not oonly constreyned to fals freris, but generaly to preestis, þat seien þat þei han care of mennis soulis; for worchyng bi riȝt lyf, endid after Goddis wille, makip a man Goddis child and come to þe blisse of hevене.

Men are justified by works.



ÞE NYNÐE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER TRINITE SONDAY.

[SERMON IX.]

*Homo quidam erat dives et habebat villicum.*—LUC. xvi. [I.]

The parable  
of the unjust  
steward.

Þis gospel telliþ how men shulde make hem frendis of worldely goodis, for reward þat þei shulden have aftir in hevene. Þe parable telliþ *how a man hadde a fermour*, as keper of a toun<sup>a</sup>, *þat was defamyd to him as he hadde wastid his goodis*; but not al fulli, for he hadde spendid hem unwarly, but þe lord hadde þe worship. *Þis lord clepide þis fermour and seide þus to him, How heere Y þus of þee, þat þou wastist my good? 3ife a rekenyng of þi baillyship, for þou maist be no longer in þis office. And þis servant seide wiþyne to himsilfe, What shal Y do? for my lord takip fro me þis office; delve may Y not, and me shameþ for to begge; but Y woot what Y shal do, þat whan Y am removed fro þis office, opir tenauntis of þe lord shal resceyve me into þere housis, for goodis þat Y shal do to hem: while Y am in þis office. And he gaderide togidere alle þe dettours of his lord; and axide þe first how myche he ouzte his lord; and he seide he ouzte him an hundrid barels of oyle. And he seide to him, Take þi caucioun and sitte soone and wryte fifty barellis. And eft he seide to anopir, How myche owist þou? And he seide he ouzte an hundrid skippis of corn. (Þis mesure of corn is more þan a quarter.) And he badde him take his lettris, bi which he was bounden, and wryte foure score. And þe lord preiside þe bailly of wickidnes, for he hadde warly done; for children of þis worlde ben more ware þan children of list in þer kynrede. In þis parable we shulden wite þat Crist is þis lord, þat is kyng of kyngis and lord of lordis; þis bailly of þis*

Interpretation  
of the parable.

<sup>a</sup> 'toun,' from the A.S. verb *týnan*, to hedge in or enclose, had originally pretty nearly the same meaning as the word 'clearing' has in our colonies now; it was the piece of land enclosed from the forest or moor and made habitable for men

From a single clearing, it came to be applied to the whole cleared and enclosed land in any particular locality, and so to the principal collection of dwellings forming the homes of the cultivators of such land.

lord, or keper of his litil toun, is eche man of þis world, seme he never so greet, for emperoure or kyng is tenaunt to þis lord and keper of his litil toun, to regard of Cristis greet lordship. For Crist is lord of hevene and helle and al þis erþe, 3he lord of al þis world, wiþ goodis of it opyn and hidde, and no conquerour myzte ateyne to lordship of al þis erþe, for Alisaundre and Julius leften myche to conquere, and God wolde not þat þer lordship were more here in erþe, techinge us þat þe fend prince of þis world haþ but litil lordship of children of pryde, al3if he be now partener wiþ Crist of mo servauntis of þe fend þan shal come to hevene. But Crist is chefe lord of þe fend and al his lymes, and þei mut nedis serve him oþir wele or yvel, doinge wel þat þei shulden do, or ellis suffringe peyne. And siþ Crist haþ lent ech man here al þat he haþ, and wole axe of þis streite rekenyng, how he dispendiþ it, to ech man of þis world may þis parable be applied; and whanne men dispenden not warly Goddis goodis, þanne þei ben defamyd to him as þei hadden wastid hem, but dispending of alle goodis mut sowne to Goddis worship. For alle men shulden knowe þat alle þes ben Goddis goodis, and he wole þat þei be spendid þus to profit of his Church, and so spekyng of þis lord is movyng of mennys conscience, and þus God telliþ to men boþe more and lasse, how he knowiþ her traytery, whan þei done amys, and hou þei ben nedid to die from þis office, and hou þei ben nedid to God to rykene for þis servyse. And sum han drede how þei shal lyve after þis lyf, for after þer deef þei may not delve, or do medefulli to þer soule, and shameful þing it is to begge oþer of men þat here lyven, or of seintis in hevene, but as þei witen þat þei shulden helpe after þat men han her deserved while þei lyveden here in þis lyf. And so þis fermour grantide þre þingis þat men shulden knowe here in þis lyf. First he grantide þat aftir þis lyf he myzt not wirche medefulli. Aftir he grantide þat he shulde shame to begge more þan he hadde disservyd. And so stronge beggers here on lyf, ben more unshameful þan ben soulis or in helle or in purgatorie, þat wolen not axe but þat þei han disservyd, for þei witen þat it were veyn to axe more of þer God. But þis baily turnede wisely him to a good conseil; þat while he lyvede

here in erþe he shulde make men his frendis wiþ goodis of God þat he kepith, and þei shulde helpe him whan he is decd. And þus it perteyneth to kingis first to do worship to God, and siþ to do riȝt to þer seruauntis and so to alle men under hem. And þis discharge may baillies do wiþouten injurie to God; for sum men þenken þat þis bailly þat forȝafe fifty barels of oile and þerto twenty skippis of corn, dide wronge to his lord, and so þe lord preiside him not wele; but we shal wite þat þis lord is God, and þis bailly lord of þis world, and so God approveþ wele forȝyvyng of mannis rente; and wiþ graunte of þe cheef lord, baillyes may forȝyve þer dette; and so it were a medeful þinge to worldely lordis to forȝyve dette, and discharge þer pore tenantis of many chargis þat þei ben inne. And so as þis miȝte falle in dede, þat þis bailly was worldly wyse, so hevenly prudence myȝte falle to children of liȝt, but þe first prudence falliþ more comounly þan þe secounde unto men, for pryde and coveitise of goodis blyndiþ men to do almes, but herfore goodis of fortune ben clepid bi a fendis name, þingis of wickidnessis, for þei ben ofte unjustly delt. But conseil and bidding of Crist, þat is chefe lord of alle, is *þat men make hem frendis here of sicke goodis of wickednesse.*

ÞE TENÞE SONDAI AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON X.]

*Cum appropinquaret Jesus Hierusalem videns civitatem.*—LUC. xix. [41.]

Þis<sup>a</sup> gospel telliþ generaly, what sorewe men shulden have for synne, siþ Crist, þat myȝte not do synne, wepte so ofte for synne. For we rede þat Crist wepte þries, and eche tyme he wepte for synne. And so telliþ our bileve in storye of þe gospel, *þat Jesus synge Jerusalem wepte þeron*, for þe synne of

<sup>a</sup> In the margin of B here occurs the following note, in a late fifteenth century hand: 'Noat this specially

of thee clergy the only hurt unto thee Church of Christe'



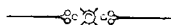
it, *and seide þat if þou knewe þus synne, þou shuldist wepe as Y do nowe, and certis in þis dai of þee þat shulde be comen in pees to þee, if þou woldist receyve þis day and pees of it, as þou shuldist, for alle þes þingis þat þou shuldist kunne ben now hidde fro þi izen. For daies shal come in þee, for synne þat þou shalt do in me, and þin enemyes schulen envyron þee as a palis al aboute, and parre þee in Jerusalem, as sheep ben parrid in a fould, and þei shal felle þee to þe erþe, and þi children þat ben in þee, and þei shal not leve in þee stoon liynge upon a stoon, þat þei ne shal be removed, and þi wallis al distried, and þe cause of al þis shal be þe unkynde unknowynge þat þou wolt not knowe þe tyme þat God bi grace hab visitid þee. Alle þes wordis weren shewide in dede, as Josephus makij mynde of hem, how Titus and Waspsian þe secounde and fourty 3eer afir þat Crist was steied to hevене, comen at solempnite of Paske, and ensegiden Jerusalem, and distrieden men and wallis uttirly þat þei founden þere. And þis is a pryvy synne wiþ which þe fend blindij men, þat þei sorewen not more for synne þan þei done for opir harm; for þus wille is mysturned, and men failen to serve God. And herefore techij Crist hise apostlis þat þei shulden not be aferd for perelis þat shal come for to venge synne þat is done, but þe moste drede of alle shulde be to falle in synne, for þat is worse þan þe peyne þat God ordeyned to sue herof. And þus in foure affeccions þat ben groundid in mannis wille stondij alle mannis synne þat he doij azens God, for if sorwe and joie of man and hope and drede were reulid wel, his wille were ordeyned unto God, to serve him as it shulde do. After þis tellij þe storye how *Jesus wente into þe temple and caste out boþe bieris and selleris, and seide to hem þat it is writun, Myn hous shulde be an hous of preier, but ye have maad it a denne of peves. And for a long tyme after he was eche day techinge in þe temple.* And in þis dede þat Crist dide, he techij his Chirche to bygynne for to purge his seintuarie, þat ben preests and clerks þerof, þat ben þe moost cause of synne, and sij purge opir partis, whan þe rote is distried.—¶ And þis telde Crists wending into þe temple after þes wordis, as 3if he wolde seie in his worching, *Þe cause of synne þat Y have told is wickednesse of preestis and clerkes, and herfore Y bigyne at þe temple, not to distrie hem in her**

Reformation  
must begin  
from the  
clergy.

Priests are  
incorrigible.

persones, but to take from hem cause of her synne, and ordeyne þe Churche in temporal goodis as Y have ordeyned hem to lyve. And it is al oon to seie þat þese goodis ben þus sacrid and 3yven to preestis þat no man may take hem fro þes preestis, and to seie þat Anticrist haþ so weddid þes goodis wiþ preestis þat noon may make þis dyvors; for preestis ben uncorrigible; but þes defamaciouns shulde preestis flee wiþ al þere myzt, and preien þat þei weren amendid bi þe ordenance of Crist. For resoun shulde teche hem þat þei ben worse þan frentikes, and so þei hadden nede to be chastisid til þis passion were fro hem. For what man wolde bi resoun, kepyng a man in frenesie, 3yve him a swerd or a knyf bi which he wolde slee himsilf? or who þat kepte a man in feveris, and wiste wele hou he shulde be reulid, and þat þis mete or þis wyne were contrarye to his helpe, wolde 3yve him at his wille þis foode þat shulde anoye him? so, siþ preestis have goodis of men boþe of lordis and comouns, and þei disusen hem þus, þei myzten and shulden by charite wiþdrawe þes brondis þat þus done harme to preestis, and in mesure and manere 3yve þes goodis to preestis þat he himsilf haþ ordeyned him and hise to have sicke goodis. And þis may bi charite be wiþdrawen by þe 3yvers þerof, siþ no man may do yvel to men and not do good to þe same men, but if he be a quyke fend, þat we shulden not putte to seculers. And to þis ende shulden clerkes traveile and procure þat þis þing were done boþe for love of Goddis lawe and for love of clerkes and comouns, and 3if þe fend by envie, þat is enemye to charite, seiþ þis þing may not be done by þe lawe þat now is sett, he seiþ þat Anticristis lawe, founden azens Goddis lawe, is strengre þan charite, and Anticrist strengre þan Crist. For þis ende shulden clerkes wepe and preie God þat his ordrenance<sup>1</sup> were kepte in his strengþe and Anticristis lawe putt abac.

<sup>1</sup> *ordenance*, B.



FE ENLEVENÞE SONDI AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON XI.]

*Dixit Jesus ad quosdam qui confidebant tanquam  
justi.—Luc. xviii. [9.]*

Þis gospel telliþ in a parable how þat men shulden be meke and not justifie hemsilf and dispise oþir men, for þis is a spise of pride þat men clepen ypocrisie Þis parable telliþ þat *two men wente into the temple for to preye, þe toon was a Phariseie and þe tobir was a publican. Þe Pharise stood as a proud man and preiede þes þingis bi himsilf; God, Y þanke þee for Y am not as oþir men of þe world, robberis, unjust men, avoutrers, as þis publican<sup>1</sup>; Y fast twies in þe woke, and 3yve tipes of alle my goodis. And þe publican stood aferre, and wolde not lifte his izeu to heven, but he smote upon his breest, to figure true confessioun, and seide, God be helplich to me þat am synful.* But Cristis jugement seiþ þat, *þis publicane wente hoom, made rizful fro þis Pharise for þe mekenesse þat he hadde, for ech þat þus heieþ himsilf shal be made lowe, bi peyne, and he þat mekiþ him, bi grace, shal be heyed, by mede of God.* Of þis gospel may we wite how þe firste spise of pride, þat is ypocrisie, envenymeþ gretely þe churche, and, for þis ypocrisie is comounly amoungre religiouse, þefore biddiþ Crist his disciplis beware wiþ sour dow of Pharisees, and Crist himsilf expowneþ and seiþ, it is ypocrisie. Phariseis ben seid, as departid from oþir puple, and weren religiouse in Cristis tyme, as Saduceis and Esses. And al þes þree ordris of men Crist distried, and savyd þe persones, siþ boþe Poul and Nichodeme weren Phariseis, as Goddis lawe seiþ. And siþ al Cristis dedes ben ensaumples to trewe men, many men þenken þat þes newe sectis shulden be distried and þe persones saved, for þus ordeynede Crist maister best of alle; and Y clepe sectis newe mannes ordres, þat oon sueþ anopir as he shulde sue Crist, and so eche secte smatchiþ<sup>2</sup> many synnes;

The parable of  
the Pharisee  
and the  
Publican.

Application to  
the mendicant  
orders.

<sup>1</sup> So in B; *publican*, A.

<sup>2</sup> *smacchiþ*, B.

but if it be þat sect which Crist himsilf made, þat Goddis lawe clepiþ secte of Cristene men, for we shal bileve þat Crist may not do synne in ȝyvyng of his reule to lede Cristene men. And so þis secte is þe beste þat ony man may have, siþ Crist, almygty, alwitty, and alwilful, ordeyne þis sect covenable for eche man; but oþir newe sectis founden bi mannis witt mut nedis smatche synne for errour of þe fynder. And riȝt as þer weren þre suche sectis in Cristis tyme, so þer ben now monkes, chanouns, and freris; and dyvysions in þes þree seien dyvysions in mennis wille. Al þes þree sectis mote nedis smatche errour, siþ þei grounden a perpetuel reule to all men of þes ordres þat þe gospel lefte by wisdom of Crist; and it were woundirful þat þes synful foolis shulde fynde a betere reule þan Crist himsilf fond. For who shulde make a reule to men þat he knoweþ not, ne haþ no maistrie of hem, ne techyng to kepen it? but o complexion and oon elde axiþ o manere of lvyng and anoþir anoþir, þat þes patrons knewe not. And so oonly oure patron Crist, þat is boþe God and man, calengiþ as propre to himsilf to grounde siche ordres, and herfore saint Poul and Petre, wiþ oþir apostolis, fledden to grounde siche ordris for drede of blasfemye. And it were more suffrable to dwelle amonge Sarazynes or oþir paynym sectis as doen many Criste men þan to dwellen among sectis of þese newe religiouse. And þat þei seien, þat þei ben erberis betir þan comoun pasture, for erbis of vertue þat growen in hem, certis makinge of erberis in a comoun pasture wolde distrie þis pasture and lyf of þe comouns, boþe for dicheyng and hegging and delvyng of tounes. And ȝif we marke alle siche erberis in Engelond, þat ben plantid of newe in comoun Cristis religioun, as þei spuylen þe remenaunt of temporal goodis, so, þat is more deel, þei spuyle hem of vertues, for alle Cristene men shulden be of oo wille, and variaunce in siche sectis makij variaunce in wille, and gendriþ discencioun and envye among men. And herfore ordeynede Crist but þree partis of þe Churche, ech to have nede and helpyng of oþir; but certis it is not þus of þese new religions. Of þis treuþe may be maad such a good resoun. It is a greet synne of two þingis to chese þe worse, whan a man may as freely have þe betere as þe worse; but þese new ordris ben

worse þan þe sect of Crist, and it is more list, more fre, and more perfit, þan ony oþir sect þat man may chese. And herfore it is a synful errour to chese siche sectis, siþ þe ordre of Crist wole betere occupie at þe fulle þan ony siche sect founden of men. And so siþ þese patrons han no leeve of God to make siche erberis in his comoun pasture, law of þis cheef lord shulde distrie þes sectis, siþ Crist loveþ more his comounes þan þes newe erberis. And þus menep þe gospel þat þe þridde servaunt of God shal constreyne men to entre and soupe wiþ him in hevene, boþe men in comoun weyes and þes þat dwellen in heggis, and þus was Poul constreynd to crepe out of his hegge, and holde þe sect of Crist, forsakinge þe sect of Pharisees; and þus þis publican þat was a comoun laborer was beter þan þis Pharisee, as þis gospel seiþ.

THE TWELFTH SONEDAY GOSPEL AFTIR TRINITE SONDAY.

[SERMON XII.]

*Exiens Jesus de finibus Tiry.*—MARK vii. [31.]

Þis gospel telliþ a myracle of Crist to make men to love him and trowe in his power; how a deaf man and a doumbe was helid of Crist. *Jesus wente oute of þe contree of Tirus and he cam by Sidoun to þe water of Galile, and he cam þourz a countree þat men clepen Decapolios, which contre conteyneþ ten citees wiþynne him, and men of þe contre brouzlen to him a deaf man, and doumbe also, and preïeden Crist to putte to him his hond, for þei conseyveden þat bi þis shulde Crist fully hele hym. And Crist toke þis syke man aside fro þis puple, and putte his fingres into boþe his eeres, and spittinge, wiþ his syngir Crist touchide his tonge, and Crist lokyng into hevene wiþ a deulful chere seide to þis syke man, Be þi wittis opened; and anoon weren his eeres opened for to here, and þe bond of his tonge was opened for to speke arizt. And Crist bade þes men to publishe not þis myracle; but ever þe more þat he bad þus, ever þe more þei prechiden, and ever þe more þei woundriden, and seiden amonge hemsilf þat Crist hadde done*

The healing of the deaf and dumb man.

Four senses  
in which Holy  
Writ is to be  
understood.

*alle þingis wele, for he made deefe to heere and doumbe men to speke.*  
It is seid comounly þat holy writt haþ foure undirstondingis. Þe first undirstondinge is pleyne, bi letter of þe storye. Þe secounde undirstondinge is clepid witt allegoric, whan men undirstonden bi witt of þe lettre, what þing shal falle here bifore þe dai of dome. Þe þridde undirstondinge is clepid tropologik, and it techiþ how men shulden lyve here in vertues. Þe fourþe undirstondinge is clepid anagogike, and it telliþ how it shal be wiþ men þat ben in hevene. We shulde knowe þis secounde witt of þe gospel, for it is bileve of Cristene men in erþe; we shulden bileve þat mankynde felle fro þe staat of innocence for Adams synne and Eve, and Jesus, God and man, bouzte mankynde fro þe fendis prisoun, as þis gospel telliþ. And so oure Jesus wente fro þe lond of Tirus, whan he wente fro þe bosim of þe fadir of hevene, for Tirus is makyng<sup>a</sup>, and God made of noȝt boþe aungels and men and al þis brood worlde. He cam bi Sidon, þat is angel kynd, whan he grette oure Lady bi servise of angel, and þis angel Gabriel wiþ all oþirs stondinge heelden pees wiþ God, and leften þe firste synne, and Sidon is helpe or leevynge siche synne. But oure Lord Jesus wente out to þe water of Galile, for he took þe staat of man slydun from innocence; for Galile is a wheel<sup>b</sup> whirlingge or passinge; and so dide mankynde aftir þat it hadde synned. Crist came þurȝ þe cuntre þat hadde ten citees, for he cam bi alle men þat weren segid wiþ þe fend; and þes men ensegid þus ben al þes citees, and mankynde þus ensegid bryngiþ to Jesus hir kynde, þat was deef and dombe by þe synne of Adam, ffor þei leften to heeren God and herden þe fend, and trowiden to þe fendis lore, and lefte þe lore of God, and so weren þei deef to heere of God what þei shulden do. Jesus took mankynde þat þus was syke, not in ech persone but singularly in oon, and Crist putt his fyngirs in eres of þiȝ dombe man, whan he appliede his virtue, sutili worchingge, for to teche man how he wente fro God, and wiþ his spotle he touchide his tonge, whan he ȝaf him virtue to herye God riȝtli. And so Crist hadde sorewe of þes two synnes of

<sup>a</sup> Tzôr, the Hebrew name of Tyre, signifies a rock.

<sup>b</sup> Galil, whence Galilee is derived,

means in Hebrew, circle, or circuit. (Smith's Dict. Bib.)

man, and bad þat þe bond of his witt shulde be opened. But Jesus bad þat þei shulden not preise him herfore bi his manhede, and for þis mekenesse þei preisiden him more bi his godhede, and seiden soþ þat he made alle þingis wele, for he made deaf men to heeren and dombe men to speken. For men deafid in Goddis lore he made to heere what God spake in hem, boþ in mandementis and conseilis; and herbi þei lerneden to speke; and so þre miracilis did Crist togidere, in savyng of mankynde; he made men deaf bi synne to heere what God spak in hem, and men dombe fro riȝt speche to speke opynly Goddis lawe, and so, biside þes virtues to heere and to speke, God moved mankynde to do as þei shulden; and so mai men see how myche þei ben to blame þat ben dombe and deaf in þis manere of worching.

ÞE ÞRITTENÞE SONDAY GOSPEL AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON XIII.]

*Beati oculi qui vident quae vos videtis.*—LUC. x. [23.]

Þis gospel telliþ bi a parable how eche man shulde love his even cristene; and, for siȝt pryntid in us of manheed of Crist techiþ þis lore graciously, þerfore bigynneþ Crist and seiþ on þis manere. *Blessid ben þe eyen<sup>1</sup> þat seen þat ȝe seen; for Y seie to ȝou, þat many kyngis and prophetis wolden se þat ȝe seen and siȝen hem not, and here wordis þat ȝe heeren, and herden hem not. And lo a wyse man of lawe roos and templede Crist, and axide, Maistre, what shal Y do to have þe blisse of hevene? For he wiste wele bi skile þat it was not ynouȝ to see þe manheed of Crist for to come to heven; for many þingis, as Scarioþ and bestis, siȝen Crist, þat weren not able to have blisse. But Crist seide to þis legistre, What is writun in þe lawe? how redist þou? And he answeride and seide, þat þe lawe biddiþ þat a man shulde love þe Lord his God of al his herte and of al his soule, and of al his strengþis, and of al his mynd, and his neiȝbore as him silf.*

The parable  
of the Good  
Samaritan.

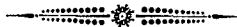
<sup>1</sup> iȝen. B: eyne, C.

*And Crist seide to him þat he answeride riȝt; do he þis indede, and he shal lyve in blisse. But þis lawier wolde justifie himsilf, and þerfore he axide, who was his neiȝbore. And Crist tolde him a parable, þat was sutil in witt, for Crist lokinge on him seide him þis parable, how a man wente down fro Jerusalem into Jerico and felde in þes handis, þat dispuyliiden him and fastiden many sores on him and wenten and lesten him halfe quyke. And it fell þat a preest passide þe same wey; and he siȝ him lye þus hirt, and wente away and helpide him not. And a deken, whan he was niȝ þe place, and siȝ him sich, passide away. But a Samaritan making his weie bi þat place cam bi side him, and siȝ his state, and hadde mercy on him; and he cam nyȝe, and bond his woundis, and helde in hem boþe oile and wyn, and put him upon his hors, and brouȝt him in to stable of a toun, and þere he did cure of him. And anopir dai he toke two þens, and ȝaf hem to þe hosteler, and bade him have cure of him, and seide þus, What ever þou ȝyvest over, whan Y come aȝen Y shal pay þee. And whan Crist hadde seide þis parable, he axide of þis man of lawe, which of þese þree men scmede him to be neiȝbore unto þis syke man þat þus fell into beves handis. And he seide, þat þe þridde man, þat dide mercy on him. And Jesus seide to þis legistre, Go þou and do riȝt so. Þis man of lawe þat is here nemed was neþir civilian ne canonistre, but he was man of Goddis lawe þat wolde lerne þe wey to hevене. And Crist supposiȝ to þis wise man þat ech man is to opir a neiȝbore as nyȝ as he may, siȝ þei ben boþe of o kynde; but of neiȝborisþep of place or dwellinge or of worldes ffriendship shulden men not recke here; but we shulden wite þat alle men þat God ordeyneþ to blis ben ful breþeren boþe of fadir and of modir, siȝ God is þer fadir, and his Chirche is þer moder. And so techiȝ Crist in þis parable, how ech shulde be to opir neiȝbore in good wille, boþe for we came alle of Adam and Eve, and specialy for we came goostly of Crist and his Chirche and þei ben oure nexte and most fadir and modir. Þis man þat cam down fro Jerusalem to Jericho is oure firste eldris, Adam and Eve, for þei camen fro sirt of pees to state of slydyng, as þe moone. Þes þeves þat woundiden him ben þe fendis þat temptiden him, but þei leste lyf in him, as God ordeynede him to blisse; but þei drowun fro þis man goodis of virtu and of*

Interpretation  
 of the parable.



kynde, and woundiden him boþe in bodi and soule, and lettiden him to live just lyf. Þis preest þat passide first bi mankynde and siȝ myscheffe þat it was inne, weren patriarkes, boþe bifore þe lawe, and in tyme þat God ȝaf law. Þe dekenes þat passide bi þis weye weren prophetis and oþir seintis þat weren bineþe þes first seintis, as dekenes ben under preestis; and boþe þei knewen þat þei myȝten not helpe neiþer oþer men ne hemsilf fro þe synne þat þei fellen ynne bi tempting of þe fend. But þe þridde Samaritan, þat was Jesus, helpide mankynde, for he was an alien as anentis his godhede, and he was keper of man bi boþe two kyndis þat he hadde, and he myȝte not do synne, siȝ he was boþe God and man, and hadde not personale beyng of mankynde as oþer men hadden, siȝ he hadde a ful beyng bifore tyme þat he was man. He helde in oile to make woundis softe, and to dispose man to be hool; for he putte man in hope to come to hevene bi feiþ of Crist; and he putte in wyn þerwiþ, whan he spake sharpe wordis for to prik men fro synne. He put mankynde upon his hors, whan he made his own manhede to be oure broþer and to bere our syne; alȝif he ouȝte not for his synne; he brouȝte mankynde in to a stable, whan he helide men in þis Chirche; and þis is but a litil stable to regard of al þe Chirche; and he curide men in þis stable bi sacramentis and hevenly ȝiftes. And on oþir daie, after tyme þat he was deed, whiche was þe tyme of grace, and þe sunne was newe sprongen, he ȝaf two pens to þis keper, boþe of his godhede and of his manhede, to fede mankynde til þe daie of dome. And so þe keper of þis stable is alle þes men þat God haȝ chosen to fede his Chirche wiþ his lawe, and Cristis godhede wiþ his manhede ben sufficient herfore, for þei ben wiþouten ende, as þes serkelis of two pens; and what ever þat prelat is traveilen unto spede of Cristis Chirche, Crist wole at þe daie of dome ȝelde hem graciously; and so ech trewe prelat þat helpiþ Crist to hele his Chirche, is trewe neiȝbore to þe Chirche and doiþ in part as Crist did.



## DE FOURTENÞE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTIR TRINITE.

## [SERMON XIV.]

*Cum iret Jesus in Jerusalem, transibat.*—LUC. xvii. [11.]

CHRIST wole teche bi þis miracle in þis parable þat riȝt bileve is ground of mennes salvacioun. *Whan Jesus went to Jerusalem he went þurȝ Samarie and Galile, and whan he wente into a castel, ten meselis comen azens him, and þei stoden aferre and crieden on him as þei myȝten, and seiden, Jesus, comandour, have mercy on us. But whan Crist siȝ þes leprous men cryinge þus, and stondinge togidere afer, lest þei blemyschiden oþer men, he bad hem go and shewe hem to preestis, as God bad in þe olde lawe, and as þei wenten, þei weren heeled of her lepre. And oon of hem, whan he siȝ þat he was þus heeled bi miracle, turnede aȝen to Jesus wiþ a greet vois preisyng God, and he feld doun in his face bifore Cristis feet, and þankide him; and þis man þat þus cam aȝen was a Samaritan. And Jesus spake and seide þus of þis dede þat was fallen, Ne ben not ten maad clene, and where ben oþer nyne? Þere is noon founden þat cam aȝen, and þankiþ God, but þis alien. And Crist seide unto him, Rys and go whider þou wilt, for þi bileve haþ made þee saaf.*

To þe witt of allegoric<sup>1</sup>, bitokeneþ þis dede of Crist how he was wendinge to hevene, þat is clepide Jerusalem, and he passide by Samary and Galile, or he went to teche, þat he wolde save boþe heþene men and Jewis. For it is knowen of Samarie þat þei weren not of Jewis kynde but aliens þat dwelliden þere, fro þe time of conquest of þat lond. And ten kynredis of Israelis sones weren ever putt out, as now ben Jewis, and herfore þe Jewis loveden not þes Samaritanes, and to þe reproof of Crist þei clepide him a Samaritan, þat he grantide in a manere, and denyede þat he was ledd by þe fend. Cristis wendinge in to þe castel bitokeneþ his litil Chirche, þat is armed wiþ virtues as þe castel is kepte fro enemyes; ten leprous men ben alle þe synful þat mekeli axen forȝevenes of þer synnes. Þei stoden first fer fro Goddis folk; and siþ þei

<sup>1</sup> *allegorik*, B; *allegorie*, C.

The healing of the lepers.

Mystical interpretation of this miracle

wenten to Cristis preestis, and bifore þei comen to hem God assoilide hem of þer synnes; for God seiþ in þe psalme how man in purpos to leve his synne seide þat he wolde shryve him to God, and God forʒaf him his synne. And so Crist tauȝte bi þis dede þat assoilinge of men is not but ȝif God assoile bifore, as God himsilf assoilide þes leprous. And so preestis assoilen as Goddis vikeris, according to Goddis assoilinges, and ellis þei assoilen no more þan preestis of þe olde lawe heelide men of þer lepre, and þat myȝt þei not do. Þis alien þat cam aȝen to þanke God of his helpe, bitokeneþ trewe Cristene men þat dwellen in þis bileve; þes nyne þat ben many moo bitokeneþ men out of bileve, þat trowen þat it is ynouȝ þat her preest assoile hem, and specialy þe hey preest, how evere he erre in judgement, and how þei lyven bifore or after, þes men þat þus ben assoilid. And aȝens þis eresie shulde trewe preestis crye fast, for bi þis synne is synne hid, and assoilyng bouȝt and sold, as who so wolde bye an oxe or a cow, and myche more falsely. We shulden come aȝen to Crist, and confesse boþe his kyndis, and make covenaut wiþ him to leve oure synne from hennsforþ, and þenke how Crist bad þe woman go and wille no more do synne. For þis covenaut, kept wiþ sorwe of synne and Goddis grace is ynow, alle ȝif men speken no more wiþ preestis; but speche wiþ hem is nedeful in þat þat þei techen men þis treupe, and mennys ordenaunce may not reverse þis sentence; and þus we graunten þat ech þing þat Petre bonde or assoilid on erþe, or ony viker of Petre, in þat þat þei acorden wiþ God, is bounden or loosid in hevene, and ellis not, for ellis þei ben fals. And so ordenaunce of men in byndinge and assoilynge bryngiþ in many errours and lettਿþ trewe prechinge. But Bede seiþ þat þes leprouse men bitokenen heritikes of many colours þat shulden stonde aferr fro men, and turne to Crist bi riȝt feiþ, and knowe þat Crist bi his word myȝte have mercy on hem; and aftirward algatis þei shulden be aliens fro Pharisees<sup>a</sup>. And so alle synful men shulden crye mekely wiþ þes leprous, þat Crist þat is boþe God and man shulde have mercy on þer synne, for he is lord wiþouten eende, and þei han yvel wrappid him, and so her synne

Priestly absolution not efficacious unless the sin has been already absolved by God.

Sale of church pardons.

Bede's interpretation.

<sup>a</sup> The meaning seems to be, 'And these lepers would still be counted even then, after having been healed, aliens by the Pharisees.'

is so greet þat but if Crist of his power and of his grace forȝyve þis synne, it may never be forȝyven. And for þis þing seiþ þe Chirche in þer preyeris þat oure God makip moost his myȝt knowen in sparynge and havynge mercy; for ȝif Crist dide not so, no synful man myȝte be saved. But we shulde undirstonde þat as God is merciful so he is riȝtful, and hatip men þat breken covenant; and þefore holde we covenant to God, and disseyve we not oure silf, for God may not be disseyved, however preestis bigile us.

FE FIFTENÞE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTIR TRINYTE.

[SERMON XV.]

*Nemo potest duobus dominis servire.*—MATT. vi. [24.]

Þis gospel techip men hou þei shulden be bisye for blisse and leve oþer worldely bisynesse þat lettip men fro þis. First seiþ Crist þis principle þat ech man shulde trowe, *þat no man may wel serve two fulle lordes, for oþir shal he hate þe toon and love þe toþir, or susteynen cause of þe toon and dispise þe toþir*; þus algatis he serveþ amys.—If he serve hem togidere, þe cause is more pleyn; and if he serve first þe toon and siþ þe toþir, oþer he serveþ amys þe toon or þe toþir. In alle þes resouns we shul suppose þat þe gospel spekip of siche lordis þat nouþir is wel servaunt to ouþir, as ben God and þe fend; for if þer ben two lordis and þat oon serve wel þat oþir, a man may serve wel to hem boþe, as we seen al daie; but þe gospel undirstondiþ of siche cheefe lordis þat han not above hem anoþir cheef lord. And so is þis world dyvydid in two maner of lordshipis þat ben Goddis and þe fendis, for alȝif þe fend have no propre lordship<sup>a</sup>, neþeles he calengiþ to have greet lordshipe, and so

<sup>a</sup> Proper fiefs were those only which were held on condition of military service, in which case there was a mutual benefit. Improper fiefs were those held upon condition of various other kinds of service. The devil's lordship over

man is not 'proper,' because he has no right to demand of man that he should fight his battles for him; nor is his forced service to God 'proper,' because it is attended by no benefit to himself. See Hallam's *Middle Ages*, I. 181.

maugre his he serveþ to God, and þis servise is unpropre, as is þe fendis lordship, siþ he serveþ not God to his owne mede but aʒens his wille he profitiþ to Cristis Chirche, and þus for generalite of lordship of Crist, he seiþ, who is not wiþ him is aʒens him, and þus seiþ Crist wel, *þat we may not serve God and richesse of þe worlde, for þei ben contraries*; for as we may not serve þe fend wiþ servise of God, so we may not serve þe world þat is þe fendis servant. But in al þis speche we shal speke of riȝt servise and of unpropre servise þat þe fend mystakiþ, and þan we may see how siche heed servise may not acorde to God and to þe world. For ȝif a man traveile for goodis of þis world, and haþ riȝt entent for to worshiþe God, he serveþ not þe world, but it serveþ him. But it is ful hard to have siche riȝt entent, for sich entent mut be mesure of bisynesse, and noumber of traveile, and weiȝt<sup>1</sup> of mannys wille, and herfor forbediþ Crist bisynesse of foode and hilyyng, for aboute þes two þingis shulden men sonnest be bysye, and Crist spekiþ of bisynesse most principal in man. And so trewe men witen wele þat ech man shulde cast al his bisynesse in God, as seint Petre biddiþ, and þus seiþ Crist, *þat we shulde not be bisye to oure lyf what we shulden ete, ne to oure bodi what we shulde be cloþid wiþ*; for *sif lyf is more þan mete and mannis bodi more þan cloiþ, as God ȝyveþ man þes two, so wille he ordeyne for hem. Biholde ȝe þe foulis of þe eire, how þei sowen, neiþir repen, ne gederen not in to bernes, and ȝit God fedþ hem, and sif ȝe ben more worþ þan þei, God wole take more heed to you.* For as ȝe bisien ȝou not of þe bodi, so shulden ȝe not bisien ȝou of hilyyng þerof. For what wolde it profite to man *to bisye him þus about his bodi, sif he may not cast þerto a cubite*, over þat kynde ȝyveþ him. And þus siþ God bi kynde of man ordeyneþ for mannis bodi, he will ordeyne for þe lesse, how mannis bodi shulde be hilid. And ȝif þou seiþ þat many men bi þis shulde sterve for defaute of mete, wel Y wote bi my bileve þat no man shulde faile of mete unto harmyng of his soule, but ȝif his synne be cause þerof, and so þat it be good and just þat he faile þus of mete; and þus Y rede þat God bad foulis and pore folk fede his prophete, and fedde

1 Kings xvii.

<sup>1</sup> So in B; *wiȝte* in A, *weyȝt* in C.

him as best was to profite of his soule. *And of cloþis what ben ȝe bisye? loke ye to þe lylles of þe felde, how þei growe and ben cled and þei traveilen not þereaboute, ne spynnen for þer cloiþ, and ȝit Salomon in al his glorie was not cled as oon of þes is, for shap and coloure of lely flours is not made bi mannis crafte; and so, ȝif þe hay of þe feld þat now is, and to-morewe is brent, is þus cled bi Goddis wiȝ, myche more wolde he cloþe men, þat he telliþ more by.* And so litilnes of bileeve makij men þus to be bisy, for þei witen not what manere of þing is profitable for mannis soule, and so, *Be we not bisye what we shal ete or drynke or wiȝ what þingis oure bodi shal be atired, ffor al sich þingis seken heþen men faste, and so seke we first þe kingdom of God and riȝtuysnesse of him, and all siche þingis shal be cast to us.* Aȝens þis lore synnen men of þe world, ȝhe preestis and clerkes and men of religioun, for þei bisien hem for atire and for foode also, þat profitith not to þer soule, þat God forfendiþ here; and, for breking of þis heste brekiþ þe ten comandmentis, and al men of þis world ben ful nyȝ to breke it, þerfore Crist and hise apostlis, and Baptist, and oþer prophetis kepten hem ferr fro þis peril, lest þei slydun þerinne. And Crist wiȝ his disciplis wolde not be weddid wiȝ habitis ne manere of penaunt<sup>1</sup> metis, lest þei weren to bisie for nouȝt, and hou evere we denyen þat we ben to bisye here, neþeles Goddis lawe, þat is Crist, shal rykene wiȝ us and juge us at þe daie of dome, wher þis be soþ þat we seyen, and þan worship of þis worlde and curtais manere þat men axen shal not excuse us, but resoun shal be our juge.

DE SIXTEENþ SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER TRINITE.

[SERMON XVI.]

*Ibat Jesus in civitatem quae vocatur Naym.*—LUCAE vii. [II.]

Þis gospel telliþ of a myracle þat Crist dide of a deed bodi þat was þe secounde of þre þat Crist reiseid fro deþ to lyf. And so telliþ þe gospel þat *Jesus wente in to a cite þat is clepid Naym*

The raising of  
the widow's  
son at Naim.

<sup>1</sup> So in B; *penaut*, A; *poynant*, C; *penaunce*, E.

wiþ his disciplis and oþer puple. And whanne he cam nyȝ þe ȝate of þe citee, cam a cors þat was born to be biried, þat was a childe of a widowe, and myche puple of þe citee cam wiþ þis widowe and made sorewe. And whan Crist sawe þis widowe, he hadde mercy upon hir, and bad hir wepe not; but he went and touchide þe beere þat þei baren and þes men þat baren þe beere stoden stille to see the ende. And Crist seide to þe dede bodi, ȝoung man, Y bidde þe aryse; And þe ȝoung man þat was deed sale up and bigan to speke, and Crist ȝaf him to his modir. Al þe puple hadde drede, and preisiden God, and saiden, þat a greet prophete roos amonge hem, and þat God hadde visitid his puple, for this miracle þat þei seien. Þe gospel telliþ of þre dede bodies þat Crist reiseid fro deþ to lyf. Þe firste was þe persones douȝter þat he reiseid wiþin þe hous; þe secounde was þis widowes sone þat he quykede in þe ȝate; þe þridde was þe stynkyng careyne þat he quykide in þe grave. And þis bitokeneþ þree synnes þat God forȝeveþ in þis worlde. Þe firste bitokeneþ ful consense for to do aȝens God, but it comeþ not out in deede, as þe maide lay in þe hous. Þe secounde bitokeneþ þe secounde synne, whan a man to wickide wille putteþ to a wickide dede, but he comeþ not to custom as dide Lazarus þat was biried in a grave, and þis is þe ȝong man þat we speken of standing in þe ȝate. Þe þridde synne addiþ to þes two a long custom to ligge in synne, and þis is Lazar þat foure daies lay stynkinge in his grave. Þe secounde is a widowes sone, for siche synners wanten God, and so þei, failinge of spouse, of þe Chirche may wel be clepid a widowe, but þei han sorwe of her synne, and oþir neiȝboris also. Crist biddiþ þe beere stonde whan he ceessiþ men of her synne; and he touchiþ þe bodi, whane he ȝyveþ hem contricion, and he comandþ it to arise, whanne he comandþ medeful werkes, and þis man bigynneþ to speke, whanne he þankid God in grace, and Crist ȝyveþ him to his modir, whanne he makþ him helpe his Chirche. And þus wente Crist into Naym, whanne he entride newe to his Chirche; for Naym is as myche to say as flowynge or movynge, for þe Chirche first flowide wiþ synne, and siþ was moved to God by bemes of þe Holy Goost, whan it hadde grace to come to him. Wiþ Crist wente his disciplis and a greet route of folk, for

Mystical interpretation of the miracle.

many weren helpers of God to bringe his Chirche to rijt staat. Þe 3ate of þis citee is entree to religioun of Cristis Chirche, in which 3ate ben many 3onge men, blynde and deed goostli, for þei knowen not Cristis religioun how it passij alle oþir. And so in þis 3ate ben two maneres of dede men. To summe lokij Crist, and quykeþ hem in grace, and 3yveþ hem power and wille to come clene to his order. And wite þat al oþer ordris ben chargious to men as myche as þei adden to Cristis religioun, ffor noon addicioun is worþ but 3if Goddis lawe grounde it. Sum men ben deed in þis 3ate þat Crist aquykeþ not, but lasten in her olde errours to her deþ dai; and ben þes þat taken a lyf ungroundid in Goddis lawe, and þes men lasten in her errorr out of þe bondis of Goddis lawe, and ben born fro þe 3ate to be beried in helle. But þere is a privy quykenynge þat God doiþ neiþ þe deeþ, þat we can not telle of, but if God wil shewe it us, and þerefore folis jugement shulde be fled in þis mater; and þus þes men þat baren þis beere to putt þis deed man in erþe, ben men þat consenten and procuren to wickidnesse. And so upon þes þree synthes God haþ mercy here, but upon þe ferþe synne God ceessiþ never to punnishe, for þei synnen to þe deeþ, and so azens the Hooly Goost, þat God mut needis punishe wiþouten ende, for þis synne may have noon eende in helle. In þis mater we shulden bewar of peril of ypocrisie, for many feynen hem in statis, and done reverse in her lyf, and 3it þei seien þei ben perfiter þan weren þe first clerkis of Crist. And þus enemyes of Cristis religioun challengen to be of his ordre, al3if þey done even þe contrarie to name þat þei beren; as þe Pope shulde be moost meke man, moost ser-vysable and most pore, as we ben tauþt in Seint Petir þat was Pope next after Crist. And now men seyen þat þe Pope mote nedis reverse þis ordenaunce, and have more power for to do pingis þat touchen excellence, and þus bishopis þat shulden be clerkis and pore men, as apostlis weren, ben moost lordis of þis world, and reversen apostlis lyf. Sum tyme weren mounkes lewede men, as seintis in Jerusalem; and þanne þei kept hem silf fro synne as seynt Bernard beriþ witnesse; but now monkes ben turned unto lordis of þis worlde moost ydel in goddis travaile, and seyen þat þei ben betre monkes þan weren þe first

Attack on the hierarchy.



seintis. And so freris, þat weren breþeren in Crist, and not chargeous to þe Chirche, neiþir in noumbre ne in cloþing, ne in mete ne in housynge, ben even turned aȝen fro þe first lyf of hem, and ȝit bi þer ypocrisie þei blynden þe Chirche many ȝatis, and þus names of offices and names of virtues also ben changid bi ypocrisie, and cursed men reulen þe world.

ÞE SEVENTENÞE SONDAI AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON XVII.]

*Cum intrasset Jesus domum cuiusdam.*—LUC. xiv. [I.]

Þis gospel techiþ men how þei shal not by þer hiȝ staat hide þere synne, and disturble þe ordenaunce þat Crist haþ made. Þe story telliþ *hou Jesus entride in to a Pharisees hous on a Satirday to ete wiþ him, and þei aspieden to take him in defaute; and a syke man in dropesie was þer bifore Crist. And Jesus spake to wyse men of þe lawe, and to Pharisees, where it were leueful to hele in þe Sabot; and þei weren stille, lest þat resoun wente aȝens hem; but Crist toke þis syke man, and heelide him þanne bifore hem, and Crist axide hem þis demaunde, þat ȝif þer oxe or þer asse felle in þe diche, wolde þei not drawe him out in þer sabot daie; and þei wisten wel þat þei shulden by bileve of þere owen lawe, and þei myȝte not answeere him to denye þat he axide. And upon þis arguyde Crist þat myche more it were leueful to helpe in þe Sabot a man put in more peril, siþ þis work is more spirituel, and man is beter þan a beest. And, for þe synne of þese men stood in pryde of her statis, Crist tolde hem a parable, techinge hem how þei shulden chese þe first statis; þat God lovede moost, þat was moost meke statis, but þei chosen as proude men þe first statis to þe world. But Crist biddiþ in his parable, *Whan þou ert biden to þe feste, sitte not in þe first place, lest a more worshipful þan þou be beden to þe same feest, and þe lord of þe feste bidde þee, ȝive þis man stede, and put þee down out of þi place, and þan shalt þou bygynne wiþ shame for to holde þe last place. And herfore whan þou art beden to a feste, sitte down in þe last place,**

The healing of the man that had the dropsy.

so þat he þat hæþ beden þee seie to þee for þi mekenesse, *Frend stye more up; þanne shalt þou have worship and joie bifore hem þat sitten at þe feste.* For ech man þat heieþ him by presumpcioun shal be mekid bi God, and he þat mekiþ him in his soule shal be heyed bi God. Þere we shal undirstonde þat Crist spekiþ not here of worldely feste, ne of place, for þanne his sentence were nouȝt; for þan strif shulde be for place, and oonli oon shulde do Cristis bidding, and so Crist shulde ordeyne discencioun wiþouten fruyt among men; and herfore shulde we undirstonde þat þis feste is þe laste soper, þat shal be in heven of seintis aftir þe day of dome; and þe last place at þis feeste shulde be mannis reputacioun, bi whiche he shulde not presume to be in heven bifore oþers, but reste mekeli in þis þat he shal come to hevене. Eche man shal hope for to come to blisse; and if he lyve feibly and make þis hope fals, himsilf is cause whi his hope is suche. Ffor þis fals hope, þat sum men do clepen dispeir, shulde have an oþir qualite, and it shulde not be sich, whan we witen þat we shulden hope for to come to hevене, after we maken comparisoun bytwene us and oþers; and many men for pryde hopen to passe oþers, and suche presumpcioun of hope is sittinge here in hey place. We shulden reste in þis hope þat we shal come to hevене, and leve sich veyne comparisouns, lest we setten us here to hey, and þis is þe last place þat þe gospel spekiþ of. And þus siche false presumpcioun of heyenes of state, and aftir þis presumpcioun, of heyenesse in hevене, makip a man to come at þe laste to þe loweste place in þe world, þat is to seie, to depe helle, þat is þe myddil of þe world. And so spekiþ þe gospel on two weies of þe last place. The laste place here stondiþ in meke reputacioun, but þe last place at þe day of dome stondiþ in dampnacioun. And so knyttiþ Crist wel þe helynge of þis ydropesie, for as ydropesie is an yvel of fals gretenesse of mennys lymes, and comeþ of unkyndli watir bitwene þe fleish and þe skyn; so pride of worldly goodis, þat ben unstable as þe watir, makip a man in ydropesie, and falsely presume of himsilf; as many men in greet astaate and in ryches of þis worlde þenken þat þei shulden þus in heven be bifore oþir men. For, as þei supposen now, þei lyven to God aftir þer staat, and so þei profiten more in þis world þan

done men under hem, and after þat þei profiten more, þei shal be heizer in hevене, and so þei seien, as þei shulden hope to come to hevене, so shulde þei hopen here to be heier in hevене. But siche proude men, and presumptuous of her staat, shulden travail in virtues þat þei begilen not hem silf; and þerfore techiþ þe wise man, þat ever þe more þat þou be here, ever þe more meke þou shuldist be, in al manere of mekenes. And so, if þou be greet here, þou shuldist reste in þe last place, and suppose mekeli of þi silf wiþouten siche comparisoun. Ffor who is he þat may seie he serveþ God after his staat? and so statis here and statis in hevене, late or nevere acorden togidere, for fewe men here or noon serven God even to þer staat; and so statis of men may cause þer dampnyng deep in helle, and for uneven service here in statis, may men ben ful lowe in hevене.

þe lessoun of þis gospel is litil coud in þe Chirche, for lordis stryven wiþ hem silfe, and religiouse among hem silf, about heyenes of þer staat, and þe rote of al þis is pryde. And þei shulden wite þat states here ben harmful unto men, but zif men after her statis serven treuly to þer God; ffor falsnesse in statis makij men to be low or dampned.

The lesson of this gospel is aganst pride, both in the laity and the clergy.

þE EIȜTENþE SONDAI AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON XVIII.]

*Accesserunt ad Jesum Pharisei audientes.*—MATT. xxii. [34.]

þis gospel telliþ how Crist distroiede sectis, techinge us how we shulden travaille suying Crist in þis. þe storye of þe gospel seiþ þat *whan þe Phariseis hadden herd þat Crist hadde stemned<sup>1</sup> Saduceis, on of þe Phariseis, þat was a doctour of lawe, temptide Crist on þis wise, and axide him þis question, Maister, which is a greet mandement in þe lawe? And Jesus seide to him þus, þou*

<sup>1</sup> The reading of B is *stonyed*, i. e. astonished; C, *stoyed*, a 'y' being inserted by a later hand; *stemnyde*, E. Both Wycliffite versions have 'put to silence.'

shalt love þi Lord God of al þi herte, in al þi soule, and in al þi mynde; þis is þe firste and þe moste mandement of alle. And þis mandement is þe first of þre of þe first table, ffor þre of þe first table techen to love God, and conteyneþ þre partis answeringe to þe Trinite. It is seid comounly þat in tyme of Crist weren þre sectis of religions, Pharises, Saduceis, and Esses, but of þe two first makij þis gospel mencion. Þe firste was moost myzty, and þerfor it lastide lengest; for aboundance of goodis, and long rotyng in þe sect, defenden þes sectis, and maken hard to distroie hem. But Crist distriede þes sectis and savede þe persones; as Poul and Nichodeme weren makid bi grace Cristen men. And herfore seiþ þis gospel, þat Crist stemned<sup>1</sup> Saduceis, not þat he distriede hem, siþ he lovede þer persones; and so Crist distriede þe errours of Phariseis, as he distriede þe errours of þe oþer two. Sum men þenken lichly þat þis doctour þat here temptide Crist, dredde him of his sect þat Crist shulde distroien it, or ellis enfeblen it, as he distriede þe myddil sect, and þis is more lichly þan þat þis doctour dide for veyn glorie or to be holden<sup>2</sup> wise or to lerne Goddis lawe. He clepide Crist reverently maister, ffor it is manere of ypocritis and of sophists to fage and to speke plesantli to men, but for yvel entent. But oure Pharisees to dai done wel wers, ffor þei putten abac goddis lawe and magnifien þer ordres; and þus þei failen in þe first mandement, and so in al oþer. And many men trowen not ne supposen þat þei ben men of holi Chirche, but supposen þat þei ben lymes of þe fend. But he loveþ God of al his herte þat loveþ him of al his witt; and he loveþ God in al his lyf þat loveþ him in al his werkes; for Cristen men lyven in God, and ben moved to al her werkes; for Crist is forme of god, and in Crist we lyven, as Poul seiþ. And herfore we shal not take þe word of oure God in veyn. Þe þridde part of þis mandement, answerynge to þe Holy Goost, biddij þee love þi God in al þi mynde, siþ he is mynde of þe Fadir, and of þe Sone, and love of hem two; for undirstonding in a man, and acte of him, þat is his lyf, and refleccioun of lyf, þat is mynd

The modern Pharisees are supposed by many to be limbs of the fend.

<sup>1</sup> B here reads *stemmede*, in agreement with A; C has *stoned or stilled*.

<sup>2</sup> This is the reading of B; A has *bibolden*; *be boldun*. E.

and wille of soule, bitokeneþ to Cristene men her God, þat is þe Trinite. And herfore biddiþ Goddis lawe, have mynde to holde þin halidai. And þan we loven þis Trinite perfilti as we shulden, whan we loven it more þan ony oþir þing; and as many men þenken, 3if þis Pharisee kepte þis, he shulde leve þis straunge sect, as shulden þes newe religions.—*Þe secounde mandement*, þat is sevene, *biddiþ þe love þi neizbore as þou lovest þisilfe*, and þat art þou tauzt by kynde, *and in þese two mandements hongiþ al þe lawe and þe prophetis*. *And whan þe Farisees were gedrid, Crist axide hem a questioun of þing þat þei shulden bileve, What hem þouzt of þe kynde of Crist, and, whos sone Crist is; and þei seiden, He is David sone; and Crist replied azens þis, how David clepide him his lord, siþ Crist is David sone, and porer man þan David was.* Þe psalm telliþ how David seide of þe Fadir and þe Sone, *Þe Lord, þe Fadir, seide to my Lord, Sitte up on my riht side as long as Y putt þi enemyes in helle a stool undir þi feet*. And siþ þis dampnyng shal be ever, God grantide here to Crist þat he shulde ever sitt in hevене on his Fadir riht hond; *Ffor 3if David clepþ him Lord, how is pore Crist David sone? And þei myzte not here answeere Crist, ne dursten not axe him more fro þat dai.*—And here convyctide Crist þes men of open untreuþe in hir bileve; and so mente privily þat þes sectis shulden be distried, siþ he shal reprove þe worlde of þe synne of untreuþe. And it semeþ to many men þat alle þes sectis synnen þus, for þei loven not hir God as þe gospel biddeþ here; for 3if þei loveden wel God, þei shulden kepe þis word of him. Generaly þes newe sectis loven more þer owen ordre þan þei done þe ordre of Crist, which he 3af his owne persone; and þan þei loven her sect more þan þei loven þe sect of Crist. Þis sect of Crist by þat is lasse þat þei putten in þes newe sectis; siþ þei, kepinge Cristis secte, bi þat maken his sect more; and it is oon to love a þing and to willen þat þing good; but þei wolden þat al þis world were suget unto þer sect. And, Lord! if þat men wolden undirstonden, what it is to love a þing; and whanne men loven, loven þer god over al oþir þingis; þanne heresie of þes newe sectis, and oþir errours in þe worlde shulden be more knowen unto folk þan þei ben now for ypocrisie. Þes ypocritis seien þat þer sectis and al þe deedis þat þei done is groundid upon

The new sects  
love their own  
order more  
than the order  
of Christ.

Crist, and is Cristis religioun; and so þei have none newe ordris, but new customes, þat þei may leve; and so þei shulden seie bi resoun þat þer be not many ordris of freris, ne accepcons of persones to helpe or to punishe men; siþþe ech man of Cristis religioun is of alle manere ordre; and so lawe of apostataas and of oþir reulys þat þei have founden, shulden ben contrarye to hemsilf, as freris dedis reversen þis lawe.

ÞE NYNTENÞE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON XIX.]

*Ascendens Jesus in naviculam.*—MATT. ix. [I.]

Þis gospel telliþ of a miracle þat Crist dide before þe peple, and þerwiþ reprevyde þe scribis; and how he doiþ awei synne. Þe story telliþ how *Jesus steyze in to a boot, and cam to his citee,* and it is seid comounly þat *he rowide to Galilee, and cam in to Nazareb, þat was citee of his birþe, and þere þey brouzten him a syke man by palsie, liynge in a bedde. And Jesus seyng her bileve, seide unto þis syke man, Have trust, sone, þi synes ben now forzoven bee. And sum scribis seiden wiþinne hemsilf, Jesus blasfemþ in þis word. And whan Crist saw hir þouztis wiþinne, he seide, Whereto þei þouzten þus yvel in her hertis?* And bi þis word he tauzte hem þat he was God, for oonli God mai þis wise wite, what a man þenkiþ wiþynne. Crist axide hem, *Where is it lizter, to seie, þi synnes ben forzoven bee, or ellis to seie, rys and go?* as 3if Crist wolde mene þis resoun, he þat haþ power to do þat oon, haþ power to do hem bope. *And Jesus seide, For 3e shulde wite þat Y have power to forzove synne, he seide to þe man in palasie, Rys and take bi bedde anoon and go hool in to þi hous. And he aroos and wente in to his hous on þat manere þat Crist bad him, and þe puple seyng þis þing dreden, and glorifeden God bat 3af siche power to men.* As to Jesus and his disciplis, þis storye of Crist may betoken þe lyf þat Crist lyvede here; so þat þe takyng of his boot bitokeneþ his manheed, or þe bodi of his modir; for mannis bodi is liche a boot. In þis boot Crist

The miracu-  
lous cure of  
the paralytic.

Mystical inter-  
pretation.

wente over þe water of peynes of þis worlde, and wente not oonli into hevene, þat is propre citee of Crist, but into Nazareþ, in which Crist dide þis miracle. But boþe men and aungels offred to Crist mankynde, þat was smyten in palesie; for pro-pirte of þis yvel palasie is a sikenesse groundid in synewis of a man, þe which sinowis ben unstable to move a man as þei shulden; and moistnes of þes senewis þat ben wrappid in moist þing is a cause of þis yvel, as philosophris seyen. Shaking in þe palesie is unstabilnesse of bileve; for eche article of þe troupe shulde have a synowe for to lede it, and al þes articlis shulde come of Crist, þat is heed of holy Chirche. And, for þes þat offriden þis man ben o persone wiþ him, þerefore biddiþ þe gospel wel, þat Cristis sone shulde truste in him, and Crist forþeveþ him first his synne of untreuþe þat he was inne, for untreuþe is þe first synne þat comeþ unto man, and it fel not to þis lord to 3yve but a greet 3yfte, siþ ech 3yfte þat man 3yveþ shulde answer to þe 3yver. But scribis þat knowen not Cristis godhede seien þat Crist blasfemed in þis, for al oonli God may for3yve synnes; but Crist techiþ þat he is God bi þe werkes þat he doiþ, for it is yliche<sup>1</sup> li3t to do miraclis bi himsilf, and to for3yve synnes, for noon but God may do þes þingis. And herfore Crist helide mankynde of his goostly palesie, and put bileve in oþir men þat Crist hadde power to do þus, and þus wente mankynde, þat God hadde ordeyned unto blisse, fro error of his olde synne into þe hous of Cristis Chirche.

But here men douten of þe letter, wher prelati may for3yve synne, and it semeþ þat þei may, for preestis may assoile of synne, and it is al oon to assoile men of synne and to for3yve þe same synne. And it semeþ þat preestis mai not for3yve synnes unto men, for þere is noo synne here but 3if it be offence of God; but no man mai forþeve þis but 3if it be God him silfe. And so it semeþ þat oure prelati may not here for3yve synne. Soþ it is þat men mai here for3yve trespas done to hem, and remitte mannis iniurie as much as in hem is, but not remitte uttirly synne done aȝens God. Here it is nede to undirstonde how preestis assoilen men of synne, and how preestis for3yven synne,

Limits of  
priestly  
absolution.

<sup>1</sup> *ilich*, B; *eliche*, C.

for boþe ben conseved wel and yvel: preestis may assoile of synne if þei acorden wiþ keies of Crist, and if þei discorden fro þes keies, þei feynen hem falsely to assoile. And so on two maneres men may be assoilid of her synnes; and first pryncipaly of God whan Goddis injurie is forþoven; and þe secounde is assoiling by a turne þat preestis han; and if þis assoilinge be trewe, þei kepen þe boundis þat God ȝaf hem, and þis assoilinge han preestis as vikers of goddis wille. And þere lien many disseitis in suche absolucioun, for if þis assoilinge be trewe, it mut acorde wiþ Cristis assoilinge, and to such assoilinge is needful boþe witt and power. And so on two maneres may a man remitte or deny þe trespas þat is done to him, and so remitte synne; first remitte wronge of God, þat is propred unto God, or ellis dismitte wronge of his broþer in þat þat it is made aȝens him. And so remission is complete þat perteyneþ oonly to God, or ellis remissioun incomplete þat men shulden have generally, for ellis Crist wolde not teche men to preie on þis maner, Forȝyve us, Lord, oure dettes of synne, as we forȝyven oure dettours. ȝif ony man wolde telle more pleynly þis sentence bi Goddis lawe, Y wole mekeli assente þerto, ȝif þei grounden þat þei seien; and ȝif ony man prove þis fals or aȝens Goddis lawe þat Y have seid now here, Y wole revoked it mekeli, but wele Y marke þat þis gospel seiþ þat God ȝaf *sich* power to men, but þis gospel seiþ not þat God ȝaf *þis* power to men.

PE TWENTIÞE SONDAY GOSPEL AFTIR TRINITE.

[ S E R M O N X X . ]

*Loquebatur Jesus cum discipulis.*—MATT. xxii. [1.]

Þis gospel telliþ in a parable what men shulde trowe of þis Chirche fro hennes to þe dai of dome, as it is touchid sumwhat bifore.

*Jesus spake wiþ hise discipulis in parablis and seide þus. Þe rewme of hevene is maad liche unto a man þat is a kyng, þat made wedding to his sone; and sente his servauntis to clepe þes men þat*

WYCLIF.

The parable of the marriage of the king's son.



weren beden to þe brydale; and, for þei wolden not come, he sente opir servauntis and seide, Seie 3e to men þat ben beden, Lo Y have made redy my mete, my boles and my volatils<sup>1</sup> a ben kild, and al opir þingis ben redy; come 3e faste to þe feste. But þei dispisiden his biddinge, and sum wente into his toun, and sum into his chaf-farynge, and token þis kyngis servauntis, and punishiden wiþ conteke<sup>2</sup> and killiden hem. And þe kyng, whan he say þis, was wroop, and sente his ostis, and loste þes mansleeris, and brente hir citee; and seide þan to his servauntis, Metis of þis bridale ben redy, but men clepid were not worthi; þerfore go 3e to eendis of weies, and whomever 3e finde clepe ye to þe mete. And þes servauntis wenten out, and gedriden men al þat þei founden boþe good and yvel, and þe bridale was fulfillid wiþ men sittinge at þe mete; al 3if þei weren not alle ful served. Þe Kyng cam in to se his gistis, and saw þere oon wiþoute bride clobis, and seide to him, Frend, how entredist þou hider wiþouten bride clobis? and he was doumbe. And þan þe lord bade hise servauntis to bynde him boþe hondis and fete, and sende him into utter derknesse, þere shal be wepyng and gnastige of teep. For many ben clepid and fewe ben chosen. Þe kyndom of hevene is þe Chirche, þat takij name of þe Heed, as þe gospel spekiþ comounly; and so þis rewme is liche a kyng; þat is þe Fadir in Trinite; and þis kyng made a mariage to Crist þat is his sone, and to þis Chirche þat is his spouse, and to damyselis þerof. For, as Salomon seiþ, foure degrees ben in þis Chirche; sum ben quenes, sum ben lemmannes, and sum damyselis; but oone is spouse þat conteyneþ alle þes þree, and þat is al holi Chirche. And þus þere ben many chirches, and a newe chirche wiþ Crist; 3he al þe chirche of men and aungels is newid bi þe Incarnacioun.—Þe servantis of þis spouse bidden men to þe feste, whan þei moven men to come to blisse bi þer just lyfe; and þes servantis weren prophetis and apostolis of Goddis two lawes; but þei weren clepid specialy whan Cristis birþe was shewid hem, for as it was seid bifore, þan alle þingis weren made redi; and many men in boþe

Interpretation  
of the parable.

<sup>1</sup> volatiles, E.      <sup>2</sup> contect, B; contec, E; conteke, C; this is unquestionably the right reading; see Glossary.

<sup>a</sup> That is *poultry*, Fr. *volaille*.

þes tymes wolden not come þus to þis feste. After þes servantis he sent opir, as men þat nexte sueden þe apostlis; and bolis and volatils weren slayn, and mete was redy to þis feste. Þe boles bitokenen þe olde fadris, as patriarkes and David, for þei diden bataillis of God, and turneden his enemyes wiþ her hornes, and ȝit þei kepten ful bisili þe grete mandementis of God. Þe volatils þat serven seyntis at þe secounde cours of þis feste ben seintis of þe newe lawe þat wiþ þes mandementis kepten Cristis conseilis; and ȝit men forsoken to come notwiþstandinge sample of þes seintis. And sum wenten aftir lordship of þis worlde, and sum after chaffare of þis worldely richesse; but sum slowen Cristis servauntis, as emperours of Rome and preestis. Þe king of hem was wroop herfore, and sente his oostis out to Jerusalem and slow þes sleeris of Crist, and brent þer citee, as Josephus telliþ. And þis dede done in Jerusalem þe two and fourty ȝeer after þe deef of Crist bitokeneþ þe vengeance of God for sleing of Cristis membris. And þus men þat stoonden bihynde, boþe in þe olde lawe and in þe newe, weren unworþi to fille þe nombre þat God ordeynede to be saved. And now in þes laste daies God bade hise servantis clepen men boþe good and yvel in to þe Chirche þat weren out of þe riȝt weye, and wenten bi weyes of errours þat weren hard for to wende; and so as Petir in his first fishinge toke two manere of fishes, sum dwelliden in þe nette, and sum borsten þe nette and wenten away; so here in þis Chirche ben sum ordeyned to blisse and sum to peyne, al if þei lyven justly for a tyme. And so men seien comounly þat pere ben here two manere of chirches, holy Chirche or Chirche of God, þat on no manere may be dampned, and þe chirche of þe fend, þat for a time is good, and lastiþ not; and þis was nevere holy Chirche, ne part þerof.

But þe king aftir þis feste came in at þe dai of dome, for God shewiþ him þanne to alle, for he knowiþ alle mennes lyf; and þes þat wolden not laste in grace weren not clopid in bride clopis; and alle þes ben o man þat hadde noo witt to answeere God. But, for þis man wiþ parts of him profitide to Cristis Chirche, and was of þe same kynde wiþ Crist, Crist clepiþ him friend, as he dide Judas; but alle þes men can not answeere how

þei entren in to þe Chirche, for it was told hem opynli þat þei ben traitours but if þei lasten, and ben more worpi to be dampned þan men þat nevere entriden þus. And so al siche men token peyne bi just jugement of God, þat þer willis shulden be bounden and þer profitable werkes, and shulden be cast in to helle, where men shulden wepe and gnaste wiþ teep; wepynge shal be sensible sorowe, and gnastynges shal be wantinge of blisse. Wherefore men shal moost grutche, siþ þei myzt listly have come to blisse, and aftir þis þei shal have noo wille neiþer to desire ne to wirche wel, and þus many men ben clepid, but few ben chosen to blisse.

DE OON AND TWENTIEÞ SONDAI GOSPEL AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON XXI.]

*Erat quidam regulus.*—JOH. iv. [46.]

Þis gospel telliþ how a kyng, þat sum men seien was an heþene man, bilevede in Crist, and disserved to have a miracle of his sone. Þe story seiþ, *how in Galilee was dwelling a litil kyng, in þe citee of Capharnaum þat hadde a sone ful syke of þe feveris. And whanne he herde telle þat Jesus come fro Jude to Galilee, he came and mette him on þe wey, and preiede him come doun and hele his sone, for he was in point of deef. And Crist seide to þis kyng, to amende his bileve, 3e bileven not in Jesus but if 3e se signes and woundris; as þis man bilevede not in þe godhede of Crist, for if he hadde, he shulde have trowide þat Crist myzte have savyd his sone 3if he hadde not bodily come to þis syke man and touchid him; but þis kyng had more herte of helpe of his sone þan he hadde to be helid of untreuþe þat he was inne, and þerfore he tolde not herby but axide eft Crist to hele his sone. And in þis forme of wordis<sup>1</sup> in which he shewide his untreuþe, Lord, he seide, come doun bifore þat my sone die.* But Jesus, as wise lord and merciful, heclide his sone

The healing  
of the noble-  
man's son

<sup>1</sup> wormes, B; wordis, C and E.

in siche manere þat he myzte wite þat he was boþe God and man; *Go, he seide, þi sone lyveþ.* And þerwiþ Crist tauzte his soule boþe of his manhede and godhede, and ellis hadde not þis king trowid; but þis gospel seiþ þat he trowid, and al his hous; and upon þis treuþe *he wente homward and mette his men upon þe wey, þat tolden him þat his sone shulde lyve, for he is coverid of his yvel.* And he axide whan his sone ferde beten, and þei seiden, *þat ȝistirdai þe sevenþe houre þe feveres forsoke þe child.* And þe fadir knewe bi his mynde þat it was þe same houre þat Crist seide, *þi sone lyveþ, and herfore bilevede he and al his hous in Jesus Crist.* And þefore Jesus seide soþ, þat he and men liche to him trowen not but if þei se boþe signes and woundris; it was a signe of þe sike child þat he dide werkes of an hool man<sup>a</sup>, but it was a greet woundir þat bi virtue of þe word of Crist a man so ferre shulde ben hool, for so Crist shewide þat he is virtue of Godhede, þat is everywhere; and þis virtue mut be God, þat dide þus þis myracle.

The inner sense of Scripture.

Þis stori seiþ us þis secounde witt þat God ȝyveþ to holy writt, þat þis litil kyng bitokeneþ a mannis witt bi synne slyden fro God, þat is but a litil king in regard of his maker; and his sone was syke on þe feveris, as weren þes heþene folke and þer affeccions þat comen of þer soulis; but þei hadden a kyndli wille to wite þe treuþe and stonde þereinne. Þis kyng cam fro Capharnaum, þat is, a feld of fatnesse<sup>b</sup>; for man fattid and alardid<sup>1</sup> wendip away fro God. Þis mannis witt, whanne he herde þat Jesus cam to heþen men, and þat bitokeneþ Galilee, þat is, transmigracioun<sup>c</sup>, mette wiþ Jesus in pleyn weie, and lefte his heþene possessioun, and preide God to heele his folke þat weren syke bi goostly fevere. But Crist sharpide þes mennis bileve, for feiþ is first nedeful to men, but undirstonding of man preide Crist come doun bi grace bifore mannis affeccion die

<sup>1</sup> *alargid* in B and C; but A probably preserves the true reading; *largid*, E.

<sup>a</sup> The meaning seems to be, 'It was a *sign* that the sick child should be healed at all; it was a *wonder* that he should be healed though a great distance off.'

<sup>b</sup> Capharnaum, *i. e.* Kapharnaoum, means 'hamlet of Nahum.' (Bib. Dict.)

<sup>c</sup> See p. 30, note.

aboute erþely goodis. But, for men trowiden þe godhede of Crist, þei weren hool of þis fevere, whan þei forsoken þis world and putte þer hope in hevenly goodis. Þes servauntis ben low virtues of þe soule, which, worching ioyfulli, tellen mannis witt and his wille þat þis sone is hool of fevere. Þis fevere bitokeneþ shakyng of man bi unkyndli distempoure of abundaunce of worldely goodis, þat ben unstable as þe water; and herfore seiþ Seint Jame þat he þat doutiþ in bileve is lyke to a flood of þe see þat wiþ wynde is born aboute.—Þat þes servauntis tolden þis king þat in þe sevenþe houre fevere forsoke þis childe, bitokeneþ a greet witt, as Robert of Lincoln shewiþ. First it bitokeneþ þat þis fevere goiþ away fro mannis kynde bi seven ziftes of þe Holy Goost, þat ben undirstonden bi þes houres. And þis clerk dividiþ þe dai in two halves bi sixe houres, so þat al þe daie bitokeneþ lizt of grace þat þat man is inne. Þe firste sixe houres bitokenen joy þat man haþ of worldely þing, and þis is bifore spiritual joy, as utter man is bifore spiritual. But in þe firste houre of þe secounde halve leveþ gostly fever man, for who so evere have worldely joie, 3if he have grace on sum manere, 3it he trembliþ in sum fevere aboute goodis of þe world; but anoon in þe sevenþe hour, þat is þe firste of þe secounde halfe, whan wille of worldely þingis is lefte, and spiritual þingis begynen to be loved, þan þis shakynge passiþ fro man, and goostli helpe comeþ to þe spirit. And so shadewis of lizt of sunne fro þe sevenþe houre in to þe niȝt ever wexen more and more, and þat bitokeneþ goostli, þat vanite of þis world semeþ ay more to mannis spirit til he come to þe ende of þis lyf to lyf þat ay shal laste. And so þis man trowiþ in God, boþ wiþ undirstonding and wille, wiþ al þe maynè of his hous, whan al his wittis and alle his strengþis ben obeshinge to resoun, whan þis fever is þus passid. Of þis undirstondinge men may take moral witt how men shal lyve, and large þe mater as hem likeþ.

James i. 6.

Direction to  
preachers

ÞE TWO AND TWENTIÞE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON XXII.]

*Simile est regnum caelorum homini.*—MAT. xviii. [23.]

The parable of  
the indebted  
servant

Þis gospel telliþ bi a parable how bi riȝt judgement of God men shulden be merciful.—*Þe kyngdom of hevene, seiþ Crist, is lyke to an erþeli kyng þat wolde ryken wiþ hise servauntis. And whanne he hadde bigun to rekoun, oon was offrid unto him þat owid him ten thousand besantis, and whan he hadde not to paye of, þe lord bad he shulde be soold, his wyf and his children and al þat he hadde, and þat þat he ouȝt þe lord shulde be algatis paid. Þis servant fell down and praiede þe lord and seide, Have pacience in me, and Y shal quyte þee al. Þe lord hadde mercy on him, and forȝaf him al his dette. Þis servant went out and found oon of hise dettours, þat ouȝt him an hundred pens; and toke him and stranglide him, and bade him paie his dette. And þis servant felle down and praiede him of pacience, and he shulde bi tyme ȝelde him al þat he ouȝte him. But þis man wolde not, but wente out and putte him in prisoun, til he hadde paid þe dette þat he ouȝte him. And obir servauntis of þis man, whan þei seyen þis dede, mourneden ful myche, and tolden al þis to þe lord. And þe lord clepid him, and seide unto him, Wickide servant, al þi dette Y forȝaf þe, for þou preiedist me; ne bihoved þee not to have mercy on þi servant, as Y hadde mercy on þee? And þe lord was wroþ, and ȝaf him to turmentours, til he hadde paid al þe dette þat he ouȝte him. On þis manere, seiþ Crist, shal my Fadir of hevene do to you, but ȝif ye forȝyve, ech on to his broþir, of ȝour free herte þe trespas þat he haþ done him.*

Interpretation.

Þe kyngdom of hevene is holy Chirche, of men, þat now travailen here; and þis Chirche bi his heed is lyke to a man kyng, for Crist, heed of þis Chirche, is boþe God and man. Þis kyng wolde ryken wiþ his servantis, for Crist haþ wille wiþouten ende to rykene wiþ men at þre tymes. First, Crist rykeneth wiþ men whan he techiþ hem bi resoun how myche þei han hadde of him, and hou myche þei owen him; þe secounde tyme Crist

rykenef wiþ men, whan in þe houre of mannis deef he telliþ hem at what point þes men shal ever justli stonde; þe þridde rekenyng is general, þat shal be at þe daie of dome, whan þis jugement generali shal be opynli done in dede. As anentis þe first rekenyng, Crist rekeneþ wiþ riche men of þis worlde, and shewiþ hem, how myche þei owen him, and shewiþ bi riȝt-wisnesse of his lawe how þei and þeires shulden be sold, and so make aseef<sup>a</sup> bi peyne of þingis þat þei perfourmeden not in dede. But many sich men for a tyme have concupcioun in herte, and preien God of his grace to have pacience in hem, and þei shal in þis lyf serve to Crist treuly. And so Crist forȝeveþ hem upon þis condicioun. But þei wenden out, and suen not Crist þer lord in mercy, but oppresen þer servauntis þat owen þem but a litil dette, and putten hem in prisoun, and þenken not on Goddis mercy; and oþir servantis of God boþe in þis lyf and in þe toþir tellen to God þis felnes, and preien him of venjance. No doute God is wrooþ at þis, and at two rekenyngis wiþ man, he resounef þis cruel man, and jugiþ him justli to peyne.

And þefore Crist biddiþ, bi Luk, al men to be mercyful, for þer Fadir of heven þat shal juge hem is mercyful. But we shul undirstonde bi þis, þat þis mercy þat Crist axiþ is noþing aȝen resoun, and so bi þis just mercy men shulen sum tyme forȝyve, and sum tyme shulden þei punishe, but ever bi resoun of mercy. Þe resoun of mercy stondiþ in þis; þat men myȝten do cruely þei done justly for Goddis sake, to amendement of men; and men may mercyfully reprove men, and punishe hem, and take of hem þere just dettis for beterynge of þese dettours. On þis manere doþ God þat is ful of mercy, and seiþ þat he reproveþ and chastisiþ his wantoun children þat he loveþ; and þus Crist reproveþ Pharisees, and punishide preestis wiþ oþir peple, and punishiþ mercifulli alle dampned men in helle, for it stondiþ not wiþ his riȝt þat he punishe but mercifulli. God ȝyveþ goodis of kynde bi grace to þes men þat he dampneþ, and if he punishide hem more, ȝit he medliþ mercy. But here men shulden be ware þat al þe goodis þat þei han ben goodis of her God, and þei nakide servantis of God; and þus shulden þei warly flee to take

Luke vi 36.

<sup>a</sup> By suffering pain, make amends for neglected duties.

pere owen venjance, but venge injurie of God, and entenden amedement. Þus Crist, mekist of all, suffride his owne injurie in two<sup>1</sup> temptaciouns of þe fend, but in þe þridde he saide, Go, Sapan, and reprovede him sharpli bi autorite of God.—Þus Moises, myldest man of alle, killide many þousand of his folk, for þei worshipiden a calfe, as þei shulden worshipe God. And þus in oure werkes of mercy lieþ myche discrecioun, for ofte tymes oure mercy axiþ to venge and to punishe men, and ellis justises of mannis lawe shulden nevere punishe men to þe deef, but ofte tymes þei done amys, and þei witen not whan þei done wele, and so religioun of preestis shulde leve sich jugementis.

ÞE ÞRE AND TWENTIFE SONDAI GOSPEL.

[SERMON XXIII.]

*Abeuntis Phariseei.*—MATT. xxii. [15.]

ÞE stoyre of þis gospel telliþ how þe Phariseeis casten to disseve Crist bi wordis of ypocrisie. *And so þe Phariseeis wendinge out, fro þe weye of treuþe, maden a conseil bi hem silfe to take Jesus in speche, and first þei spaken fagyngge wordis, as ypocritis doen, but 3it þei senten her disciplis, and comen not hemsilf, lest þei weren convictid bi wisdom of Crist. Þei sente to Crist two pupilis, Jewis and Erodians, to witesse a3en him what ever he hadde seide, or a3en þe Jewis, or a3en þe emperoure. Maister, þei seiden, we witen wel þat þou art sad trewe, and þe weie þat lediþ to God þou techist in treuþe, (and þou takist noon heede of man, but booldli techist þe soþe,) for þou reckest of no man but puttist God bifore. And afir þei axiden þis questioun of Crist, þat he shulde telle þat him þou3t, and not bi oper mennis witt, where it where leweful to 3yve taliage to þe emperour. Hem þou3te þat Crist shulde nedis seie 3he or nay; 3if he seide 3he, he spake a3en þe Jewis, for þei calengiden of*

Paying tribute  
to Caesar

<sup>1</sup> So in B and C; A has *to*.



þer fadirys to be suget to no man; and 3if he seide nay, he were azens þe emperoure, and so on ech side hem þouzte þat Criste was take. But Crist shewide first þe purpos of þes ypocritis. Whan Jesus knewe þe wickidnesse of þes fals men, he clepide hem ypocritis, *and axide whereto þei temptiden him.* And eftē Crist toke a meene weye, anopir þan þei þouzten on; *Shewe ze me, seide Crist, þe moneye of þe taliage; and þei shewiden him a peny. And Crist axide over, whos ymage is þis, and whos writing above? And þei seiden, it was þe emperours. And Crist gaf hem þis answeere, general and sutil, 3yve ye to þe emperoure þat is his, and to God þat is His.* Bi which word it semeþ þat Crist approvede þe emperour and subiection to him in þat þat he makij Goddis pees; and servise propre to God shulde be kepte to Him; and so Cristis wordis myzte no man disprove.

Here men may touche þe malice of ypocrisie, for þere is no wers synne, ne more general, ne more venymous; for it is more yvel þat it þus contrarieþ to treuþe, siþ an ypocrite feyneþ him holy, and he is a fals fend. And herfore reprovēde Crist ypocrisy of ordris, for he wiste wel þat þei shulden after do more harm in þe world. Ffirst sich ypocritis lyen on hemsilfe, and seien þei done for holynesse what evere þat þei done, and so þei venymen first hem silf, and afterward oþer men. And it is more general þan many oþir synnes, for ech state of men is blemysid wiþ þis synne, but first and moost, religions and clerkes, for þere is no spedy cause whi þei usen siche habitis but to devyde hem in holynesse fro þe common peple, siþ as medeful werkes myzten þei done in seculer habitis, and more privily, as Crist biddij us be holy. And herfore Crist biddij to be war wiþ sour dow of Phariseis, siþ þere is no resoun to ypocrisy but to shewe menys synne<sup>1</sup>, and to disseve on ech side boþ þe ypocritis hem silfe and oþir men þat dwellen wiþ hem. And so her religioun serveþ to crye þat þei ben holy, and to make dyvysioun bitwixe hem and oþer men. And siþ liknes is cause of love amonge men, sich dyvysioun is cause of envye and hate. Goddis lawe and kynde techij þat ech beest loveþ beest like to him, and so experience techij þat oon ordre loveþ his broþir more þan a strange man

The evils of  
hypocrisy,  
especially that  
of the 'orders.'

<sup>1</sup> So B and C; A reads *lyve*

aȝen þe reule of charite. And sich gedring of lumpis bi sensible signes haþ not autorite of Crist but raþer preuving. For upon Good Friday Crist ordeynede him to be cloþid þries aȝens sich weddinge wiþ cloþis of colour and shap; and as Crist seiþ in reprof of siche sectis, Kynrede of hordom sekij siche signes; alle þe dedes þat þei done sownen to ypocrisie, and aȝens no men spake Crist sharplier.

And alȝif freris seien þat þei beggen for charite, whan þei have prechid for siche beggyng, and þat Crist beggid so, and bad hem begge þus, neþeles al þis speche is poudrid wiþ gabbinge, and, as ypocritis done, þei seken þer owen auantage and not þe worship of Crist, ne to profite of his Chirche. For if þei diden, þei wolden sue Cristis reule, and leue charyng of þe puple boþe in noumbre and begging, and leue her heye housis þat þei propren unto hem, siþ Crist hadde no propre hous to reste in his heed. And as Macometis lawe takij myche of Cristis lawe, and meddlij oþir lawis, and þere comeþ in venym, so doij Anticrist in þes newe sectis; and as þei bringen in breþeren bi falskede of lesyngis, so ben þer ordris groundid in falskede in ech side. And siche men mote needis disturbe holy Chirche; and þus seculer clerkes ben ful of ypocrisie, boþ popis and bishopis and clerkes under hem. Crist forfendide to putte miraclis þat he had done to þe manhede of him for errour in bileve; but þe fend dredij not to feyne absolucious and indulgencis wiþ oþir ȝiftis, þat God grantide nevere, to spuyle men of her money, and not for soule hele; for þan wolden þei ȝyve freely þes ȝiftis, as Crist ȝaf himsilf and bad oþirs do. And þus lower clerkes traveilen bi water and bi londe for to have benefices and propre possessions, more þan þei done for helpe of mannis soulis; and how ever þei speken, þei lyven al in ypocrisie; and þus whan men fiȝten, pleden, or chiden, charite is not þere ende, but pride and propre havynge. And þus it is of seculers þat ben weddid men; and so charite of men is blyndid bi ypocrisie, so þat no synne of þis world lettij now more charite; and so ypocrisie is more general synne, and more pryvy sin to begile men, and werst to distroien þe comoun peple, and al þis figureden Pharisees aȝens Jesus Crist.

Friars ought  
not to beg,  
nor have great  
houses

DE FOURE AND TWENTIÞE SONDAI AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON XXIV.]

*Loquente Jesu ad turbas, ecce princeps*<sup>1</sup>.—MATT. ix. [18.]

Þis gospel telliþ of þe firste dede bodi þat Crist reiseide to lyf, and how Crist helide a womman as he wente þidir. Þe storie telliþ þat, *as Crist spake to þe folk, a prince came to him and worshipide him wiþ honoure, and seide to him, Sire my douzter is now deed, but come and putte þi hond on hir and she shal lyve*, bi vertue of þe. We shal undirstonde þat in tyme of Crist weren princes of preests, as princis of knyztis, as Nichodeme was a prince, and bishopis of Jerusalem weren clepid princes of preestis, and þis man here, þat was keper of a synagoge, as now ben persones; and þes men hadden comounly wyves and children, as preestis han wers now, for þei han out of wedloke. And *Jesu roos up, and suede þis prince, and his disciplis*, for he was redi to do good, and as he wente, *a syke womman by flix of blood þat lastide xii wynter came bihynde Jesus and seide to hir silf, If Y touche þe hemn of þe cole of Jesus, Y shal be safe for holynes of him. And Jesus turnede agen, and lokide on hir, and say her bileve, and saide þus to hir, Affie þe, douzter, þi bileve haþ made þee saif. And þe womman was saved from þe same hour.* Þe gospel of Matheu telliþ ferþer, *hou Crist came to þe hous of þis prince þat þe wenche lay deed inne; and whan Crist say mynystralis, and folk makinge nois, he badde hem go þenne, for þe wenche is not dede but slepiþ. And þei scorneden Crist, for þei wenden þat he had errid. And whan þe folk was cast out, Crist wente in to þe hous, and toke þe hond of þe wenche, and saide, Wenche, rys up. And þe wenche roos, and dide werkes of lyf.*

The healing of the woman with an issue of blood, and the raising of Jairus' daughter.

Clerical celibacy.

It is seid bifore<sup>a</sup> how þis firste bodi þat Crist reiseide from dep to life bitokeneþ siche men þat ben goostly deed, for ful concense to synne; but þei do not þe dede wiþout; and þat is bitokned þat þe wenche was in þe hous ȝit. Þis prince is mannis þouȝt, þat kyndly haþ sorewe þat þe spirit of it is þus fillid wiþ synne;

<sup>1</sup> So in B; A has *principes*.

<sup>a</sup> See p. 39.

and þus it preieþ to God þat þis douzter be quykened. And whan Crist entriþ to þe soule of þis maiden and moveþ wiþ his worchinge hond þe spirit of it, þan it riseþ to lyf and worchip by grace. And here men noten, how a ligginge man, þat shulde be areisid up, shulde bede his hond and þe reiser shulde take it, and so bi strengþe of hem boþe shulde þe man rise. Ech man in synne liþ<sup>1</sup> at þe erþe, and God helpiþ many men to rise up to grace, and if þei wirchen wiþ God to þis werke of lyfe, God wole make hem stonde, and comfort hem to wirche. Þis woman þat was heeled, as Crist wente to þis hous, of þe flix of blood þat she hadde twelve ȝeere, is every persone of man combrid wiþ synne, where it be symple persone or gedrid of many; and þes twelve ȝere bitokenen double age of two kyndis of man bi which he dwelliþ in synne. But man may spende al þat he haþ aboute oþir fisicians<sup>2</sup> and gete him absolucions, ȝhe after þe daie of dome, and many indulgensis, wiþ lettris of fraternite, þat bihotiþ<sup>3</sup> him to come to hevене, as soone as he is deed, and ȝit mai þe flixe of blood rennen wiþ al þis, and he may be depper in synne wiþ al þes dispensis. And herefore mekenesse of Crist is a special medicine, þat a man þenke hou he is in þe last place beden of Crist to soupe wiþ him in hevене. And þus þis cloþing of Crist ben seintis þat he cloþid, and þe last of þis cloþing is þe last place þat men shulden repute hem inne bi mekenesse of herte, and doing away þes presumpciouns comen þei þus bihinden, and Crist bi siche mekenesse ȝyvet hem grace to leve synne, and þis is beter þan medecynes þat fesicians sellen. And siche men ben confortid bi wordis of Crist, for Crist heliþ noone bodily but ȝif he hele hem of synne, and þus ech storye of myraclis of Crist mai be moralisid to a good witt, ne is it no perel to varie in siche wittis, so þat men varien not fro þe treuþe, ne fro good lore, for þe Holy Goost, autor of þes wordis, ordeyneþ men to have al sich wittis, and he ordeyneþ þis tixt to move hem herto. Hou shulde sich sense be error in man? But siche wordis axen good jugement, for many heretikis seyen þat þei han witt of God, and ȝit it mai be oon of þe fendis heresies.

Here men douten comonly whan men synnen dedely

<sup>1</sup> liip. B.    <sup>2</sup> So in B: *fesciustans*, A: *fesciannes*, C.    <sup>3</sup> *beten*, B; *bibeten*, C.

wiþinne in þer soule, and done noon yvel dedes wiþouten in þer bodi þat anoien men. And men moven over how resoun mai assente to ony synne of man, siþ ech synne is aȝens resoun; and ȝit sum men seien þat it is alon resoun and mannis spirit; and so ȝif mannis spirit assente, resoun assentiþ; for mannis spirit haþ al vertues in man honginge on him, and it mut nedelingis<sup>1</sup> do what ony of þes vertues doiþ. Here we shulen conseyye þat it is not nedeful here to wite which is dedely synne, and wite which is venial, but ech synne shulde a man flee, lest it be dedli to him. But clerkis seyen comounly þat man haþ two wittis, oon hongijþ on his bodi and haþ many partis; anopir is aboven his bodi, þat dwelliþ wiþ his spirit, whan þe spirit and þe bodi ben departed atwynne, and þis vertue in a man is sum tyme clepid resoun. And so, as in þe first synne Eve temptide Adam, and Adam synnede not bifore he hadde assentid, so in ech synne in an hool man þe flesh temptiþ þe spirit, and it synneþ not bifore it have assentid<sup>2</sup> to lustis of þe flesh. And so power of þe spirit, þat sum men clepen resoun, assentiþ aȝen resoun to fleishli likingis, and so þe spirit is nedid to consente þus, but it is not constreynd, siþ it assentiþ freeli. And bi þis may we se hou argumentis gone awei bi equivocacion of wordis þat men speken, as a man haþ many wittis boþe fleishli and spiritualy, and so many maneres he assentiþ to a þinge. But sum foolis þer ben þat seien þat a man haþ no vertue of soule, but ȝif it be þe same soule, and þis errour bringiþ in opir, and þus resoun of man is sum tyme clepid treuþe þat God causiþ wiþouten ende, ȝif a man die, and sum tyme vertue of man þat goiþ wiþ þe soule is clepid resoun of man to anopir witt. Bi þis may men see sumwhat, how þei shulden answeere to þe doutes þat ben maad, and to oþer also, for we shulde bileve þat men may be dampned for synne in her soule, ȝif þei worche not outward, for oryiginal sin and actual<sup>3</sup> also, and þus mai men be saved for þouȝtis in þer hertis, al ȝif þei done not outward meritory werkes; and þus mai men done harm to oþers bi þouȝtis of herte, and profite also to hem, ȝif þei ben ferre from hem, and siþ spiritual harmynge or profite is myche more bodili profite.

Mortal and  
venial sin.

<sup>1</sup> *nedeli*, B; *nedely*, C. <sup>2</sup> So in B; A has *assentiþ*. <sup>3</sup> So in B and C; *accual*, A.

ÞE FYVE AND TWENTY SONDAL GOSPEL AFTIR TRINITE.

[SERMON XXV.]

*Cum sublevasset oculos Jesus.*—JOH. vi. [5.]

ÞIS gospel telliþ a myracle how Crist fedde þe folk; and þis miracle techiþ men boþe good feiþ and vertues. It is seid bifore<sup>a</sup> how Crist fedde þe folk þus twyes, and of þe secounde fedyngge it is seid bifore, and of þe first fedyngge shulde we speke now. Þe gospel seiþ þus, þat þis miracle was don *whanne Jesus hadde cast up his eyen and seiþ þat myche folk was comen to him, to here Goddis word, he saide to Philip, Whereof þei shulden bigge breed for to fede þis folk, for he wiste þat þei hungriden. Þis seide Crist to Philip for to tempte him, for he wiste ful wel what he hadde to do. And Philip seide to Crist, þat loves of two hundrid pens ne sufficiden not to hem, so þat ech on myzte take a litil what of breed. But anopir disciple, Andrew, Petris broþir, seide, þer was a child þat þere hadde fyve barly loves, and þerto two fishis, but what wolden þes be amonge so myche folke. And Jesus bade his apostlis to make þe men sitte down to mete, for þere was much hay, þat þei myzte sitte on, and þe men weren sette as it were fyve þousand. And Jesus tooke þan þes loves, and whan he hadde þanked God, he delide hem to þe sittinge men, and also of þe fishis as myche as þei wolden. And whan þei weren fillid, Crist seide to his disciplis, gedre 3e þe relif þat lefte, þat it perishe not. And þei gedriden and filden twelve coffynes<sup>b</sup> of relif of fyve barly loves, þat weren lefte of þis folke þat eten. And þes men, whan þei hadden seen þe signe of þis myracle, saiden among hem-silfe, þat þis is a verrey prophete, þat is come in to þis world, as prophetis bifore hadden told. We shal suppose of þis myracle þat it is dyverse fro þe toþir; for ellis Mark wolde not have told þes myraclis so dyversly and in diverse places, for þat oon hadde*

<sup>a</sup> See Sermon VII.

<sup>b</sup> In this word, by which Wyclif (as well as both Wycliffite versions

*in loco*) simply Englishes the κοφίνους of the original, we seem to have the source of the word 'coffin.'

þen be fals, and it hadde be superflue to þus have told þis tale; and herfor we shal suppose þat þes weren two myraclis þat weren do in þis maners as þe gospel telliþ. And we shal suppose over þat as Crist quykid þre men for a notable cause, who so koud<sup>1</sup> undirstonde it, so he made þes two festis, for a certeyn resoun. And it is seid comounly þat as þe noubre of two is þe first þat comeþ from oonhede of noumbriþ, so þe two feestis bitokenen þat men for þer synne ben fallen in þis nede to be fedde þus. For, if man hadde stonde in þe staat of innocence, he shulde have had no nede to be fedde þus, for man shulde have feelid no peyne bifore þat he hadde synned, and so he shulde not have hungrid for defaute of mete. But, for he wente first bi synne from oonhede of God, þerfore he felde þus twyes in peyne for his synne. And God telliþ suche treuþes on diverse maneres, now for o cause, and now for an-õpir; and þus bi þis resoun curatis of puplis, 3if þei ben hooli in bodi, ben pore feble men. Þei ben pore men, 3if þei kepen her ordre, for þei shulden sue Crist in povert, nerrer þan õpir comounes, and þei ben feble, for þei have nede of sustenaunce þat þei shulde not have hadde in state of innocence; and þei mai not, as Crist, have mete where þei wolden; and þus for povert and febilnes þei taken almes of comounes. Þes fyve loves ben fyve bokes of Moises, þat ben boþe streite and sharpe, as seint Petir seiþ. Þes two fishis ben two bokes, of Wisdom and of prophetis, þat ben sonel<sup>2</sup> to þes loves. And þis o child, þat haþ al þe mete, is þe child born to us, þat Ysay spekiþ of. Þis child makþ his puple sitte don in mekenesse, þenkinge þat þei ben hey whos floure falliþ, but þe goostly food is proposid of Crist for to be tokned bi bodily foode. And fyve þousend of men fedde wiþ þis mete weren al þo in which Goddis grace was greene; for al þes moten meken hem, and be fed wiþ Goddis word; for ellis may no man come to hevene blis. And þus men þat ben fallen doun bi pryde of synne, shal bi mekenesse of þe centre be brouzt unto hevene. For as lownesse of þe centre of þe world and þe erþe, is þe most lownesse þat God may make, so mekenes of Crist is þe mooste þat mai be, and

An allusion to the institution of 'Poor Priests.'

Acts xv. 10.

Isaiah ix. 6.

<sup>1</sup> *kowde*, B.

<sup>2</sup> *souvil*, B; *sowle*, C.

in þis mekenesse mut a man grounde his toure, ȝif it shal teyne to hevene, for þe toure of þe gospel þat man shulde wille to rere is undirstonde comounly heynesse of vertues, of which vertues mekenes is ground, and charite þe heyeste parte, þat teyneþ unto hevene. After þis mete weren gedrid twelve cofynes, ffor holy doctours after þes maters weren more sutil in witt of holy writt þan aftirward ben doctours in witt of Goddis lawe. For siþ, men stonden in sophymes and crafte of worldely wynnynge, and lore of foure doctours is myche leid asleepe, napeles þis relif shulde fede folk now, for neiþer þis hool mete ne relif þerof may rote or perishe, siþ it is treuþe of God. And so al þes twelve coffynes ben alle þe mo<sup>1</sup> sentencis þat first weren gedrid of witt of holy writt, but þe sevene lepis þat weren gedrid after weren fewere goode sentences þat weren take of Goddis lawe. And þis myracle of multipliyng of Goddis lawe bi so fewe prechours among so fele folk was more myracle þan bodili woundris, and þerfore holy men turneden to God, glorifien him, and holden hym þer kyng.

<sup>1</sup> *mo* in B.





HERE BIGYNNEȝ  
ADVENT BIFORE CRISTEMASSE.

ȝE FIRSTE SONDAI GOSPEL IN ADVENT.

[SERMON XXVI.]

*Cum appropinquasset Jesus Jerosolumis.*—MATT. XXI. [I.]

ȝIS Gospel telliȝ of the secounde advent of Crist and it is noo drede it techiȝ us vertues, siȝ alle ȝe dedes of Crist tellen men how ȝei shulden do. ȝe story telliȝ *how Jesus cam to his passioun unto Jerusalem*, to teche ȝat he ordeynede himsilf for to suffre, for he myȝte have fledde ȝis passioun of him, ȝif he wolde himsilf not have suffrid ȝus. And so men seyen comounly ȝat ȝere ben ȝre adventis beside ȝe comoun advent ȝat Crist comeȝ to mannis soule. In ȝe firste advent Crist cam to be man, and ȝis advent aboden seintis of ȝe olde lawe, and ȝis was no morynge but lassyng of God, ȝhe more lassyng ȝan to aungelis, as ȝe psalme seiȝ, for God was made erȝe whan he was maad man. ȝe secounde advent is cominge to Cristis passioun; and of ȝis makȝ ȝe gospel mynde to daye. ȝe ȝridde advent shal be whan Crist shal come to jugement at ȝe daie of dome, to juge boȝe good and yvel. And in al ȝes ȝre adventis Crist visitide ever his suȝetis to amende hem and not to spuyle hem; and wolde God ȝat preelatis<sup>1</sup> wolde ȝenke on ȝis now; ȝanne shulde ȝei not come in Anticristis name more to spuyle ȝer suȝetis ȝan to amende hem. ȝe first advent of Crist we bileven as passid, and ȝe ȝridde advent we abiden, ȝat is to come; but to ȝe secounde advent we shulden maken us redy to suffre in oure body for ȝe name of Crist.

*Crist cam to Bethfage*<sup>a</sup>, ȝat is a lilit toun in ȝe foot, of *Olyvete*,

<sup>1</sup> *prelatis*, B.

<sup>a</sup> Bethfage is said to mean *bouse* of *unripe figs* (Smith's Bib. Dict.). Wyclif was apparently thinking of the Greek *φάγω*.

The entry of Christ into Jerusalem.

Four different Advents.

Ps. viii. 5.

a myle fro Jerusalem, and þis toun was ȝouun to preestis for mete of her mouþis, for Bepfage is hous of mouþ, or ellis hous of etynge—and bi þis tauȝte Crist how he lyvede pore lyf and nedý for love of man, siþ he dwelte in sicke þropis<sup>1 a</sup>, and he tolde hou preestis eten hym by envie. *Þanne he sente two disciplis to Jerusalem, þat was wallid, and þerfore Crist clepiþ it a castel þat was aȝen holy Chirche<sup>2</sup>. Crist bad his disciplis to bringe him an asse and þe fole of þis asse þat þei shulden fynden al redy, and bad þat þei shulden lose hem and brynge hem to Crist; and ȝif ony seide ouȝt to hem, þei shulden seie, Þe Lord haþ nede of hem, and he shulde leve hem anoon. And þis was fild, as Crist seide bi prophete longe bifore, Telle ȝe to Syon þe douȝter of Jerusalem, Lo, þi kyng comeþ to þee, homely, sittynge upon asse and upon þe asse fole; which asse was a drawyng beest. And his disciplis wenten and diden as Jesus comandide hem. For alle þes þingis moten nedis be riȝt as Crist hadde ordeyned hem, and bi þis myȝten þe disciplis knowe þat þis Lord was al witty. And his disciplis puttiden her cloþis upon þes two beestis, first upon þe fole, siþ upon þe asse, to teche us þat heþene men, þat weren wanton as foolis<sup>3</sup>, shulden resseyve Crist and his lawes, and after Jewis as assis, for þei shal bere to þe ende of þe world þe wiȝte of þe olde lawe, as folt<sup>4 b</sup> assis beren chargis what so ever be leid on hem. And his disciplis maden Crist to sitte upon þes boþe beestis. But þre manere of folk cam out of Jerusalem and dide worship to Crist, for comounes lovede him riȝt wele. Myche peple þat was riche spradden her cloþis in þe weye, and porer schreden branchis of trees and spradden hem in þe weye, and opir, boþe ȝong and olde, comynge bifore and bihynde songen þis song in worship of Crist; David Sone, we preien, make us safe<sup>c</sup>: þis we seien to David Sone, Blessid be he þat is come þus to us in Goddis name!*

Sum men seien þat þes disciplis þat weren sent to Jerusalem ben herty preestis and worldely lordis þat shulde be boþe Cristis

<sup>1</sup> þorpes, C.

in C.

<sup>3</sup> folis. B.

<sup>2</sup> This clause is rightly not written as a quotation in C. <sup>4</sup> So in B and C; A has foli.

<sup>a</sup> Propis. Prop is given in Bosworth's Dictionary as an alternative form of þorp, village.

<sup>b</sup> Folt = foaled.

<sup>c</sup> 'Save, we pray,' is the correct translation of Hosanna.

disciplis, and brynge to Crist þis asse and hir fole to ryde to hevenly Jerusalem. And as Jerusalem was wallid aȝens Crist and his apostlis, so þes religious to daie ben wallid aȝens Cristen men. But þis wal is mennis fyndinge, hepid wiþouten charite, for it is no charite to leve þe ordre þat Crist ȝaf, and to take þes stynkinge ordres, and telle more prys bi þis resoun;—þis synful patroun bade do þus, þefore we shulden do þus; þan bi þis,—Crist bad alle men do þus, þefore þei shulden do þus. He þat synneþ in þis feiþ synneþ aȝen bileve; aȝen þe mandementis of þe first table, and so aȝen alle Goddis mandementis. And þus shulden Cristen men bringe to Crist boþ þis asse and hir fole þat ben bonden in Jerusalem bi sich fals religiouse; and so þis asse and hir fole ben comen to þes pryvat ordris, but not to alle Cristene men, al if þei ben betere and have more nede. ȝit þes ȝoldes<sup>a</sup> founden of men helpen al þer breþeren in nede boþe of temporal goodis and laten hem dwelle in Cristis ordre, but þes sectis of newe ordris helpen not þus þer breþeren, for, be þei olde, be þei ȝonge, be þei nevere at siche meshese<sup>1</sup>, þei wolen not helpe hem wiþ goodis for to lyven in Cristis ordre, but raþer emprisoun hem or punishe hem aȝens Goddis lawe. But bi þe reule of charite þei shulden selle þer hiȝe housis and alle þe meblis þat þei have, and helpe þer breþeren in nede, and lyven al aftir Cristis lawe. Þus Crist ȝaf boþe bodi and soule for relevynge of his enemyes, but how lasten siche religious, or in mercy or in charite, þat wolen not ȝyve þer ydel goodis for þe helping of þer breþeren? And þus hem wantiþ hiest love and ech degre of charite, for þei loven more þer ydel muk, þan þei done þer breþeren in God. Feyned lettris of fraternite<sup>b</sup> wolen þei ȝyve to symple men, but

<sup>1</sup> *myschef*, B; *mischefe*, C.

<sup>a</sup> Besides the old Anglo-Saxon Guilds (on which see Pearson's *Early English History*, i. 271) there were the merchant guilds, and the art guilds. The last class is probably referred to in the text. A curious account of the organization of the guild of painters at Florence in 1349, by Jacopo di Casentino, will be found in Crowe's *Hist. of Painting in Italy*, ii. 2.

<sup>b</sup> Chaucer, whom nothing escaped,

has noted this practice of giving 'letters of fraternity,' which however had been practised by the monks for centuries before the friars were heard of. In the Sompnour's Tale, Thomas, the farmer, asks the questing friar whether he is not his 'brother.'

'Ye, certes, quod the frere, trusteth wel;

I took our dame *the letter*, under our seal.'

Among the Dominicans, and pro-

Attack upon  
the Friars.

to lordis and to men þat þei seyn þat þei loven more, wolen þei not profre siche lettris, lest her falsheed be perseyved. For siche lettris of chartris profiten not to men, but oþer to make men have riȝt, or ellis to defende her riȝt. Siche lettris maken no riȝt; ȝhe bi mannis lawe; and þis riȝt is not enpechid bifore þe dai of dome; and ȝif men shewen<sup>a</sup> þan þes lettris oþir to God or his lawe þei profite noþing to hem ne defenden hem aȝens God, and so þes lettris ben superflue, as ben þes ordris þat maken hem.

ÞE SECONDE SONDAI GOSPEL IN ADVENT.

[SERMON XXVII.]

*Erunt signa in sole.*—LUC. xxi. [25.]

Þis gospel telliþ derkely a prophecie of Crist; how it shal be in þis Chirche bifore þe dai of dome. Crist seiþ, *Þer shal be signes in þe sunne and moone and in þe sterres of hevene, and in þe erþe pressure of folk*, by movynge of heven. For þes þre partis of hevene, sunne and moone and sterris, shal move to-gidere boþe see and watris; for þei ben more redy to be moved by hevene þan oþir erþe or eir, for þei ben bitwene þes two, neiþir to hevyn ne to þinne; but large in quantite and disposid to take liȝt of þes þre bodies of hevene *and to be confusid and to make noise*. And siþ of þis see and watir rysen wyndis and blowen on londis, it is no wounder ȝif oure eire be chaungid in qualitees; and siþ chaunginge of oure eire makij chaunginge in mennis bodies, it is no wounder ȝif mennis bodies be changid bi þis eire; and so maneres, þat suen þe chaunginge of mannis complexioun, shal be changid in oure erþe þat men dwelle inne; and so, *men shal wexe drye, boþe be siche erþely eir, and bi drede of oþer signes þat shal come among men*. And þanne men shal fiȝte in erþ, o cuntree wiþ an oþir, for such chaunginge in eir shal make chaunginge in mennis lyfe, and þus dede bodies

bably among the Franciscans also, these letters admitted to the brotherhood of the third order, and imparted to the persons admitted the benefit of all the masses, fasts, prayers, and other good works done or to be

done throughout the order. For the 'formula admissionis,' see Ducange (Paris, 1843), article 'Fraternitas.'

<sup>a</sup> The reader will be reminded here of a passage in the *Paradise Lost*, Book iii. 485.

cast in þe water or erþe chaungen þe eir, and alle oure places þat we dwellen inne, oþerwise þan it shulde have be in þe state of innocens; for þanne our places undir þe mone shulde have be wiþouten siche medlinge; ffor hevene worchip kyndely, dyversely in dyvers maters. And after al þis shal men see Crist oure Lord come from hevene, and his angelis with him, to deme men þat dwellen here; *for þe vertues of hevene*, þat ben liȝts, shal be chaungid here, and al þe governaile of hevene shal be varied þus to men. And *þanne men shal see Crist comyng down in a cloude wiþ greet power and maieste*, to men þat can rede þes signes; and Crist confortiþ his children, and biddiþ hem putte drede away, *ffor comyng of siche signes bitokeneþ þat þer blisse is neȝe*; and þefore shulden þei *rere þer heedis*, and be gladde of þes signes, and nouȝt hongre þere heedis doun as men hevved wiþ þe erþe. For what man wolde not be gladde whan he shulde go out of prison, and be brouȝt to þe blisse of hevene and passe away fro siche peyne. *And Crist seide to his disciplis þis similitude in kynde. See ȝe þe gardyn of fige trees and al oþer trees of fruyte; whan þei bryngen forþ fruyte of hem, ȝe witen wel þat somer is nyȝe.* (And somer is in sum contrees time to gedre fruyte of þe erþe.) *And so whan ȝe seen þes signes be made, wite ȝe þat youre bigginge is nyȝe.* For bigginge is clepid here fruyte þat comeþ of þis bigginge, and Crist seiþ *sopely þat þe kynrede of his children shal not passe out of þis world bifore þat alle þes þingis be done. Hevene and erþe shal passe in chaunginge, but Cristis wordis shal not passe þus.* Wel we witen þe sunne stood and sum tyme it wente aȝen, but þus mai not sentence be chaungid of þe wordis of oure Lord; but þere is more stabilhede in wordis þat ben seid of Crist þan is in hevene or erþe, siþ Crist is above þes two, and comyng in þes tweyne is not nedeful but for þat Crist haþ ordeyned it.

Þes wordis of Crist may be undirstonden goostli, so þat þe sonne be Crist, God and man, and þe mone be holy Chirche, and þe sterres in hevene be seintis in þe worlde. Signes ben made in hem, for þei moven erþely men, and chaungen as þe see temporal goodis, and for siche chaunginge chaungen men in wille, and membris of þe fend ben drye fro grace and ben adredde for Crist, and sentence of his chirche. Ffor vertues of

Mystical interpretation

hevene shal move Cristene men to vencushe þe fendes lymes, and to feren hem, al if þei for a tyme maken greet sounne, and stynkyn wiþ synne, and froþyn wiþ lecherie. And þe more fishes swelewen þe lasse; and cours of þis moone moveþ worldely men, and wyndis of pryde wawen þes floodis, so þat it is perilous to shippis for to wandre, al ȝif þei ben born up wiþ þe crosse of Crist. But wele Y wote þat men þat ben chosen of God may flottre in þe see, but þei may not perishe; for al þing mut nede come þat God himsilf hap ordeyned. And þus sad bileve of þis þridde Advent shulde stire men fro synne and drawe hem to vertues. Ffor ȝif þei shulden to morewe answere to a juge, and wynne greet rentis or ellis lese hem, þei wolde ful bisili shape for þer answere, and myche more ȝif þei shulden wynne or lese þer lyfe—Lord! siþ we ben certeyn of þe day of dome þat it shal come to us, and we wite not how soone, and þere we shal have jugement of hevenly lyfe, or ellis of deep of helle þat evermore shal laste, how bisie shulde we be to make us redy for þis! Certis defaute of bileve is cause of oure sleuþe; and þus shulden we fasten in us articlis of þe trouþe, for þei wolen be louse in us as nailes in a tree, and þerfore it is nedeful to knocke and make hem faste. For it is noo drede þat no man doiþ synne but ȝif he faile in bileve upon sum manere. Sum men wanten bileve, and nevere hadden bileve, as Paynemes and oþer men þat nevere weren turned to Crist. Sum failen in bileve, for þer bileve slepiþ, and oþer þingis wakeþ þat þei trowen more; and þus failiþ ech man þat is overcomen wiþ synne; for lust wakþ in hem to whiche þe synne moveþ hem, and peyne and drede of his synne is leide asleepe; and þus failen in trouþe þe more part of men. We shulde þenke freishely on þe day of dome, and how no þing may þan lette Cristis jugement; ffor treuþe and resoun shal fulli go forþ þanne, and herfore seiþ þe gospel þat men þan nakid fro charite shal be þanne dombe, and not shal answere to Crist. And for þis cause prophetis of Goddis lawe clepen þe daie of dome þe daie of þe Lord, for in þat daie not<sup>1</sup> shal go aȝens him, but þei clepen daies bifore daies of men, for þe fend and his membris have now þer purpos, al ȝif þei shal þan bie it ful dere.

Matt. xxii. 12

<sup>1</sup> *nowt*, B and C.

DE ÞRIDDE SONDAY GOSPEL IN ADVENT.

## [SERMON XXVIII.]

*Cum audiisset Joannes in vinculis.*—MATT. xi. [2.]

Þis gospel telliþ a storye of Joon Baptiste þat touchiþ al þree adventis of Crist, but specialy þe þridde, to whom seruen two bifore. Baptist was in prison wiþ Heroude Antipas, for he reproveþ his advoutre wiþ his broþer wyf. And *Joon bounden in prison herde of Cristis werkes*, and he made moche joie and preiside myche Crist, as oþer gossellis tellen, and specialy Jones gospel. Sum men in þe countre helden Joon more þan Crist, and Jones disciplis weren in þis errour; but ȝit þei trowiden þat þe greet prophete bihiȝt in þe lawe, þat þei clepiden Messias, was more þan Joon Baptist. And herfore sente *Baptiste two of his disciplis*, for to speke wiþ Crist and purge hem of þis errour. And Jon bade hem axe þus Crist on his bihalve, *Ert þou he þat is to come*, and to save mankynde, þat þe law spekiþ of? *or we abide anoper?* We shal suppose þat Baptist was stable in his troupe, and coveitide þat þe feiþ of Crist and love of Crist growide, and bifore þat he were deed, þat he trowide shulde come soone. For trewe men coveiten more þe honoure of God þan þer owen honour, for ellis þei weren unreasonable. And þus cast Joon þis weye to worship of Crist, and to þis entent of Joon Crist spake and wrouȝte in dede. *Go ȝe and telle aȝen to Joon what ye have herd and sen, Blynde seen, crokide gone, meselis ben heled, deeþe heeren, dede rysen, pore men ben preisid of God<sup>a</sup>, and blessid be he þat shal not be sclaunderid in me.*

And on two maneres men ben sclaunderid in Crist. Sum men bi worchinge putten errours in him, and þis manere of sclaundrynge is algatis yvel, siþ þei fallen in heresie þat þus trowen of Crist. Þes men ben sufferyngly sclaunderid in Crist þat fallen fro bileve þat þei shulden have of Crist. On þe

<sup>a</sup> This is a different mistranslation from that found in the Wycliffite versions, which is, 'pore men ben taken to prechyng of the gospel.'

John the Baptist sending messengers to Christ.

bridde maner we seyen þat men ben sclaunderid whan þei ben defamyd of ony kyn þing þat þei have hem amys aboute ony siche þing; and þus many holy men weren sclaunderid of Crist. And so, of þes sevene myraclis, þe laste is þe moste; and alle þes sevene miraclis techen how we shulden love Crist; for we þat weren first blynde bi defaute of feiþ, sen aftir in oure soule what we shulden trowe; and so first crokid in medeful werkes, wandren after in holynesse of lyf; and so first leprous by heresydes of feiþ, ben after clensid of alle þes heresydes; deef men fro Goddis word, heeren his lawe; and dede men in soule bi custome of synne, rysen to spiritual lyf of þer soule; men þat weren pore bifore for þer holy werkes, ben seid good lyvers of him<sup>1</sup> þat may not erre. And it·semeþ þat Jones disciplis saien summe of þes miraclis, or ellis hem alle, in feiþ þat Crist ʒaf hem.

*And whan þei weren wente fro Crist*, he preiside Joon Baptist, techinge þat men shulden not preise a man in his presence ne in presence of his, lest he were a faioure<sup>a</sup>. Crist preiside Baptiste, axinge of him þre þingis, so þat þe peple were nedid to graunte þat Joon was holy. *Whan ʒe seien Baptist in desert, what wente ʒe to see? sawe ʒe a reede wawinge wiþ þe wynde?* nay, suche men ben unstable for lovyng of worldely mukke, for Joon was stable in þe love of God, and so was he groundid in þe stone of riȝt-wisnesse. *Or what wente ʒe out to see whan ye wente to see Joon? wher ʒe wenten to see a man cled in softie cloþis?* nay, lo, men þat ben cled þus drawen hem to kyngis hous, and ben tenderly fedde wiþ metis þat plesen þe fleishe. For Joon Baptiste was contrarie to such men in boþe þes, siþ he dwelte in desert, and was fedde wipouten foode þat was maad bi mannis crafte, and so þe world and his fleish overcame he perfitli, and it is no drede to us þe fende hadde þan noon holde in him. *But what went ʒe out to see? certis to see a prophete; ʒhe Y seie to you, Joon was more þan a prophete*, for Joon hadde office of God to se Crist, and waishe him, and to shewe hym at eye, þat is more þan prophetis office. *And he is of whom it is writun*, þat þe Fadir spekij to þe Sone,

<sup>1</sup> So in B; *bym*, C; A has *hem*.

<sup>a</sup> See Glossary.



*Lo Y send myn angel, þat is myn owen messenger, to fore þi face þat shal make redy þi weie tofore þee; for Joon Baptiste movede men to trowe in Crist many gatis.*

Here men may touche many synnes þat rengnen<sup>1</sup> amonge men, and specialy synne of clerkes þat lyven in lustis of foode and in lustis of atire contrarie to Joon Baptiste. And þus, as þe gospel seiþ, þei putten on Joon þat he hadde a fend, and was ladde in desert bi þis spirit þat susteynede him, and he lyvede not mannis lyfe, ne ʒaf ensauple to sue him; and in Crist þei ben sclaunderid, and seiden he lyvede a lustful lyf and was frend to synful men, and þus shulden not men lyve. And þus þese newe religiouse fallen in heresie of Jewes, for neiþer þei make Baptist ne Jesus Crist þer patroun, but þei chesen hem a newe patroun and newe religioun; þei seien þat Baptist was to harde, and Cristis lyf was to large, but þei have founden a good mene and vertues to lyven inne. And þus boþe clerkes seculers and þese newe religiouse forsaken þes two weies and taken weie of þe fend; for þere is noon oþer weie but Cristis weie and þe fendis, siþ no man may lyve in vertues but ʒif þat he sue Crist, and no man may lyve in synne but ʒif þat he sue in þat þe fend. Boþe þes endes ben to blame, but more þes newe religiouse; ffor þes ypocritis leven Crist and Joon Baptist his prophete, and chesen hem a newe wey þat mut ofte tymes be cloutid and be dispensid wiþ bi Anticrist, as þe fend techiþ hem. Þe seculers ben lasse ypocritis, but þei lyven al amys, siþ þei dwellen wiþ kyngis and lordis for to geten hem benefices; and in þe mene tyme þei lyven in lustis, and leven þe state þat þei shulden kepe; and þus blynde men leden þe blynd, and boþe fallen in þe lake. For þere nys noon oþer wey but ouþer wende upward aftir Crist or ellis to wende down aftir þe fend into þe deapest lake of alle<sup>2</sup>. ʒhe, þes þat semen in þe heyer state suen Petir in his errour, and seien, Sire, God forbede þat þou lyve þus in þi membris, for witt and worship þat þou shouldist have. And certis al siche ben Sapanas, for þei wolen reverse Crist, or addinge to Cristis lawe, or ellis wiþdrawinge þat he bad.

The friars follow neither John the Baptist nor Christ.

<sup>1</sup> *regnen*, B; *regne*, C.

<sup>2</sup> B agrees with A; C reads *bel*, which must surely be right.

PE FOURÞE SUNDAY IN ADVENT.

## [SERMON XXIX.]

*Miserunt Judei ab Jerosolymis.*—JOH. i. [19.]

Þis gospel telliþ of godhede and manhede of Crist, and of mekenesse of Baptiste, how myche þat he lovede Crist. Þe *Jewes senten fro Jerusalem preestis and dekenes unto Joon, for to wite what he was*, and how he groundide his newe lyf. Þese Jewes semeden hiþe preestis of þe temple and Phariseis, and þes þat weren sent to Joon weren of Pharisees, for þei weren lasse of state and semeden of more religioun. *But Joon confesside unto hem and denyede not treuþe, and so he confessid first þat he was not Crist*, for it was most perilous to be holden Crist, and þerfore he putte first þe moost peril from him. And þus lowe preestis undir hiþe preestis of þe temple, and dekenes þat boþe kouden<sup>1</sup> þe olde testament, and weren more lyk Jon in manere of religioun, and betere shulden enquire of his newe ordre, lest þe toon erride and supplantide þat oþer, weren sent to Joon to axe of his state. Þere was behiþt a greet prophete in þe olde lawe þat þei clepiden Crist, and þis myþte Joon have be holden, ȝif he wolde be proude. And here be we tauþt to boste not of þis þat we ben membris of holi Chirche, and so selle our suffragies, for it is hid from us where we shal be savyd, and ȝif we shal not be savyd, we ben not membris þus, ne oure preier for þis is not worþ<sup>2</sup> to us silfe. And to gabbe þus in þis point is a greete synne, and to take mennis goodis bi sich a fals chaffare, for a worldely man wole not selle but þat he wote is his, and God haþ ordeyned þis privy þinge to be unknowe of us. For we shulde not þus boste ne disseyve oure neiþbores, and þus to putte of Goddis ordenaunce were a greet synne.—*Þei axiden Joon þe secounde tyme, where he were Hely, and he seide he was not þis Hely in persone.* Þe Jewes hadden in þe olde lawe þat Helye was ravyshid, and lyveþ ȝit in a place, and shal come aȝen bifore þe daye of dome, and fiþte wiþ Antecrist, and þus þei supposiden þat Baptist was he, speciali for solitary lyf and penaunce in etyng. And to þis entent denyede Joon þat he was Hely, but Crist seide þat Joon

<sup>1</sup> So in B and C; A reads *kouden boþe*.<sup>2</sup> *worþi*, B and C.

John the Baptist bearing testimony to Christ.

<sup>2</sup> Kings ii. 11; Mal. iv. 5

was Hely in figure, for riȝt as Hely figuride the firste advent of Crist, so Joon figuride þe þridde advent of him. And as sum men seien, þei boþe figuren þe day of dome; and þus þere nys no falsheðe in Crist ne in Baptist.—*Þei axiden þe thridde tyme where Joon were þe prophete, and he seide, Nay, to þer undirstondinge, for name of prophete bi himsilf bitokeneþ þe more famous prophete. Crist seiþ þat Joon is a comoun prophete, and boþe þes weren soþe. And affter þes þree purgingis, þei axiden of Joon who he was, þat þei myȝten answeere to men þat hadde sent hem. And Jon seide mekely upon Ysay þe prophete, þat he was a vois of cryer in desert, to bidde men make redy þe weye of oure Lord.* For riȝt as a vois shewiþ þe word of mannis þoȝt, so Jon shewide þe word of þe Fadir; and clerkes knowen wele þat a vois or soun is substanciali þat þing þat souneþ; and alȝif Joon myȝte have seide þat he was crynge, neþeles he chees to speke more mekeli; for among alle þingis vois is a freel þing.

*And þe messengeris axiden Joon, whereto he baptiside and brouȝt in a newe ordre, siþ he was noon of þes þree. But Jon answeride hem þat he baptiside in water, and on myddis of hem stood þat þei knewen not; and þat is þe greet prophete þat þei souȝten after, for he is boþe God and man to save mankynde. In þat þat he is God he is every where myddil, as he is þe myddil persone in þe holy Trinite; and in þat þat he is man, and heed of holy Chirche, he is myddil of alle men gedrid in his name. In vertu of þis man cam Joon þus, and baptiside in water to make redy bifore Crist, as a rude werke goiþ bifore a sutil. To þis prophete servede Joon, and dide him al worship in þat þat he was God. And, for he was þis man, he is to come after Joon, al if he be Joonis pryour. Ffor he was not made bifore Joon in tyme, neiþer bi his manhede neiþer bi his godhede, for Joon was man bifore þat Crist was man; and as nentis godhede, Crist was not made. And þei traveilen in veyn þat calculen þat Crist was conseyyed bifore þe soule of Joon was knittid to his bodi, for Joon spekiþ of forþehede of manhede of Crist bifore Joon in grace, and also in worþynes; and herfore seiþ Joon, þat he is not worþ to louse<sup>1</sup> þe þuong<sup>2</sup> of Cristis shoo. And þis men undirstonden þus, þat Baptist is not*

<sup>1</sup> loose, B.

<sup>2</sup> þong, B.

worpi to declare Cristis manhede; but, as me pinkiþ, it is betere and more suyngre þis gospel to seie, þat Joon grauntiþ him not worpi to loose þe ordre of Crist, bi which Crist hadde ordeyned to be patroun of Cristene men. For þis ordre is a þuonge to bynde mennis willes togidere; and þus me pinkiþ þat freris chiden in veyn. Prechours<sup>a</sup> seyn þat Crist hadde hiþe shone as þei have; ffor ellis wolde not Baptist mene þat Crist hadde þuonngis of siche schone. Menours<sup>b</sup> seyn þat Crist wente barfote, or ellis was shood as þei ben, for ellis Magdalene shulde not have founde to þus have washid Cristis feet. But levyngre þis chidynge, we supposen of oure Jesus þat he tok ful litil hede of such manere of wendinge, but he chargide myche þe wille of his religioun and affecioun of his disciplis to be bounden fro worldely goodis. And þus freris, as Pharisees, clenzen þe gnatte and swolewen þe camel; for þei dar, above Baptist, founde hem newe ordres, of reulis þat Crist chargide not, but ȝif it were to dampne hem; and coveitise of worldely goodis chargen þes ordres not, ȝif þei be gete<sup>1</sup> wiþ fals menes, which treuþe of Crist haþ dampnyd. *But þis was done in Bepanye bezonde þe water of Jordan*, in þe lond of two kynredis<sup>c</sup>; and so men seyen þat þer ben two Bepanies in þat lond, oon biside Jerusalem where Lazarus was reisd to lyf, and anoþer biþonde þe water *where Joon hadde mater to baptise men*. For Bepanie<sup>d</sup> sowneþ þes þre; it is hous of obedience and also hous of penaunce, and hous of Goddis ȝifte. Alle þes names accorden to Joon; but þei ben contrarie to alle þes newe orðris þat ben presumed aȝens Crist.

<sup>1</sup> *geten*, B, C.

<sup>a</sup> Fratres praedicantes, or Dominicans.

<sup>b</sup> Fratres minores, or Franciscans.

<sup>c</sup> 'þe lond of two kynredis.' For a long time I was unable to satisfy myself as to the exact meaning of this phrase. There is nothing in the Commentaries of S. Austin, S. Jerome, and the Venerable Bede, nor in the Homilies of Pope Gregory, which throws the smallest light upon it. Upon turning however to the Commentary of Nicholas de Lyra, written in the early part of the fourteenth century, I found some words which, I think, solve the difficulty.

Distinguishing this Bethany (Bethabara in the authorized version) from the one near Jerusalem, De Lyra describes it as lying beyond the Jordan, 'silicet in sorte duarum tribuum et dimidia; i. e. Reuben and Gad, and the half-tribe of Manasseh. Wyclif probably meant to say the same thing, but inadvertently omitted mention of the half-tribe, of which indeed very slight notice is taken in the account (Numb. xxxii.) of the negotiation between Moses and the 'lynages' (Wycl. Ver.) of Reuben and Gad.

<sup>d</sup> Bethany signifies 'house of dates.' (Smith's Dict. Bible.)

PE SONDAI WIÞINNE OCTAVE OF TWELFÞE DAI.

[ S E R M O N X X X . ]

*Vidit Johannes Jesum venientem ad se.*—JOH. i. [29.]

Þis gospel telliþ a wisse, how Baptist witnesside of Crist, boþ of his godhede and eke of his manhede. Þe storye seiþ þus, *þat Joon say Jesus comynge to him and saide þus of oure Lord, Lo, þe loomb of God; to him þat takiþ away the synnes of þis world,* for he is boþe God and man. Crist is clepid Goddis lombe, for many resouns of þe lawe. In þe olde lawe weren þei wont to offre a lombe wiþouten wem, þe whiche shulde be of o 3ere, for þe synne of þe puple. Þus Crist, þat was wiþouten wem, and of o 3eer in mannis elde was offrid in þe cros for þe synne of al þis worlde, and where siche lambren þat weren offrid felden sum tyme to þe preestis, þis lombe þat made ende of oþer felde<sup>1</sup> fulli to Goddis hond. And oþer lambren in a maner fordide þe synne of o cuntre, but þis lombe proprely fordide þe synne of alle þis worlde. And þus he was ende and figure of lambren of þe olde lawe, and þus shewiþ Baptist by his double spekyng þe manhede of Crist and his godhede; for oonly God myzte þus fordo synne, siþ alle oþer lambren hadden wemmes, þat þei myzten not hem silfe fordo. And so, al if preestis have power to relese synne as Cristis vikeris, neþeles þei have þis power in as myche as þei acorden wiþ Crist; so þat 3if þer keies and Cristis wille be discording atwynne, þei feynen hem falsely to assoile, and þan þei neiþer loosene ne bynden; so þat in ech siche worchyng þe godhede of Crist mut first wirche.

And herfore seiþ Baptist of Crist; *Þis is he þat Y seide of, After me is to comen a man, þe whiche is made before me, for he was anoon my priour.* For ri3t as Crist was a man, þe first tyme þat he was conseyyed, so God made him þan priour of al his religioun; and he was abbot, as Poul seiþ, of þe best

The second testimony of John the Baptist to Christ.

Eph. i. 22;  
Col. i. 18.

<sup>1</sup> *fel. C.*

ordre þat may be. *And first Y knewe hym not; I wiste in soule þat he was born, but Y koude not wiþ bodily eye knowe him fro anoþer man. And þis falliþ comounly; but, for to shewe hym in Israel, þerefore Y baptise þus in water. And Joon bare witness, and seide þat he sey a spirit come down as a culver from hevne and lefte oþer and dwelle on him. But God, þat sente me to waishe wiþ water, he tauzt me and seide þus, On whom þou seest þe spirit come down and dwellinge upon him, þat is he þat baptiseþ men in þe Holy Goost. And Y sey and bere witness þat þis is Goddis kyndely sone.*

We shal wite þat þis dowfe was a verre foule as oþer ben; and so it was not þe þridde persone in Trinite taken in oonhede of þis persone, as Goddis Sone toke his manhede; but for mekenesse of þe dowfe, and moo good propirtees þat she haþ, she bitokeneþ þe þridde persone; and þis persone is seid of hir, for Joon seiþ, The Spirit cam down and dwelte long upon Crist;—and þis Spirit was þis dowfe. And so it semeþ þat þis dowfe was God; and so, al if þe two persones may be moved in creatures, neþeles þe Trinite may not be moved in his kynde. But it semeþ þat we may graunte þat þis dowfe was þe Holy Goost, as we granten þat þis persone was comynge down in þis dowfe. And þus, as God seiþ in his lawe þat sevene oxen ben sevene ȝeer, and þat þe sacrid breed is verrelly Goddis bodi, so it semeþ þat he seiþ, þat þis dowfe is þe Holy Goost. But clerkes witen þat þer ben two manere of seyngis, þat ben personel seyng, and habitudinel seyng. Þis dowfe myzte not be God in his kynde, but bi sum habitude it signefieþ God, and þus bi autorite of God it is God. And if þou sey þat ech þinge bi þis shulde be God, as ech Goddis creature signefieþ his maker, as smoke kyndely signefieþ fier, and þus semeþ Poul to speke, whan he seiþ þat Crist shal be al þingis in al þingis to men þat undirstonden him; for after þe day of dome al þis worlde shal be a boke, and in ech part þerof shal be God writun, as God shal be in his kynde in ech part of þe world; and þus siþ God is bitokened first and moost in ech þinge, whi may men not graunten þat God is ech þinge?—in þis men mut undirstonde dyversite in wordis, and to what entent þes wordis ben undirstonden. And þus bi autorite of þe

Col. iii 11.

The clergy  
should speak

lawe of God men shulden speke her wordis as Goddis lawe spekiþ, and strange not in speche from undirstondinge of þe puple, and algatis beware þat þe puple undirstonde wel, and so use comoun speche in þer owne persone; and ȝif þei speken in Cristis persone wordis of his lawe, loke þat þei declare hem, for drede of privy errours.

And scorne we þe argumentis þat foolis maken here, þat bi þe same skile shulde we speken þus, for God spekiþ þus in wordis of his lawe. Sich apes lickenes<sup>1</sup> passen beestis foly, for þei wolden brynge bi þis þat ech man were God. And so ȝyve we God leve to speke as him likeþ, al if we speken not ay so bi þe same autorite; þes wordis þat God spekiþ shulde we algatis graunt, and declare hem to trewe undirstondinge. And rekke we not of argumentis þat sophistis maken, þat we ben redargued, grantyng þat we denyen, for we granten þe sentence and not oonli þe wordis, for þe wordis passen away anon whan we have spoken hem. And as Aristotle seiþ<sup>a</sup>, contradicioun is not oonly in wordis but boþe in wordis and sentence of wordis. And bi þis we seien þat Crist in speche is not contrarie to him silfe, ne o part of his lawe contrarie to anoþer. And þus ȝif we graunten þat Crist is al þingis, it sueþ not hereof þat Crist is an asse, ne þat Crist is ech þing, or what þat we wolen nempnen. For God seiþ þe tone and he seiþ nouȝt þe toþir. But we graunten þat Crist is boþe lombe and sheepe, for Goddis lawe grauntiþ boþe þes two of him; and so Crist is a lioun and a worm; and þus of many þingis þat holy writt telliþ. And it is ynow to seie for dyversite, þat God haþ special sentence of on and not so of anoþer. And þus þe comyn undirstondinge shulden we algatis holden, but ȝif Goddis wordis tauȝten us his propre sense. And siche stryfe in wordis is of noo profite, ne proveþ not þat Goddis word is ony wey fals. In þis mater we have ynow stryfen in Latyn<sup>b</sup> wiþ adversaries of Goddis lawe, þat seyen þat it is falsest of alle lawes in þis world þat ever God suffride.

in a tongue understood by the people.

Sophistical arguments.

<sup>1</sup> *apis licnessis*, B and C.

<sup>a</sup> Analyt. Prior. ii. 15.

<sup>b</sup> Wyclif probably refers here to the treatise *De Veritate Scripturas*.

ÞE GOSPEL ON OCTAVE OF TWELFÞE DAI, AND IT FALLIÞ  
SUMTYME ON SUNDAI.

[SERMON XXXI.]

*Venit Jesus Galilea.*—MATT. iii. [13.]

The baptism  
of Christ.

Þis gospel telliþ how Crist tauzte Baptist boþe bi word and myracle how he shulde be meke. Þe storrye telliþ þat *Jesus cam fro Galilee to Jordan to Joon Baptist, to be baptisid of him.* And þis was greet mekenesse, þat þe Lord wolde come so fer to his servaunt, and to take of him baptyng, and *Johan forsendide him*, for woundringe of þe dede, and seide þat *Y shal be baptisid of þee, and þou comest to me: to be þus baptisid.* But *Jesus answeride to Joon, and seide to him wiseli, Suffre now þis, for it falliþ to us to fulfille al riht.* It is opyn riht þat þe lasse be suget to þe more, and it is more privy riht þat þe evene obeishe to þe evene; but most privy riht of alle stondiþ in þis, þat þe hiȝeste of alle obeishe to his servaunt, as Crist priour of us alle obeishide to Baptist; and so was it sittinge Crist to teche þis mekenesse. And here schulen we wite, as men in comyn speche seien sum wordis rehersed hem of oþer, and sum wordis þei seien in her owne persone, (and þis may be varied after þre maneris; sum þing men seien, witinge þat it is soþ, affermyng þe sentence wiþouten ony condicioun, as trewe men seien þat God is in hevene; sum þing men seien, proposinge to fulfille it, but undirstonden, if God wole ȝyve hem grace, as men seyen þat þei shulen holde Goddis comandementis, and þus techiþ James, þat whan we speken of oure dedes þat we shulden do, we shulden undirstonde, 'if þat God wole;'; but ȝit on þe þridde maner we supposen þat it shulde be þus, and neiþer we witen it ne trowen it;) and wiþ þis we undirstonden a condicioun, 'if God wole;'; and þus spake Baptist whan he forsendide Crist to be baptisid of him, and herwiþ he heeld obedience. But over þis we shulde wite, þat þere is greet diversite bitwixe servise of a þing and obedience þerof, for God obeishide to mannis vois, and servede not to him; but in

WYCLIF.



mannis persone þei rennen boþe togidere, for þe more obeiship to þe lesse, and eke serveþ to him, for þe more is erþ, and þe lesse is spirit, and so he is boþe more and lesse to his servaunt. And þus Crist fulfillide al manere of rihtwisnesse, for rihtwisnesse is comounly callid al manere of vertue, and so rihtwisnesse is al manere of mekenesse.

And þus John suffride Crist to tak þis servise of him, and 3it he seide soip in wordis þat he spake, for Johun was baptisid of Crist as he schulde, siþ he was baptisid of the Holy Goost; and werkes of þe Trinite ben undepartid wiþoutenforþ. And wiþ þis cam Crist to be baptisid in water of John, as he schulde for many enchesouns. First to teche þis moost degree of mekenesse. Siþ, for to halowe þe water of baptyim, for vertue of touchinge of Crist streechide ful fer. Þe þridde cause is to 3yve us ensaumple to take mekely baptem, siþ Crist was baptisid þus. And *herfore John leet Crist to be baptisid of him*, for Joon was tauzt in his soule þat it was Goddis wille. And here takip men wel þat if a man avowe a þinge, and he wite after þat it were betere to leve it, þanne he shal leve it, and have sorewe of his foly biheste, but him nedip not to go to Rome to perfourme þis medeful dede. And here manye ben disseyyed in power of þer sovereynes; þei wenen þat hem nedip to have leve of hem to do as þei shulden do; þis lore shulden men taken of þer þrelatis above, and not traveilen in veyn, ne dispende more þan þei shulden. *And whan Jesus was þus baptisid, he wente anoon out of þe water*, to teche us þat in siche meenes we shulden not dwelle more þan nede is<sup>1</sup>, and to confermen al þis þing, *hevenes weren opened*, to Crist, *and he siþ þe spirit of God comynge down as a dowve and comynge upon Crist*. And þis þing þat he siþ wiþ his eye was a dowfe, and þis þing þat he siþ wiþ his soule was God; and þus þe spirit of God cam down in a dowve, *and here was a vois comynge doun from hevene, and seide in þe persone of þe Fadir, Þis is my Sone, 3he, þat Y kyndely love, in whiche Y pleside to my silfe*, and þefore, *heere 3e him*.

And so bi autorite of þe Fadir of hevene and eke bi autorite of þe Holy Goost, and also bi autorite of Goddis kyndeli Sone, was þe manhede of Crist here shewid wiþ his dedes. Bi autorite of Crist shulden Cristene men trowe, þat he is þe

<sup>1</sup> This clause is rightly written in B; in A and C it appears as a quotation.

The order  
that Christ  
founded.

best man, þe wiseste, and þe beste willid, þat mai be in þe world; siþ he is boþe God and man. And herof wole it sue þat Cristis owne ordre is beter þan ony newe ordre founde of synful men, for ellis hadde Crist failid in power, in witt, or in wille; and, for þis is aʒens bileve, þerfore þei feilen in feiþ þat trowen þat þes newe religious passen Cristis religioun. And herfore he ordeynede his ordre to stonde in vertues of mannis soule and not in sensible signes. And as þe holy Trinite approvede Crist here, so it approveþ þe ordre þat he made, and putte it in þes þree þingis, in obedience to God, in poverte, and chastite wel undirstonden. Men may undirstonden amys þis obedience to Crist, and trowe þat it stondiþ in doinge of ech þinge þat þi privat priour biddiþ þee do; and certis þanne þou putttest him to be unsynful above Crist, or ellis þat þou shuldist do his wille aʒens Crist. Certis Crist haþ no power to lyve as þis prelat doiþ, but if Crist hadde fredom to falle in synne, and þus þis pryour were more free þan Crist. And herfore shulde we trowe þat ech obedience to man is as myche worþ as it techiþ obedience to God; and if it faile herfro bi unobedience, men shulden leve þis as venym contrarie to obedience; for ech verry obedience is obedience to God, and men shulden more obeishe to God þan to ony creature. And so unobedience brouzt yn bi þes newe ordres fouliþ many heepis of men bi foly of her prelatis. Soþeli in þes newe ordres men shulden obeishe to ech þing þat techiþ more obedience to God þan done siche prelatis. And it is not bileve þat þei techen betere obedience to God þan doiþ ony oper lawe or þingis þat speken to þes ordris. And þis movede Poul and oþer Apostlis to holden hem to Cristis ordre, siþ þe abbot is betere, þe reule, and þe knyztis; and algatis it is more free to holde Goddis comandementis. For þis feyned obedience lettiþ ofte to serve Crist, and herfore men shulden lerne obedience, to aʒenstonde. Whan ony creature of God biddiþ þee do contrarie to þat þat þi prelat þiddiþ þee do bi expresse signes, and God bi his creature biddiþ þee do þe contrarie, þanne þou shuldist aʒenstonde þi prelate in þis, and obeishe to God in what signe þat he usiþ. On þis maner Petre and oþer apostlis seiden þat men moten more obeishe to God þan to man, and Goddis lawe seiþ þat

God obeishide to mannis vois; for to ech þing men shulden obeishe in þat þat it sowneþ obedience to God. And if þis bileve were kept wel, þis newe obedience shulde gone aweie.

DE FIRSTE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER OCTAVE OF TWELFÞE DAY.

[SERMON XXXII.]

*Cum factus esset Jesus.*—LUC. ii. [42.]

Þis gospel telliþ a lore of Crist whan he was twelfe 3eer olde, and þis lore is ful of myraclis as oþer dedis ben þat he dide. Þe story telliþ þat, *whan Jesus was maad of twelfe 3eer olde he wente wiþ Joseph and Marye unto Jerusalem, as þei hadden custum at Paske for to make þis pilgrimage. And whan þe daies weren endid, of makinge of þis pilgrimage, his fadir and his modir wenten hoom, and Crist lefte aloone in þe citee. And his fadir and his modir wisten not þat Jesus was left bihynde, for children hadden in free custom to chese wheþer þat þei wolden wende wiþ fadir or wiþ modir; and þus Joseph wende þat Crist hadde come wiþ his modir, and oure Lady supposide þat Crist hadde come wiþ Joseph. And among Jewis was þis religioun kept, þat men shulden go bi hemsilf, and wymen bi hemsilf; for þei kepten hem fro lecherie in siche pilgrimage; but now pilgrimage is mene for to do lecherie. And al þis ordeyned oure maister for to teche his Chirche to enfourme þe prelatiſ after general doinge<sup>1</sup>, for errour in hem is more, and more harmful to þe Chirche. And whan þei weren met togidir, and wantiden þe child Jesus, þei wenden þat he hade<sup>2</sup> ben in felowship wiþ sum kyn of his freendis, and þei wenten azen to seke him amonge hem, and oo dai þei wenten azen and fond him not in þe wey. Þe þridde dale þei souzten in þe citee, and þei fond him not, and after þe þridde day þei fond him in þe temple, sittinge amonge doctours, heerynge and axinge hem. No drede þat ne Crist kepte good order in his doinge, ffirst heerynge and after axinge*

<sup>1</sup> doyngis, C.      <sup>2</sup> badde, B; bad, C.

<sup>a</sup> The meaning seems to be, 'in order to teach his Church so to fashion the mode of life of her prelates as that it may serve for a general example.'

Jesus questioning with the Doctors.

Dangers of the modern custom of pilgrimages.

wordis of þe lawe. *And alle þat herden him hadden wounder upon his wisdom and his answeris, and seyng þe zoupe of þe childe þei hadden wounder of his dedis. And his moder seide to him, Sone, whi didist þou þus to us? lo, þi fadir and Y boþe sorwunge have souzt þee. And Crist seide unto hem, Wherto have ze souzt me? ne wisten ze not þat Y moste be in þe nedis of my Fadir?* And here shulde prelatiſ lerne first to worshiþe þer God, and to serve his Chirche, bifore þat þei bisieden hem aboute worldely werkes. For<sup>1</sup> ech man shulde serve God bifore þat he servede oþer þing, for his first entent shulde be to worship God whatever he dide; and þis mut nede be in Crist, for he did al þingis as he shulde. *But þei undirstooden not þe word þanne þat Crist spake here to hem.* And Crist wente doun wiþ hem fro Jerusalem to Nazareþ, and he was suget unto hem, in þingis þat þei baden him do. *And his moder kepte alle þes wordis, berynge hem in her herte. And Jesus profitide in wisdom, in age, and in grace boþe to God and to man.*

We shal wite þat oure Jesus, siþ he was þis manhede, and suget to oþer men, and growide<sup>2</sup> in wexinge and elde, he profitide in kunnyng which þat cam of his wittis; but he had cunnyng of godhede and blesside cunnyng of man, bi which he was in al his tyme yliche wiys and knewe al þing. Here may holy Chirche knowe boþ þe religioun of Crist and partis of þis religioun, as obedience and mekenesse. For Crist was suget to his lesse, and servede hem ful mekely, for Goddis lawe tauzte him þat þei weren in spirit more þan Crist was bodily. And Goddis reule shulde suffice to men, al if þei cloutiden not newe reulis. For Crist tauzte perfitli a ful reule for al Cristene men, and it is a foul pryde to cloute our erroũrs to his wisdom, for olde cloiþ cloutid to newe makij more hole, as Crist seiþ. And we ben certeyne of oure bileve, þat Crist haþ mesurid his ordre in listnesse and in fredom more þan oþer men kunnen shape. How shulden blynde foolis after amende þis reule þat Crist haþ ʒovun? And so God enformeþ men of þes pryvat ordres þat þre þingis of her ordres ben ydil and noyous; first þer clouting of þer reule, and siþ þer obedience, and after þer obligacioun to þer

Christ's obedience preferable to that imposed by monastic rule.

Matt. ix. 16.

<sup>1</sup> So B and C; A has 'And, for,' which gives no sense.

<sup>2</sup> So B; groud. C; A has growiþ.

habitis and oþer uses. First, Cristis reule were fulli suffisant to alle men, and more free and more lizt, and of more autorite. How myzte þe fend for shame combre men wiþ sich cloutinge? And zif a man shulde wende aweie, it were noo nede to charge him wiþ þingis þat weren unprofitable zif he hadde ynowz bisyde. And so as God forfendiþ men to adde to his lawe, or for to drawe þerefro, for it is made in ful mesure, rizt so we shulden holde his reule bi whiche he techiþ al Cristene men, neiþer adde to ne drawe þerfro, lest we peiren Goddis ordenaunce. And litil errour in þis bileve growiþ to more in longe tyme, and þis fendis blasfemye in God disturbliþ þe Chirche more and more. As anentis obedience, it is knowen þat Cristis obedience kept clene were sufficient to alle men here on lyf, and oþer obediēce þat is cloutid doiþ harm manye weies. For it supposiþ þat þis prelate erriþ not in his commandementis, but ever more biddiþ his sugettis þe same þinge þat God biddiþ; and þus ech prelat shulde be yliche-wyse and evene wiþ God; and whan þei ben made prelatis bi synful menes as ofte falliþ, God shulde algatis 3yve hem witt, and conferme hem in grace; for if þei myzten after do synne, þei myzten be proud in þer prelacie and reule þer sugettis amys a3en þe comandementis of God. And þan were it profitable to wante siche blynde leders, siþ affiance in God and proving of his governaile myzte not faile to men but zif þei shal faile first.—Lord! whi ordeynede not God siche ordris in þe olde lawe ne in state of innocense; but distryede newe þat weren mad? wher God be not as wise as he was in þe olde lawe, and ordeniþ<sup>1</sup> now for his spouse as tendirly as he dide þanne? And þus alle newe ordres ben ful of heresie. And as anentis þes newe habitis, certainly þei ben of þe fend, but zif þere be sum nedeful cause byndyngē men þus to hem, for ellis þei weren superflue, and not of God but of þe fend, siþ þei tarrien<sup>2a</sup> mennis wittis and her keypyngē fro Goddis werkes. But it is knowen þinge to men þat þes habitis profiten not to

<sup>1</sup> This is the reading of C; A and B have *ordeynede*, clearly the wrong tense. <sup>2</sup> *tauzten*, C.

<sup>a</sup> Some words seem to have dropt out here, (though the MSS. consulted all concur in the reading given in the text,) which would have completed the sense, which is. that

to attach more importance to the friar's habit than to counsels or commandments of God, is to do the devil's work.

werkes of vertues, but hiden þes ypocritis, siþ þei may wiþ siche habitis be quyke fendis in þis world. And 3if þei profite bi ony caas, þei done harm ofter, as doiþ synne, and crien to men ypocrisie of siche ordris þat usen hem. And 3if þes signes ben fals, þei maken men fals þat usen hem; and so algatis, siþ vertues myȝte be kepte wiþouten sich signes more pryvly and sikirly, þei ben brouȝt in bi þe fende, and specialy, to charge hem more þan conseilis or mandementis of God. Ech man mut hav sum custom, but loke he wedde him not þerwiþ, ne bisye him not þat it be kepte of many men, for þei ben dyverse and axen dyverse costoms aftir þat God moveþ hym.

ÞE SECOUNDE SONDAY GOSPEL AFTIR OCTAVE OF TWELFÞE DAY.

[SERMON XXXIII.]

*Nuptiae factae sunt in Chana Galilee.*—JOH. ii. [I.]

Þis gospel telliþ of þe first myracle þat Crist dide in presence of his disciplis. And þus telliþ þe story, *þat weddingis weren made in a litil dwellinge place in þe contre of Galile, and Jesus' moder was þere, wiþ Jesus and his disciplis.* For as men seyen comounly, Joon Evangelist was weddid here<sup>a</sup>, and Crist was his cosyn, and Cristis modir was his aunte; and herfore þei weren homelyer in þis weddinge of Joon. Studie we not to what woman þis Joon was weddid, ne axe we not autorite to prove þat Joon was weddid now; ffor þat þe gospel seiþ here is ynow to Cristen feiþ. *And whan wyn failide, at þis feste, Jesus modir seide to him, Þei have noo wyn.* And herby þis Lady ment on curtays manere as she durst, þat Jesus shulde helpe þis feste of

The marriage  
at Cana in  
Galilee

\* This myth, for it is nothing more, appears in its complete form in De Lyra (Biblia Sacra, Lugduni, 1589). 'Dicitur communiter quod istae nuptiae fuerunt Johannis Evangelistae a quibus eum Christus vocavit ante consummationem matrimonii per copulam carnis.' There is no trace of it in the works of St. Austin or St. Jerome, nor, according

to Cave (*Antiq. Apostolicae*, p. 118), in any of 'the Fathers and best writers of the Church.' Bede (Prol. in Joh. Evang.) says, 'Hic est Johannes Evangelista . . . qui virgo a Deo electus est; quem de nuptiis, volentem nubere, vocavit Deus.' But he does not identify these 'nuptiae' with the marriage at Cana.

wyn bi his myracle. But *Jesus answerede*, strangely, *What is þat to me and to þee, woman?* as if he seide, Y have not by my manhede of þee for to do siche myraclis, but þerto nedij my godhede; but afterward shal tyme come whan Y shal offre my bodi þat Y hadde of þee, for savynge of mankynde. And herfore notiþ Austyn<sup>a</sup> how Jesus Crist clepiþ specialy in þes two places his moder, woman, and here he figuride his speche in his passioun. And to þis entent seiþ Crist, *þat his hour is not zit comen*, in which he shulde bi suffringe putte his bodi in werke. But his modir, supposinge ay good of hir sone, *seide to þe mynystris to do what ever he seide. And þere were at þe feste sixe water pottis sett, and ech of hem held a galoun or more.*—Þe Jewis hadden a custoum to washe hem ofte, for touching or seyng of þinge clene ynow, as Seint Mark meneþ in his gospel. *Jesus bade þe servauntis fille þe pottis with watir, and þei filliden hem alle up to þe mouþe. And Jesus seide þan, Helde out now, and bere þe persoun*:—an architriclyn was he, þat was clepid to blesse þe feeste, and principal<sup>1</sup> in þe hous þat was of þre stages, as zif it were now a persone of a church. *And þei baren to þis persoun þe wyn þat Jesus hadde made. And whan he hadde tastid þerof, and wiste not how it came, but þe servauntis wisten wel þat drowen þe water, he clepide þe spouse of þe hous, and seide to him þus, Þes men þat festen oper putten first good wyn, whan þer tast is freishe, for to juge þe goodnesse, and after whan þei ben drunken and þer taist failiþ, þanne he puttiþ wers wyn, but þou doist even þe contrarie, for, þou hast kept good wyn unto þis tyme. Þis was þe bigynnyng of signes þat Jesus dide in Galile, and shewide his glorie, bi doinge of þis myracle, and his disciplis trowiden in him.*

Mark vii. 4

Þis wedding bitokeneþ love þat God hadde to his Chirche, how he wolde bicomē man, and be newe weddid to it. And herfor was Crist not bigamus, ne brake not his matrimonye,

Interpretation

<sup>1</sup> So B; A and C have *principally*.

\* The interpretation throughout this sermon is generally founded on S. Austin's eighth Tractate *In Jobannis Evangelium*. Compare the following passage: 'Miraculum autem quod facturus erat, secundum divinitatem facturus erat, non secundum infirmitatem; secundum quod Deus erat, non secundum quod infirmus

natus erat. . . . Miraculum ergo exigebat mater, at ille tanquam non agnoscit viscera humana, operaturus facta divina, tanquam dicens, Quod de me facit miraculum, non tu genuisti; divinitatem meam non tu genuisti: sed quia genuisti infirmitatem meam, tunc te cognoscam, cum ipsa infirmitas pendebit in cruce.'

siþ þe same Chirche his wyf lastiþ ever more, but wiþ newe wenchis is Crist now weddid, and on newe maner he kepte his firste matrimonye; as, if a spouse of a wife were newe cled, herfore were not dyvors made bytwene hem. A newe weddinge wiþ membris of þis grete womman makij not divors, ne bryngij in no bigamye; as, if a wyf growide and hadde many partis þat she hadde not bifore, sche were not þerfore lefte. And þus Chana, þat is gelousnes<sup>1</sup>, and Galilee, þat is a turnynghe whele, bitokenen þe love of Crist þat he hadde to conforte his spouse in þis weie, and brynge her after to blisse in þe chaumbre of hevене.—Þe turnynghe of þis water into good wyn techij hou Crist made his lawe more savery, as þe wyne was beter þan þe water bifore. And riȝt as o substaunce is first water and siþ wyne, riȝt so o lawe is first colde and siþ hote; and herfore seiþ Crist þat he came not to fordo þe lawe but to fulfille þe lawe, and make it more savery. And drede we not þes philosophis to graunte hem aptly þat þe same substaunce is first watir and siþ wyne, ne drede we not dyvynes þat axen in þis cas, what was maad newe of Crist in þis myracle; siþ qualite, as coloure or savoure of wyne, may not be by it silf. As Austyn seiþ<sup>a</sup>, we shal wite þat myracle of Crist was wrouȝt here, so þat riȝt as water, þat first was in þe erþe, is drawn in to þe vyne tree, and siþ in to þe grapis, and by tyme defyed<sup>2</sup> til þat it be wyne, so Crist did þis chaunginge in a litil tyme; but more myracle was of beteringe of his lawe, and þe moste of alle, of swifte turnynghe to it. Þes sixe water pottis þat helden þis colde water ben men of þe olde lawe þat kepten Goddis lawe. But þei weren sixe, for fro ȝeer to ȝeer þei kepten þis lawe þat was hard as stones, and made hem colde on oþer manere þan þe newe lawe; for it makij men liȝt, and hetij hem, and confortij hem, as wyn doiþ mannis bodi. As philosophis seyn, þes mesures of þes vessilis ben þe olde cerymonyes þat weren beden of God, and sum founden of Jewis, and al þes weren fillid of Crist. But, to anoþer witt, þis archytryclyn was

<sup>1</sup> *gelousnesse*, B and C.

<sup>2</sup> *defied*, B, C.

<sup>a</sup> 'Sicut enim quod miserunt ministri in hydrias, in vinum conversum est opere Domini, sic et quod nubes fundunt, in vinum convertitur ejus-

dem opere Domini. Illud autem non miramur, quia omni anno fit; assiduitate amisit admirationem.' S. Aug. *loc. cit.*



þe manheed of Crist, for he made þis myracle bi his godhede. He was þe first þat tastide þis wyn and ʒaf it þes propreetes, boþe in him and oþers; and doinge of þis myracle passide mannis feestyng, for God puttij him silfe to be boþe mete and drynke to men þat he fedij, and he is þe best. For worldely festyng is first savery to man, and siþ it is bittir as wermode<sup>1</sup> to hym; but goostly foode aʒenward first is unsavery, and siþ it is swete, whan men defien<sup>a</sup> it, for Goddis lawe savourij wele whan it is defoulid, as spicerye ʒyveþ smell whan it is powned, but dritte, ʒif stired more, is more unsavery, and þus þe ʒyvyng of þe lawe of God was ground and bigynnyng of Cristen mennis religioun. And þus þe disciplis of Crist, alle þat he hap ordeyned for to come to hevене bi riʒt bileve, trowen in him bi vertue of þis wyne; and þus is Crist glorified in hevене and in erþe bi strengþe of his lawe þat he þus ʒaf.

PRIDDE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER OCTAVE OF TWELFÞ DAL.

[SERMON XXXIV.]

*Cum descendisset Jesus de monte.*—MATT. viii. [I.]

Þis gospel tellij of two myraclis þat Crist dide, and conteyneþ myche witt aboute þes two myraclis. Þe story tellij how *Jesus cam down of þe hille, whan he hadde ʒovun his lawe to his disciplis, and a myche peple suede him, for devocioun þat þei hadden in his lawe, and eke in his wordis. And lo, þere cam a mesel man, and loutide him and seide, Lord, ʒif þou wolt, þou maist hele me. And Crist seide he wold, and bade him be hole.* It is comounly supposid þat þis leprous man trowide þat Crist was boþe God and man, and so Crist myʒte hele him, but of his owne worþinesse affiede he not þis; and herfore he seide þat, ʒif Crist wolde, he myʒte hele him of his lepre, and þan was Crist God. And God wolde þat proude men and leprous heretikes wolden wel confesse þe feiþ, and þan shulden þei be hool. And *Crist stretchid out his hond, and touchide him, and seide, Y wole make*

The healing of the leper.

<sup>1</sup> wormood, B; wormode, C.

<sup>a</sup> The following passage, from the first Wycliffite version (1 Sam. xxv. 37), throws light on the meaning of

the text:—'Forsobe eerli, whanne Naabal hadde *defied* þe wyn, his wyf shewide to him þes wordis.'

*þee hoole, and able þee þerto; and þus doiþ God to whom he 3yveþ grace. And anon was clensid þe lepre of þis man. And þis hasty helynge bitokeneþ þis myracle; and þat Crist touchide þis leprouse techiþ us now þat þe manhede of Crist was instrument to his godhede, for to do myraclis þat he wolde weren do<sup>1</sup>, and þat touchinge of leprouse men was lefel to men þat þus wolden helpe hem. But Crist myzt not be blemysid by touchinge of þis leprouse; and so tauzte Crist his everlasting good wille, and tauzte us to performe þe good wille that we have. And after Crist bade him, See þat þou telle no man, but go and shewe him to þe preest, and offre þat 3ifte þat Moises bad in witness of siche helpe.*

Mystical  
interpretation  
of the miracle.

And so men seien, on þree maneris may þis word be undirstonden. First þat þis man shulde telle no man herof bifore þat he had offrid þat Crist bad him do. Þe secounde cause and betere is, þat Crist bad þis, to teche us to flee boost, and þanke of siche men to whiche we done good bi maner of mercy; and þus we shulden not telle þis, bi entent of mannis þank. Þe þridde weye seiþ, þat Crist bad þis negatife, to flee sclandre of Goddis lawe and man, and flee bostinge of himsilfe, and conseyyng of yvel of God. And, for þe olde lawe was þan ceesid, Crist bad fille þis lawe as autor þerof. And þus whan a man shewiþ by his holy lyf, actif lyf, þat is two dowfe bryddis, or contemplative lyf, þat is a paire of turturs, bi siche signes he shewiþ þat his synne is for3ovun, and þat unto preestis þat wel undirstonden þis. And þus synful men shulden conseile with preestis, and take of hem medecine to fle more synne.

Healing of the  
centurion's  
servant.

Þe secounde myracle techiþ how Crist helide an heþene man, for love of centurion þat kepte Capharnaum, þat was heed toun of þe contre of Galile. *Þis centurio tolde Crist þat his child lay in his hous syke on the palesie, and was yvel turmentid.* But Luke telliþ how þis knyzt dide al þis by olde men of þe Jewis þat myche preisiden þis knyzt, and seiden þat he was frend to hem, and bilde hem a synagoge. And Crist cam wiþ hem nyze to þis knyztis hous, and þis knyzt seide þus unto Jesus Crist, *Lord, Y am not worþi þat þou entre under my roof, but seiie oonly wiþ word, and my servant*

<sup>1</sup> *wer done, C.*

shal be hool. For *Y* am a man putt in þis place bi power of þe emperour, havyng under me knyztis, for to do myn office, and *Y* seide to on, Go, and he goiþ, and *Y* seide to anoþer, Come, and he comeþ, and *Y* seide to my servaunt, Do þis, and he doiþ it. And bi þis wolde þis knyzt mene þat Crist hadde no nede to entre in to his hous to hele þis seke man, siþ Crist is God Almyzty, under no power. Jesus *herynge þes wordis woundride* in hise wittis: al if he wist and ordéyned bifore þat þis knyzt shulde þus trowe<sup>1</sup>, and herfore *seide Crist to þe folk þat sueden him, Sobely Y seid to you, Y foud not so myche feiþ in al þe folk of Israel*, neiþer preestis ne comouns. Crist mente not of hise apostlis ne of his modir ne of his maynè, for þei weren take from Israel, as Crist was here a strange lord. And herfore bihetip Crist his Chirche þat shal be of heþene men, þat *many of þe este and west shal come and reste wiþ patriarkes in þe kyngdom of hevene*, where children of þis rewme shal be putt out, and cast into helle; *þere shal be wepynges*, þat is, sensible sorewe, and *gnastinge of teeb*, þat is more, for it is peyne of harm of blisse, þat passiþ al sensible peyn. And *Jesus seide eft to þis knyzt, Go, and þi servaunt shal be hool; for as þou trowist, bi my grace, be it done unto þee. And þe childe was maad hool in þe same houre*, þat Crist spake þus. We shal wite þat feiþ is a gifte of God, and so God may not 3yve it to man but 3if he 3yve it graciously. And þus alle goodis þat men have been 3iftes of God, and þus whan God rewardip a good werk of man, he corouneþ his owne 3ifte. And þis is of grace, for alle þingis ben of grace þat men have of wille of God; and Goddis goodnesse is firste cause why he 3yveþ men þes goodis. And so it may not be þat God do good to men, but 3if he do þes goodes freely bi his grace. And wiþ þis we shall graunte þat men disserven of God; for in grace þei maken hem worthi to have þis good of God; but we shal not undirstonde þat ech grace of God is a lump of þingis þat may be bi hymself, but grace is a manere in man bi which he is graciously to God, and oþer grace on Goddis side is good wille of God. And for siche grace in God men resceyven grace in hem, and chiding of ydiotis, as was Pilagius and oþer, þat conseyven not

Interpretation.

The error of Pelagius

<sup>1</sup> So in B; *towe*, A; *betrew*, C.

þat a þing may be but ȝif it be bi himsilf, as ben substancis, is for to scorne and to leve to foolis. For nyne kyndis of accidētis have contrary manere, siþ ech of hem is a manere of substance of a þing, and it may not be by himsilf, as heretikes dreemen. And herfore leeve we þis, and lerne we of þis knyȝt to be meke in herte in word and in dede, for he grauntide first þat he was under mannis power, and ȝit bi power of man he myȝt do many þingis; myche more shulden we knowe þat we ben undir Goddis power, and þat we may do noo þinge but by power of<sup>1</sup> God; and ȝif we disusen þis power, woo shal us be þefore. And so þis rote of mekenesse shal gete oþer vertues to us, and grace of God to disserve mede of hevene and goodis of glorie, as it was in þe gentil knyȝte.

ÞE FOURÞE SONDAY GOSPEL AFTER OCTAVE OF TWELFÞE DAL.

[SERMON XXXV.]

*Ascendente Jesu in naviculam.*—MATT. viii. [23.]

Christ stills the tempest.

Þis gospel telliþ a myracle þat Crist dide in þe water, and syche myraclis confermen þe feiþ of holy Chirche ful myche in rude men; al ȝif þei ben hard. And so doinge of myraclis in water and londe bitokneþ þat Crist shewide his woundris to dyverse men. Sum resseyveden hem not to hele of her soule, for þei weren unstable as water, and forðiden soone Cristis prente<sup>2</sup>; but oþer men weren stable as lond, þat helden þe prente þat Crist putt in hem, and bi þe ground of siche feiþ þei wenten fulli þe wey to hevene. Þe storye telliþ of Jesus þat he *stepide in to a boote, and his disciplis sueden him. And lo, þe water movede fast, so þat þe boot was hid with wawis, for þe wynd and þe water weren contrarye to hem:—Criste slepte in þis tyme<sup>3</sup> in þe boot, as he hadde ordeyned. Þe disciplis comen and wakiden him, and seide þus to Crist, Lord, save us, for we perishen. And Crist seide to hem, What dreden ȝe of litil feiþ? And Crist roos up anoon, and comandide to þe wyndis and þe water, and þei weren restid anoon. And al þe puple woundride*

<sup>1</sup> om. A.

<sup>2</sup> *prynte*, B.

<sup>3</sup> A and B include the words 'in þis' in the italics; C rightly excludes them.

*herof, and saiden among hem selfe, What is he þis, for the wyndis and þe see obeishen to him?*

Sipe alle þe dedes þat Crist dide techen men how þei shulden do, þis restyng of Crist in þis boot bitokeneþ lore to be markid. We shulden be tymes reste, and preye to God in silcence<sup>1</sup>, and heere of him heelful lore þat we shulden after teche þe puple. And þus shulde techers flee preisynge of þe peple, as Crist dide. And þis is a pryvy synne amonge men þat prechen to þe puple, and certis it is a greet synne, for God shulde have al hool þe þank. And þus þe sleping of Crist bitokeneþ his verre manhede, and makij his<sup>2</sup> myracle more, and to preye him hertlier in nede. And þus al oonli we dreden for defaute of feiþ in us, and Crist slepiþ not to us but for defaute of feiþ, for þe godhede may not slepe, and 3it we speken unto him, Ryse, why slepist þou, Lord? and helpe us in þis nede. And þus on two maneres failiþ bileve in men. First, whan men wantiþ bileve, as þes þat trowiden not þat Crist was God; for 3if þei hadden trowid þis hooli, þei shulde have trowid þat Crist myzte slepinge have done þis myracle and myche more. On þe secounde manere failiþ bileve, whan it worchiþ not wele in dede, but is ydel as a slepyng man; and þan clerkes seyen it is in habite<sup>a</sup>. And þus may no man do synne but 3if his bileve faile ouper on oo manere or on oþer; for 3if he hadde freishely bileve how foul his synne is, and hou myche it harmeþ him, he wolde not for al þis worlde do þis synne, but fleen it. And herfore preyden disciplis to alarge him<sup>3</sup> bileve, and Crist seide to Petre, Whi doutist þou of litil bileve? And Crist seide to a man þat he shulde trowe, for alle þingis ben possible to men þat bileve. And shortly no kyn vertue was preisid more of Crist þan was ri3t bileve, for it is ground of alle oþer; ne doute we not how bileve may now be lesse and now be more, siþ þan partis of bileve myzten go away and come newe, and þan þer weren dyverse bileves for dyversitee of parties. Siche doutes we shulden sende to þe scole of Oxenforde, and we shulden wite wel bi God þat dyverse feiþis in a man, now on<sup>4</sup> and now oþer,

<sup>1</sup> *silence*, C.    <sup>2</sup> *þis*, C.    <sup>3</sup> *hem*, B; *hem in*, C. *Him* is the purer and older form for the dative plural of the third personal pronoun.    <sup>4</sup> *oon*, B.

<sup>a</sup> That is, *ἐν ἑξέει*, to use the language of Aristotle, not *ἐν ἐνεργείᾳ*.

Interpretation.

Speculative doubts should be referred to the school of Oxford.

make no feiþ in him, 3he, 3if þe tyme be dyverse þat þis feiþ þus comeþ or goiþ. And þus may God encrease oure feiþ, and we by synne enfeblen oure feiþ; and Crist slepiþ ofte to us for siche slepyng of oure synne. For whan wyndis of mennis bost maken us to drede of worldely harmes, and flodis of tribulacioun comen to us, þei maken us dreden and crye on Crist to have helpe for failinge in our bileve. For we shulden trowe þat noo siche a cas my3te anoy us but for synne, and 3if it come for oure synne, it is just, and Goddis wille. Whi shulde we be þus distemprid for þing þat is nede to come? Love we God, and do we his wille, and drede we noo þing but hym. For defaute in oure bileve makþ us to drede for siche þingis. For þes foure mannis affeccions, drede and sorewe, hope and joye, changen a mannis wille after þat he haþ vertues. And if he be rootid in synne þei chaungen myche in a man, for he haþ drede of þing of not<sup>1</sup>, and after joye of worldely þingis, and also sorewe of losse of þinge þat were betere to him to want, and hope of þingis ferre fro his helpe, as is welfare of þis worlde. And alle þes techen þat his wille is not sette on hevenly þingis, ne his bileve groundid in God for defaute of good love, for ech man shulde drede more loss of Goddis love by synne þan he shulde drede losse of ony worldely þingis. For as bileve techeþ us loss of Goddis love were wers, whi shulde we not drede þis more, siþ it bringiþ more harm to us, and hope more helpe bi charite þan bi any mannis helpe? And þus cursiþ þe prophete him þat tristþ þus in man. And here may men have a myrroure to juge wher þei love God and where þei ben in charite, bi þe ordre þat þei shulden have 3if þei loven God wel; þei shulde more have joie of him þan of ony erþely þinge. And so of his loss, 3if it come; 3if þei lesen þe love of God bi þer synne, þat þei shulden knowe, þei shulde have more sorewe þerof þan of loss of oper þing. And þis joye, wiþ þis loss, wolde make men to flee synne. Siþ many men with diligence fleen losse of worldely goodis, and kepen hem þat þei ben not dampned in siche los by mannis lawe, and drede not so myche to lese goodis of grace þat be betere, it is open þat charite is not ordynel in

Jer. xvii. 5.

<sup>1</sup> nou3t, B.

hem. And þus of goodes of kynde, men drede myche to lesen hem, as reule of kynde techiþ us, and comoun experiens; and 3if þei comen to us, we joien ful myche, as we witen well; but goodis of grace we putten bihynde, and þat fordoijþ oure charite. And 3if we feynen falsehede in þes two þingis, boþe God and our bysynes shal be jugis aʒens us. Lord! wheþer traveilen we more, aboute goodis of þes two þingis or aboute goodis of grace? Oure owne traveil shal juge us; what preest bisieþ him more now for to sue Crist in vertues, þan for to gete a benefice, or for to gete worldely goodis? And þis techiþ þat he joiieþ more of worldely goodis þan goodis of grace. How ever þat we stryven now, oure juge shal dampne us at þe laste. And bi þis same skile, hope and sorewe shal jugen us, for we casten more oure bisynes in hope of a worldely prowē þan we done in hope of hevēne or hevēnly blisse þat we shulden have; and þus we dreden more of loss of worldely goodis þat we hopen þus, þan we done of goodis of blisse; and þis reversiþ al oure lyf.

DE FYFFÞE SONDAI AFTER OCTAVE OF TWELFÞE DAL.

[ S E R M O N   X X X V I . ]

*Simile est regnum celorum homini qui seminavit.*

MATT. xiii. [24.]

CRIST in þis parable telliþ þe staat of his Chirche, and seiþ þat *þe kyndom of hevēne is lyke to a man þat sew good seed in his felde*. Þe kyngdom of hevēne telliþ boþe togidere, Crist and his maynē, but principali Crist. And herfore Crist is often clepid þe kyngdome of hevēne, and þe Chirche, þat is his<sup>1</sup> wyfe, is o persone wiþ him. And þus þe kyngdome of hevēne seiþ þis spouse and his<sup>2</sup> wyfe; but here is þis kyngdom take for Jesus Crist, þat is boþe God and man, and ordeyneþ wel for his Chirche. *Þis man sew first good seed in þe feld* of þis Chirche; for he puttide first good feiþ in herte of his servauntis, and þis seed is Goddis word, as Crist himsilf seiþ. Ffirst þis seed growide clene, and brouʒt

The parable of the tares.

<sup>1</sup> So in C; om. A, B.

<sup>2</sup> þis, C.

forþ good fruyt, but þe fend had envye þat þis seed growide þus ; and þis man þat is enemye to Crist and his Chirche cam and sew tares whan men weren aslepe. For bi dowynge of þe Chirche and negligence of prelatiſ is manniſ lawe medlid wiþ Goddiſ lawe. And þeſ double manniſ laweſ, þe popiſ and þe emperourſ<sup>a</sup>, letten Goddiſ lawe to growe, and gnaren þe Chirche, as tares gnaren corn, and letten it to þryve. And þe fend went away, and ceesside sum what to tempte men, for he was sikir of þis tare þat it shulde myche lette þe Chirche. And þis is þe cautil of þe fend, to wiþdrawe his malice and shewe signeſ, as myracliſ, whan he haþ sowen yvel seed, as if God were wel paiid wiþ sowynge of sicke seed. And as wete somerſ nurishen sicke tares, so lustful lyf of men þat shulden florishe in vertueſ bryngiþ in sicke laweſ biside wordiſ of bileve. And þis lettij trewe men to telle Goddiſ lawe, and lettij þe Chirche to growe in feiþ and oþer vertueſ. And first, whan þe Chirche growid wiþ þis tare, 3it it was hidd long after þe dowynge<sup>b</sup>, but siþ was þis tare shewid, and Goddiſ lawe hidde. For many wete somerſ ben comen to þe Chirche, and so manniſ lawe growiþ and Goddiſ lawe is lettid, and speciali bi laweſ of þeſ newe ordreſ. But whan malice of þeſ laweſ was knowun to trewe men, þanne þei and aungelſ spoken<sup>1</sup> to God and preyd Him þat þei myzt gedre away þeſ tares, so þat Goddiſ lawe myzte renne freely as it first dide. But Crist denyeþ þis to hem, for harm þat myzt come, for good corn myzte be drawun up bifore þat it were ripe, as trewe men in God myzte be some kild, 3if þei shewiden to myche þis cause, of clenness of Goddiſ lawe. But God haþ ordeyned his seed to growe til it be ripe, as God haþ ordeyned his membris to helpe aȝenſ þe fendis lymes, as long as it is good þat þe Chirche profite here bi hem. And þus 3if sowynge of þe fend tariē here Cristiſ Chirche, and maķiþ here Cristiſ corn ful þinne, and maķiþ þicke þe fendis lymes, nepeleſ þis good corn groweþ more medefulli to þe Chirche, for þei have more lettynge, but wel is him þat may stonde. And herfor biddiþ Crist, *þat men shal suffre boþe þeſ*

<sup>1</sup> So in B; *spoken*, C; *speken*, A.

<sup>a</sup> The canon law and the civil law. Church by Constantine under Pope  
<sup>b</sup> The supposed endowment of the Sylvester.



two growe til þet yme of repinge, and þan shal he sey to þe repers, *Gidere 3e first þes tares togidere, and bynde hem in knytchis to brenne, but gedere 3e þe good corn to my berne.* Tyme of þis repinge is clepid þe day of dome, or ellis tyme ny3 it, and þes repers ben good angelis, þat gederen partis of Cristis Chirche; and þes good angels shal bynde Cristis enemyes in *knytchis*; and after þei shal brenne in helle bi þe ry3tful dome of God, and trewe servauntis of Crist shall be gederid bi good aungelis and come to hevене as Goddis bern. And here supposen men, siþ it is ny3e domes day, þat soone hereaftir shal be distryed boþ mannes lawe and her makers, and so, 3if God wil, boþe ypocritis and trynauntis<sup>1</sup> shal be distryed, as þe Antipope wiþ his court, and þes newe religiouse. And þan shal Goddis lawe regne wiþ þe trewe partis of his Chirche; for, as þis gospel telliþ, þes tares shal be gedrid first; but at þe day of dome Cristis lymes shal first be comfortid; and so it semeþ þat Crist spekiþ here of tyme bifore þe day of dome, and þus he moveþ many men for to trete þis mater now. And prey we al devoutely þat God do here as him lykeþ, and stonde we stif in Goddis lawe, and preise we it bifore þis tare.

Many men musen<sup>2</sup> of undirstondinge of þis gospel, and þenken þat it is foly to speke azens Anticrist, siþ treuþe of Goddis lawe telliþ þat he shal vencuschen Cristene men for a tyme, and we may see þis at eye. And þus telliþ þe gospel þat God<sup>3</sup> wole þat tare growe til þe day of dome among good corn, but who shulde reverse God and do azens his wille? Here shal we suppose comoun bileve and comoun distincciouns, þat ben said in Latyn, and þanne me þinkip þat we shulden preien þat Goddis wille be done, as it is in hevене, so here in erþe. And over þis we shulden stonde sadde in bileve of God, and lyve in vertues as Goddis lawe biddiþ us, and assenten not to synne of Anticrist þat regneþ now, but have sorewe þefore, siþ Crist hadde sorewe for synne and wepte never but þries for synne, as Goddis lawe techiþ us, and resoun acordiþ herwiþ; siþ synne is moost yvel, and so we shulden more have sorewe for synne þan for ony

The anti-pope Clement and the frars compared to the tares.

The opinion that it is folly to contend with Antichrist, as he is destined to triumph for a time.

<sup>1</sup> *tirauntis*, B: *tyrantis*, C.

<sup>2</sup> *mosyn*, C

<sup>3</sup> So in C. om. A and B.

Confuted

oþer yvel. And þus, ȝif we myȝte lette synne, we shulden be Goddis proctours, al if we dien þefore, and profiten here no more. But lyve we wel, and God failiþ not to consaile us how we shal do, and þus assente we not to synne but profite we as God biddiþ us. And herby may we answeere to þe fendis argument. Suppose we þat Anticrist shall vencushe trewe men for a tyme; but þis is in bodily victory and not in vencushing of treupe; for þus he vencuschiþ no man, but ever is overcome him silf. And þus trewe men shal ever have mater for to fiȝte goostly, boþe wiþ þe fend and his membris, þat ben wickide men of þis world. And so wiþ þis undirstondinge fiȝte we wisely wiþ þis world, but algatis loke þat we be armed wiþ pacience and charite; and þan þe fiȝting of þe fend may no wey do us harm. And if þis skile shulde move men to performe Goddis wille, never shulde man fiȝte wiþ synne, for God wole þat synne profite. But what witen we wher tyme be come þat God wole þat þis tare be distryed? And herfore worche we wiseli, and fiȝte we aȝens þe fend, siþ þis stondiþ wiþ Goddis lawe and wiþ fillinge of Goddis wille.

ÞE GOSPEL ON SEPTUAGESIME SUNDAY.

[SERMON XXXVII.]

*Simile est regnum celorum homini patrifamilias.*—MATT. XX. [I.]

Þis gospel telliþ bi a parable how God haþ ordeyned for his Chirche fro þe bygynnyng of þe world, as longe as it dwelliþ here. *The kyngdom of hevene, seiþ Crist, is lyke to a good huseboonde<sup>a</sup>; þat wente first eerly to hire werkmen into his vyneserde.* Þis housboonde is God, and þis vyneserde is his Chirche, and at þe bygynnyng of þe world he hyred men to wirche þerynne, for alle þes men þat comen to hevene wirchen wel in þis Chirche; and *her hire is a peny þat þei taken*, for dai of hir lyf. And þis peny is hadde of men bi godhede and manhede of Crist. *And*

<sup>a</sup> *Bonde* in the Scandinavian dialects has the sense of peasant, or small proprietor.

The parable of the labourers in the vineyard.

*after þis acorde made, he sente þes werkmen into his Chirche. And þis housbonde wente out in þe þridde houre of his day, and say oþer stondeinge ydel in þe cheping to be hired, and þis fadir seide to hem, Go 3e in to my vynezerde, and þat þing þat is riȝt I shal 3yve 3ou. Þes werkmen ben seintis þat God hadde ordeynede for to travaile in his Chirche after þe first age, and þei stoden ydel in þe way to heveneward bifore þat God hadde moved hem to traveile in his Chirche. And God bihiȝt þat he shulde 3yve hem þat were riȝtful hem to have, and þat is þe blisse of hevene, þat falliȝ to þis large lord. For it is uncerteyne to hem where þei shal perfourme þis travail, herfore he bihetiȝ to hem to 3yve hem þat were riȝtful. And þei wenten forþ and wrouȝten wel, werke of þis vynezerde; and þus he dide in þe sixte houre and in þe nynþe houre also. For God hirede laborers after þat his Chirche hadde nede, and so he bood<sup>1</sup> first oo our and siȝ two to hire servauntis. He wente forþ aboute þe enlevenþe hour, and fond oþer men stondeinge, and seide to hem, Whi stonde 3e here al dai ydel fro traveil af þis vynezerde<sup>2</sup>? And þei seiden to him, for no man hadde hirid hem; and he seide unto hem, And go 3e in to my vynezerde. He made noon oþer covaunant wiȝ hem, for two bifore weren ynow.*

Þes fyve houres bitokenen boþe þe elde of þe Chirche from þe bigynnyng til þat Crist cam, and trewe men þat travelliden þerinne. For it is seid comonly þat þe world haȝ sixe eeldis. Þe first was from Adam to Noe; þe toþer from Noe to Abraham; þe þridde from Abraham to David; þe fourþe from tyme of David to passinge in to Babiloyne; and þe fyfte fro þat tyme til þe natyvyte of Crist. Þe sixte age is undirstonde from þennes til þe day of dome. Þan shal the liȝt of Crist go down fro dwellinge in þis world, and shyne in þe toþer worlde by mene of þe day of dome, and for notablete<sup>3</sup> of Crist. He telliȝ not hiryng for þis hour; and, for þis tyme is to come, and Goddis lawe is ful hereof, he telliȝ not of þis sixte hiryng, but undirstondiȝ it in oþer. Ne we shulde not knowe nowe þe quantite of þis age þat lastiȝ fro Cristis ascencioun unto dai of jugement. Þe traveile in þis vynezerde stondiȝ in þes þre þingis: firste, digge aboute þe vyne rotis, and dunge hem wel, and hile hem þanne.

The six ages  
of the church.

<sup>1</sup> *abode*, C.      <sup>2</sup> So in C; A and B wrongly include the clause in the italics.      <sup>3</sup> *notablite*, B; *notabilite*, C.

Þe secounde traveile in þis vynezerde is to kitte wel þe braunchis; and þe þridde traveile herof were to araile þes growynge vynes. Sum of þis perteyneþ to God and sum is done bi mannis traveile. God himsilf makip þes vynes, and plantip hem in his 3erde; for God makip trewe men, and 3yveþ hem witt to bryng good fruyte; and prechours ben helpours of God, and delven aboute bi bileve, but God 3yveþ þe growynge, al 3if men planten and waten. For þus dide Jeromye in þe olde testament; and þus also dide Poul in þe tyme of grace. And so þes laborers have nede to delve aboute þes rotis, lest yvel eerbis grown þere, and bastard braunchis wiþouten bileve. Þei ben dungid wiþ fyve wordis, þat seint Poul wolde teche þe puple; þe whiche sum men undirstonden hevne and helle and weies to hem; but þe first word and þe fifþe is þe holy Trinite. Whan þes fyve sentencis ben prechid, and declarid on good manere, þan þes vynes ben dungid, and wele hilid wiþ erþe. But wise men kitten þes branchis, whan þei wiþdrawun cursid men þat ben superflue in þe Chirche, and letten it to brynge forþ wyne. And to þis helpen my3ti men þat drawn fro clerkis worldely goodis þat þei have a3en Goddis lawe, and done harm to his Chirche, but þei þat martiren Goddis servauntis, be þei knyztis, be þei preestis, þei be foxis þat ben aboute to distrie þis vynezerd. Þe railynge fallip to prelatis and oþer vikeris of God, þat makip þe statis of men to stonde in þe bondis þat God haþ ordeyned; and 3if wyndis or oþer weders putten down þes statis to þe erþe, bi vertue and strengþe of prelatis shulde þes statis ben holden up. And so ech cristene man shulde helpe þis vynezerde; for growynge of coolwortis and oþer wedis maken malencolie and oþer synnes, and gladen men not, to wende to hevne, but maken hem hevy to falle to helle. *And whan evenynge was come, þe lord of þis vynezerde seide to his proctour, and bade hem clepe þes werkmen, and 3yve hem her hire, bigynynge at þe last werkmen unto þe first laborers.*

Þe lord of þis vynezerde is þe godhede of Crist, and þe proctour herof may be clepid his manhede. Þis evenynge is þe day of dome, þat sum tyme is clepid myd nyzt, and sum tyme clere dai, to dyverse men þerinne, as þe same tyme is clepid here day and here nyzt, here faire tyme and

hoot, and her foule wedir and coold. Clepyng of þes werkmen is clepyng to goddis dome, þat is þe laste trumpe þat seint Poul spekþ of. Crist shal bigynne at men of þis last tyme, for men of þis last age shal be more blessid, and be first in worþynesse þan men of oþer ages, siþ þe manhede of Crist is in þe sixte age, and his modir wiþ apostlis shulen passe oþer in blisse, and so in oþer agis þe later hadden more grace, siþ Crist is þe emperoure, þat wendþ ever alarginge. Þe sevenþe age is clepid of men þat slepen in purgatorye, and þe eizte age of blissed men in hevене, and in þes eizte agis endiþ al þis world.

1 Cor. xv. 52.

Sleep in purgatory.

*And so al þes laborers toke ech one his peny. But men of þe first hour demeden þat þei shulden have more þan men of þe enlevenþe hour, ffor þei travailiden first and longer. And þus þei grucchiden azen þe housebonde, and seiden to him; Þes comen in þe last houre, and þou madist hem evene to us, þat baren þe charge and þe hete of þe daie of traveile. But he answeride to oon of hem, and seide þus to him, Frend, Y do þee no wronge; for of a peny þou cordist wiþ me. Take þat is þine, and go ful paid, for Y wole 3yve þis laste as myche as Y wole 3yve þee. Where it is not leveful to me to<sup>1</sup> do wiþ my owne þing as Y wole? Wher þin eyen ben wickid for þat Y am good? Þus shal þe laste be firste, and þe first be last; for many ben clepid, but fewe of hem ben chosen. Þis grutchinge of þes seintis is not stryvinge of hem, but woundringe in soule, as Seint Gregore<sup>a</sup> seiþ. And so þis demynge and grutching þat þis gospel spekþ of is woundryng in soule, and þanking of Goddis grace, þat he 3af so myche joie to men for so litil traveile. For more joie þei myzt not have, but fulli as myche as þei wolden. And so shal al witen wel þat God doþ no wrong to hem, but þat he hizt hem graciously, he haþ fully 3yven hem; ne noon of hem shulde grutchen azen goodness of þis just fadir, for he may 3yve of his owne, more þan ony man may*

<sup>1</sup> So in B and C; om. A.

\* See the nineteenth Homily of Pope Gregory (Benedictine edition, Paris, 1705), vol. i. p. 1512. The labourers that murmured are interpreted to mean the saints under the old dispensation, who, though they

had merited heaven by their good lives, yet obtained it not, till the descent of Christ into hell had set them free, and opened to them the gates of Paradise.

disserve bi mannis riȝtwisnesse, or evenhede<sup>1</sup> of ony chaffare<sup>a</sup>. And so God seiþ to ech seint þat he shulde take his mede by grace, and so go in to þe blisse of hevene where seintis shal ever dwelle in pees.

## SEXAGESIME SUNDAY GOSPEL.

## [SERMON XXXVIII.]

*Cum turba plurima.*—LUC. viii. [4.]

The parable of  
the sower.

Þis gospel telliþ in a parable hou þat holy Chirche growide bi graciose sowynge of Crist, and growinge of þis holy seed; and in tyme of Sexagesime men sownen bodili seed. Þe storrye of þe gospel telliþ, *Whan myche puple was come to Crist, and þei hastiden of citeis to heere of him Goddis word, he seide bi a similitude; He wente out þat sowiþ ay to sowe his seed in his lond; but on foure maneres felle his seed upon his lond. Sum fellen bi side þe wey, and was defoulid, and foulis of heven ete it. And sum felle on a stone, and whan it was sprongen, it dried up, for it hadde no moisture. Sum felle among þornes, and þornes growinge strangliden it. And sum felle in to good erþe, and þat sprong up, and made an hundrid fold fruyt. And Crist, seiynge þes wordis, cryede and seide to þe puple, He þat hap eeres to heere, heere he, and undirstonde þis witt. And evermore, as seintis seyen, whan God biddiþ men heere þus, his sentence is presciouse and shulde be markid wel of men. And his disciplis axiden him what ment þis parable, and Crist seide unto hem, þat to hem was grauntid to knowe þe privyte of þe rewme of God, and to oper men in parablis, þat þei, seiynge wiþouten forþ, se not wiþynne in her soule, and þei heerynge þe wordis of þe parable undirstonden not þe witt of þem.*

Interpretation.

Crist seide þat þis is undirstonding of þis parable. Þe seed is Goddis word, þat felle to men on foure maneres.—Þis first seed is Goddis word, þat fell in sum biside þe wey; for sum ben

<sup>1</sup> ony nede, C.

<sup>a</sup> The meaning is, 'or according to the just understanding of any bargain.'

cumbrid wiþ þe fend, and so defoulid wiþ þe worlde þat þe erþe is not able to take þis seed and hilen it; *and herfore cometh þe fend and takith* Goddis word fro þer hertis, for he puttiþ in her þouzt strange þing fro þis seed and so he takith fro þer witt þe vertue of Goddis seed. And herfore it is perelous to dwelle þus biside þe weye, and be defoulid wiþ þe fend and wiþ sentence þat he wole teche. Þe fend takith fro men Goddis word þat þei trowe not in it; and for, bi suche trouþe, men may sunnest be saif, þe fend purposiþ to take away Goddis word, last þat men trowen in it, and so be saaf. Þe fendis may dwelle in comoun weye, where God wole not sowe his seed, and pike away þe seed biside, and asprie unsow place, and gedere þe seed þat is sowen. He haþ noo power of þis seed, but power of þe man by synne. And þus men out of bileve, þat ben hardid in þer untreuþe, maken a comoun weye and playne, where fendis and beestis may freely go; and on londis biside þis weye ben many voide places, for many semen in bileve, but feiþ is voided fro hem. *Þe secounde place of þis lond þat Goddis seed is sowen ynne, is stony lond wiþ brood stoonys, upon which þis seed falliþ, and stonnes ben hard and erþe litil, and for a tyme þei taken wiþ joie þe wordis of God þat ben sowen, but hem wantiþ rootis of charite; and so þei turnen to þe world, for coveitise of worldely goodis. And þis seed wantiþ rotis of love to stonden in Goddis lawe, for þei loven more erþely goodis þan þe fruyt of bileve. For þis seed of Goddis word mut be rootid in charite, so þat neiþer poverte ne peyne ne manasse made of Antecrist make men falle fro Goddis lawe, for stabilnesse in þe roote. Þe bridde lond þat takith þis seed is ful of þornes and yvel weedis, and þes growen up wiþ þe corn, and distrye good seed; for siche ben 3oven<sup>1</sup> to worldely lustis, and lustful þing lykeþ hem, as þingis þat plesen þe bodi, as mete and drynke, and ydlenesse, and leichery, wiþ worldely goodis þat susteynen bodily lustis. And þus it fareþ as Gregory seiþ<sup>2</sup>: al 3if rychesse liken þe fleishe, nepeles þei ryven<sup>2</sup> þe soule, and maken it bisye aboute veyn þingis; and þus þei prycken and wounden þe soule, as þornes done harm to þe fleishe.*

<sup>1</sup> So B; A has 3yve.<sup>2</sup> reyven, C.<sup>3</sup> S. Greg. *Homil. in Evang.* xv. § 3.

The good  
ground

<sup>1</sup> John ii. 16;  
James iv. 1-5.

John xii. 24.

Questions  
raised and  
answered.

And þus þis lond is undisposid bi þree enemyes of a man, þe which be, þe fend, þe world, and þe fleishe wanton of a man. Of þes speken Joon and James, and Crist here in her <sup>1</sup> wordis; for þes þree letten Goddis word to bryng forþ fruyte in mannis soule. And þerefore, ȝif þou coveite in God þat his seed profite to þee, chastise wele þes þree enemyes þat letten Goddis seed to growe, and þan þou hast good land and wel disposid to take þis seed, and it bryngiþ in siche soulis fruyte to an hundrid fold; siþ goodis of blisse þat ben in hevene passen alle oure goodis here, as an hundrid done oon. And þes in substaunce ben þis seed, and þis lore is profitable to holi Chirche and makip it growe, and reisiþ it fro þe erþe to þe heynesse of hevene. Þis seed haþ many propertees þat fallen to bodily seed, for it is litil in quantite and þe vertue of it is hid, but Goddis grace mut quykene it, as liȝt of hevene quykenep oþer seed, and dewe of grace þat comeþ of God, wiþ þe hete of charite, norishen þis goostly seed, and maken it growe up to hevene. But as þe gospel of Joon seiþ, þe corn of whete falliþ in to erþe, and siþ it dieþ, and þan it groweþ many folde to myche corn. Þis whete corn is Cristis bodi, þat bicam man here in erþe, þat first was deed and siþ roos, and brouȝte of him many partis; and þus growide holi Chirche from oon to hir ful noumbre. But beestis and lymes of þe fend be myche to blame for þis fruyte, for þei letten it to growe many weies bi fendis cautelis, and sum, bifore þat it be rype, þei kitten<sup>2</sup> and<sup>3</sup> letten fruyte to come. And herfore *hey wardis* shulden be ware and do þer office in þe Chirche, for ellis þei ben traitours to God, in fals kepinge of his felds. And vertues of a soule, and specialy mannis pacience, ben as marle or dunge to men, and maken hem bryng forþ siche fruytis.

Aboute þis tixt may men doute, how þis seed may waxe drye, or faile in ony wyse, siþ it is Cristis word, and Crist seiþ þat hevene and erþe shal passe and faile, but not his word. But here we witen how treuþe of God may not faile in his substaunce, siþ it is kynde of God, þat nedely is ȝif ouȝt be; but þe fruyte þat it shulde make may faile in men by synne of hem. And þus þis seed haþ many names, and bi

<sup>1</sup> *bis*, C.

<sup>2</sup> *om.* E.

<sup>3</sup> *om.* E.



many resouns is knowen, and bi diversite of resouns may men assoile þes doutes. But moreover þes men douten here, siþ God is sower of þis seed, and He is ful of witt and myzt, whi sowiþ he in yvel lond? But here we shal undirstonde þat noo defaute may be in God; but as he zyveþ reyn and wedris to good men and to yvel, so he offrid his seed boþe to lond good and yvel; and al ȝif fruyte þat it shulde have perishe ofte for manniss synne, neþeles substaunce of þis seed may not faile, siþ it is God. And þus meneþ Anselme<sup>a</sup>, þat þere is no treuþe but oone, for ech treuþe in his ground is þe first treuþe of alle. And leve we to ȝonge men scole trefyng of þis matere, but ȝit men douten what moveþ God to wiþdrawe his grace fro men, and to lette þis seed for to growe, as he shewiþ it in parablis. But here seiþ Poul þat no man shulde blame God for his good dede, siþ he doiþ bi his grace al þingis þat he doiþ, and wiþdrawiþ never his grace, but ȝif man unable him selfe; and þan bi riȝtwisnesse of God nedih þis synner to be punishid. But sum men seyen þat alle þingis moten nedis come by God, and so what harmes comen in þis world, profiten unto þis world, eiþer<sup>1</sup> to make good þing beter, oþer to make good anewe<sup>2</sup>, or ellis to preyse God and to joie for peyne þat is to men in helle. And so Crist telliþ in parablis his witt for many causis. First, for men unworþi to knowe it ben blyndid bi derke speche; moreover, for men þat medefulli traveilen for to knowe þis parable witt boþe shal traveile more medefulli and betere printe þe witt þus gate; and also, in siche parablis as myche philosophie is knowen as is nedeful for a man for to cunnen in þis weie. And so, ȝif God ordeyne þus, it is best þat it be so.

Rom. ix. 18-23.

<sup>1</sup> *euper*, A; *for*, E; the reading in the text is that of B.  
*onewe*, A; *of newe*, E; *of new*, C.

<sup>2</sup> So in B;

<sup>a</sup> 'Improprie hujus vel illius rei esse dicitur [veritas]; quoniam illa non in ipsis rebus, aut ex ipsis, aut per ipsas, in quibus esse dicitur, habet suum esse; sed cum res ipsae secundum illam sunt, quae semper

praesto est his quae sunt sicut debent, tunc dicitur hujus vel illius rei veritas.' S. Anselm *Dialog. de Veritate*, ch. xiii. The heading of the chapter is 'Quod una sit veritas in omnibus veris.'

## QUINQUAGESIME SUNDAY GOSPEL.

## [SERMON XXXIX.]

*Assumpsit Jesus duodecim discipulos.*—LUC. xviii. [31.]

Christ foretells  
his passion.

Þis gospel telliþ how Crist warnede his disciplis bifore of his passioun, to teche þat he ordeynede it, and suffride not azens his wille, but chees for love þat he hadde to man to suffre þus and bigge man. *Jesus toke his twelve disciplis, and seide þus unto hem, Loo, we steien to Jerusalem, and alle þingis þat ben writun bi prophetis of mannis sone shal be endid*, as þei nedis mote. Crist clepiþ himsilf mannis sone blepeliche<sup>1</sup>, for þis cause. Foure maneres þere ben of men þat ben brougt in to þis world. Þe first man was made of erþe, but Eve was made of man. Þe þridde man cam of hem two by comoun gendrure of man; but Crist worshipid<sup>a</sup> womans kynde, and cam bi myracle of Marye, so þat whan þat Crist clepiþ himsilf wommans sone, or his modir womman, he specifieþ his manhede. And so, 3if prophetis and oþer men weren soþeli seid mannis sones, naþeles Crist was propreli sone of a persone of mankynde, for he was a virgyns sone, wipoute man þat gate<sup>2</sup> Crist of hir. Þes forfadris of whiche Crist cam, as Abraham, David, and oþer, gendriden not Crist of Marye, for she kepte ever her maydenheed. And so for worship of his modir, and of kynde of men and wommen, Crist wolde clepe him mannis sone, and specifie his manheed. Sixe þingis telliþ Crist to come in his passioun. First, *Crist shal be 3ouun to Pilat and knyztis, to be slayn; and alle þes weren heþene men, and figuriden<sup>3</sup> þat þei shulden be turned. And ypocrisie of Jewis, whan þei feyneden unleveful to hem for to slee Jesus Crist, telliþ þat þei shulden be endured<sup>b</sup>. After Crist was many weies scorned, and aftir he was tormentid, and after he was spitt upon; and aftir þis turment he was kild, and he roos on þe þridde day, as it was shewid aftir in dede. But disciplis of Jesus undirstoden not of þes sixe þingis; for al 3if þei herden þe voicis, þei undirstoden þan noon of þes, for it was unsemely to hem þat*

<sup>1</sup> *bleliche*, B, C, E.

<sup>2</sup> *gat*, B, C.

<sup>3</sup> *figurid*, C.

<sup>a</sup> That is, dignified.

<sup>b</sup> That is, hardened.

ony of þes þingis shulde falle; and so þei supposiden þat Crist spake mystily in þes wordis. *And whan Crist cam nyze Jerico, a blynde man sate bi þe weye and beggide, for synne of þe puple þat wolde not helpe him wipouten siche begginge, al zif Goddis lawe forfende siche beggers for to be. Whan þis blynde man herde þe puple passinge wip Crist in þe weye, he axide what þat was; and þei seiden azen to him þat Jesus of Nazareþ passide þerbi. And he criede on him, and seide, Jesus, þat art David sone, have mercy on me. And men þat wenten bifore Crist blameden him, and bade him holde his pees; but he cryede myche more, David sone, have mercy on me. And Jesus bleþeli dide mercy whan he was clepid David sone, for it was soþ bi Goddis heste; and David was woundirful meke, and figuride Crist specialy in many þingis þat felle to him. And þus stood Jesus, and made þis man be brouzt to him, and whanne he cam nye, Crist axide him, what he wolde þat Crist did to him. And he seide, Lord, þat Y see. And Jesus seide to him, þan loke þou, þi bileve haþ made þee saaf. And he saw anon, and suede Crist, heriyng<sup>1</sup> God; and al þe puple, whan þei sawe þis, zaven loovyng<sup>2</sup> to God.*

The blind man restored to sight.

Þe goostly sence of þis gospel moveþ men to vertues, al if fleishely disciplis undirstonden þis not. A vertuous man must suffre of his kynde six maner of suffringis, as Crist dide here, and þan in siche pacience is þis man ordeyned to go to hevenly Jerusalem, as Crist wente here in erþe to bodili Jerusalem. A man shulde first be zovun to þes heþene fendis; and þei first scornen þis man, and tempten him bi his fleishe; and siþ þei puten him on þe cros to chastise his fleish as Poul dide, and siþ to die to þis world, and siþ to ryse spiritualy, for þus men shulden flee þer fleishe and ryse to God in þer goost. And zif þes wordis ben scorned of fleishly men and worldely, neþeles it shulde be þus, bi bileve þat men shulden have; and þus we shulden sue Crist, suffringe as he suffride, and we shulden wende bi Jerico, and speke wip þis blynde man, and do werkes of mercy to him goostly as Crist dide.—Jerico is þe mone<sup>3</sup>, or smellyng<sup>4</sup> þat men shulde have, for ech man in

Mystical sense.

1 Cor. ix. 27.

<sup>1</sup> So B, C, E; *beeryng*, A.

<sup>2</sup> *louyng*, E; *lowyng*, C.

\* Jericho means "‘place of fragrance,’ from ריח, *Ruach*, to breathe, הריח, to smell; older commentators

derive it from ירח, *Jareach*, the moon." (Smith's Dict. of the Bible.)

þis lyf schulde smelle Crist, and sue hym. And riȝt as þe mone is principale planete after þe sunne, so Cristis manhede is principal after his Godhede. And as fadris of þe olde lawe smelliden Crist in þer dedes, so myche more we shulden now smelle Crist in alle oure dedes, and þanne we shulden sue þis moone, and eende sikirly þis weie. For þis smelle is Crist, clepid plantinge of rose in Jerico, and his weye is smellinge of a ful felde þat God hadde blessid, and þis smel hadde Jacob and oþer fadris þat trowiden in Crist. Þis blynde man is mankynde þat was blyndid bi synne, and beggide boþe of God and man, for it was nedid herto. Ech man mote begge of God and axe of him his ech daies breed, and begge goostly werkis of mercy of his breþeren, for þei ben slowe to do þes werkes as þei ben holden to do bi þe lawe of God. And þes men sitten bi þe weye þat ben temptid of þe fend, þat takiþ of hem Goddis word, and makij hem pore in bileve. Þes men heeren þat Jesus passid bi þis wey in many membris, and þei cryen fast on him to helpe hem in þis nede; but Jesus biddij siche blynde men to be brouȝt to him in þer bileve; and þei axen first of Jesus, to see wel in riȝt bileve. And men þat ben worþi herto, seen anoon in þer bileve, suyinge Crist and lovyng God, for þan þei witen how þei shulden lyve. But þes men þat comen bifore blamen faste þis blynde man and letten him for to crye and axe helpe þus of Crist. For many comen not wiþ Jesus in þer lore þat þei techen, but comen bifore him, and seien þat þei ben betere þan he, and suen him not in þer lyf, but holden a lyf þat þei have founden. And þes men þat smellen Crist in his lyf, and his lawe, þei clepen hem ypocritis, and maken hem ceese to speke of Crist. But þes men þat savenen God bi suche wordis, speken more, and preien Crist to helpe hem to þe tyme þat þei ben dede, and ever þese<sup>1</sup> men smellen more of Jesus Crist, þat is þis rose. For good þing comfortij men, ȝhe more whan it is more defoulid. And þus þei seen and suen Crist to hevenly Jerusalem, and loven him in word and dede from þe tyme þat þei have þis siȝt.

<sup>1</sup> So in B; þes, C; þis, A.

PE FIRSTE SONDAI GOSPEL IN CLEENE LENTUN.

[SERMON XL.]

*Ductus est Jesus in desertum.*—MATTH. iv. [I.]

ÞIS gospel telliþ how Crist was temptid þre tymes of þe fend, and how he overcam þe fend, to teche us, how we shulde do. Þe storye telliþ þat *Jesus was ladde of þe Holy Goost in to þe desert* sone after his fastyng, *to be temptid of þe fend.* For þe fend temptiþ men, whan he supposiþ þat þei ben moost feble. Þe fend supposid þis of Crist *whan he hadde fastid forty daies,* and resouns of þe fend, where Crist was boþe God and man, marrid him so þat he wiste nevere where þis was soþ or fals. And þis covetide he to wite, for þanne he wolde have lettid men to do Crist þus to þe deþ, lest he savyde mankynde. It was not pleyne to þe fend þat Crist was God for þis fastyng. For Moyses and Ely boþe fastiden fully forty daies, and 3it neiþer of hem was God, as þe fend wiste wel. But Jesus bi his manere of fastinge passide boþe Moyses and Hely. For Crist fastide forty daies, and neiþer ete ne drank in þis tyme, and he was in quyke age, and listide wel to ete, and he was not occupied on oþerwise as þes two weren. Moyses was in þe mount wiþ God, and fed wiþ him in al þis tyme. Hely was an oold man, and fedde wiþ drede of þe kyng. But Jesus was a 3onge man, and forty daies lyvede wiþ beestis, and suffrid of God for to hungre more þan ony oþer dide. And so Crist passide boþe þes two and Joon Baptist wiþ hem, al 3if he lyvede after comoun lyf to 3yve ensaunple to his Chirche, but Baptiste lyvede more comounly peynful lyf þan dide Crist.

Þe fend bigan to tempte first Crist at pryde and glotonye, for him þou3t bi þes two he shulde sounest overcome Crist. Þis tempter seide þus to Crist, *3if þou be Goddis sone, sey þat þes stones be maad loves,* for þe fend wiste wele þat þis myzte God listly have do, for Crist dide more wounder whan he made þis world of not, and whan he fed so many folk wiþ fyve loves and fewe fishes, as þe fend wiste wele after, but 3it þis was hidde

The tempta-  
tion of Christ.

The first tempta-  
tion.

fro him. And here we witen þat oure philargis ben more foolis þan is þe fend; for þe fend wote wele þat God may listly make stones loves, but oure philosophis seyen as foolis þat þis þing may no wey be. And so þe fend supposid of Crist, ȝif he were God, he shulde do þis, boþe for shewyng of his myȝt and for to<sup>1</sup> abate his hunger. But here answeride Crist to þe fend bi autorite of holy writt, and seide, *It is writun þere inne þat not oonly in breed lyveth man, but in ech word þat cometh of Goddis mouþ*; þat is, his vertue to speke to men in þer soule; and þis passiv erþely breed. And so þe fend failide foule in þis temptacioun of Crist, for ȝif Crist wolde for pryde do þis myracle, and make þus breed of stoones, he wolde in comunalte<sup>2</sup> do þis dede, and not þus oonli in desert. And ȝif Crist myȝt þus make breed, he myȝt þus make boþe fleish and fishe, and þan Crist hadde noo nede þus to hungre aȝens his wille. And so þe fend was a fool whan he temptide Crist þus. But Crist answeride wisely, and for to ȝyve men ensaunple to answer bi Goddis lawe, and to love more it þan erþely þing.—A sophistre wolde denye þis resoun þat þe fend made to Crist, but he coude not teche þus þat Goddis word is more to love þan ony erþely mete, and so it shulde not be lefte þefore. And þus ȝif we can answer covenably bi Goddis lawe whan þat we ben temptid of pryde, of glotonye or oþer synne, we may wel overcome þe fend and ech þing þat temptiv us þus. For ȝif we love betere Goddis word þan ony mete þat we shulden ete, we shulden not leve Goddis word and chese þis mete aȝens resoun.

The second temptation.

Þe secounde temptacioun in which þe fend temptide Crist was done on þis manere, for to move Crist to pride. *Þe fend toke him in to þe holy citee, and as men seien comounly, þe fend bare him over Jerusalem, as Crist were fleying in þe eire, and putte him above þe pynacle of þe temple: þat sum men seyen weren þe aleis, and seide to Crist, ȝif he were Goddis sone, þat he shulde make him silf go down.* And herto aleggid þe fend to Crist þe psalme, þat he myȝte surely do þis, *for God bade his aungelis of Crist to kepe him in al his wetes,*

<sup>1</sup> So in B and C; om., A.

<sup>2</sup> *communete*, B.

*lest he hurte his foot at þe stoone.* And myche more Crist shulde not hirte him at þe eire, ne in his fallyng at þe erþe, ne at no þing þat Crist mette. And here men passen foly of þe fend. For he wolde alegege holy writt in temptacioun of Crist to prove him þat it were sykir; but Antecrist deyneþ not to alegege Goddis lawe for his power; but he seiþ þat if men denyen it þei shal be cursid, slayn, and brent<sup>a</sup>. But þus þe fend temptide not Crist, al ȝif he were of more power þan ben þes Antecristis disciplis to tempte Crist or Cristen men. But Crist answeride bi holy writt as þe fend aleggide it to him, and seide to þe fend þat it *was writun þat noon shulde tempte þe Lord his God.* But it were al oone to lepe doun þus and to tempte God. And so, siþ Crist chargide more Goddis word þan ony worship or mete, myche more he chargide þe synne þus for to tempte God.—Lord! what nede shulde Crist have to lepe doun þus fro þe pynacle, siþ he myȝte on oþer maner surely come doun bi þe aleis. And ȝif men perseyveden not þe heyng<sup>1</sup> of Crist to þe pynacle, ne berynge of him over þe citee, for mennys eyen as it is seide weren hid fro lokinge upon Crist, myche more men shulden not wite hou Crist cam doun to þe erþe. For lesse it is to come doun from an hey place þan to come þider. And þus feillide foly of þe fend to tempte Crist þus to pryde. But here men douten comounly what it is to tempte God, and it is seid comounly þat ech man temptiþ God þat chesip þe werse weye, and leveþ þe beter þat he shulde knowe. And so no man may do synne but ȝif he tempte God in a manere, for God dide no wronge to man ȝif he dampnede man for synne, were it never so lizt synne, and ȝif his temptyng were never so stronge. And þus þenken many men, þat who ever entre a newe religioun þat was not first ordeyned of Crist, he temptiþ God and synneþ gretely. For two weyes ben putte to him. Þe toon is religioun of Crist of whiche he shulde be sure bi feiþ þat it is þe best þat may be, and þe toþir is new founden of synful servauntis of Crist, þat men shulden wite is not so good as Cristis ordre

Those tempt  
God who enter  
a new 're-  
ligioun.'

<sup>1</sup> *byeng*, B, C.

<sup>a</sup> This passage alone would prove that there had been question among the bishops of resorting to the *ultima*

*ratio* of fire and faggot, many years before the enactment of the statute of 1401.

more list. And so þis man temptiþ God þat chesiþ þus þis newe ordre, and þis synne is comoun now among men for chesing of state. For who ever chesiþ him a state to lyve inne, and to serve God, but zif he trowe þat þis state be betere to him and more siker, þat man in þis temptiþ God, and þis man mut putte away þe worlde, þe fend, and his fleishe, þat þei disseyven him not in chesyng of siche state.

The third temptation.

Þe þridde temptinge of þe fend made to Crist is þus told. *Þe fend toke Crist in to an hill þat was ful hiȝ, and shewide hym al þe reumes of þis world and þe joye of hem, and seide to Crist, Al þise shal Y ȝyve þee, zif þou falle and loute me. And þan seide Jesus to þe fend, Go awey, Sathanas, ffor it is writun in Goddis lawe, þe Lord þi God þou shalt worshiþe, and to him oone þou shal<sup>1</sup> serve þus.* And here men marken how þat Crist was pacient in two temptyngis bifore, but in þe þridde he myȝte not suffre þat ne he spake sharpely to þe fend. And in þis be we tauȝt to suffre mekely oure owne wronge, but aȝen wrong of God we shulden be wood to venge it. For þus dide Crist and<sup>2</sup> Moyses and oþer men þat sueden him. And þus in þree temptaciouns oure Lord Jesus overcam þe fend by þe wisdom of God, and autorite of holy wrytte. And zif we marken wel þes þre, we may not be temptid of yvel spirit, but zif we have lore to overcome him, zif we studien wel þis gospel. And after þes þre victories *þis greet fend lefte Crist, and good aungelis comen to him and serveden to him as to þer God.* And<sup>3</sup> sum men seien þat þis fend was Sathanas, þe moost of alle, þat siþ was bonden in helle a þousand ȝeer, as seint Joon seiþ, for as men seyen comounly whan a fend is þus vencushid, he haþ no power to tempte þat man, and specialy of þat synne. And þus delyveride Crist þis world of þis fend and his felowis, þat þei anoiden<sup>4</sup> lasse his Chirche after bi þis þousand ȝeer.

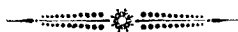
Apoc. xx. 2.

<sup>1</sup> *schalt*, B, C.  
has *As*.

<sup>2</sup> So B and C; A has *to*.

<sup>3</sup> So B and C; A

<sup>4</sup> *anoieden*, B; *anoyden*, E.





PE SECONDE SONDAI IN LENTEN.

## [SERMON XLI.]

*Egressus Jesus secessit in partes Tyri.*—MATT. XV. [21.]

Dis gospel telliþ a myracle of Crist to stire men to hope mercy, al 3if þei ben synful. Þe story telliþ *how Jesus wente oute of Jude and fel in þe contrees of Tyry and Sidon*, þat were countres occupied wiþ heþene men, and ny3e to Jude. And hem visitide Crist, and lo, *a womman of Canaan wente out of hir coostis, and cryede upon Crist, and saide þus to him, Lord, have mercy on me, David sone, my douzter is yvel travelid of a fend.* And Crist to contynue devocioun of þis womman, *answeride not first a word to hir.* And here may we lerne to contynue oure good werke, al 3if God graunt not oure wille at þe bigynnyng; for God wole have oure herte devoute to him wiþouten ende, here and in hevene. Þe *disciplis cam to Crist and spake þus to him, Leve þis womman, for sche crieth after us. But Crist answeride and seide þus comounly<sup>1</sup> a, Y am not sent but to þe perishid sheep of þe hous of Israel*, wher þis woman be siche<sup>2</sup>. And bi þis þis womman came and loutide Crist, and seide, *Lord, help me, and Crist answeride and seide, It is not good to take þe breed þat falliþ to children and 3yve it to houndis to ete fro þes children. And þis womman answeride knowinge Cristis speche, and grauntide þat it were good; as if she wolde mene þus; siþ þou clepist me an hound, and Y suffre mykely, 3yve þou sum mete of children to þis hound, for whelpis eten of crummes þat fallen fro lordis boordis. And Jesus answeride to her, and wiste hir entent<sup>3</sup>, and seide, O womman, grete is þi feiþ; be it done to þee, ri3t as þou wilt. And hir douzter was heeled ri3t in þat hour.*

Here men douten comounly, wher Crist mysseide þis womman or scornede hir, or putt on hir þat she was an hound.

<sup>1</sup> So rightly in E; A and B include the words in the italics. <sup>2</sup> So rightly in B, C, and E. The clause is included in the italics in A.

<sup>3</sup> So rightly C; clause included in the italics in A and B.

<sup>a</sup> *comounly* is equivalent to 'in general terms.'

The healing of the daughter of the woman of Canaan.

The use of scornful or ironical language sanctioned in Scripture.

Or ellis al þes wordis of Crist shulde be take axingly.— Here we shal bileve þat Crist dide alle gatis evene as he shulde do, and þus ʒif Crist scornede hir, þat Y dar not seye, scornynge was leweful, as holy writt proveþ. For Hely þe prophete bade priestis of Baal þat þei shulde strongely crye, leste þer god slepte, or spake wiþ oþer men, þat he myzte not here hem. And þus scorneþ Poul spekyng to Corynþios, Where Y dide lasse to you þan oþer apostlis diden, but þat Y toke not of ʒou, forʒyve ʒe me þis wronge. And so ofte in Goddis lawe is scornynge wel ment, as ʒif it were leweful done on good manere. But it is seide comounly þat þre þingis ben hard to men, to scorne men medefully, or medefulli plete wiþ men, or ellis for to fiȝt wiþ man, bi þe weye of charite. But al þis may be done, as wise men þenken. But for þei ben perelous, many men supposen þat Crist uside hem never, but wente þe kyngis hye weye. And so Crist axide<sup>1</sup> bi manere of questioun where it were not good to take children mete and ʒyve it unto houndis, as who seiþ, Telle þou, and þus heþene men weren clepid houndis of Goddis folc, for properte of houndis acordinge to heþene men. But þis womman mekely grauntide siþ question, and þus men clepid houndis may bicomme Goddis children as it bifel of many heþene, þat weren convertid to Crist and made Cristene men. And þus Crist preiside þis womman by hir greete feiþ, and wiþ þis bodilli myracle made hir soule hole, and figuride þat heþene folk shulden be turned to him, and of men þat weren first houndis shulden be maad by grace his children. And so þe word of Crist<sup>2</sup>, þat he was not sent but to þe seke children of Jacobis hous, was soop to þis entent, þat he was sent to hele þes. For what man it be þat Crist convertiþ and saveþ him in hevene, he is Israelis sone, for he supplantiþ þe fend as Jacob dide Esau, and he is maad a man þat seep God bi feiþ. And Crist is clepid þus boþ Jacob and Israel, and oþer holy fadris þat figureden Crist, and þus men ben maad by grace of þe hous of Jacob.

But it were to wite þe moral sense of þese wordis, siþ þis kernel is more swete þan sense of þe storye. Tyrus and

<sup>1</sup> Kings xviii. 27.

<sup>2</sup> Cor. xii. 13

Mystical sense

<sup>1</sup> So B and E; *axid*, C; *axinge*, A.      <sup>2</sup> A and B insert here the word *shewiþ*, which makes the sentence ungrammatical; E and C have it not.

Sidoun weren of þe lond of biheest, nye þe hill of Libanye, but Israel sufficide not to cast hem out of þis lond, and so heþene folk dwelten þere til þat Crist came<sup>a</sup>. And so þis paynym womman is þe substans of mennis soule, þat is moved of God to preye for hir douȝtir heele. For boþe vertues of þis soule and werkes þerof ben drecchid<sup>1</sup> of þe fend and lyven unmedefully. And suche a soule wendij̄ out of þe coostis of Chanaan, ffor it forsakiþ þe paynym life þat it was before inne, and it sekeþ not oonly Crist in þe hous but upon þe weye, and cryeþ on him keneli<sup>2</sup> whan by contemplacioun it is devoute in God. And in doinge of werkes it preieþ to him þat it do fully to plesaunce of God. And interpretacioun of Canaan acotdiþ, siþ Canaan is chaungid or chaunging<sup>b</sup>, and a soule þat is first heþene and þus turned to Crist is chaungid by myracle more þan ony body. And Crist norishiþ and scharpiþ þe preier of siche soulis til þat þei ben worpi to have grace of him. And so þes soulis knowun þat þei ben seke sheepe of þe hous of Israel þat have nede of confort. And þei seien þat siche whelpis shulden ete trenchours of lordis, and knowe how God haþ fed his children, and so do bi hem. For it is liȝt to God to make of siche whelpis hool sheepe of Jacobis hous, and þus converte her soulis. And þus bi greetnesse of feiþ enfourmed wiþ charite ben siche soulis maad hool, and turned unto Goddis children. And riȝt as in Cristis tyme, and after bi hise apostlis, he turnede many heþene men to Cristis religioun, so now in tyme of Antecrist ben Cristene men maad heþene, and reversen Cristis lawe, his lore and his werkes. As now men seyen þat þei shulden, bi lore of þer feiþ, werre upon Cristen men, and turnen hem to þe pope, and slee þer persones, þer wyves, and þer children, and reve hem þer goodis, and þus chastise hem. But certis þis came nevere of chastymment of Crist, siþ Crist seiþ he cam not to lese lyves, but save hem. And herfore þis is chastymment of þe felle fend, and nevere chastymment of Crist, þat uside pacience and myraclis. For Crist techiþ in his lawes þat al þat we shulden

An allusion apparently to the crusade of Bishop Spencer.

<sup>1</sup> *dretchid*, E.

<sup>2</sup> So B; *kenely*, C, E; A has *keneely*.

<sup>a</sup> This sentence is almost literally translated from De Lyra.

<sup>b</sup> See Excursus at the end of the volume.

wille þat men diden skilfulli to us, we shulden do to hem. But what man wolde by skile be þus chastisid of his broþer, for mannis obedience þat he doutiþ to be a fend? Crist axide not siche obedience to be done to him, but who so wolde wiþ good wille obeishe to him wiþouten ȝifte, Crist wolde take hem to grace; but þes men taken to tirantrie. But, as þe sixte sermoun seiþ<sup>a</sup>, scribis and pharisees seiden þat man-sleyng was forfendid, but neiþer yre ne yvel word. But Crist diffineþ þus, þat who so is wroþ to his broþer is worþi of jugement, to be dampnyd in helle; and who so wiþ þis ire spekeþ wordis of scorne, he is worþi to be dampned bi counseile of þe Trinite. And whoso wiþ þis wraþe spekiþ folily wordis of sclandre, he is worþi to be punishid wiþ þe fier of helle. Myche more ȝif preestis now wiþouten cause of bileve sleen<sup>1</sup> many þousand men, þei ben worþi to be dampnyd—Croiserye ne assoilinge feyned now of prelatis, shal not at þe daie of dome reverse Cristis sentens. And take we hede to þes þree þat Crist chargiþ bi ordre: wraþe, and scorneful speche, and foli speche of sclandre; and to þes þree Crist shapiþ jugement, conseil, and þe fier of helle. It is hard to be dampned bi jugement of Cristis manhede, but it is hardere to be dampnyd bi counseile of þe Trinite, but it is hardest to be putt bi þes to þe fier of helle. Lord! ȝif God punishe þus wille and mannis wordis, myche more shal he punishe wille, word, and wickide dede.

ÞE ÞRIDDE SONDAY GOSPEL IN LENTEN.

[SERMON XLII.]

*Erat Jesus ejiciens demonium.*—LUC. xi. [14.]

Þis gospel telliþ how Jesus bi a miracle and witty wordis enformeþ his Chirche to flee synne and perel þerof. Þe storrye telliþ *how Jesus was castyng out a fend of a man and þis fend was dumble.* For he made þis man dombe. *And whan he*

<sup>1</sup> So B and E; A has *slen*.

<sup>a</sup> See page 16, supra.

The miracle of casting out a dumb devil.

hadde cast out his fend, his man dombe bifore spake and the puple woundride herof for gretnesse of þe myracle. But þe enemyes of Crist, as weren scribis and pharisees, whan þei myzten not denye þis dede, for it was open to þe puple, þei enterpretiden it amys; and seiden þat Crist dide suche woundris in þe power of a fend, to whom he seruede bisily. And his fend was clepid of hem Belsabub, a<sup>1</sup> prince of oþer. And þes men þat defameden Crist þus weren preestis or pharisees; but oþer men bi lasse envye<sup>2</sup> axiden of Crist a signe of hevene, to conferme þat he dide þis bi þe vertue of God. But Crist when he knew þere þouztis, þat þei weren turned þus fro treuþe, bi many resouns proved hem þat þei weren fals in þouzt and word. And first he seide þus to hem, *Ech rewme dividid in him silfe shal be desolatid, and hous shal falle upon hous; and þus 3if Sapanas be dividid in him silfe as 3e seien, how shal his rewme stonde stably wipouten eende?* For siþ 3e seien þat Y cast out a fend bi anoþer, nedis o fend mut be contrarye to anoþer. Þe first word þat Crist toke is soþ by open resoun, for þe strengþe of a rewme comeþ of acord of þe partis of it, and 3if oon contrarieþ anoþer, nedis þe strengþe is enfeblid. And 3if þe partis mut ever laste and oon wite anoþeris state, þat rewme mut nede be desolate, al 3if þes partis shal laste ay; for on hous of a more myzti prince shal falle upon anoþer hous, and bi fiþtyngge amonge hem shal al þe rewme be feblid, siþ þes partis, ful acordid, shulden helpe þis rewme and make it strong. And riht as a ruynous hous falliþ on anoþer and brekeþ it, so o maynè of a rewme falliþ on anoþer and enfebliþ it. And so shulde it be of þe fendis, 3if o prince contraried anoþer. And so 3if Sapanas, prince of fendis, be þus dividid in him silfe, how shulde his rewme be strengþid by dedes þat Crist doiþ? but myche more Cristis rewme, þat is strengþid azens the fend, shulde have anoþer prince contrarie to Sapanas. Also, 3if *Y cast out a fend in vertue of Belsabub, 3our children*, þat ben my postlis, *in whos name shulden þei cast out fendis?* Certis not in my name, for þan Y were a wickide man, and siþ þei done þus comounly in my name, þat is Jesus, *þei shal juge 3ou as fals* in þis interpre-

Interpretation.

<sup>1</sup> om. E.      <sup>2</sup> Words rightly excluded from the italics by E. but included by A, B, C.

tacioun. *But certis ȝif Crist cast out þus þe fendis in special werk of God, þe rewme of God, þat is his Chirche, is comen<sup>1</sup> amoung hem.* And so þe heed of þis Chirche, contrarye to Sapanas, is comyn among hem, in whos vertue þes dedis ben done. And so bi chasyng of þes fendis done bi Crist in þis manere, myȝte þei wele wite þat Crist was evene contrary to þe fendis, and þan Crist was a spirit þat was nedis boþe God and man.

Christ vanquishing the evil one.

*Also ȝif a strong man wel armed kepe his castel, alle þingis þat he haþ þerynne ben surely kept in pees: and ȝif oon stronger þan he com on him and vencushe him, he wole take away his armes in which he affiede him.* And siþ þis is done to fendis, as ȝe may se bi þer dedis, ȝe mut graunt þat a prince more strong þan þe fend is comen. Þis strong man is þe fend; his armes ben his cautelis; his castel ben his lymes þat he dwellip inne. Þe strengre is Crist þat comeþ upon þe fend; þat vencushide þe hede fend, in his þre temptaciouns, and ofte tymes he cast out fendis of men. Al þe cautelis of þe fend toke Crist away, and kyndely vertues of men þat þe fend spuylide Crist delte graciously aȝen, as þe gospel tellip. And as Matheu seiþ, Crist toke away þe vesselis of men þus segid wiþ fendis, whan he dide away her synnes, þat weren ful of venym to ȝyve men to drynke, and þe poweris of þe soule Crist fillid wiþ vertues. Also, þe generalte of lordship of Crist shewip þat þe fendis ben contrary to him; *for whoever is not wiþ Crist, he is aȝens him*, as whoever is not wiþ troupe holdip wiþ falsehede; *and who ever gederip not wiþ Crist, scaterip of his good.* And siþ þe fend is not wiþ Crist, he mut nedis be aȝens him; and herfore comaundide Crist þe fendis þat he caste out þat þei shulden not speke to wnesse his Godhede, for þes weren fals witnessis to prove siche treuþe. And here supposip Crist þat he is treuþe, and þat þe fend is fadir of lesyngis, and þat his lordship haþ noon enemye but falshede. And þanne is þe resoun pleyne bi his general lordship and bi his contrarite of þe fende þat was ofte shewid.

The last state worse than the first.

And after þes fyve resouns Crist tellip a sharpe sentence of malis of þe fend and how þat it is endid. *Whan an unclene spirit*

<sup>1</sup> So B and E, A has *comoun*.

is went out from a man, he waundriþ bi drye placis and sekiþ him reste ; and whan he findiþ noon, he seiþ to him silfe, Y shal turne aȝen to þat house þat Y cam of. And whan he cometh to þat house, he fyndiþ it ydel, clensid wiþ besemes<sup>1</sup>, and shynnyngely arrayed. Ðan he goiþ and takiþ wiþ him sevene oper spiritis worse þan him silfe, and þei, entrid in to þe man, dwellen in him, and þus þe laste of þis man ben worse þan he was bifore. Ðis unclene spirit is þe heed fend, and þis man ensegid bi him is þe kynrede of þe Jewis, of whom Crist shulde come, and þerfore he assailide it ; but patriarkes and holy fadris fouȝten wele aȝen þe fend, þat him þouȝte he hadde not þere a plesinge place to dwelle inne. And so he wente to heþene folc þat weren wiþouten grace, and ȝit he likide not wiþ hem for þer kyndely resoun. And þanne þe fend seide to him silfe þat he wolde go aȝen to generacioun of Crist and perverte it more. And in tyme þat preestis regneden, he entride to asprie it, and he fond it ydel from keypyng of Goddis lawe, and occupied wiþ mannis lawe þat sownede unto coveitise. And bi þis þei swepten comynalte of men and maden hem bare and colde as floures ben maad. But housis of preestis weren worldely arayed, and þei kepten as sacramentis many of her fynding, and bi þes þe fend þouȝt þat he shulde overcome hem. And he gidere to him al manere of fendis, and dwelte wiþ þis peple, and made hem worst men ; for þei growiden ever in malice, til þei hadden killid Crist. And þus, seiþ Crist, shal be to þis worste kynrede, siþ ende of mennis wickidnesse was to slee Crist. And so, it is lickely<sup>2</sup> þat þe Chirche fariþ now bi sleyng of treuþe þat is Goddis lawe, so þat men in erþe, clepid Cristen men, passen in malis<sup>3</sup> Jewis and Sarasynes. And rote of þis malice is coveitise of preestis, and levyng of Goddis lawe, and hiȝyng of mannis lawe. Bi þis is þe comynalte of puple maad pore, and swepte as þe pament from hilyng of stree, and coldid in charite, boþe þei and preestis. But housis of preestis ben worldely arayed, and þis aray is hid from partyng of comounes. And þis is wey of Antecrist, and ende of þe last yvel. And soone after þis lyfe shal come þe daie of dome, but bifore, ȝif God wole,

New sacra-  
ments.

<sup>1</sup> besemys, B ; besomes, E.

<sup>2</sup> lich, B, licy, E.

<sup>3</sup> malice, E.

The Church in  
peril.

the Chirche shal be mendid. And þis is þe moost perelous harme þat þe Chirche hadde ever, for cautelis of Antecrist disseyven many men. *And whan Jesus saide þes wordis, a womman of þe puple heyed<sup>1</sup> her vois and seide þus to Crist, Blessid be þe wombe þat bare þee in to þis world, and blessid be þe tetis þat þou hast soukid. But Crist blessid more þes men þat heeren Goddis word and kepe it wipouten lesyng, as oure Lady dide; ffor þis bi himsilfe makip a man blessid. And it is lickely þat þis womman undirstood Cristis wordis, and herfore she blesside þe moder þat bare sich a child.*

ÞE FOURÞE SONDAY GOSPEL IN LENTEN.

[SERMON XLIII.]

*Abiit Jesus trans mare.*—JOHN VI. [I.]

The miracle of  
the loaves and  
fishes.

Þis gospel tellip þe first feste þat Crist made to þe puple, bi multipliyng of mete, as þre gospels tellen. Þe story tellip þat *Jesus wente over þe water of Galile þat is clepid Tiberiadis,* and many oper names, for contres and touns þat it ȝede bitwene. *And a greet multitude suede Crist here, for þat þei seien þe signes þat Crist dide on syke men. And Jesus whan he cam over þis water of Galile, he wente in to an hill and sale þere wip hise disciplis. And Paske was ful nyȝe, a greet feste among Jewis. And whan Jesus cast up his eȝen, and saw a ful grete multitude was comen to him, he seide unto Philip, Wherof shal we bigge looves, þat þes men etc. And þis seide Crist to temple Philip, for he wist what he was to do. And Philip seide to Crist þat looves of two hundrid pens suffiden not to hem, þat ech man take a litil what. And oon of Cristis disciplis, Andrew, Petris broþer, seide to Crist, þer was a child þat hadde fyve barley loves and two fishes, but what ben þes among so many men? And Jesus seide to hem, to make hem sitte down to þe mete, for þere was myche hay in þe same place; and so þei sate*

<sup>1</sup> So B. C. E.; *heid*, A.



*to þe mete, as fyve þousand men. And Jesus toke þes fyve looves, and 3af þankyng to God, and delide among þes sittinge men, and also of þe fishis as myche as þei wolden. And whan þei weren fillid, Crist seide to his disciplis, Gedre 3e þat ben laste relefes þat þei perishe not. And so þei gedriden and filliden twelve cofynes of relyf of fyve barley looves and two fishis þat weren leste of hem þat hadden etc. And þes men, whan þei hadde seen þe signe þat Crist hadde done, þei seiden þus of him, þis is a verre prophete þat is come in to þis world.*

Þis bodily fode bi whiche Crist fedde þe folc, bitokenep goostly foode bi whiche he fedep mankynde. His passyng over þis water with his disciplis, is passyng over worldely perilis to take Goddis lore. Cristis sittinge in þis hille is rysyng to spiritual lyf, and Cristis lokyng on þe peple is goostly mercy do<sup>1</sup> to hem, and steiynge in to þe hille of Jesus wiþ his disciplis is takyng of goostly lyf for to lerne Cristis lawe. Axinge of Philip, þat was made to shewe þe myracle þe more, and for to have beter in mynde, is fillinge of Goddis word in dede. Þes fyve looves þat Andrew shewide ben harde lyfe þat men moten lyve bifore þei kunne Cristis lore; and two fishes ben þenkinge of God and hevene. Sittinge down in þe hey, is meke þou3t of mennis freelte. And so Andreu undirstood more þan Philip þat God þat multiplied mete, as þe lawe tellip, by Helyse, my3t listly multiplie þis mete and so fede al þis peple. But wiþouten myracle my3te not so myche puple be fedde of Crist. And þes fyve þousand of men, wiþouten wommen and children, ben þe noumbre þat shal be savyd bi þis spiritual foode; for fyve is a round nombre þat turnep wiþouten eende in to him silfe. And so not al þat ben fed þus shal come to þe blisse of hevene. Þe twelwe coffynes of relyfes, ben alle þe seintis gloses þat be gedrid of Goddis lawe to fede þe puple afterward. And goostly lore hap properte to be multiplied in men; for of o lore comep anoþer, and al is þe same treupe. And bi þis fode men þanken God, and seien þat Crist is þat grete prophete þat is to come in to þis world, and fille it of hevonly lore. For of oþer myraclis of

Mystical interpretation.

<sup>2</sup> Kings iv. 43.

<sup>1</sup> done, E. C.: to do, B.

Crist þis myracle is oon of þe most, þat so fewe disciplis of hise filliden þe world in so short tyme wiþ þe same gospel of Crist; and he it was þat dide þis myracle.

Difficulties  
stated and  
solved.

And here men moven þre doutis. First, how Criste absentide him fro Jerusalem at þis Paske, siþ Baptiste hertely reproveþe Heroud, and Crist was more hardy þan Joon for to suffre passioun for þe love of mankynde. But here we trowen þat Jesus, siþ he was boþe God and man, dide alle his dedis at point devys, and myzte no wey be amendid. And þus he absentide him now to prophite<sup>1</sup> more to his Chirche, for his tyme was not come to die at þe Paske, þat he hadde ordeyned. For, as men seyen comounly, Crist moste passe þis secounde Paske, and in þe þridde Paske die gladly for mankynde. And so Crist suffride more freely þan Baptist or oþer martiris. But he was more nedid bi wisdom to suffre as him silfe had cast, and so, as Crist himsilfe hadde ordeyned, Baptist shulde die bifore, and so go to purgatorye and be taken out bi Crist. And þus Crist ȝaf ensauple to us to fle deþ, whan he moveþ us, as al his lyf was ensauple to teche men how þei shal lyve. Þe secounde doute is axid here, whi Crist wolde not take þe rewme of Judee þat was owid to him, siþ þe puple preferide him anoon, aftir þis myracle þat Crist had fedd þus þe folk. But here men seyen, as to þe first, þat it were a manere of biggyng to have þe rewme for suche a feste, and of puple þat was so symple. Also, al ȝif Crist was kyng, he wolde not þus regne worldely, ne him was owid no siche rewme, siþ God wolde not þat it were so. Also Crist ordeynede him silfe to lyve wiþouten wronge of ony man, and so he wolde not regne þus wiþouten þe emperour's leve, þat men shulden wite þat his lyfe no weye reversid þe emperour. And so witnessis þat accusiden him in tyme of his deef weren opynly fals. And þus as oure Lord forsoke to be preisid of þe fendis, so he forsoke now to take þe rewme þus of þis puple.—Þe þridde doute þat sueþ þes two is, how Crist myzte disserven in suffringe of his passioun, siþ he was nedid to suffre þus. But here we witen, as Crist was nedid to suffre and die as he hadde ordeyned, so he was

<sup>1</sup> *profite*. B, C, E.

nedid to have blis for þis wilful passioun, siþ al þis passioun of Crist was more wilful þan any oþer myȝt be. And for myche wilfulnesse was his passioun more medeful. And here þes blynde heretikis wanten witt as ydiotis, whan þei seien þat Petre synnede not in smytyng of Malcus ere, but ȝaf ensauple to preestis to fiȝt. And þus Crist lettid him to fiȝt more; for hadde Petre and oþer apostlis fouȝten þus, þanne þei hadden lettid þe passioun of Crist and savyng of mankynde. But here þes blynde heretikis, þat ben unable to conseyye sutilte of holy writt, shulden first lerne þer owen wordis. Sop it is þat al þingis mut nedis come as God hath ordeyned, and so ech dede of Crist muste nedis be done as he dide it. And þus ȝif men shulden not sue Crist here, for he muste nedis suffre, no Cristen man shulde sue Crist in no þing þat he dide. For alle þe þingis þat Crist dide musten nedely comen as þei came, and so siche heritikis musten nede suen Antecrist and be dampnyd wiþ him, for defaute of her bileve. And ȝif þei seien þat þis is fals, þat al þing mut þus nedely come, Lord! hou dremeden þes foolis þanne þat ȝif Petre hadde fouȝte forþ, þanne Crist shulde not have suffrid deef, ne have bouȝt mankynd! Certis þes idiotis can not shewe hou þis shulde suen of ony treuþe, but ȝif þei supposen here, þat þus it mut nedis be. And ȝif we shulde herfore lette to take ensauple to sue Crist, we shulden lette evermore to sue Crist and take his lore. But siþ Crist reprovyde Petre and saide a cause general, þat who ever smytiþ þus wiþ sworde, he shal perishe bi Goddis word, it is knowun þing þat Petre synnede in þis fyȝtyng; and myche<sup>1</sup> more shulden preestis fiȝt not for a cause of lasse value.

Whether  
St. Peter sinned  
in using the  
sword.

<sup>1</sup> So E; om. A, B, C.



ÞE FIFÞE SONDAY GOSPEL IN LENT.

[SERMON XLIV.]

*Quis ex vobis arguet.*—JOHN viii. [46.]

Christ with-  
out sin.

Þis gospel techiþ bileve by hie wordis þat Crist spake, and hou men shulden lyve þere after, and trowen in Crist and suen him. First axiþ Crist *þat who of hem shal reprove him of synne*; and he wolde mene þat noon myzte. And so Crist myzte not do synne, for ȝif he myzte have synned, þe Jewis myzten have reprovod him of synne, as þei enforsiden many gatis, but þei traveiliden in veyn. And here we undirstonden reprofe for matere þat is trewe for cause þerof. As false peny is noo peny, so fals reprofe is no reproofe, for ech þing mut have treuþe in þat þat it haþ beyng. And in þis word Crist wolde mene þat he was boþe God and man, for ȝif he hadde not be God, he myzte have synned as aungelis diden. And it were liȝt for to synne in veyn glory or in gabbyng, for ech gabbing is synne, and Crist gabbid, or he was God. And after þis bileve of Crist, proveþ he þat þei shulden trowe him. For siþ he seiþ but treuthe to hem, as he may noo gatis synne, þei shulden trowe unto þat treuþe, siþ þat God knowiþ al treuþe. And herfore seiþ þe word of Crist, *þat ȝif he seiþ treuþe, whi trowen þei not to him*. But as Crist soþely takiþ, *he þat is on Goddis syde, he heeriþ Goddis wordis*, or bodily or spiritualy; siþ no man may be but ȝif he heere treuþe or o tyme or oþer. And so þes hey preestis of Jewis *heeren not þus Goddis wordis, for þei ben not on Goddis halfe*; and þanne þei ben wiþ þe fend.

His answer to  
the Jews.

But þes Jewis conceyveden þes wordis how þei weren sharply seid to hem, and þei hadden no wey to answeere ne to replie aȝens him. And herfore þei bigan to chide and accusiden Crist wiþouten cause. And two þingis þei putten on him, *first þat he was a Samaritane*, and <sup>1</sup> *siþ þat he hadde a fend*, þat was felowe and helpe to him. But Crist lefte answeere to þe first, and þe secounde he denyede; and so he grauntide in a manere þat he

<sup>1</sup> om. B, C.

was a Samaritan, siþ he was keper of mankynde, as he telliþ in a parable. Þat man is seid to have a fend whom þe fend disseyveþ, as he is seid to have an heed þat is hedid bi þis hede; and so of oþer relatives as clerkes knowen in manere of speche. And after þis answeze Crist telliþ how he doiþ treupe and þei done falshede aȝen, *ffor he doiþ worship to his Fadir and þei unworshipiden him; he sekþ not his owne glorie, but his Fadir sekþ and jugiþ.* And þis is þe maner of speche þat Crist usiþ ofte, þat he bi his manhede doiþ not suche þing, whan he bi þis kynde doiþ not principalli þis þing. For Crist seiþ to þis entent þat his lore is not his, ne þe word þat ȝe herde is not his, but his Fadris. And on þis manere semeþ Ambrose<sup>a</sup> to graunten þat þe sacred breed is not after breed but Goddis body, for it is not after principaly breed but Goddis bodi, in maner as Austin seiþ<sup>b</sup>. But siþ al werkes of þe Trinite may not be departid, al þe þree persones seken glorie of Crist. But þe manhede of Crist is herto an instrument; and as þe ax hewiþ not, but þe wriȝt bi his crafte, riȝt so Crist sekþ not his owne glorie. But Crist to shewe boþe his kyndis *doubliþ þis amen*, and telliþ þat *he seiþ sobeli to hem; þat who ever kepiþ his word shal not taste deef wiþouten eend.* For he bi comoun speche kepiþ a þing, þat wiþouten lesyng kepiþ þe same þing, and þus whoever kepiþ ony word of Crist, he shal never have þe deþ þat ever shal laste.

An allusion to the doctrine of the Eucharistic presence.

But here þe Jewis knewen not þe manere of Cristis speche, and replieden aȝen him and *seiden, Now we witen wele þat þou*

<sup>a</sup> S. Ambros. *De Fide*, lib. iv., cap. 5. 'Nos autem quotienscunque sacramenta sumimus, quae per sacrae orationis mysterium in carnem transfigurantur et sanguinem, mortem domini annunciamus.'

<sup>b</sup> I have examined scores of passages in the works of St. Austin, but have not found one which exactly corresponds to the reference in the text, so as to imply that the sacramental bread, after consecration, while it became *principally* the body of Christ, yet continued in a certain sense to be bread. For this is clearly the meaning of Wyclif's words, and this was in fact the main point of his controversy with the

friars on the Eucharistic mystery; in which he quarrelled with their definition of the consecrated species as an 'accident without a subject' for this very reason, that it utterly denied the co-presence of *bread* in any sense, after consecration. It is therefore a point of much interest to ascertain whether St. Austin's works really contain any passage which would justify the reference in the text; in other words, which would support Wyclif's favourite theory of consubstantiation; and I shall be glad if this note should be the means of directing the attention of theological students to the search. (See note on p. 379, Serm. 112.)

*hast a fend þat lediþ þe in þi dedis. Abraham was deed, and oper holy prophetes, and þou seist, whoever kepith my word shal nevere die. Lord! wher þou be more þan oure fadir Abraham þat is deed, and prophetis also; whom makist þou þee? wher þou be more þan ony of þese seintis? Here may we see þe folye of þes Jewis, for þei koud not knowe dyversite of þes wordis; who þat lyveþ þus, he shal not taaste þe longe deþ; and who so lyveþ þus shal never taste deþ. But Jesus lefte þis foly and spake to þe purpos; 3if Y glorifie þus my silfe, my glorie is not, but Y have a Fadir þat þus glorifieþ me; and 3e seyen þat he is 3our God; but 3e have not knowe him; but Y have knowe him, and 3if Y sey nay, Y shal be like to you, a lyer. Abraham 3oure fadir hadde grete joie to se my daie, and he sey it and hadde joie. But here þe Jewis knewen not þe maner of riht speche of Crist, for þei knewen not how Crist clepide God syngulerly his Fadir. For þan bi riht speche God was his Fadir bi kynde. God is oure alþer fadir<sup>1</sup> but who ever of us seiþ, God is my fadir, he blasfemeþ in God. Þis man is my fadir, 3if þat Y have properte in gendrure of him bifore oper men. And þus þes foolis replieden aȝen þe wordis of Crist, and seiden; *þou hast not 3it fifty 3eer in age and 3it þou menest in þi speche þat þou hast seen Abraham.* And, for þe first blyndenesse þat þei weren to blame fore, Crist spake more derkely to hem þan he dide bifore, and seide, *Sobely, sobely*, to showe his two kyndis, *Bifore þat Abraham schulde be, Y am.* And herfore þei weren depid in worse synne of dede, *whan þei token up stonys to stone Crist to deep. But Jesus hidde him and wente out of þe temple*, as it was liȝt to hym to hiden him among many; for boþe he myȝt stoppe her siȝt, and shewen him in dyverse formes. And here he tauȝt his disciplis in dede for to flee, but he tauȝt hem nevere for to fyȝte bodily. And siche blessid cowardise makith Goddis children, for Crist seiþ þat in þer pacience þei shal have þer lyf in pees. But þe fend techiþ his children to be hardy heere, and fiȝte wiþouten heavenly cause, and þus þei lesen þer lyf; for techingis þus contrarye leden to contrarye eendis.*

But we þat ben in bileve over þes blynde Jewis shulden

Christ's declaring his divinity.

<sup>1</sup> *aller-fadir*, C. See Glossary.

knowe þes wordis of Crist þat he seid to hem, Biforn þat Abraham shulde be, Y am. But as we witen bi oure bileve þat þes wordis ben ful of witt, so we witen þat in hem Crist shewide his godhede. For we witen wel þat þis word, Y am, bitokeneþ þe godhede, for godhede may not be chaungid, neiþer from 3onge to elde, ne from worse to beter; for it is ever oon, and a þousand 3eer ben to him as 3isterday; and, shortly, al þing þat was or ever shal be hereafter is present unto him, ffor streeching of his longe beyng. And herfore telliþ God to Moyses þat he þat is, is his name, and þis is a memorial to God wiþouten ende. But over þis we shulden wite whan Abraham shulde be. And certis, siþ þat God wiste, 3he<sup>1</sup>, bifore he made þis world, þat Abraham shulde be, þanne it was soþ, and herfore seyen clerkes þat ech creature haþ beyng in his sample<sup>a</sup> þat is wiþouten eende. And so, þat Abraham shulde be, is treuþe wiþouten eende, but 3it bifore þis treuþe, is God þat knowiþ it. And so þis word, bifore, bitokeneþ forþerhede of beyng, and not forþerhede of tyme, siþ al þis was wiþouten ende. And so to blaberynge in þis speche mennis voicis ben not sufficient, but sum glymerynge we have in oure soule of þis treuþe, and betere knowen it in oure herte þan we can speke it in vois. And blessid be þe Holy Goost þat sette sicke wordis in his lawe, þat alle men here in erþe can unneþe undirstonde hem. For Y am certeyn 3if þou be never so wyse ne olde, unneþe þou wolt afferme þis shorte word of Crist, whan he seiþ þat, Bifore þat Abraham shulde be, Y am. And here tellen seintis cause of þis derknesse. First we shulden wel witen þat atour of þis gospel is more witty in himsilf þan we alle can conseyye.

<sup>1</sup> So B and E; 3e, A.

<sup>a</sup> The belief that the ideas, or original patterns (*exemplaria*—'samples'), of all things and persons exist from eternity in the divine mind, borrowed by the schoolmen from the Platonic philosophy, is defined and adopted in the *Summa* of St. Thomas. The following extract is from the first Article of *Quaestio xv.*, *Prima Pars*. 'Dicendum quod necesse est ponere in mente divina ideas. Idea autem Graece. Latine forma dicitur. Unde

per ideas intelliguntur formae aliarum rerum praeter ipsas res existentes. Forma autem alicujus rei praeter ipsam existens ad duo esse potest; vel ut sit exemplar ejus cuius dicitur forma; vel ut sit principium cognitionis ipsius.' Again (*Art. ii.*) quoting St. Austin, he says, 'Ideae sunt principales quaedam formae, vel rationes rerum stabiles atque incommutabiles; quia ipsae formatae non sunt, ac per hoc aeternae.'

Also he wole þat his preestis traveilen fast in his lawe, and kepen hem medefully from oþer occupaciouns; for noon of us haþ matere to say þat he can alle Goddis lawe, and so he haþ no more to lerne þerynne. Also we shulden trowe þat alle mennys wordis may not come to þe witt þat is in Goddis wordis; for we witen þai nouȝt in hem is seid wiþouten chesoun, but in ech Goddis word is more witt þan we knowe.

ÞE GOSPEL ON PALM SUNDAY.

[SERMON XLV.]<sup>a</sup>

*Altera autem die quae est post parasceven.*—MATT. xxvii. [62.]

WE suffisen not here to telle pleynly þis gospel, but þe ende þerof makijþ mynde of oure bileve, how, after þe tyme þat Crist hadde suffrid deep, þe nexte day after, þat is þe holy Satirday, þes men þat hadden kild Crist gideren to gidere. For þe gospel tellijþ þat *princes of prestis and þe Phariseis comen to gidere to Pilate*, and þes two folk, as hie preestis of þe temple and þes religiouse, diden Crist to deþ. And herfore tellijþ Matheu how þes two dredden more þat þe name of Crist shulde growe among men, and so þer defamyng shulde growe, and þei shulden be distryed. And certis as þese two maner of folk diden Crist to þe deþ, so þei ben now cheveteynes to distrien his lawe; for þei letten þat þei may þe treuþe of þe gospel. And noo woundir is; for þei in þer lyvyng reversen þe lyf of Crist, and ben weddid to contrarye lyf. And siþ þe gospel tellijþ dampnyng of siche men, and hou þat men shulden flee hem as heretikes and fals prophetis, þei dreden þat þer gile by þis shulde be knowe. And herfore þei seien þat Goddis lawe is fals, but zif þei glosen it after þat þei wolen; and þus þer glose shulde be trowid as bileve of cristene men, but þe tixt of Goddis lawe is perelous to trowe. *Þes two manere of folk comen to gidere to Pilate on þe next Satirday aftir* þei hadden kild Crist, and þus seiden to him,

Prelates and friars again compared to the high priests and the Pharisees.

<sup>a</sup> The style of this sermon rises occasionally to real eloquence.



*Sire, we þenken on þat þis gilour<sup>1</sup> saide whan he was on lyve, þat he shulde ryse after þre daies; þerfore commaunde his sepulcre to be kept til þe bridde day, lest his disciplis comen and stelen his body, and feynen to þe peple þat he is risen fro deþ; and so þe laste errour shal be worse þan was þe former. And þes pagyn playen þei þat hiden þe treuþe of Goddis lawe. And Pilat seide to hem, your silf have þe kepyng; god forþ and keep it as ye can, for þis is not myn office. And þus seyn þes two folk to princes of þe world, þat þes heretikes ben fals men azens holy religioun, and þei casten to distrye lordshipis and rewmes; and þerfore commaunden hem to be dede or lette hem to speke. But lordis seien azen þat þei shulde knowe þe lawe þat holy Chirche haþ, to punishe siche heretikes; and þerfore þei shulden go forþ and punishe hem bi þer lawe. And bi siche execucioun of fals prelatiſ and freris, is Goddis lawe quenched and Antecristis arerid. But God wolde þat þese lordis passiden Pilat in þis point, and knewen þe treuþe of Goddis lawe in þer modir tunge, and have þes two folk suspect, for þer cursid lyvyng and hydyng of Goddis law fro knowyng of seculers. For bi þis cautel of þe fend ben many trewe men quenched. For þei wolen juge for heretikes al þat speken azens hem, 3he, 3if þei tellen Goddis lawe, and shewe synnes of þes two folke. And þei wenten forþ, and kepten wiþ knyztis þe sepulcre of Crist, markyng þe stoon þat was putt at þe dore in sigt of þe keper, to marke þer diligence. And þus done oure heye preestis and oure newe religiouse. Þei dredden hem þat Goddis law shal quyken after þis, and herfore þei maken statutiſ, stable as a stoon; and þei geten graunt of knyztis to confermen hem. And þis þei marken wel, wiþ witnesse of lordis, lest þat treuþe of Goddis law, hid in þe sepulcre, brest out to knowyng of þe comoun peple. O Crist! þi lawe is hid 3it; whan wilt þou sende þin aungel to remove þe stone, and shewe þi treuþe to þi folk? Wel Y wote þat knyztis tooken gold in þis case, to helpe þat þi lawe be hid, and þin ordenaunce ceesse, but wel Y wote þat it shal be knowen at þe day of dome, or bifore whan þe likeþ azen al þi enemyes.*

Here shulden men marke þe passioun of Crist, and prynten in þer herte sumwhat to shewe it, for it was most wilful

An allusion to the new translation of the Bible.

The voluntariness of Christ's Passion.

<sup>1</sup> *gilour*, E.

passioun þat ever was, and most hard passioun þat ever man suffride. It was þus wilful and so moost medeful. And herfore tolde Crist þe forme of his passioun to his xii disciplis, whan he wente to Jerusalem; and herfore Crist, þat<sup>1</sup> hidde him bifore to come to þe citee, came<sup>2</sup> now for to suffre, to shewe his free wille. And herfore he seiþ at his soper here, Wiþ desire Y have covetid to ete þis Paske wiþ you. For desire of his godhede and desire of his manhede movede him to ete þus and to suffre after. But al þis was mene and figure of his last soper þat he etiþ in hevene wiþ men þat he haþ chosen. And þus siþ noo contrariete was in Cristis resoun, to suffre þis passioun, and his witt was moost clene, no þing þat man dide was to him more willeful. And siþ Crist suffride þus for synne of his breþeren, þei shulden suffre þancfulli for þer own synne. Crist axiþ not greet peyne in his breþeren, but þat þei have sorewe for þere synne, and purpos<sup>3</sup> to forsaken it; and þis is cause whi þat God wolde have his passioun þus rehersed, for profit of his breþeren and not for his owne. Þis peyne of Cristis passioun passid al oþer, for he was moost tendir man and in his myddil age, and God leet bi myracle Cristis wyttis suffre, for ellis he myzte bi joye have hadde noo sorewe. But alle circumstauncis þat shulden make peyne hard, weren in Cristis passioun to make it more medeful. Þe place was most solempne and þe day also; þe houre was most knowun to Jewes and to heþen men; and þe dispit was moost: for men þat moost shulden love Crist ordeyneden þis moost foule deep, aȝen Cristis moost kyndnesse. And we shal bileve þat Crist suffride not in no manere but for certeyn enchesoun; for he, boþe God and man, þat made al þingis in noumbre, shope his passioun to answeere to byggyng of manns synne. And so sevene wordis þat Crist spake on þe cross answeren woundirfully to alle synnes of men; and shortly, no þing þat Crist ever dide was done but for greet cause and profit of men. Suche causes shulde we studie, and prenten hem in oure mynde, for wyte wel þat al þis was done for profit of Cristen men. And þus trowe we not þes heretikes þat ben foolis out of bileve, þat seien we may not sue Crist, and namely in his passioun, for Crist was nedid to suffren here al þat he

The pain of  
Christ's Pas-  
sion

<sup>1</sup> om. E.

<sup>2</sup> and cam. E.

<sup>3</sup> So B. E. C.: *in purpos*, A.

suffride. Certis þes founde<sup>1</sup> heretikes shulden wel wite þat al þing mut nede come as God haþ ordeyned. And so sue we Crist afer in his blessid passioun, and gedre devout mynd of him, and kepe us aferre fro synne.

ÞE GOSPEL ON EESTIR DAY.

[SERMON XLVI.]

*Maria Magdalene.*—MATT. xxviii. [I.]

Þis gospel telliþ hou þes holy wymmen comen to bileve þat Crist was rysen fro deþ. Sum men seien þat here weren but two Maries, þat was Marie Magdalene, and Marie James modir; and þis secounde Marye was boþe our ladyes sister and Salomens dauzter. But sum men seien þat þere weren þree. But it is ynow to us to trowen þat þei weren two, and leve to knowynge of God zif þere weren moo. *Þes two Maries bouzten hem at even oynementis*, for it was leueful to wirchen at even in þe Sabotis. *And eerly on þe Sonnenday þei comen to þe sepulcre of Crist, at þe sunne rysynge, and seiden to gidere, Who shal turne to us þe stone fro dore of þe sepulcre? And þei lokiden þerto, and sizen it turned away, for soþe it was ful grete;* and passide þes wommans power to removen it fro þe dore, by castynge of þe Pharisees; for þei seiden þat Cristis disciplis wolden come and stelen his bodi. And so þis stone was removed bi service of aungelis, for disciplis of Crist dredden hem zit to walken. *And þes wymmen comen in to þe sepulcre of Crist, and þei seien an angel of God in forme of a zonge man siltynge on þe rizt side and hild<sup>2</sup> wiþ a whizt stole. And þei woundriden of þe sizt, but þe aungel seide to hem, Wole ze not drede, for Y knowe youre purpos, ze seken Jesus of Nazareþ þat was done on þe cros, but he is rysen to lyve, and is not now here. For here is þe stede voide, where þei hadden putt him. But go ze and seie ze to Christis disciplis, and algatis to Petir, þat Crist shal go bifore zou to þe contre of Galile. And þere shal ze see him as he saide zou bifore; and he may not lye.*

The two Marys at the sepulchre.

Ech word of þis gospel bereþ grete mysterye. First Crist

<sup>1</sup> founyd, B; fond. C: foltid, E.

<sup>2</sup> hilyd, E.

Christ manifested ten times between the Resurrection and the Ascension.

apperide to þes holy wommen, fer to graunt a privylegie to wومان's kynde. For it is seid comounly þat Crist apperide ten tymes from hour of his rysynge to his steiynge into hevene. First Crist apperide unto Marye Magdalene, and made her sterre of þe see, to 3yve lizt to men, and to put hir fro dispeire of hir first synnes. We denyen not þat ne Crist bifore þis apperide to his modir, hou þat he wolde, or in body or in soule, for she was ever sad in feiþ. Þe comynge of þes two Maries, þat was þe secounde shewynge þat Crist shewide him on lyve þat þe gospel telliþ, techiþ hou Crist wolde shewyn him unto many statis, and hou men shulde be disposid to have the sict of Crist. Þis eerly comynge with lizt of þe sunne is redy comynge in grace for to serve Crist, and 3it þe making redy on þe nyzt bifore is done of Crist, but not in siche grace. The musing of þese wommen as þei wenten by þe wey, bitokeneþ bisy þouzt how men shal come to serve Crist. But lore of good aungelis opneþ to men þis lessoun, for þe stoon of unbileve is first ful grete in synful men. Þis entrynge to þe sepulcre is comynge to þe service of Crist. Þis aungel þat techiþ men treuþe is good aungel of God þat sittip on þe riȝt side, to teche men þe wey to hevene, and to sitten on Cristis riȝt hond on þe daie of dome. Þe whitnesse of þis stole is clenesse of victorye þat siche men have of þer goostly enemyes. And as Gregory notip<sup>a</sup>, þe face of þis aungel semed as liztnynge, and his cloþis whiȝt as snow; for Crist and his aungelis ben dredeful to wickide men, and plesyng to good men. 3he, to þe day of dome þis aungel confortiþ men, and riȝtiþ þer purpos, and telliþ hem how now Crist is sittyng in hevene, for his staat here in erþe is fulli performed. And office of suche men is aftirward enjoynd hem, þat þei shulden parte wiþ þer breperen goostly werkes of mercy, not oonly wiþ comounnes<sup>1</sup> but also wiþ prelatiſ. Þe goynge bifore of Crist to þe contre of Galile is, goinge bifore of Crist to hevene. Þere he shal shewen him to men as he haþ hiȝt to hem ofte in þe gospel.

<sup>1</sup> *comyns*, E.

<sup>a</sup> S. Greg. *In Evang.* Hom. xxi. 'In fulgure etenim terror timoris est, in nive autem blandimentum candoris. Quia verò omnipotens Deus et terribilis peccatoribus, et

blandus est justis, recte testis resurrectionis ejus Angelus et in fulgure vultus et in candore habitus demonstratur; ut de ipsâ suâ specie et terret reprobos, et mulceret pios.'

Here after þis witt men may large þis gospel, and trete what mater þat þei wenen shulde profite to þe puple; but it is comounly told of þe sacrament of þe auter, and how men shal disposen hem now to take þis sacrament. And it is seid comounly, þat as þes holy wymmen hadde lefte þer former synne, and taken þer freishe devocioun; so men shulden come to þe chirche to take þis holy sacrament, and þus come wiþ þes hooly wymmen wiþ list of þe sunne. And þus men shulden cloþen hem wiþ þes þre vertues, bileve, hope, and charite, to resceyve þis sacrament. Bileve is first nedeful; and algatis of þis breed, hou it is Goddis body by vertue of Cristis wordis. And so it is kyndely breed, as Poul seiþ<sup>a</sup>, but it is sacramentally verre Goddis bodi. And herfore seiþ Austyn<sup>b</sup>, þat þing is breed þat þi izen tellen þee and þat þou seest wiþ hem. For it was not trowid bifore þe fend was loside, þat þis worþi sacrament was accident wiþouten suget. And ȝit dwellen trewe men in þe old bileve, and laten freris foulen hem silfe in þer newe heresie. For we trowen þat þere is beter þing þan Goddis bodi, siþ þe holy trinite is in eche place. But our bileve is sette upon þis point; what is þis sacrid hoost, and not what þing is þere. Þe secound vertue þat shulde cloþe trewe men is þe vertue of hope, þat is ful nedeful; how men shulde hope bi þer lyfe here, and first, wiþ þe grace of God, for to come to hevene. And to þis entent men taken now þis sacrament, so þat bi takynge herof þer mynde be freschid in hem to þenken

This gospel commonly applied to the sacrament of the altar.

<sup>a</sup> I do not know to what passage the writer refers.

<sup>b</sup> I am indebted to the kind assistance of Professor Stubbs for the discovery of the passage in the works of St. Augustine to which the text probably refers, though some force appears necessary to make the words of the saint bear the meaning which Wyclif imposes on them. The passage is in a remarkable sermon, No. 272 (vol. v., p. 1104 of the Benedictine edition), addressed 'ad Infantes' on their due reception of the Eucharist. The impression left by the entire sermon might certainly, to a mind already prepossessed accord with the view of the Eucharist taken

by Wyclif; on the other hand, the language is quite compatible with the view taken by his opponents, the friars. The words most to the purpose are these: 'Ista, fratres, ideo dicuntur sacramenta, quia in eis aliud videtur, aliud intelligitur. Quod videtur, speciem habet corporalem: quod intelligitur, fructum habet spiritalem.'

<sup>c</sup> It had become a popular belief by this time, among the spiritual Franciscans and the various revolutionary sects, that since the year 1000 A.D. the devil, after his millenary captivity (Apoc. xx. 2), had been let loose from the bottomless pit 'to deceive the nations.'

1 Cor. xi. 29.

on kyndenes of Crist to maken hem clene in soule. And herfore seiþ Poul þat he þat wantiþ þis ende, etiþ and drynkeiþ his judgemen, for he jugiþ not þe worþines of Goddis bodi, ne worshipiþ his ordenaunce. Þe þridde vertue nedeful for to take þis sacrament is vertue of charite; for þat is ever nedeful, siþ no man comeþ to Cristis fest but ȝif he have þis cloþing. And þus, as Austyn declariþ<sup>a</sup>, foure poyntis þat falliþ<sup>1</sup> to makinge of breed techen us þis charite, and algatis to have it now. For ellis we greggen<sup>2</sup> our synne in etynge of þis breed. And ȝif we have þis cloþinge, takinge þis mete in figure, it shal brynge us to hevене, þere to ete Goddis body goostly wiþouten ende; and þat is mennis blisse.

ÞE FIRSTE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTIR EESTIR.

[SERMON XLVII.]

*Cum esset sero die una.*—JOHN XX. [19.]

The fifth appearing of Christ after his resurrection.

Þis gospel telliþ of þe fifþe apperynge, þat was þe last, and late done upon Paske daie, and þis is told wiþ oþer to conferme bileve of þe Chirche. As þe secounde apperynge was to þe holy wommen, so þe first apperynge was alone to Marye Magdalene, as telliþ þe gospel of Joon in þe same capitle. Þe þridde tyme Crist apperide to Petir as Seint Luke telliþ in eende of his gospel; and þis was, as sum men seyen, whan Petre and Joon comen fro þe sepulcre, and Petre went bi himsilfe woundrynge and musinge. Þe fourþe apperynge was maad to two disciplis þat wenten to Emawus, and Crist soupid wiþ hem. Of þis telliþ þe eende of Seint Lukes gospel. Þe fifþe apperynge was þis þat oure gospel telliþ of, and þis was last of fyve, þat Crist

<sup>1</sup> *fallen*, B, C, E.

<sup>2</sup> *agreggen*, E.

<sup>a</sup> I have to thank Professor Stubbs for this reference also. In Sermon 272, already quoted, and also in Sermon 227, the various processes that enter into the making of bread are compared to the spiritual operations which combine to make the perfect Christian. But in Sermon 229, these

processes are distinctly set down as *four*: threshing, which answers to conversion by preaching; grinding, which represents the discipline of fasting and exorcism; mixing with water, which is Baptism; and baking, which corresponds to the flames kindled in souls by the Holy Ghost.

shewide on Paske daye. And on þat dai sevene niȝt Crist aperyde þe sixte tyme, and of þes two apperingis telliþ þis gospel.

De storye seiþ, *whan it was late, þe first day of þe woke þat came nexte after þe Frydaye þat God was done to deþ on, and þat was in þe Sonenday next after þe Sabot. But it was late, and þe disciplis weren gedrid þere, to conforte hem to gidere, and for drede þat þei hadde of Jewes þat weren her enemyes: þer zatis weren fast shill, for drede of þe same folk; Jesus cam, not lettunge þat þe zatis weren shill þus, and stood in þe myddis of his disciplis, and seide þus unto hem; Pees be to ȝou, for Y am alyve, wole ȝe not drede þe while ȝe have siche a keper. And he shewide to hem his hondis and his side, and þe disciplis hadden joie<sup>1</sup> whan þei hadden seen þus þe Lord. For sorewe of his deþ and drede of Jewis weren clenly putt away bi siȝt of þis lord. And Christ seide aȝen, Pees be to ȝou, to tellen hem þe ful pees þat þei shulden have þerafter boþe in bodi and soule, for þere medeful pacience. And þei shulden not grutche for þis short pursuyng, for Crist telliþ þat, as his Fadir sent him so he sendiþ hem, to suffre tribulaciouns; and þei shulden holden hem paied of sich form of sendinge. And whan he hadde seid þus, he blew on hem and seide, Take ȝe þe Holy Goost, for herby ȝe shulen be stronge by power and by witt, þat ȝe shal have by him.*

Here we shal wite þat Crist blew not bi childhode upon his apostlis but bi greet witt; for herby Crist tauȝt þat þe Holy Goost comeþ boþe of þe Fadir and þe Sone, as wyne of erþe and water. And comyng forþ of þis Gost is not nativite, but sutil inspiringe of þes two persones, and herfore þei ben clepid o principle of þis Gost. And holy writt grauntiþ þat þe Sone sendiþ þis Goost, and herfore Crist grauntiþ þis privylegie to his disciplis, *þat whos synnes þat þei forȝyven, þei ben forȝouun to hem, and whos synnes þat þei wiþholden, þei ben holden to hem.* And boste men not for þis privylegie grauntid to þe apostlis, for it is undirstonden in as myche as siche apostlis acorden wiþ þe keies of þe chirche above. And herfore shulden siche bostours ben certeyne at

Double proces-  
sion of the  
Holy Ghost.

<sup>1</sup> So in E: A wrongly excludes the words 'and — joie' from the italics.

þe firste þat þei ben verrey vikers of þe holy apostlis. And siþ God enspiriþ<sup>1</sup> hem and 3yveþ hem witt and power to bynden and to lousen as Crist him silfe doiþ, or ellis hem wantiþ þis power, and þanne þei shulde not boste þat þei have siche power, so þei myzte not pleyner shewen hem to have no siche power þan fer to bargayn herwiþ, and boste hem to have siche power. For þanne þei ben noon of hem to whom Crist 3af þis power; for 3if þer weren two popis, the toon 3ens þe toþir, and þe toon looside alle þat þe toþer boond, it were not for to drewe wheþer of hem did soþely, but wheþer more suede Goddis doyng and resoun. And siþ God may not folde fro riȝt and resoun, it is knowen bi Goddis lawe þat no pope assoiliþ but in as myche as Crist assoiliþ first<sup>a</sup>. And herfore Seint Petre and oþer Cristis apostlis asoilliden not þus, ne 3yve siche indulgencis; for þei diden never siche dedis but whan God enspiride hem. And so no þing is falser þan ypocritis to boste þus, and 3if men loke to resoun þei may wele se þat many siche feynyngis ben of þe fendis scole. For ellis myzte a pope assoile men boþe of peyne and blame<sup>b</sup>, for þei killen þer evene cristene<sup>c</sup>, and ever while þei done so; and 3if þei ceessen fro sich killing, þer assoilinge shal ceesse. But what men wolden triste to siche assoilinge? Wel we witen

<sup>1</sup> So in B and C; *enspireþ*, E; A has *enspirit*.

<sup>a</sup> This position recalls one of the twenty-four conclusions, condemned by the 'earth-quake' synod of 1382: 'That no prelate ought to excommunicate any one, unless he first know that he is excommunicated by God.' Lewis's *Wyclif*, p. 103.

<sup>b</sup> The ordinary indulgence absolved *poena sed non culpa*. In theory, the guilt of sins, and the eternal punishment due to them, were remitted in the sacrament of penance; it was the temporal punishment only, the *poena*, which the indulgence professed to remit, in whole or in part. But it is well known that, during the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, a great laxity prevailed, if not in the actual wording of indulgences, at any rate in the language of those to whom their distribution was entrusted. The

form was probably observed strictly enough all along; so that the preacher's words must be taken with some allowance. In turning over the pages of the Bullarium, I observe, under the year 1515, only two years before the first public appearance of Luther, the formal grant by Leo X of two indulgences, and in both cases the form of words is;—[Indulgemus] 'quod quilibet Christi fidelis . . . . plenariam omnium peccatorum suorum, *de quibus corde contritus, atque ore confessus fuerit, indulgentiam et remissionem consequatur*.'

<sup>c</sup> The allusion is to Bishop Spencer's crusade. When it was over, and men should cease to kill their fellow-Christians, then the papal indulgence, or 'assoilinge,' would also cease.



þat God is moost lord of al oþer, and no man may do synne, but 3if he synne azens him, and no synne may be for3ovun but 3if God first for3yve it. And so it is propre to God to for3yve þus offence, and 3if a man for3yve siche synne, þat is bi power of viker; and siche power haþ he not, but 3if God shewe it him. For ellis myzte he graunte pardoun for longe after þe day of dome to men þat God wole have dampnyd, for a newe founde praier, and heien it for mannis love more þan þe Pater Noster: as men seien þat a pope haþ grauntid two þousand 3eer to ech man þat is contrite and confessid of his synne, þat seiþ þis orisoun 'Domine Jesu Christe' bitwene þe sacringe of þe masse and þe þridde Agnus Dei. And þan it were ydil to traveile for ony pardoun, siþ a man myzte at home gete him fourty þousand 3eer bi noone. And so þat man þat shal be dampned, þat is confessid and contrite, and seiþ þus ofte þis praier, shulde have many þousand 3eer in helle after þe daie of dome. Triste we to þe old bileve þat Crist assoillþ as he wole, and þis forme is hid to men as oþer treuþis þat God wole hide.

*Thomas oon of þe twelve þat is clepid Didimus was not wiþ þes ten whan Jesus came and dide þus; and oþer disciplis tolden him hou þat þei saien þe Lord. But he seide unto hem, But 3if Y see in his hondis picching<sup>1</sup> of þe naillis, and putt my fynger in þe place þat Crist was ynaillid in, and put my hond in his syde where he was persid wiþ þe spere, Y shal nevere trowen þat oure Jesus is rysen. And on þe Sunday nexte after, weren þes disciplis inne and Thomas wiþ hem; and Crist shewide him as bifore. For he came whan þe 3atis weren closid and stood amyddis, and saide, as he saide bifore, Pees be to you. And after he seide to Thomas, þat he sente after to Inde, Putt in here þi finger and se my hondis and putt hidir þin hond and putt in to my side, and wole þou not be untrewful but trewe in bileve. Thomas answeride and seide to Crist, My Lord and my God. And Jesus seide to him þan, For þou say me þus, Thomas, þou bilevidst in me; but blessid ben þo þat saien not þis, and trowen as þou doist. Many oþer signes dide Crist in siȝt of his disciplis, but þes few ben writun in þis book for þis ende, þat 3e bileve þat Jesus is Goddis sone, and þat 3e for þis bileve have blisse in his name. Amen.*

<sup>1</sup> picbyng, E.

PE SECOUNDE SONDAY GOSPEL AFTIR EESTIR.

[SERMON XLVIII.]

*Ego sum pastor bonus.*—JOHN X. [11.]

Christ the  
good shep-  
herd.

CHRIST telliþ in þis gospel þe maners of a good herde, so þat herbi we may witen how oure herdis failen now. And defaute of siche heerdis is moost peril in þe Chirche; ffor, as riȝt office of hem shulde moost bringe men to heven, so defaute of þis office drawiþ men moost to helle. Crist telliþ of him silf, *how he is a good herde*, for he is þe beste herde þat mankynde may have. For he is good bi him silf and may no wey faile, for he is boþe God and man; and God may no wey synne. And þus we have þe mesure to knowe a good herd and an yvel, for þe more þat an herd is lyke to Crist, he is þe beter, and þe more þat he strangiþ from him, he is þe worse in þis office. And este whan Crist haþ ȝyve þe mesure for to knowe good herdis, he telliþ þe heieste proprete þat falliþ to a good herde: *a good herde*, as Crist seiþ, *puttiþ his lyf for his sheep*; for more charite may noon have þan to putte his lyfe for his frendis, and ȝif he worchiþ wysely<sup>1</sup>, for to bring þes sheep to hevene. For þus þe herde haþ moost peyne and þe sheep moost profit.

The Pope  
compared to  
Antichrist.

Þus we may see, who is good herde and who failiþ in þis office; for as Crist puttiþ wisely his owen lif for his sheep, so Antecrist puttiþ proudly many lifes for his foule lyfe. As, ȝif þe fend ledde þe pope to kille many þousend men to holde his worldely state, he suede Anteeristis maneres. And siþ þis pro-  
pirtie of herde groundiþ charite in men, eche man shulde have herof algatis more or lesse; as he is ferre fro þis maner þat wole not ȝyve his worldely goodis to his sheep or his breþeren, whan þei have grete nede þerto, for sich goodis ben worse þan mannis lyfe. And þus semen oure religious to be exempte fro charite; ffor nede a man nevere so myche to have helpe

<sup>1</sup> om. E.

of siche goodis, 3ee, al3if þei have stoonys or oþer jewelis þat harmen hem, but þei wolen not 3yve siche goodis ne value of hem to helpe þer breþeren, ne ceesse to anoye hem silf in bilding of hye housis, ne to gaderen sich veyn goodis, 3if it do harm to þer breþeren. Sich averous men ben ferre fro maneres of a good herde, and so thes newe religious þat þe fend haþ tollid inne, bi colour to helpe þer former heerdis, harmen hem many weies, and letten þis office in þe chirche. For trewe preching and worldely goodis ben spuyld bi siche religioyse; and herfore techiþ Crist to flee hem, for þei ben ravysinge wolvys. Sum wole, as breris, tere wolle of sheepe and make hem coold in charite, and sum wole sturdly, as þornes, sleye sheep of Holy Chirche, and þus is our moder shent for defaute of mennys help. And more mede myzt no man have þan to helpe þis sory wydewe; for princis of preestis and Pharisees þat calliden Crist a giloure have crocchid<sup>1</sup> to hem þe chesyng of many heerdis in þe Chirche. And þei ben tauzt by Antecrist to chese hise herdis and not Cristis, and þus failiþ Christis Chirche. Lord! siþ heerdis shulden passe þer sheep as men passen bletyng sheep, how shulde Cristis Chirche fare, 3if þes heerdis weren turned to woolvys! But Crist seiþ þat þus it fareþ among þe heerdis of þe Chirche, þat many of hem *ben hired hynes and not heerdis over þe sheep, for þe sheep ben not þer own.* And so þei loven to lital þe sheep, for 3if þei have þere temporal hire, þei recken not how þer flok fare. And þus done alle þes curatours, þat tellen more by worldely wynnyng þan by vertues of þer sugettis or soule hele to come to hevене. Siche ben not heerdis of sheep, but of dunge and wolle of hem, and þes shal not have in hevене joie of þer sheep þat þei kepen. Siche hynen *seen þe wolvys comynge* to flokkis þat þei shulde kepe, and *þei flee* for drede of not<sup>2</sup>, and þes wolvys *ravyshen þe sheep and scateren hem*, for þis eende þat þei þanne may souner perishe. And þus moved Poul to found none ordre, for Christis ordre is ynou3, and þanne shulde alle Cristen men be more surely in o flok. Lord! 3if cowardise of siche hynen be þus dampned of Crist, how myche more shulden wolvys be

the friars to  
wolves.

<sup>1</sup> crocchid, B, C, E.

<sup>2</sup> nou3t, B, E

dampnyd þat ben putt to kepe Cristis sheep. But Crist seiþ a clene cause *whi þes hired hynen* fleen þus. *For he is an hyred hyne, and þe sheep perteynen not to him*, but þe dung of siche sheep, and þis dung suffisiþ to hem, howevere þe sheep faren. Sum ben wolves wiþouten forþ, and sum ben wolves wiþinne, and þes ben more perilous<sup>1</sup>, for homely enemyes ben þe worste. Yvel wolvys ben religiouse, þat Crist seiþ in Mathew's gospel, ben wolvys ravyslinge, alþif þei comen in sheepis cloþis; for bi þis ypocrisye þei disseyven sonner þe sheep. And alþif þer dwellyng be wiþouten parishens of þes sheep, and þei ben strange and newe brouzt in by þe fend, 3it þei forþiten not to come and visite þe sheep. But comounly whan þei comen, þei comen moost for to spuyle; and þus done generally boþ freris and monkes and chanouns. But þei ben wolvys wiþinne þat seien þat þei have cure of soulis, and ravyschen goodis of þes sheep, and feden hem not goostli, but raþer moven hem to synne, and waken not in heerdis office.

*But Crist seiþ he is a good herde, and knowiþ his sheep, and þei him.* For þe office þat falliþ to heerdis mak iþ him known among hem, *as my Fadir knowiþ me, and Y azen knowe my Fadir.* So seiþ Crist, *Y putt my lyf to kepe my sheep azen wolvys.* And as þis knowynge myzt not quenche bitwene Crist and his Fadir, so shulden þes heerdis waken upon þer sheep; and þei shulden knowen him not by bodili feestis ne oþer synnes þat he doiþ, but by þree offices of heerdis þat Crist haþ lymytid to hem. It falliþ to a good herde to lede his sheep in hole pasturis, and whan his sheep ben hirt or stabbid, to hele hem and to grese hem; and whan oþer yvel beestis assailen hem, þan helpe hem. And herto shulde he putte his lyfe to save his sheepe fro siche beestis. Þe pasture is Goddis lawe, þat ever more is greene in treuþe, and rotun pasture ben oþer lawes and oþer fablis wiþouten ground. And cowardise of siche heerdis þat dar not defende Goddis lawe witnessiþ þat þei failen in two offices suyng after; for he þat dar not for worldes drede defende þe lawe of his God, how shulde he defende his sheep for love þat he haþ to hem? And 3if þei bryngen in newe lawes contrarie

Three functions proper to a good shepherd.

<sup>1</sup> So B: *perilouse*, E, A has *perolous*

to Goddis lawe, how shulden þei not failen after in oþer offices þat þei shulden have? But Crist þat is heed of herdis seiþ, *þat he haþ oþer sheep þat ben not ȝite of þis flok, and hem mut he brynge togidere, and teche hem to knowe his vois. And so shal þere be oo flok, and oon herde over hem alle.* Þes sheep ben heþene men or Jewes þat Crist wole converte, ffor al þes shal make o flok, þe which flok is holy Chirche; but ferre fro þis undirstondinge, þat alle men shal be convertid.

DE ÞRIDDE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER EESTIR.

[SERMON XLIX.]

*Modicum et jam non videbitis me.*—Joon xvi. [16.]

HERE telliþ Crist to his Chirche how þer wille shulde be temprid, for varynge of þer heed after his resureccioun. He seiþ ferst to his apostlis *þat þer is ny a litil tyme and þei shal not see him*, for he shal be deed and buried; for þes wordis of Crist weren seid þe nexte Þursday bifore his deef; and aftir Crist seiþ to his disciplis, *þat þere shulde sue a more tyme and þan þei shulden see Crist*, and ofte tymes be confortid by him. And þat was fro rysyng of Crist to þe tyme þat he steye to hevene. But for Crist haþ lymtyd tyme þat he shuld come to his Fadir, Crist seiþ þis time shal be litil, *for he goiþ to his Fadir*. For boþe Cristis liyng in þe sepulcre and his dwellinge here in erþe was litil tyme as God limitide, to answeere to his ascencioun. *And sum of disciplis of Crist saiden togidere, What is þis þat Crist seiþ to us, a litil and este ȝe shal se me, for Y go to my Fadir. And þei seiden, What is þis litil, for we witen nevere what he menep. And Jesus wiste þat his disciplis wolden axe him of þis unknowun þinge<sup>1</sup>, and he seide þus to hem; Of þis ȝe axen among you, þat Y seide, a litil tyme shulde come, and þan ȝe shal not se me, and siþ a litil but more tyme, and þan ȝe shal see me. Forsope, fforsoþe, Y seie to you, þat ȝe shal boþe grete and wepe, but þe world*

<sup>1</sup> So E; A and B wrongly italicise the word.

þanne shal joie, and þan shal ȝe be soreuful, but ȝoure sorewe shal turne to joie. And þis was soþ of þe apostlis aftir þe rysyng of Crist, ffor first þei maden more sorewe, and siþ lasse, and siþ joie. And worldely men contrarieden hem, þat first hadden joie and siþ sorewe, for þei joieden of apostlis sorewe and sorewiden of apostlis joie. And efte Crist telliþ a kyndely saumple, to prynte þis word more in þer herte.

*A womman, seiþ Crist, whan she travailiþ wiþ child, haþ sorewe of hir peyne, but aftir whan she is delyverid, she haþ joie of hir child, and forȝetiþ her former sorewe, for man is bore in to þe world. And perfore ȝe have sorewe now, but efte Y shal see you, and ȝoure herte shal have joie, and no man shal take fro ȝou ȝour joie.* Þis womman, to Cristis entent, is oure modir holy Chirche, and every party þerof þat is also hule Chirche. And as long as we lyven here, we ben travelynge of child, to brynge oure soule to surete fro bisie sorewe of þis world, and so to brynge forþ þe hole man to blisse boþe in bodi and soule. And whan we comen to þis state we þenken not of oure former sorewe to oure anoye or to oure mornynge, for joie of ende þat sueþ; but we þenken in oure herte þat for þis peyne þat we have now, we shal have myche joie whan we ben ful made in þe world. And þat shal nevere be done fully bifore þat we come to blisse, for we mornen til þat tyme. For we may liztly perishe fro lyfe, but þanne a man is fully made, whan he is corouned in blisse, for þanne he is certeyne to lyve evere in blis withouten peyne.

Clerkis seien þat whan a man is brouȝt þus to Goddis chambre, þan he is fully spousid with God, and dowid, boþe in bodi and in soule, of foure doweris of þe bodi. Crist toke ernes<sup>1</sup> here in þis world, for whan he cam out of his modir he brak not þe cloister of hir, but, as þe sunne comeþ þorouȝ þe glas, so Crist cam fro his modir wombe. And þis morwȝyve<sup>2</sup> is clepid of clerkes, dower of bodily sutilte, and ofte usid Crist þis dower fro þat tyme þat he was rysen. Þe secounde dower of þe bodi is clepid agilite, þat is swiftnesse þerof and to moven hou a man wole; and þis dower usid Crist whan he wente upon þe water, and specialy at þat tyme þat he stied in to heven. Þe

Four endowments of the glorified body :

1. subtilty,

2. agility,

<sup>1</sup> ernys. C.

<sup>2</sup> morwe-ȝyve. B; morow-ȝyfe. E: more ȝif, C.

þridde dower of þe bodi is incorruptibilite, þat þe body may not die ne be broke bi no þing; and þis dower knew þe fend whan he aleggide to Crist þat he shulde not hurte his foot, 3if he lepte doun fro þe temple. And by vertue of þis dower þe knyztis broken not Cristis þies, ne, whan he cam in at þe 3atis þe bordis broken not his bodi. Þe fourþe dower and þe laste is cleryng of mannis bodi, whan it shyneþ bryzt in hevene as þe sunne or oþer sterres; and þis dower toke Crist to him in tyme of his transfiguringe. And herfore seide Petre þanne, þat good was hem to be þere, for þis is þe heiest dower þat falliþ unto mannis body.

3 incorruptibility.

4. transparency.

And after þes foure doweris fallen foure unto þe soule. Þe first and þe moste dower answeriþ to þe last of þe bodi, þat a soule blessid in hevene haþ clere knowyng of alle þingis, þat is or was or ever shal be. And siþ a man haþ delite to see a pley here in erþe, or a lord, or þing of wonder, and þerwiþ fediþ his bodi, myche more þis clere siȝt of God and alle his creaturis shulden fulli fede þe blessid soule, and þereafter blisse þe bodi. And herfor seiþ oure Jesus, in the gospel of Seint Joon, þat þis is lyf wiþouten ende, to knowe þe Fadir and his Sone. For þan men knowen in þis myrour al creaturis þat may be; and þis clere siȝt is more joyeful þan ony tunge may telle here. Þe secounde dower of þe soule is vertue to kepe ful knowyng, so þat knowyng of oo þing contrarieþ not to anoþer. And riȝt as bodi shal ever last, for acorde of alle his partis, so mannis wittis shal ever last for lokyng in þe first myrour; and so man forȝiteþ not in hevene þingis þat he sum tyme knewe. Þe þridde dower of þe soule is redynesse for to knowe al þingis þat man wole, hou ofte þat he wole þenke on hem; for 3if he traveilid in þis þouȝt ony þing aȝens his wille, he were not fully in blisse, ne wiþouten anoyous peyne. And neþeles we bileven þat seintis have what þei wolen have, and þei wolen noo þing þat is yvel. And þus men grounden many blyssis, but al ben brouȝt to þes foure þat we can rekene in seintis. As þe fourþe dowery of man in blis, answeryng to þe first of þe bodi, is sutilte of mannis soule, þat it takiþ al kyn treuþe, and herby is [not]<sup>1</sup> undisposid to cast out oo treuþe by

Four endowments of the soul:

1 knowledge.

John xvii. 3

2 capacity.

3 nimbleness.

4. subtilty.

<sup>1</sup> The 'not,' which spoils the sense. is rightly omitted in E.

anoper; but as many blessid bodies ben togidere in o place, so many blessid knowyngis ben togidere in oo soule. Surete of siche goodis may not faile to þes seintis, siþ þei seen clerely in God how it is nede al þis to be. And so þei witen how þei have al þe joie þat þei wolen, siþ hem wantiþ no kyn þing þat þei shulden desire to have.

ÞE FOURÞE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTIR EESTIR.

[SERMON L.]

*Vado ad eum qui misit me.*—JOHN xvi. [5.]

Christ foretells  
his ascension.

Þis gospel of Joon telliþ hie pryvete of þing þat is to come bifore þe day of dome. And, for Cristis assencioun is neyþ, þerfore Crist telliþ a word of his assencioun þat his apostlis shulden trowe. Crist, to whom al þing þat shal be is present, seiþ upon þe Þursday þat he shulde die on þe morow: *Y go to him þat hap sent me to þe erþe, and þat is a myche office, to bye þe chirche of men. And for my steiyng is so opyn, as<sup>1</sup> it is hid bifore tyme, noon of 3ou axiþ me whidir þat Y go, but 3it, for Y have spoke þes þingis unto 3ou, 3e trowen not<sup>2</sup> but liztly þat þei ben soþe, and so oonhed<sup>3a</sup>, sorow hap now fillid 3oure hertis, for Y have told 3ou how þat Y shal suffre, hou Y shal be reproved, and how Y shal die, and how Y shal aftir be absentid fro 3ou; and how Y shal dwelle in hevене til Y come to þe last day to juge þe world to joye or to peyne. And þes wordis shulden make frendis to mourne among hem silf, but Y seiþ 3ou treuþe, it spedþ to 3ou þat Y go, for 3if Y go not, þe Holy Goost shal not come to 3ou, and 3if Y shal go, Y shal sende him to 3ou. And whan he shal come he shal reprove þe world of synne, of riztwisnese, and also of jugement.*

<sup>1</sup> and, E.

<sup>2</sup> now, E.

<sup>3</sup> oon bid, B; unbid, E; on bid, C.

\* The variations of the MSS. and the fact of their all including the words 'and so oonhed' in the italics, show that the scribes themselves did not understand this passage. I have

restored the words to Wyclif, and explain the passage thus; 'You readily believe that my words are true, and so unity;' i. e. harmonious and self-consistent



But þis shal be undirstonde thus—God shal reprove þis world *of synne of untreuþe, for þei trowiden not in me.* And þis is þe first synne, and moost unkynde þat þei myzten do to God; ffor siþ Crist came to þis world and by-cam our broþer to bye us, and algatis to profite to mankynde, and he is so opyn treuþe shewid þus unto man, þis is a greet synne to trowe not here to Crist. For in synnyng in þis feiþ unkynde men untrowen to his Fadir and to Crist and also to þe Holy Goost, for þis holy Trinite witnessiþ þis journey. And as bileve is first vertue and ground of al oþer, so unbelieve is þe first synne of alle oþer, and þerfore synne take<sup>1</sup> by himsilf is take for þis moost famous. Of þis synne shal the Gost repreve men of þis world.

The world  
reproved  
of unbelief.

Secoundly shal þis Goost *repreve men of rihtwisnesse* þat þei shulden have to Crist and unkyndely wanten it. For sich a messanger should be worshipid of alle men, and heried, for sich a message, siþ it was so profitable. And so þe world shal be dampned for wanting of þis rihtwisnesse, and specially, *for siche a persone goiþ azen to his Fadir.* And þat shewiþ þat Crist is þe secounde persone in Trinite, and so bi his godhede evene wiþ his Fadir, and bi his manheed lasse, but even in kynde wiþ his breþeren. And þus riht wole axe þat þis persone were worshipid.

of unrighteous-  
ness.

De þridde tyme shal þis Goost *repreve men of þis world, for þei jugide folily* þat Crist was led by a fend. And 3it þe most hie fend, *prince of þis worlde, is now juged* to helle, for he temptide þus Crist and dide him unworshipe.

of rash judg-  
ment.

3it, seiþ Crist, *I have many þingis to seie to zou, but ze may not bere hem now; but þe spirit of treuþe shal come to zou, and teche you alle treuþe,* and make zou strong to bere treuþe to suffryng of deef. Perfore þis good maister shal here by-gynne for to teche þe bokē of lyfe, and he shal nevere ende to teche, til þat his disciplis comen to hevене; and þere þei shal clerely knowe eche treuþe þat men can telle. *He shal not speke of himsilf,* wiþouten ony cause bifore, *but al þingis þat he shal here* of the Fadir and of þe Sone *shal he speke* and telle

The teaching  
of the Holy  
Ghost.

<sup>1</sup> taken, E.

3ou, and 3e shal after teche his Chirche. *And þingis þat here after ben to come shal þis Goost telle 3ou.* For þe apostlis knewun here al þat now is nede to knowe, for in þis mesure ledde God hem, and movede hem to do his dedis. He chargide hem not wiþ ydel witt þat herfore þei shulden be proud, but alle þat nedide hem to kunne, þei kouden þat redely. *Þis Goost shal clarifie me, for he shal take of myne and shewe 3ou þe treupe þat Y am and þat Y have.* And so in knowing of þis treupe þe apostlis shal wele knowe Crist, how bi his godhede he is ever wiþ þe Fadir, and anentis his manhede, he is evere in kynde wiþ his breþeren. But in grace of oonhede he passiþ alle oþer men þat may be, siþ no man may be God but he, and welle of grace as he is. And herfore Crist declariþ him silf, and seiþ, *þat alle þat his Fadir haþ ben<sup>1</sup> hise, and herfore he seiðe þat þe Goost shal take of his and shewe to his disciplis,* as ben þe apostlis and oþer after.

The double procession of the Holy Ghost.

And in þese heye wordis of witt, Crist techiþ how he wiþ his Fadir is þe same God in kynde, and bryngiþ forþ þe Holy Goost. For ellis þe Fadir hadde þis Goost, and Crist hadde not þis same Goost, and so not al þat þe Fadir haþ had Crist as verre God. But siþ þis word of Crist is soþ, it shewiþ openly þat Crist is God and of him wiþ his Fadir comeþ forþ þe Holy Goost. Þis Holy Goost may not be made, but ever comeþ forþ of þes two, as 3if þe shynynge of þe sonne come forþ evere of lizt and briþnesse. But, for þis sentence is myche hid fro witt of þe comoun peple, þerfore shulde preestis shapen of þe wordis of þis gospel, what myzt profite to his puple after undirstondinge of hem.

Explanation of verse 7.

And we shulden marke þis word of Crist whan he seiþ to his disciplis, but 3if he go fro hem to hevene, he shal not sende to hem þe Holy Goost; and many men musen of þes wordis, siþ Crist was every where almyzty, and so he myzt as wele in erþe as in hevene sende hem þis Goost. Lord! what nedid Crist to stye and speke wiþ mouþ wiþ þis Goost. Sich wordis shewen men ful rude to conseve þis mater, and þerfore it were nede to hem to knowe witt of þes wordis. We shal trowe þat Cristis

<sup>1</sup> is, E.

disciplis loveden him here to fleishly, and þei musten be purgid here of þis love bi þe Holy Goost; and þes þingis myzt best be done whan manhede of Crist was fro hem. And þus for rudenesse of apostlis, Crist seiþ þat it spedij þat he go fro hem, but he dwellij bi his godhede and his vertue ever wiþ hem. And herfore he seiþ anoþer tyme, þat he is al daies wiþ hem unto þe eende of þis world, bi Godhede and vertue of his manhede. And þus whan Crist was went to hevене, his apostlis weren clere in love, and leften þe love of erþely þingis, and þouzten clenly of heavenly þingis.

And of þis witt taken sum men þat it fallij not to Cristis vikerne to preestis of holy Chirche to have rentis here in erþe. But Jesus shulde be her rente, as he seiþ ofte in the olde lawe; and þer bodily sustynauce þei shulden have of Goddis parte, as of dymes and offryngis and oþer almes taken in mesure; þe which by þer holy lyf þei abriden hem<sup>a</sup> to take þus. Lord! siþ þe bodi of Crist undisposid þe apostlis to take þis Goost, myche more shulde worldely lordship unable men now to take þis Goost. And siþ þei have now o Goost, it is lycly bi þer dedis þat þei have a wickide Goost þat ledij hem an yvel wey. And in þes wordis we may see hou religiouse þat ben to day, drawen more to þer abite and to þer stynkyng ordenaunce, þan Crist wolde þat his apostlis chargiden þanne<sup>1b</sup> presence of his bodi. And herfore Crist sent his apostlis aloone, scaterynge into þe world, and certis þei weren more able now þan whan he sent hem two and two; for now þei weren rype by þe Holy Goost more sadly þan þei weren bifore. But oure freris þat ben syke ben closid now in cloistre togidere, mo þan twelve of Cristis apostlis; and þis semeþ by þe fendis cautel, þat ȝif on blec<sup>2</sup> not his broþer, anoþer worse shulde fylen<sup>3</sup> hem. And herfore sum freris have witt to holde hem ferre fro sicke a lumpe and avente hem in þe world; and þan shulden þei have good goost, for þus did Crist wiþ his disciplis, and him þei shulden suen in lyf.

The evil of endowments and the sufficiency of tithes.

<sup>1</sup> om. C; þe, E; þanne, B.    <sup>2</sup> *blekke*, B, C; *blecke*, E.    <sup>3</sup> *defoule*, B.

<sup>a</sup> *abriden hem*, that is, qualified themselves.

<sup>b</sup> Unless *þanne* is to be taken as representing the old form of the

A. S. masc. sing. accus. *þone*, the reading of the Douce MS., *þe*, is preferable.

DE FYFȚE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER EESTIR.

## [SERMON LI.]

*Amen, Amen, dico vobis, si quid petieritis.*—JOHN xvi. [23.]Praying in the  
name of Christ.

CRIST telliþ in þis gospel hou his disciplis shulden be helpid by vertue of her preier, whan he was styed in to hevene. And first he seiþ a general word, and takiþ boþe his kyndis to witnes, þat, *ȝif þei axen ouȝt þe Fadir of hevene in his name, he shal ȝyve it hem.* But, as Crist seiþ, *unto þat tyme his disciplis axiden not in his name, and herfor aftirward shulden þei axen þat þere joie were ful, and þei shulden take.* Al þe hardnesse of þis mater is to kunne perfittly to axe in Cristis name, for he shal have þat axiþ þus. But siþ oure Jesus is treuþe and helpe of men þat trowun in him, þat man axiþ in Cristis name, þat axiþ in treuþe his soule helpe. Crist is moost lord of al, and þerfore he wole have dispit, but ȝif men axen him a greet þing; ffor ellis his lordship and þat axing acorden not to his name. And so, ȝif þou wilt axe in Cristis name, axe þe blisse þat evere shal laste; and siþ Crist is treuþe and resoun, loke þi axinge be resonable, and þan maist þou be sure to have þe þing þat þou axist þus. And herfore Crist in þis gospel biddiþ us to axe oure ful joie, and þan shal we have it, if þat we axen it in resoun; for no man haþ but half joie, but ȝif he be ful of blisse. And þis greet lord wole not be axid but þis blisse, or menes þerto; and ȝif man axe þus in resoun þat he be worþi to have it, he shal have it wiþouten doute whan best tyme were þat he hadde it; and he shal have on þe best manere þe þing þat he axiþ þus.

Men who go  
to war cannot  
rightly use the  
Pater noster.

And herfore þe seven axingis þat Crist techiþ in þe Pater noster menep<sup>1</sup> þis forme of axinge; and algatis to axe in charite; and þerfore men þat lyven in werre ben unable to have þer axinge: but þei axen þer owne dampnyng in þe fiftte peticioun, for þer þei axen þat God forȝyve hem þer dettis þat þei owen to hym, riȝt as þei forȝyven men þat ben dettours unto hem. And

<sup>1</sup> So in B; *menen*, E, C; *moveþ*, A.

here we shal undirstonde þat ech man is dettour to God, and ech man owiþ to eche oþer to do him good in charite. And so failynge to love God of al þin herte and alle þi wille, þou rennest in grete dette boþe azens God and man. And so in þis fite axing þes men þat werren now-a-daies, axen him as þei wolden mene,—forþyve us for we ben even wiþ þee, or ellis take venjaunce in ire of us, as we taken vengeance of oure breþeren. And þis is noo good praier, but more axinge of Goddis venjaunce; and for þis cause many men ben unherd in þer praier, and turned in to more yvel for þere unskillful praier. And siche men weren better to leve þan to preien on sich maner. For many men preien for venjaunce and for worldis prosperite, and in þe ire of God he 3yveþ hem þat þei axen; but it were beter to hem to preye not þus, ne to have þes þingis. And þus men of contrarie londis preien God in grete processions; and for unworþinesse of her preier hem were beter to sitten at home. And, for men witen not for what þing þei shulden preie God in siche causis, þefore good lvyngge profitþ more, and þe Holy Goost axiþ þan for hem. And who ever stere<sup>1</sup> men to yvel lyfe, 3if<sup>2</sup> þei ben freris þat crien heye, God heereþ hem not to good, but raþer to take venjaunce on hem. For Crist seiþ, þat not ech man þat seiþ to him Lord, Lord, shal come in to þe blis of hevене, but he þat eendiþ in riȝt lyf, for he preieþ in þe name of þe Trinite. And þus 3ebedeus sones preieden for good, but in yvel manere. And so algatis ryȝt lyf is þe beste in mannis preier, for siche lyfe preieþ beter to God þan hie voicis of ypocritis.

Good life  
better than  
imperfect  
prayers.

And after seiþ Crist to his apostlis, *þat þes þingis he seide bifore to hem in proverbis and mystily; but now is come tyme when he shal not speke þus unto hem in proverbis, but apertly of his Fadir he shal telle hem as best is. In þat daie shal Cristen men axe in Cristis name unto þer blisse.* And now he seiþ unto hem *þat he shal preie his Fadir of<sup>3</sup> hem,* for þei shal be mateer to Crist and make his rewme. Wherefore he preieþ, *þat þe Fadir love þes apostlis and oþer men þat suen him, for þei loveden Jesus Crist and trowiden þat he cam fro God; 3he,* þat Crist bi his manhede

<sup>1</sup> streþ. E.

<sup>2</sup> alȝif, E.

<sup>3</sup> for, E.

came of God in his godhede. *Crist cam fro þe Fadir and cam in to þe world*, and now whan Crist haþ done his message, *he forsakiþ aȝen þe world*, and goiþ bi manhede *to his Fadir*. And Cristis disciplis seiden to him, *Lo, now þou spekist openly, and þou seiist now noo proverbe; and þerfore we witen wele þat þou knowist alle þingis, and it is to þe no nede þat ony man axe þe ourȝt*, for þou wost bifore þe axinge, what men shulde axen and what þingis leve. *In þis we trowen þat þou come fro God* as his owne sone.

And þis bileve is ground to men to have of God what þat hem nedip, and to wite what is best to hem, al ȝif it displese to þe world. But, as men þat ben in feveris desire not þat were best for hem, so men here in synne coveiten not best þing for hem. For þe world seide þat þe apostlis weren foolis and forsaken of God, and so it wolde seie todaie of men þat lyveden lyke to hem, for worldis joie and eerþely good plesip to hem, wiþ meenes þerto, and þei saveron<sup>1</sup> not heavenly good ne riȝt suyng after Crist. And þis jugement now in þe world is open witnessse aȝens men, þat þei be not hoole in soule, but turned amys to worldely þingis. For as a mouþ of a syke man distempered fro good mete, moveþ him for to coveite þingis contrarie to his helpe, so it is of mannis soule þat savoureþ not Goddis lawe. And as wanting of appetit is a signe dedly to man, so wanting of Goddis witt is signe of his secunde deep. And jugement þat now regneþ of worldely prosperite is token of men þat þei ben foolis and saveren not of Goddis lawe. For þe world seiþ comounly þat ȝif a man have worldely blisse and þe world leiȝe<sup>2</sup> to him in killynge of his enemyes, þan God loveþ him and doiþ miraclis for his sake. But, Lord! where is oure bileve þat we shulde trowe in love of God, þat it stondip not in þis but rapier hate of God! And, as Gregori seiþ<sup>3</sup>, as a bole þat shal be kild goiþ in corn at his wille, and is not pyned<sup>3</sup> ne travellid wiþ oþer beestis; so a lyme of þe fend is left fro þe grace of God, to figure his dampnacioun, and suffrid

<sup>1</sup> *saveren*, E  
A has *pyndid*

<sup>2</sup> *joye*, C.

<sup>3</sup> So in B; *pynyd*, E; *pynde*, C:

I have been unable to verify this reference

to do myche harme here, to large his peyne aftirward. We shulden leve þes sensible signes and take ensample of holy men, as of Crist and of his apostlis; hou þei hadden not her blisse here. But here Crist ordeynede peynes and hate of þe world and pursuyng to men þat he moost lovede, to teche us þat come after hem. And þus signes of paciens and pursuyng in þis erþe shulde be tokens of Goddis love and not signes of Antecrist.

ÞE SIXTE SONDAI GOSPEL AFTER EESTIR.

[SERMON LII.]

*Cum venerit Paraclitus.*—JOHN xv. [26.]

CRIST telliþ his disciplis of comyng of þe Confortour, þe which is þe Holy Goost, and what lyf þei shal after lede. And ech man shulde cunne here þis lore, for þan he may be soulis leche, and wite, bi signes of his life, wher his soule be seke or hoole. Lord! siþ a fisician lerneþ diligentli his signes, in veyne, in pows<sup>1</sup>, and oþer þingis, wher a mannis bodi be hool; how myche more shulde he knowe sich signes þat tellen helpe of mannis soule, and how he haþ him to God. Alþif siche þingis ben pryve and passen worldly witt of men, neþeles þe Holy Goost telliþ men sum of siche signes, and makip hem more certeyne þan men can jufe of bodily helpe. And, for we shulden kyndely desire for to knowe þe soulis state, þerfore þe Holy Goost, þat techiþ us to knowe þes signes, is clepid a confortour of men, passinge oþer confortours. And as a mannis soule is beter þan þe bodi, and endeles good passiþ temporal good, so þis knowynge of þe soule passiþ oþer mannis cunnyng.

Crist seiþ þus to his disciplis, *Whan þis confortour shal come þat Y shal sende ȝou of þe Fadur, Goost of treuþe þat comeþ forþ of him. he shal also bere witnessse of me; and ȝe shal also bere*

The mission of  
the Comforter.

<sup>1</sup> *pouse, E; pouse, C.*

The doctrine  
of the double  
procession.

a doubtful  
point.

other points  
more need to  
be determined;  
e.g. the author-  
ity of the  
Pope, and the  
duty of private  
confession.

witnesse, for ȝe ben wiþ me alwey fro þe bigynnyng of my preching. But here may Grekes be moved to trowe þat þe Holy Goost comeþ not forþ but of þe Fadir and not of Crist þat is his sone; for þe toon seiþ Crist, and in þis gospel leveþ þe toper. And it semeþ to sum men, ȝif þis were treuþe þat shulde be trowid, God wolde listly telle þis treuþe as he telliþ oþer þat we trowen; and ellis it were presumpcioun to charge þe Chirche wiþ þis truþe, siþ neiþer autorite of God, ne resoun, techiþ þat þis is soþ; and al bileve nedeful to men is tolde hem in þe lawe of God. Here me þinkþ þat Latynes synneden sum what in þis poynt, for many oþer pointis weren now more nedeful to þe Chirche; as it were more nedeful to wite, where al þis Chirche hange in power of þe pope, as it is seid comounly, and where men þat shal be sayvd ben nedid here to shryve hem to preestis, and þus of many degrees þat þe pope haþ listly ordeyned. But me þinkþ þat it is soþ þat þis Goost comeþ bope of þe Fadir and of þe Sone, and þes persones ben o cause of him; and me þinkþ, to noon entent shulde Crist seye, he sendiþ þis Goost, or þat þis Goost is his, but ȝif þis Goost come of him. And to þis þat Grekes seien, þat Crist leveþ þis word, certis so doþ he many oþer for certein cause, and ȝit we trowen hem; as Crist seiþ his lore is not his, for it is principaly his Fadis; and ȝit we trowen þat it is his, but þe welle is in his Fadir. So we trowen þat þe wille bi which þe Fadir loveþ þe Sone comeþ of witt þat is þe Sone, but principaly of Goddis power. And in þis word Crist techiþ us to do algatis worship to God. And þus þes Grekes may not prove þat we trowen fals in þis bileve, or þat Crist lefte þis treuþe, wiþouten cause to telle it þus; for bi þis þat Crist seiþ, þe Holy Goost came of his Fadir, and leveþ þus þe comynge of him, he stoppiþ þe pride of þe Chirche and techiþ men to worshiþe God. But whan he seiþ þat he sendiþ þe Holy Goost to his disciplis, and alle þat his Fadir haþ ben his, he techiþ clerely þat þis Goost comeþ of him; and oþer wise shulde Crist not speke.

And þus Latyns ben to blame, for þei leven nedeful treuþe, and depen hem in oþer treuþe, þat is now not so nedeful. And þus seien sum men þat þe bishop of Rome, þat þei clepen heed of þe Chirche, and þerto pope, and Cristis viker, doþ more harme to þe

On the  
overgrown  
authority of  
the Popes.



Chirche of Crist þan doiþ viker of Thomas in Inde<sup>a</sup>, or viker of Poul in Grees, or þe Soudan of Babilon. For þe rote of which he came, þat is downyng of þe Chirche and heying of þe emperoure, is not ful holy ground, but envenymed wiþ synne. But þis venym first was lital, and hid by cautelis of þe fend, but now it is growen to myche and to hard to amende. Soþ it is þat ech apostle was obedient to ech oþer, as Petre obeishid unto Poul whan he reprovde hym; and þus þenken sum men þat þei shulden obeishe to þe pope, but no more þan Crist biddiþ, no more þan to oþer preestis, but 3if he teche bettre Goddis wille and more profitiþ<sup>1</sup> to men; and so of alle his ordenaunce, but 3if it be groundid in Goddis lawe, sette no more prys þerby þan bi lawe of þe emperoure. Men shulden seie myche in þis matere, and oþer men shulden do in dede; but men wolden holde hem heretikes, as þe fendis lymes diden Crist. And so picke ben his membris þat who so holdiþ wiþ Cristis lawe, he shal be schent many weyes and algatis wiþ lesyngis.

And þis telliþ Crist bifore unto his postlis, to make hem stronge and arme hem aȝens siche persecuciouns. *Des þingis, seiþ he, Y spake to you, þat 3e be not sclaudrid.* He is sclaudrid þat is lettid by word or by dede, so þat his riȝt wille falle down fro his witt; and so 3if a man be pursued and suffre it paciently, he is not sclaudrid, al 3if men synnen aȝens him. Þe first pursuyt aȝens Crist shal be of false preestis, not al oonly lettyng þe membris of Crist to reule þe puple in chirchis, as curatis shulden do, but putte hem out of chirche as cursid men or heretikes. And herfore seiþ Crist þat þei shal make 3ou *wiþout synagogis*. But 3it shal more woodnesse come after þis, for þei procuren þe puple, boþe more and lasse, to kille Cristis disciplis for hope of grete mede. And herfore Crist seiþ certeyn of þis

Persecution.

<sup>1</sup> *profite*, E.

<sup>a</sup> The tradition of the visit of the apostle Thomas to India is of later origin than the time of Eusebius, being first mentioned by writers of the close of the fourth, and beginning of the fifth century, such as Gregory Nazianzen, St. Ambrose, and St. Jerome. The Christians found in Malabar by St. Francis

Xavier certainly called themselves 'Christians of St. Thomas;' but this is supposed by many to have arisen from a confusion between the apostle and a Nestorian missionary. (Dean Stanley, article 'Thomas;' Smith's *Bibl. Dict.*; Kitto's *Cyclo-pædia*.)

mater, *þat hour is come þat ech man þat killiþ þus good men, shal juge him to do to God medeful obedience.* And to þis ende procuren freris, Antecristis disciplis, þat wel nyze it is þus now among Cristene men. Sum men be sumnyd to Rome and þere putt in prisoun, and sum ben cryed as heretikes among þe comoun peple; and over þis, as men seien, freris killen þer owen breþeren, and procuren men of þe world to kille men þat seien hem treuþe. And oo drede lettij hem þat þei stirte not to more woodnesse, for þei defenden þat it is leveful and medeful, preestis for to fyt in cause þat þei feynen Goddis; and so zif þer parte be stronger þan seculers, þei may move þes preestis to fyt azens þes gentilmen. And as þei have robbid hem of temporal goodis, so þei wole pryve hem of swerde as unable, and seie þat sich fytting shulde best falle to preestis. Þus hadden preestis þis swerd bifore þat Crist cam, and þei drowun so ferre out of religioun of God til þat þei hadden kild Crist, heed of holy Chirche.

The wiles of  
the evil one.

Alle men shulden be ware of cautelis of þe fend, for he slepiþ not, castynge fals weies, and al þes done fendis lymes; *for þei knowen not þe Fadir and his some* bi propertees of hem. Þe fend blyndiþ hem so in worldly purpos, þat þei knowen not strengþe of God ne wisdom of his bidding; for feij failij unto hem þat þei loken not aferre, but þing þat is nyze þer eye, as beestis wiþouten resoun. *Alle þis haþ Crist spoke to his disciplis þat whan tyme comeþ of hem, þei shulden þan have mynde þat he haþ seid hem þes perelis to come.* And þe Holy Goost moveþ ever sum men to studie Goddis lawe and have mynde of þis witt; and so love of Goddis lawe and sadde savoure þerynne, is token to men þat þei ben Goddis children, but zit of þer ende þei ben uncerteyn.



## DE GOSPEL ON WITT SONDAI.

## [SERMON LIII.]

*Si quis diligit me.*—JOHN xiv.<sup>1</sup> [23.]

IN þis gospel moveþ Crist his children to love, for charite is þe best cloiþ þat ony man may have; and herfore seiþ Goddis lawe þat love is stronge as deef, for love moveþ men to suffre deef gladly, in Goddis cause. And where deþ is þe moste þing þat man dredþ here, þis love passþ kynde and makþ men to coveite siche deef; and þis wille is not harmful but glorious to men, siþ bi siche love men brennen as coolis<sup>2</sup>, and turnen in to Goddis cloþis as angelis of hevene. First seiþ Crist þus, *zif ony man love him, he shulde kepe his word*, for þat is þe same treuþe; and siþ God is kynde azen to men þat loven him þus, Crist seiþ þat *his Fadir shal love him azen*; and zif his Fadir love a man, þe two oþer persones loveþ<sup>a</sup> him, and al siche love of God mut nedis be evermore. And þe manhede of Crist worchþ þus bi þis love; *it shal brynge wiþ Crist siche membris of him to hevene*, and so to clere sizt of þe holy Trinite. *And so Crist wiþ his membris shal make þere þer dwellinge wiþ- outhen ony ende*, bi love of þe Holy Goost; for seintis in hevene may not passe þis ende, for þan þei weren foolis chesyng a worse eende.

For Crist wolde shewen oonhede to loven him and to kepen his wordis; þerfore he seiþ efte, *He þat loveþ him not, he kepþ not hise wordis*. And herfore Crist, discryvyng a man þat loveþ him, seiþ þus after in þe same gospel, *He þat hap my comandementis and kepþ hem in his lyfe, he is þat ilke þat loveþ me wel*<sup>3</sup>. Here may we wite where a man love God, for zif he loveþ God, he loveþ his lawe and wordis

Christ moves  
his children  
to love.

which is the  
same thing  
as to keep  
his command-  
ments.

<sup>1</sup> So in E; both A and B have *xviii*, erroneously.    <sup>2</sup> *colis*, B.    <sup>3</sup> So E and B; A and C give no marks of quotation.

\* This is the old plural present indicative of the Southern dialect, proceeding directly from the West Saxon form *lufiað*.

of þe gospel, for alle þei comen to oon; and ȝif he loveþ not Goddis lawe he loveþ not his God. And herfore ech man þat loveþ not Goddis word, þat he wolde not die þefore to defende it, he loveþ not his God as he shulde love him; for it is al oone to love God and to love his word, and as myche as þou lovest God, shuldist þou love his word. But for love of þi God, þou shuldist lese þi lyfe, and so þou shuldist lese þi lyfe for defence of Cristis word; and in cowardise of þis love ben many men smyttid, but knyztis bi þer ordre shulden be redy in þis love. But, for Crist haþ seid þat men shulden kepe hise wordis, many men myȝten muse what þing ben þese wordis. But Crist seiþ þat alle þes wordis ben treuþes, as ten treuþis of þe comandementis, and alle ben wiþouten ende; and so he þat kepiþ not þe wordis of Crist, he kepiþ not his o word *þe which þei have herd, and þis o word which þei have herd is not Cristis, but his Fadris*. For it is Cristis persone, and Crist is not Cristis sone, but þe Sone of þe Fadir; and þus we may see worþinesse of Goddis word. Wordis of God ben many by diversite of resoun, but al þei rennen to gidere in o myddil poynte, and so þei ben alle Goddis word, þat is him silfe. And, for þes wordis ben mysty and derke to þe puple, þerfor ȝyveþ Crist hem a confort in þis matere, and seiþ, *þat he haþ spoke þes þingis unto hem dwellynge wiþ hem, and þei ben ȝit mysty; but þe Confortour þat is þe Holy Goost, þe which þe Fadir shal sende in þe name of Crist, shal teche hem alle þingis þat ben now hid to hem*. And þus it falliþ unto men to know rudely first a þing and generaly, as philosophris speken, and after shulden þei knowe more sutilly þe same þing; and þus Crist bi his manheed told first mysty wordis, and siþ bi his fynger shewide sutilte of hem. And ȝit þis Holi Goost shal have order of þis lore, *for first he shal move mennis eris* in sensible voicis, and siþ he shal be slyden ynne and *teche mennis þouȝtis*, in alle þat Crist haþ spoke bifore, in general wordis. Þei ne shal ceese anoon to lerne more sutilly, but ever in þis lyf þei wexen more rype til þat þei comen to hevене, and þere knowe al fulli.

And, for pees of mannis soule disposiþ him to lerne, þerfore Crist byhotiþ his children þis pees, and seiþ þus, *Pees Y leve to you; and my pees Y ȝyve ȝou*. Crist wiste þat him silfe

What these  
command-  
ments are.

the Holy Ghost  
teaches us,

through the  
peace of  
Christ.

shulde soone passe fro his children; ffor on þe Þursdaie at niȝt he seide to hem þes wordis, and on þe morewe at noon he died for þer love; and herfor he bihiȝt hem þat he shulde leve hem pees. But Crist specifeth þis general pees, whanne he seiþ þat he ȝyveþ hem his own pees; and þis shal be first wiþ pursuyng of body, but it shal grow after to moost ful pees. And herfore seiþ Crist *þat not as þe world ȝyveþ, he ȝyveþ hem*, but on contrary maner. Þe world ȝyveþ þingis þat now ben likyng, but bi processe of tyme þei wexen more bitter, and so þei turnen to peyne and sorewe, þat first weren likyng; and so pees of þis worlde is ever more decresyng, but pees of God growiþ unto ful pees.

And bi þes wordis of witt Crist confortiþ his children, and biddiþ hem, þat *þer herte be not disturblid ne drede*; for who ever troweþ fully þis sentence þat is seid, and hopiþ fully þat he were of nombre of þes children, he were an untrewen man ȝif þat he drede þus. Apostlis dredden hem of perelis þat weren nyȝe, but þei failiden not of þis treuþe, þat þei ne shulde have a good ende, and what þingis þat felle to hem, it shulde falle to hem for þe betere. And so as þe worlde is sikir of þing nyȝe it, and in doute of þing ferre, so in contrary manere ben Cristis children sikir of þer ferre eende, but of þer nyȝe menes ben þei sum tyme in drede. And grounde of þis sentence is Cristen mennis bileve, and herfore seide Crist, *ȝe herden how Y seide to ȝou, Y go and Y come to ȝou*; and he þat trowiþ fully þes witty wordis of Crist he shulde not drede him of þis for seid sentence, for Crist seiþ, as God to whom al þing is present, *Y go and Y come to you*, for certeinte herof. And as Crist was certeyne of his deef and his steiyng up and of his comyng aȝen at þe daye of dome, so shulden his children be certeyn of his forseid sentence. And ȝit Crist moveþ his children to have joie of his goyng, and þis was a point for which þei mourneden moost; and Crist seiþ þus to hem to abate þer mournyng, *Certis, ȝif ye loveden me, ȝe shulden have joie for Y go to my Fadur, siþ he is more þan Y*; for þus bi manheed Y shulde encrease in bliss, and he þat joieþ not herfore, he loveþ not Crist. And it is told bifore hou ech man shulde love him; *And now Y seide to you, bifore it is falle, þat whan it done, ȝe trowen* in my witt;

We are commanded to be hopeful and of good courage.

and so shulde þei trowe to alle þing þat he hadde seid, for þus he is God þat can wel al þing. And Crist, teching his children to marke beter his wordis, seiþ, *þat he shal speke now but fewe þingis unto hem*, but þei shulde have moost enemyte here of þe heed fend þat Crist haþ overcome; and þefore he telliþ hem, *þat prynce of þis worlde is come for to tempte Crist, and he haþ not in him*; and þus in þis overcomynge shulde þei not drede þe fend. *But al þis is done þat þe worlde knowe þat Y love þe Fadir*; and so shulde ȝe do, for alle þingis þat Y do shulden be ensaumple to you. And *herfor Y do as my Fadir comandide me*, for wel Y woot in þis may I not faile. And al þis sentence of þe gospel of Joon is fully perteynyng to comynge of þe Holy Goost, and so redyng of þis gospel was wel ordeyned for þis day.

ÞE GOSPEL ON ÞE TRINITE SONEDAY.

[SERMON LIV.]

*Erat homo ex Phariseeis Nychodeme.*—JOHN iii. [I.]

The visit of  
Nicodemus.

Þis gospel undir a story telliþ of þe Trinite, and boþe þes ben harde, as comounly is Jones gospel. Þe storrye telliþ *þat þer was a man of Pharisees þat hiȝte Nichodeme, and was prince of þe Jewis; he cam to Jesus on a nyȝt and seide þus to him; Rabi we witen wel þat þou art come fro God; and rabi is as myche as maister in Englishe. And Nichodeme tolde þe cause whi he trowide þis, for no man may make, he seide, þes signes þat þou makist, but ȝif God be wiþ him*, and so he comeþ fro God. *And Jesus answeride Nychodeme, and seide þus to him, bi my double kynde Y seie to þee, but ȝif a man be born aȝen, he may not se Goddis rewme. And þes wordis weren woundirful to Nichodeme, and þefore he axide where a man myȝte be bore whan he were an old man, wher he myȝte crepe in to his moder wombe for tyme þat he was olde and be born aȝen.*

Þis Nichodeme cam in þe nyȝt, þat figuride his ignoraunce, but to þe literal witt, he dredde him for his breþeren, to comè

apertly in þe day, and speke wiþ Jesus Crist; and boþe þes undirstondingis shope þe Holy Goost. And so þis goostly birþe þat Nichodeme mut first have bitokeneþ þe Fadir of hevene þat þryngeþ forþ two oþer persones; and so Nichodeme to litil knewe þis persone of God, and for þis unknowinge he axide þis questioun. For he seide not þat Crist was kyndely Goddis Sone, ne þat he was Goddis word and so God him silfe; and so þis Nichodeme hadde nede to be cristened in feiþ, and so Crist lovede his persone, alþif he hatide his ordre, for Crist savyde his persone and distryede his ordre. And þus Crist lovede Poul, þat seiþ he was a Pharisee; but þe more part of Pharisees weren fals and heretikes. And þis nativite shewiþ Crist in þes wordis; *Forsob, forsob, Y seie to þee, but zif man be born of water and þe Holy Goost he may not entre in to Goddis rewme.* And þus bi þis baptyt, þis water and þe Holy Goost, Crist tolde him þe Trinite zif he koud conseyye it. Þis baptyt seiþ þe Trinite, in whos name it is mad; þis water is þe waishinge þat ranne of Cristis herte; and so baptyt and water and þe Holy Goost tellen Nichodeme þe Trinitee, and þerwiþ þe sacrament, for Crist is compendious in spekyng of his wordis.

But Crist makip distynccioun of two manere of birþis, and seiþ þat *þing born of fleishe is fleish* in his kynde, and *þing þat is born of spirit is spirit* on sum manere; and *þerfore, wounder þou not þat Y seide to þee, ze moten be born azen*, and bi Goost made children of holy Chirche, and so in spirit maad Goddis children, and so his spouse shal be your moder. Þis gendrure of þis Goost is boþe free and wilful, and herfor Crist seiþ to Nichodeme, þat *þe spirit breþiþ wher he wole, and þou herest his vois* bi which he moveþ þee. And on þis maner þe Spirit of oure Lord haþ fillid þis world wiþ witt of oure feiþ, and þat þing þat holdiþ alle haþ science of vois. And herfore at Wit-Sunday whan þis Goost apperide was a greet soun, and tungis of fier, to telle þat men shulden speke on hiȝt<sup>1</sup> to þer breþeren, and þei shulden have charite, þe which seiþ þe Holy Goost. And alle zif we knowen þe vois of þis Goost, neþeles we witen not whennes þat it comeþ ne whidir þat it goiþ, to men þat ben

<sup>1</sup> *beȝt*, E; *beizþe*, B; *beizþe*, C.

biside us; for we knowen not þe ordenaunce of God, whi he enspireþ þes men, and to what ende, or wheþer he shal save þis man or wende away from him. *And so ech man þat is born of þis spirit* is unknowun to oþer by many hid resoun, and so ech man is sumwhat knowun and sumwhat unknowun for wisdom of þis spirit.

But *Nichodeme answerede and seide here to Jesus, How may þes þingis be done? And Crist seide to him;* In þe lond of Israel ben manye blynde maisters, *for þou art' maister in Israel, and 3it þou unknowist þes þingis:* and so it is noo wounder 3if þis lond be mysled, ffor 3if þe blynde leden þe blynde, þei fallen boþe into þe lake. And neþeles Y teche hem as myche as þei ben worþi; and so seiþ Crist to Nichodeme, *Sopely, sopely, Y seie to þee,* defaute is not in me, in teching of þes puple, but in untrewed hardnesse of it; for, *þing þat we knowun, we tellen to hem, and þat we have sene in Godhede, we witnessen, and 3e taken not oure witness,* for 3oure unkynde hardnesse. And þefore 3e knowen not þe gendrure of þe firste persone. *3if Y seide to 3ou erþely þingis and 3e trowen hem not, how, 3if Y seide to you hevenly þingis, shal 3e trowen hem?* Crist tolde here of bodily birþe, and ofte tymes of erþely treuþe, but þei trowiden him not for þer fole hard herte; but neþeles Crist tellip þis man knowinge of þe secounde persone, and in an article of bileve, þat is, his ascensioun; and *no man, seiþ Crist, steieþ in to hevene but he þat cam down fro hevene, mannis sone þat is in hevene.* And in þes wordis myzt Nichodeme undirstonde boþe þe godhede of Crist and þerto his manhede, and so shulde he knowe wel þe secounde persone of God. By þat þat Crist steied þus, and þus is mannis sone, myzt he knowe his manhede bifore oþer manhedis; for al3if oþer men steieden a litil in þis eire, neþeles no man steieþ in to hevene þus but Crist. And so noon oþer man comeþ to hevene but 3if he be Cristis membre, and be drawun bi þe Trinite in to þis hey place. And þus seiþ Crist soþ, þat no man steieþ in to hevene, but him silf aloone; and seiþ þere ben foure manere of bryngingis forþ of man, and þe fourþe and þe laste, apropred unto Crist, is þat man comeþ clene of womman wiþout man. Crist clepiþ him wel here a sone of mankynde; and þus bi þes two wordis



myzt he knowe Cristis manhede. And by oþer two wordis myzt he knowe Cristis godhede; first by þat he seiþ þat þis man cam doun bifore fro hevene, and þis myzt nevere be but ȝif Crist were God or<sup>a</sup> he were man. Þe secounde word þat shewiþ þe godhede of þis persone, is, þat Crist seiþ þat he is mannis sone þat is in hevene, ȝhe, after þat he bycam man; ffor þus is Crist<sup>1</sup> two kyndes godhede for evermore, and evermore<sup>2</sup> in hevene drawynge to him whom him likeþ. And þus Crist techiþ wel ynouȝ to knowe þe secounde person, boþ in godhede and in manhede, as myche as he shulde þan knowe him.

But to telle þe þridde persone, in pointis of bileve, Crist telliþ to Nichodeme, *As Moyses heied þe adde in desert* to hele þe puple by lokinge on him, *so mut mannis sone be hyed in þe cros, þat ech man þat trowiþ in him, perishe not in helle, but have lyf wipouten eende*, þat is blisse of hevene. Here mut we knowe þe storye of þe olde lawe hou þe puple was hirt by stynging of addres, and Moses preied God to telle him sum medecyne; and God bade him take an adde of bras, and hong hym hye on a tree to þe puple to loke on, and he þat lokid on þis adde shulde be helid of þis yvel. And al þis was figure of hanging of Crist, for Crist was in forme of addris of venym, but he hadde no venym in his owene persone, as þe adde of bras hadde no venym in him. But as riȝt lokinge on þis adde of bras savyde þe puple fro venym of serpentis, so riȝt lokinge bi ful bileve in Crist saveþ his puple fro synne of þe fendis. And þe fende was þe first adde þat ever noyed man, and Crist was hongid in tre, as þis adde hongide in tree. But it were to wite over, hou þis story perteyneþ to þe Holy Goost, siþ al þis was done in Crist; but we shal wel wite þat ech of þes þre persones is in ech oþer, as ech bitokeneþ oþer. And siþ þat Crist seiþ þat no man haþ more love þan for to put his lyf for his frendis, þis blesside hanginge of Crist in þe crosse is þat hye charite þat God lovede man inne, and þis charite is þe Holy Goost; and þus was Nichodeme tauȝt þe feiþ of þe Trinite, and in þis feiþ many oþer articlis, and þus is þis gospel appropid to þis feste.

Christ teaches  
Nicodemus  
the complete  
doctrine of  
the Trinity.

<sup>1</sup> *Crist is*, B, C.

<sup>2</sup> So E; A, B, C, om. *and evermore*.

<sup>a</sup> *or* = 'before that.'

Þere ben many witnessis and resouns to þe Trinite, but þis manere of lore is more plentouse and more profitable to men; and herfore Crist seiþ it þus; and þus eche man shulde reule al his lyfe after þis holy Trinite, for ellis he must faile. Loke first þat he be groundid in stable bigynning, and siþ þat he procede in gracious mene, and siþ þat he ende in fulnesse of charite, and þan his lyfe is ensaumplid afir þe Trinite.



COMMUNE SANCTORUM.

[THE sermons which follow, on the gospels of the office of the Commune Sanctorum, are thirty-one in number. The order of the feasts, and the gospels themselves, appear to have been taken by the writer from the Sarum missal. Every separate office included in that missal is dealt with by the writer of the sermons except those for 'Many Virgins' and 'Holy Women not Virgins;' and for this omission there is an obvious reason, viz. that the gospels for those offices are the same as those for 'One Virgin not Martyr,' and 'One Virgin and Martyr,' and had therefore already formed the subjects of sermons. With one exception, all the gospels correspond with those in the Sarum missal. This exception is in the office for 'One Apostle.' Two gospels for this office are treated of by the writer, *Hoc est praeceptum*, (John xv. 12) and *Haec mando vobis*, (John xv. 17). The latter one of these gospels alone is given in the Sarum missal. But the *Hoc est praeceptum* is the gospel for the 'Vigil of an Apostle' in the present Roman missal.

Although of course there is a general agreement, the office of the Commune Sanctorum in the Sarum missal differs considerably from that of the present Roman missal. In one direction it is fuller, in another not so full. It is fuller, in that it has a greater number of distinct offices or masses, there being twenty-nine in the Sarum, and only twenty-four (including that for the anniversary of the Dedication of a Church) in the Roman. It is less full, because, though it has more offices for several of the feasts, certain festivals are not represented in it at all, e. g. those of 'One Martyr not a Bishop,' and of a 'Martyr not Virgin.'

Out of the thirty-one gospels treated of by the writer, twenty-one are also found in the Commune Sanctorum of the Roman missal, and ten are different.]

HERE BIGYNNEP þE  
COMOUN SANCTORUM,

þE SECUNDE PART OF þIS BOOK.

þE GOSPEL IN VIGIL OF APOSTLE.

[SERMON LV.]

*Ego sum vitis vera.*—Joon xv. [I.]

As comune þing is betere and bifore oþer þingis, so þis gōspel þat is red in comun story shulden men knowe sum what, and speciali preestis, for it is a foul þing þat prestis speken as pies, and knowun not her owne vois more þan doumbe beestis, and speciali whanne þei reden bileve of holi Chirche, for þes men ben to ferre to preche þis to þe peple. Þis gospel of Joon telliþ a parable of Crist, bi which he tauzþe his disciplis for to dwelle in him, and for to love him, for ellis þei ben nouzt. Crist seiþ þus: *I am a verri vyne and my Fadir is tylyer* of þis vynezerde. For Crist bi hise twoo kyndis is a good herde; as anentis his godhede, he is þe same tilier wiþ his Fadir, and as anentis his manhede he is heed of holi Chirche. And for þis seiþ Crist þat, *ech braunche þat is in him, and beriþ not fruyt, his Fadir shal take away*, for keper of a vynezerde falliþ þus to clense it, and algatis kepe þe vynes þat þei beren grapis. And, for alle þe Fadir dedis doiþ also þe Sone, þefore seiþ Crist þat *ech braunche of þe Chirche þat beriþ fruyt, his Fadir shal purge þat it bere more fruyt*; and so doiþ Crist, for he sendiþ water of wisdom to hise braunchis, and herof comeþ grapis to preche to

The parable of  
the true vine.

þe peple and gladen hem in Goddis lawe. Sum men ben braunchis of þis vyne, þat dwellen in holy Chirche, and ȝit þei ben not þerof, al if þei lyve of þis vyne, and ben siche þat gaderen gredili Cristis patrimonye, as dymes and offringis and rentis, þat þei seien weren ȝovun to Crist; and wiþ þis þei done not þer office to quykene oþer branchis; and þes ben moost noious branchis þat ben plauntid in þis vyne, for þei maken most oþer men to rote and drye and falle fro þis vyne in to þe fier of helle. For no men ben of holi Chirche, al if þei ben þerinne, but þese men þat beren fruyt and han love wiþouten eende.

Necessity of  
union with  
Christ.

After seiþ Crist to his disciplis, *Now ȝe ben clene for þat word þat Y seide to ȝou, Dwell ȝe in me and Y dwelle in ȝou.* Boþe goode men and ivel moten be on sum manere in Crist, siþ he is God þat susteyneþ al þing; but men shulden be in him bi grace and take moisture of his lore, and so profite to oþer braunchis þat growen in þis vyne, and þus þei shulden take moisture of lore of þis tree, or ellis þei ben not of þis tree, al if her kynde be susteyned in it, but þei growen in kynde to make of a fier in helle. And þis vyne dwelliþ not in a man as for his membre, but if he helpe þis man to make here a good ende, and die in charitee to God and to his Chirche. And so, al if ech man shulde hope þat he be lyme of holi Chirche, neþeles he shulde suppose þis bineþe bileve and wiþ a drede, but if God telde him specialy what eende þat he shal have. And þis triacle haþ God ordeyned aȝens preestis and ypocritis, þat þei shulden not disceyve þe puple, bostinge þat þei ben of holi Chirche, for, be þei popis, be þei bishopis, or oþer preestis more or lasse, þei bosten and hewen above her heed, if þei ben proud of þis title. And herfore God, þat loveþ þat ech man shulde be meke, hidिþ þis point from ech man þat he woot wole not holde mekenesse. And to conferme þis mekenesse, seiþ Crist after in þis gospel, *As a sioun mai not bere fruyt but if it stonde stable in þe vyne, so no Cristene man mai bere fruyte but if he be dwellinge in Crist.* And herfore seiþ Crist bi Matheu, þat a good tree mai not make yvel fruyte ne an yvel tree good fruyt, al if mennis jugement faile in þis, for þese þat God woot þat shal be saved, al if þei synnen for a tyme, neþeles her synful lyf shal turne to hem to fruyt of hevene. And so þese men þat shal be

dampned, al if þei done good for a tyme, 3it þei han an yvel maner þat quenchip þe goode þat þei done. And so it is unknowun to men who dwelliþ þus in God; but ech man shal do good, supposinge þat he dwelliþ in God. And herfore rehersiþ Crist, as he haþ seid to his apostlis, *I am a vyne, and 3e þe braunchis, and so þat man þat dwelliþ in me and I in him, he beriþ moche fruyte*, and upon þis shulden 3e þenken, for 3e moun do nouzt wiþouten me. And so shulden we lerne þat vynes ben trees þat profiten not to mennis work but in beryng of her fruyt. So shulden preestis in þis worlde shapen her lyf to Cristis Chirche, not to be enheritid here, ne to be riche, ne to fiȝte, but to teche Cristis lore boþe in her lyf and in her word. And þus shulde ech man do, but sum more and sum lesse.

And aftir seiþ Crist, as here is seid, *þat who þat dwelliþ not in him shal be sent out, as a kitt braunche, and so he shal drye and siþ be cast in to þe fier, and þere he brenneþ* wiþouten ende in þe fier þat evere shal laste. For fendis of helle shulen *gadere him* boþe in bodi and in soule, and witnesse azens him how he servede hem azens God. And over þis bihetiþ Crist þis privylege to his braunchis, *þat if þei dwellen in him and hise wordis dwellen in hem*, bi brynginge<sup>1</sup> forþ of heavenly fruyte, *whatevere þei wolen þei shulen axe and it shal be done to hem*. Þese hiȝe wordis þat Crist seiþ here, tellen witt hid to men. For many þenken þat summe ben fulli lymes of þe fend, and 3it þei enden holi men and comen to hevене for her good lyf; and summe ben now holi men, as ancris<sup>2</sup> heremytes and freris, and este þei ben apostataas and dien enemyes of Crist. Al þis is hid þing, for if siche men semen to do yvel, and summe siche semen to do good, as ben many ypocritis, neþeles þe ende is hid of which þei shulden take her name. And so God hidþ þe qualite of siche workes of men here, for men shulden not dampne hem ne preise hem to liȝtli. And þus men maken hem over wise in jugement of holi Chirche, and in demynge of mennis lyf, þat þis goiþ to hevене and þis to helle, for God haþ kept to him þe knowinge of an ende, þat makþ al. Þou maist knowe þat þis man is oþer a bishop or in sich office,

The final destinies of individual men are hidden from us.

<sup>1</sup> So rightly E; A includes the words in the italics.

<sup>2</sup> *anckeris*, E.

but wheþer he shal wende to hevene, God haþ hid þe knowinge fro þee; and siþ after þat he is man of holi Chirche or a lyme of þe fend, it is wel seid þou maist not see þis point of þi bileve, which ben lymes of holi Chirche, but þou shalt trowe þe general. And so þat þing þat þou trowist here, þou seest not here wiþ þi izeñ, but þou trowist it above hope, and bilevest it bineþ science. And þus þese wordis þat Crist seiþ shulden move men to lyve wel, and be meke, and leve pride of hiþenesse of her staat. And wolde God þat men lerneden þis lessoun þat clepen hem men of holi Chirche, and bi colour of þis fendis synne spoilen men þat be undir hem; and in þis raveyn þei shewen wel, þat þei ben not of holi Chirche.

DE GOSPEL IN þE DAI OF APOSTLE.

[SERMON LVI.]

*Hoc est preceptum meum.*—JOHN xv. [12.].

Þis gospel techiþ Cristis apostlis, and in hem al Cristis Chirche, how þei shulden holde charite ech man to oþer. Crist seiþ, *Þis is my comandement, þat 3e love togidere, after þat forme þat Y have loved 3ou. More love þan þis haþ no man, þan þat he put his lyfe for love of hise frendis.* And þus, as fisik<sup>1</sup> techiþ, þei shal þenke on a man þat is fulli hool wipynne and wipoute, and bi mesure of such a man þei shulden mesure mennis helþe; and whanne men axen, where is he þat is on þis wise hool, þei seien, þere is noon siche, but siche oon þei ymagynen; and after mesure of þis helþe þei heelen him þat þei delen wiþ. But blessid be oure science, and auctour þerof, for we seien þat þere is a love in þe heed of þe Chirche þat is moost in dede of alle loves þat mai be, and after þis love shulden alle oþer be mesurid. But, for fisik shameþ to sette sich a mesure þat þei knowen not, ne witen not where<sup>2</sup> it be, herfore þei seien þat þer ben two helpis, oon to rihtwisnesse and anoþer

No perfect standard of bodily health, but Christ the perfect standard of charity.

<sup>1</sup> phisic. E.

<sup>2</sup> wbeþer. E.



to weizte. De firste helpe shulde stonde in a mannis membris, and in his compleccioun, in humouris, and in elementis, which in suche acord ben knettid to gider, þat noon of þese mai be contrarie to anoþer; and siþ no man is siik but<sup>1</sup> bi sich contrarite, þis man þat þei speken of mai nevere more be siik. But hoolnesse of weizte mai falle to a man; and þat is nevere more wiþouten greet sykenesse, al zif it be hid by governynge of fisike. He is hool in weizte þat haþ of ech element as moche as he mai worche, wiþ dedes þat fallen to men, and on þis wise moun þei maken men hool. But blessid be oure mesure, þat Crist puttij in charite, for þat is moost rial and ground of al oþer; and no man mai be saaf but if he knowe þis mesure, and þis mesure helpe him to gendre in him charite; and þis shulden men in dede practise in þis science, for veyn speche þerof profitij not, but harmeþ. Þis love was shewid in Crist, whanne he putte his lyf for love of his breþeren, and brouzte summe out of helle, and savede oþer þerfro; and herfore seij Crist, for practisinge of þis love and ensauple þerof, *þat þei shulden love togidere as he haþ loved hem*<sup>2</sup>; and þanne þei ben al hool.

And herfore moten we nedis lerne þe bileve of þe passioun of Crist, and of his deþ suwynge, siþ after forme of þis love we shulden love togidere; and wantinge of þis love is cause of ech synne and of ech harm þat fallij in þe Chirche; and perfore men shulden enforce hem more to lerne þis love. And herfore traveilide Poul in techinge of charite, and telde sixteen condiciouns, þat shulden folowe it. And as many men seien þat þei ben hool in bodi, many men seien þat þei ben in charite, and loven God over al þing, and her neizbore as hem silf, but zit þei gabben opynli, as her lyf shewij. Þis lore þat Cristis scole axij loveþ none gabbingis, but þat þei do in dede as her mouþ confessij. And, for Crist haþ teeld þat þis hije charite techij a man to putte his lyf for love of hise frendis, and þis love is oonli in persone of Crist, he tellij how hise apostlis and oþer men ben hise frendis. *Ze ben þanne, seij Crist, frendis of me þat han þis love, if ze done sadli þe þingis þat I bidde zou.* And so it is of oþer men þat doen as þese apostlis, for þei ben

The test of  
the love of  
Christians is  
obedience.

1 Cor. xiii.

<sup>1</sup> om. A: perperam.

<sup>2</sup> So E; no italics in A.

measure after Crist to oþer men þat suen hem. And certeyn þei ben not frendis to Crist þat han not þis love, but oonli þei þat han þis love; and siþ þis frenship axiþ þat boþe frendis loven togidir, and þat þe love be shewid in dede, as philosophris seien, if we ben frendis to Crist, it is þus in dede bitwixe him and us.

The apostles  
friends of  
Christ.

And Crist seiþ efte þis word of love, *Now shal Y not clepe 3ou servauntis, for þe servaunt woot not in þat<sup>a</sup> what his lord doiþ.* And þus men seien comounly þat þer ben two manere of servauntis, servaunt of condicioun, and servaunt of mynysterie. And servaunt of mynysterie may ben on two maneris. Sum men be oonli servauntis of greet service outward, and sum ben servauntis of þes two, boþe of privy counceillis and to do siche service. And on þis wise þe apostlis weren servauntis of Jesus Crist, as þey graunten comounly in bigynnyng of her epistlis; but on þe former manere weren not apostlis now servauntis, for Crist tauzte hem his privyte and lymytide hem to worþi werkes. And þus spekþ Crist here; and herfore wolde not þe aungel take worshipe of Joon, as seiþ þe book of pryvytees, but þe angel seiþ to him þat he was his servaunt, and hise breþeren boþe, siþ Crist was man in hevene, and he hadde ordeyned so hiþe place for hise apostlis, and telden<sup>1</sup> hem privytees unknowun to angels. And bi þis equivocacioun moun men liþtli acorden to Cristis lawe; for, as clerkes witen wel ynow<sup>3</sup>, contradiccoun is not oonly in wordis. And þus seiþ Crist, *þat he seiþ hise apostlis to be hise frendis from henneforþ, for alle, he seiþ, þat Y have herd of my Fadur I have maad knowun unto 3ou.* And þis is soþ, siþ Cristis apostlis knewen comunly þe book of lyf, and weren in lernynge of þis book, til þat þei knewen aboven aungels; and apostlis wisten þanne truþis þat weren hid from aungels. And cheef cause of þis frendship stondiþ in Crist and not in hem, for *þei chesiden not Crist her maistir, but he chees hem* unto þis office, and 3af to hem vertue for to do al þe service þat he shope hem to.

Apoc. xxii. 9.

The threefold  
office of the  
Apostles.

Crist ordeynede þree þingis to be fillid bi hise apostlis, first þat þei shulden go forth in to þe world and preche his gospel,

<sup>1</sup> teelde, E.

<sup>a</sup> in þat seems to mean, *quâ* servant.

and þat þis shulde be fruytous to þus converte so myche peple, and siþ þat þis fruyt dwelle, boþe in þis worlde and in þe toþer. And þes þree ben grete myraclis amonge alle þo þat Crist dide, for it passiþ mannis work to make fruyt þus to laste in heven. Men moun worche bi mannis craft figuris and hid qualitees; but þis is more wipouten mesure, þus to fordo synne, and bringe in blis; and þus seiþ Robert Grossthe<sup>a</sup> þat þis craft passiþ alkemmye<sup>1</sup>, for it makij soulis hoole, þat ben betere þan sunne or moone.

And þes þingis myzten not ben do<sup>2</sup> but bi special helpe of God; and þus tellij Crist to his apostlis, *þat what ever þei axen his Fadir in his name, he shal ȝyve to hem*, for þe love of him. And bi þis was shewide þe frendship bitwixe Crist and hise apostlis, and here moun we knowe treupe<sup>3</sup> þat is nedeful for þis gospel, how þes men ben frendis to Crist þat shulen be saved bi his vertue. And, as it semeþ, oonli þes men weren saved bi Cristis deþ, and oonli for þes men Crist putte his lyf and bouzte hem; but wel Y woot þat Crist ȝaf ynowȝ to save moo men, if þei wolden take his medicine and ablen hem to vertue of it. And here we moun not putte foli to marchaundiȝe þat Crist made, siþ savyng of his Chirche is betere þan was lyf þat Crist lefte, for þis deþ was a meene to betere lyf; and al was Cristis. And þus Crist was not peirid by his deþ, but sum wey beterid, siþ he loste not<sup>4</sup> substaunce, but gat o betere habitude. But leve we þis, and speke of love, þat it profite to þe peple; for siþ þer is no rewme, ne state of men, ne persone here, þat he ne failij in holdinge of þis love of Crist,—for ellis shulden men not þus synne,—alle we failen in þis love þat Crist haþ beden to his Chirche; for siþ every man in erþe is neizbore to ech oþer, how shewe we in our lyf ful love to alle þes neizboris?

<sup>1</sup> *alkemye*, E.<sup>2</sup> *done*, E.<sup>3</sup> *þe treupe*, E.<sup>4</sup> *no*, E.

<sup>a</sup> I cannot find this passage in the *Opuscula* of Grossetete printed in the Appendix to Brown's *Fasci-*

*culus*; it is probably in one or other of his many writings which exist at present only in manuscript.

ÞE GOSPEL ON ÞE DAY OF OON APOSTLE.

[SERMON LVII.]

*Haec mando vobis.*—JOHN xv. [17.]

Þis gospel telliþ sharpli, as Crist doiþ ofte bi Joon, how men shulden love togidere and putte awei þe lettingis, for þe bigynnyng and þe eendinge of Goddis lawe is love. Crist bigynneþ þus and comandeþ hise disciplis; *Þese þingis I bidde to 3ou þat 3e love togidere.* No þing is more beden of God þan þis love, and þerfor, what man leveþ it, he despisiþ God; but al were for to know þe craft of þis love, for it is oon to love a þing, and to wille good to þat þing. Ech þing shulde be loved after þat it is good, and so God shulde be moost loved, and betere men more þan worse men. And we shulden for Goddis love love yvel men and yvel comunes, and for his love be bisie to 3yve hem mater to be betere, and as myche as in us is, to do good to ech man, sum to make betere and sum to make lesse yvel; but oo firstnesse of love shulde we have to us silf, and to oure fadir and oure modir, savyng ordre of Goddis lawe. Þe firste lettinge of þis love þat Crist telliþ here, is hate of þis world to men þat kepen þis love, for þe world is so blyndid þat it clepiþ hate, love, and love it clepiþ hate, for it erriþ in bileve. Al oure love shulde stonde in þe love of God, to kepe his lawe and move oþere to kepe it; but many, for defaulte of feiþ, holden þis a fooly<sup>1</sup>, for gooddis of þis world fallen not to siche men.

And herfore seiþ Crist, *If þe world hate you, 3e shulden wele wite þat it hatide me bifore;* and þis worþinesse of Crist þat suffride þus for man, shulde move trewe men in God to suffre for Crist. If þou grutche aʒens poverte, and coveite worldeli worshipe, wite þou þat Crist bifore was porer þan þou, siþ he hadde not bi his manhede place to reste his heed ynne. If þou grutchist þat þi sugetis wolen not 3yve þee goodis, þenke how Cristis sugettis wolden neiþer 3yve him mete ne herberwe; and 3it herfore he curside hem not, but dide hem moche good. And if þou grutche þat þe world doiþ þee ony

<sup>1</sup> *foly*, E.

The precept of Christian love, its compass and scope.

Repinings, how to be corrected.

injurie, and þou profitist to þe world azen in love and mekenesse; þenke how Crist bifore þee profitide þus more to þe worlde; and ȝit Crist suffride more wronge of hise sugettis þan þou maist. And þus if þou woldist þenke on Crist, how he suffride for love of man, it were þe beste ensample þat þou shuldist have to suffre, and to cese þi grutching; for, as Austyn seiþ<sup>a</sup>, no man in þis world mai synne but levying þat Crist tauȝte, or grutche azens þing þat he suffride.

And for þis, seiþ Crist after, *If ȝe weren of þe world, þe worlde wolde love þat is his*; for þis lawe lastiþ in good and yvel, þat o man loveþ lyk to hym, ȝhe, if þei shulen be dampned for þis, as o synful loveþ anoþer for þe likenesse of her synne; and ȝit þei shulen boþe in helle suffre harm for þis likenesse. And þus it is no kynne<sup>1</sup> wounder if lymes of þe fend haten lymes of Crist, for þei ben so myche contrarie here, and after þe dai of dome; and þis meveþ many men to hate þes newe religiose, for þis newe dyversite quenchiþ love and makip hate. ȝhe, ȝit þei han sum fendis manere, þat þei haten her owne breþeren, and turmenten hem, for þei holden wiþ Goddis lawe azens heris<sup>2b</sup>; and certis þei loven to litil opirs, but feynen, to spoile hem of her goodis. And þus seiþ Crist to hise disciplis þat, *for þei ben not of þis world, but he haþ chosen hem of þis world, herfor þe world hatip hem*. And if þou lernest of þe world to hate þus, þi love is quenchild, but if þou hatist bi Cristis lawe men of þis world for þis synne, and wiþdrawist hem fro þe world, þanne þou lovest þese men in God. For þe world is takun here, for men overcomen bi þe world, þat loven more worldeli þingis þan Goddis lawe, or good of vertues. And of þis world seiþ Crist, þat it hatip hise disciplis.

And, for þis lore passith oþer in profit and in holynesse, þerfore biddiþ Crist hem *to þenke on his word þat he haþ seid*

<sup>1</sup> *kyn*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *beres*, E.

<sup>a</sup> The reference is probably to the treatise *De Urbis Excidio*, the concluding chapter of which especially, in a strain of eloquent and tender reproof, exhorts the Christian people of Rome, just after the sack of the city by the Goths, not to repine on

account of their terrible sufferings, remembering the unapproachable circumstances of the passion of their Redeemer.

<sup>b</sup> *azens beris*; i.e. against *theirs*,—the friars' law.

The world hates the elect; application of this to the friars.

What it is to overcome the world.

here to hem, for þanne þei overcomen þis world; and herfore seiþ Joon evangelist, Breþeren, what man is he þat overcomen þe world? Certis noon, but if he trowe þat Jesus is Goddis Sone. If we holden þis ground in feiþ þat Crist is verri God and man, and over þis trowe wel his lyf, and alle hise wordis þat he seiþ, we shal overcomun þis world and alle þe helpers of þe fend. For, as Crist seiþ soþeli, *þer is no servaunt more þan his lord is*; and so Crist is more boþe in vertue and in worþinesse þan ony oþer man mai be; and siþ Crist suffride þus and tauzte Cristene men þis lore, what man shulde we trowe or sue in oure lyf but Crist? And neiþer þe world ne þe fend mai in þis harme a man; and so confortiþ Crist hise membris bi two knytingis of treuþe, *If men of þis world have pursued Crist, þane þei shulen pursue hise membris; and if þei han kept hise wordis, þei shulen kepe hise disciplis wordis*. And þis is lijt for to knowe; for al þat shal be moot nedis be; for it is more hard to fendis to pursue þe persone of Crist þan to pursue hise membris, and þus þe lijtter wolen þei do. But oo confort lieþ here, þat as Crist convertide summe þat weren men of þe world, so shulen hise disciplis do. And þus þei shulen not worche in veyn to kepe his lawe as he biddiþ, for ech man þat shal worche mote have an hope of sum good ende, for dispeire of sich an ende wolde lette a man for to worche.

Sin is engendered by unbelief.

*But þe blyndenesse of þe worlde þat turmentiþ Crist wiþ hise lymes, is unknowinge in bileve<sup>1</sup>, þat þei knowe not Cristis Fadir*. For if þei knewe wel Cristis Fadir, þanne after þei shulden knowe his Sone, and þat þese two ben o God; but who wolde stryve azens þis God? And so defaute of bileve, and uncunnyng þat men have, gendren al yvel dedes; and þus ech synner is a fool; and if men knewen Goddis power and his witt in þes two persones, how he mai not forþete synne to punishe it whanne it is tyme, þanne shulden men dreden to synne, for knowinge of þes two persones. But þis feiþ is oþer weie in wakyng<sup>1</sup> or in slepyng. But Crist reproveþ þis unbileve, and seiþ, *if he hadde not comen and spoke not þus wiþ hem, þis synne shulde not þei have hadde*. For siþ Crist moste nedis have come in his manhede as he cam,

<sup>1</sup> The words *þat—bileve* are excluded from the Italics in E.

<sup>2</sup> *oþer away in wanyng*, E.

and alle þe dedes þat he dide, have do to men as he dide to hem, þis greet synne shulde not have be, of unkynde untreuþe of Jewes. For þis was gret unkyndnesse, to þis manere trete þere broþer, þat algatis mekeli dide so grete kyndness aȝen; and it was an opyn untreuþe, to þis manere hate her God; but now þese Jewes han noon excusinge of þis synne. And herfore seiþ Crist þus, *þat what man þat hatijþ him, he hatijþ also his Fadir*, for þei ben boþe oo þing. And, for in ech kynde of þingis is oon first, þat mesuriþ alle oþere þat ben in þat kynde, þefore in maner of synnes moote be oon first of alle oþer synnes, and marke alle þe oþer, and þat is þe synne of preestis aȝens Jesus Crist. And herfore seiþ Crist þat, *if he hadde not do werkes in hem, þat noon oþer man dide, þei hadden not hadde þis synne, but now þei siȝen þis feiþ, and zit þei hatiden boþe me and my Fadir*. But þis synne was not done wiþouten grete cause, siþ God suffriþ noo synne wiþouten avauntage þat it doiþ. And so was *verified þe writinge in her owne lawe, þat þe Jewes hadden wilfulli Crist in hate*.

ON DAI OF OON EVANGELIST.

[SERMON LVIII.]

*Designavit Dominus Jesus.*—LUC. x. [1.]

Þis gospel telliþ how Crist sente lesse disciplis to preche to þe peple, and ordeyne for þe apostlis; and þes wordis helpen moche for prechinge of simple preestis, for grete apostlis figuren bishopis, and lesse disciplis lesse preestis. But þese *disciplis weren two and seventy* in noumbre; and so many, as men seien, weren langagis aftir making of Babiloyne<sup>a</sup>; and alle Cristis

The mission of the seventy-two disciples.

<sup>a</sup> This very precise calculation appears to be taken from the *De Civitate Dei* of St. Augustine, who, (Lib. xvi. cap. 3-9), reckoning the posterity of Shem at 27, that of Ham at 31, and that of Japhet at 15, (Gen. x.) considers that the human race, after the flood, was divided into 73, or rather, as he

undertakes to prove by a particular argument, into 72 nations. Till the building of the tower of Babel, these nations had all one common language; but after the dispersion which followed as a penal infliction upon that event, there came to be as many languages as there were nations.

disciplis traveliden to bringe to oon men of þe Chirche, so þat þer shulde be oon heerde and oon flok. Þis noumber of Cristis disciplis *sente he, two and two bifore his face, into ech place þat he was to come to*, for to preche and to teche, as weren citees and comune places. And here moun Cristene men se þe falshede of þese freris, how þei letten symple prestis to preche þe gospel to þe folk. For as þei feynen falsely, noon of Cristis disciplis hadde leve to preche til þat Petir hadde ȝovun him leve, and bi þis same skile, noo preest shulde preche to þe peple, but if he hadde leve of þe bishop or leve of þe pope. Þis gospel telliþ þe falsnesse of þes freris lesynge, for Crist sente þese disciplis to preche comunly to þe peple, wiþouten lettre or axinge of leve of Seint Petir; and as Petir shulde not graunte þis leve in Cristis presence, so preestis in Cristis presence have leve of Crist, whanne þei ben preestis, to preche treuli þe gospel. And if þei prechen þus treuli þe gospel as Crist biddiþ hem, Crist is amyddis hem, and þe peple þat þei techen. And alȝif prelati shulden examyne preestis þat prechen þus, neþeles it were more nede to examyne þes freris, þat feynen hem to be preestis, for þei comen in of worse ground, and ben more suspect of heresie.

Lord! what resoun shulde dryve herto, to lette trewe preestis to preche þe gospel freeli, wiþouten ony let, or ony fablis or flaterynge, and ȝyve leve to þese freris to preche fablis and heresies, and aftirward to spoile þe peple, and selle hem her false sermons. Certis þe peple shulde not suffre siche falshede of Antecrist. Also Poul, Cristis apostle, techiþ in bokes of oure bileve, how God wolde þat he prechide to þe peple wiþouten sich axing; for fro þe tyme þat he was convertid, þree ȝeer after, he preechide fast, and axide noo leve of Petir herto, for he hadde leve of Jesus Crist. Siche novelries of pseudo freris shulden prelati and alle men aȝen stonden, lest her falshede growide more and largerly<sup>1</sup> envenymede þe Chirche. Þus shulden preestis preche þe peple freeli Cristis gospel, and leve freris fablis and her begginge, for þanne þei preche wiþ Cristis leve; and herof shulden prelati be feyn, siþ þei synnen moche on

Poor priests forbidden to preach the gospel, while friars are free to preach fables.

Gal. i, 18;  
ii, 7, 8.

<sup>1</sup> largely, E.



oper sidis, but if þei ben Antecristis preestis and shapen to quenche Cristis lawe. But þe peple comunli trowide in Crist and lovede him, and þus þei obeschen<sup>1</sup> to þis tyme, boþe to Crist and his lawe.

And Crist shewide þe cause and þe nede of þis prechinge, *for he seide, Ripe corn is moche, and fewe workmen aboute it.* But for þis work is medeful, and Crist sovereynli performyde it, þerfore he techiþ his disciplis, to *preie þe lord of his ripe corn to sende hise workmen þerto.* And here Crist techiþ opinli þat men shulden not bie þis office, ne take no mede of þe peple to traveile þus in Cristis name, for þanne þei puttiden upon Crist þat he sillide prechyng of his word, and 3af leve to do symonye; and boþe þes ben blasfemyes. But Crist stiride his men to go, and telliþ<sup>2</sup> hem þe peril bifore, but he moveþ hem privyly for greet mede to traveile þus; *Go 3e, seiþ Crist, for Y sende 3ou as lambren among wolves.* And so we have mandement of Crist, and autorite to go, and foorme of þis perilous goinge, þat mak iþ more medeful. But Crist 3yveþ his prechours<sup>3</sup> foorme how þei shal lyve in þis work; *Nyle 3e, he seiþ, bere sachil ne scrippe, ne hosis, ne shoon, ne greete men bi þe weie,* ne do þing þat shulde lette þis work. If ony siche helpe to þis work, Crist wolde not þat þei leften it. And þus seiþ Crist þat, *In to what hous 3e entren, 3e shal first seie, Pees be to þis hous; and if þere be child of pees, 3oure pees shal reste upon him, and ellis it shal turne azen to 3ou,* and so 3oure work shal not be idil. But if ypocritis worchen here, al 3if þei seien sich wordis, þe housis and þe peple ben worse, þat þese false men comen among; for Crist doiþ þese vertues, in whos name þese prechours speken, and if þei ben þe fendis lymes, comunly þei moven to synne. But Crist wolde not þat hise workmen wenten aboute wiþouten fruyt, and þerfore he biddiþ hem *dwelle in þe same hous* upon resoun; but þei shulden be not idil þere, ne curious in mete and drynke, but þe peple shulde gladly fede hem, and þei shulden homly take þat þei founden, and þei shulden take no newe reule bi which þe peple were chargid. And neiþer part shulde grutche here to do þus as Crist techiþ,

Yet their mission, authority, and rule of life, are clear.

<sup>1</sup> So E; A has *oblisben*.

<sup>2</sup> So E; A has *telle*.

<sup>3</sup> *precieuse*, E

for it shulde turne wipoute charge to mede of boþe partis ; and good lyf of sich workmen shulden move þe peple to do hem good, and devocioun of þe peple should preie hem to take her goodis. But gredynesse and avarice letten here þes two partis ; and al if boþe þes synnes letten moche fro Cristis work, neþeles covetise of preestis is more perilous in þis caas ; for avarice of þe peple mai be helpid on many maners, oþer to turne to oþer peple, or to traveile as Poul dide, or to suffre wilfulli hunger, and þrist if it falle ; but covetise of wickide preestis blemysþ hem and þe peple, for comunly þei shapen her wordis aftir þe ende þat þei coveiten.

Various characteristics of true preachers ; not possessed by the friars.

And here þenken many men þat siche prechours shulden be war þat þey come not wip myche peple ne many hors to preche þus, but be paid of comun diete, and þerwip redi to traveile, for þei shulden be noo cause of synne, neþer of hem ne of þe peple. And here it semeþ to many men þat þese newe ordris of freris shulden eiper leve her multitude, or traveile wip her hondis, and if þei diden boþe þes two discretely, it were þe betere. Ne take þei not of Cristis lyf to traveile not, as Crist did not, for neiþer þey can ne moun be occupied ellis as Crist was ; but raþer þei shulden take of Poul and oþer apostlis for to traveile, and leve her newe tradiciouns, as Petir dide, wip oþer apostlis, and profitiden more þan þes men done. We shulden þenke how Petir lyvede whanne Cornelious sente after him, how symply he was fed and herborid, and how he answeride ; but now freris reversen Petir and multiplien newe lawes<sup>1</sup> and persones of þeir ordris, havynge more þan Petir hadde. And herwip þei seien to men þat þei passen bishopis and popis, and certis þei seien here þe soþe, if þei menen passage in synne, for unleveful excesse is passage to þes freris. And so as þei varien in abitis, so þei ben speckid in her ordris, for as þe sect of Sarasynes<sup>2</sup>, þei han sum good and sum yvele.

<sup>1</sup> So E ; *lawyes*, A.

<sup>2</sup> *Sarascenes*, E.

IN DAI OF OON MARTIR.

## [SERMON LIX.]

*Nisi granum frumenti.*—JOHN xii. [24.]

Þis gospel moveþ men bi wordis of Crist to martirdom. And first Crist spekþ þus bi symylitude in kynde. *But if þe corn of whete fallinge in erþe be deed, ellis it dwelliþ aloone wipoute fruyt, þat springiþ þerof, and if it be deed in erþe, moche fruyt springiþ þerof;* and thus it is of Cristis lyf, that licneþ him to whete corn. It is knowun þing in kynde, and in sentence þat clerkis tellen, þat þe whete corn when it is sowun and wel hiled wip erþe, it takþ not a newe foorme, but if þe elde passe awei; and siþ it lyvede sum tyme, it must nedis þanne be deed. And if þis corn be þus deed, it bringiþ forþ myche fruyte, for it growiþ bi vertue of hevene first to gras and after to corn, and of oo corn comeþ an eere, and in oo eere ben many cornes. So it is in holi Chirche of Crist, and corn þat comeþ of him. Crist is bi sum proprete oo wheet corn among alle, and Crist mote nedis die, and after growe in hise apostlis, and bi hem growiþ Crist in myche multitude of corn. And how ever clerkes speken þat þe same vertue is in þe seed þat is after in þe fruyt, and passiþ from o fruyt to anoþer, we bileven þat in gendrure of holi Chirche it is þus;—þe vertue of þe firste corn, þat is Crist, of whom comeþ þe Chirche, dwelliþ in ech corn þat comeþ in part of þis Chirche. But þis vertue is not an accident wipouten a suget, siþ þis suget is þe secounde persone of God, þat is in ech lyme of þe Chirche, and bringiþ wip him a grace þat clerkes clepen predestynynge. And so, al 3if Crist was bifore his manhed hed of þis Chirche, nepeles bi his manhede þis corn hadde newe purginge and colour.

After þis mysty speche, knyttiþ Crist anoþer word which semeþ woundirful in heerynge of many men. *He þat loveþ hys lyf, seiþ Crist, he shal lese it, and a3en, he þat hatiþ his lyf in his world, he kepþ it to lyf wipouten eende.* A man is

Interpretation  
of the gospelThe true  
following of  
Christ.

seid to love his lyf, þat loveþ it more þan oþer þing; and he is said to hate his lyf, þat puttīþ oþer love bifore it; for þe first is a passinge love, and þe toþer a maner of hate; and bi þis manere of speche many gossellis moun be knowun, for it is a suyngþe þing to love a þing and to hate it þus. But in þe þridde word of þis gospel spekiþ Crist more speciali, how þes wordis longen to him, as to ground of good religioun. First Crist seiþ, *If ony man serve to Crist, sue he him*; and here he techiþ þat no man mai mynystre to Crist, but if he sue him; and þus moun we se how feyntli we serve to Crist, for now we leven þe weie of Crist and bowun<sup>1</sup> bi a wrong weie, and now we gone ever abak to synne þat we han first done. And so fewe men or noon suen Crist wiþouten defaute, for we speken of suyngþe in vertues, and not of suyngþe of bodili weie. And þis suyngþe stondiþ most in ordynal love of man, and herfore spekiþ þe gospel of love, and of hate next bifore.

The reward of such following

But over þis, Crist seiþ þat, *Where he is, his mynystre shal be*, and þis is seid suyngli to þe word þat is seid bifore; for it semeþ of þat word þat it is hard to serve Crist, and herfore telliþ Crist þe meede þat men shulden have þat serven him; for he þat may not lye bihetiþ þat his servaunt shal be þere, boþe in blis and in place, where Christ is wiþouten eende. And siþ Crist is in hevene and in blis bi boþe hise kyndis, þis biheest shulde move men to sue Crist, al ȝif it be hard, for þe mede of þis suyngþe passiþ gretli þe traveile herfore; for Crist mai not rewarde men but if he ȝeve hem over her traveil; as he mai not ȝyve a þing, but ȝif he ȝyve it graciously; for as he is al grace, so he mediþ and ponishiþ bi grace. But þe laste word here shulde move a trewe man to serve Crist, for he seiþ, *If ony man serve me, my Fadur shal worshiþe him*. And þis worship mai not be, but if it make þis man Goddis sone, and so eir<sup>2</sup> of God, and ȝyve him goodis of all his rewme; and þanne he is maad worshipful, as we maken worship unto kyngis. And so alle eiris of Crist ben moche more þan erþeli kyngis.

In þis shorte gospel ben doutis, boþe of conscience and

Ojections  
allw. 2161

<sup>1</sup> bowen. E

<sup>2</sup> beyr. E

of oper. First philosophris douten, where seed leesij his forme, whanne it is maad a newe þing, as þe gospel spekiþ here; and sum men þenken nay, for siþe þe same quantite or qualite, or vertue, þat was first in seed, leveþ aftir in þe fruyte, as a child is ofte lyk to his fadir or to his modir, or ellis to his eelde fadir, aftir þat þe vertue lastiþ,—and siþ alle þese ben accidentis, þat mai not dwelle wiþouten suget,—it semeþ þat þe same bodi is first seed and after fruyte, and þus it mai ofte change fro seed to fruyte and aȝen. Here many, clepid filosofhris, glaveren dyversely; but in þis mater Goddis lawe spekiþ þus, as diȝden eelde clerkis, þat þe substaunce of a bodi is bifore þat it be seed, and now fruyte and now seed, and now quyk and now deed. And þus many formes moun be togidere in oo þing, and speciali whanne þe partis of þat þing ben medlid togidere; and þus þe substaunce of a bodi is now of oo kynde and now of anoper. And so boþe þese accidentis, qualite and quantite, moun dwelle in þe same substaunce, al if it be chaungid in kindis, and þus þis same þing þat is now a whete corn shal be deed and turne to gras, and after to many cornes. But variance in wordis in þis mater falliþ to clerkes, and shewing of equivocacioun<sup>1</sup>, þe which is more redi in Latyn; but it is ynow to us to putte, þat þe same substance is now quyk and now deed, and now seed and now fruyte; and so þat substaunce þat is now a whete corn mut nedis die bifore þat it be maad gras, and siþ be maad an hool eer. And þus spekiþ holi writt and no man can disproven it. Errour of freris in þis mater is not here to reherce, for it is ynow<sup>3</sup> to telle how þei erren in bileve.

The secounde doute in þis mater is of suyng of Crist. It semeþ þat no man sueþ him but if he be martrid as was Crist, and siþ no man mai be saved but if he sue Crist in lyf, it semeþ þat no man shal be saved but if he be martrid. Here men seien truli, þat þere ben two martirdoms, martirdome in bodi and martirdome in wille. Martirdome in bodi nedij not ech man to have, for many men ben seintis þat dien confessours. Generali to speke, þat man is

Two kinds of  
martyrdom.

<sup>1</sup> So E; A has *equivacioun*.

a martir þat is killid in charite and þus goiþ to hevene, be he killid of just men or ellis of þe fendis lymes. Þis secounde manere of martirdom shulde ech man have, siþ ech man shulde more love his soule þan his bodi, and algatis he shulde more love God and his lawe; and who evere loveþ þus, is redi to suffre deþ of his bodi for love of his God. And fewe seintis, or noon, ben here on lyve þat ne þei maken hem martirs for þe love of God; for to chastise her fleishe þey shorten her lyf. But Y speke not here of martirdom of glotouns, for þei shorten her lyf for love of her fleish, and taken to myche fode, wherfore þei dien sunner; but þe firste men fasten for love of her God, and to have pees of her fleish þat ellis wolde be wantoun. But siþ men knowun not evenly þe mesure þat wolde lengþe her lyf, þes men ben not mensleeris, for bi sich chesinge of þe betere, þei lesen wysely þe worse; and so done bi Goddis heeste þes bodily martris. And þus men shulden not folili slee hem silf, neþer in fastinge ne in etinge ne in cause defending, but stonde for trupe if her deef sue, willinge to maynteyne trupe, and mekeli to suffre deef, but not folily desire it.

## OF OON MARTIR.

## [SERMON LX.]

*Si quis vult venire post me.*—MATT. xvi. [24.]

What it involved in taking up the Cross and following Christ.

Þis gospel techiþ as þe former doiþ, how a man shulde ordeyne him for to suffre martirdom. First seiþ Crist þat, *who ever wole come after him, he mut denye him silf and take his crosse and sue Crist.* Þat man denyþ him silf þat loveþ him silf lasse þan he loveþ his God or lawe of his God. For þis principle of love moten men suppose, whanne þer ben two þingis put in a mannis chois, and he mut nede leve þe toon for takinge of þe toþer. Þat þing þat he leveþ, he loveþ þanne þe lesse, and þis clepiþ Crist denyng of þat þing, and in anoper place, hate of his lyf; and þus shulden alle men renounsen her

goodis, for goodis moven men to love hem in ordre, and if men tellen to þese goodis þat her love passe<sup>1</sup> resoun, þanne þei tellen azen<sup>a</sup> her answeere to þes goodis. But þis synne is in men and not in goodis, and þis tellinge azen is renounsinge of hem; as if a man be temptid to love an erþeli þing more þan his God, for fals undirstondinge bi which he can not weye þe riȝt weȝte of love, þanne he forsakiþ his God, for love of þis erþeli þing. And if he staunche þis love, and seie to þis þing þat he wole not love it so myche, for þe love of God, þanne he renounsiþ to it, þat here he wole forsake it. Þe secounde word þat Crist seiþ, þat men shulden take her crosse, biddiþ þat men shulden make hem redi to suffre for Goddis love; for þe crosse bitokeneþ passioun in Goddis lawe, and þis purpos is nedeful Cristen men to have. And þe þridde word þat Crist techiþ here, þat whanne a man haþ þes two he shulde sue Crist, ech man shulde have in mynde and do it in dede; for he sueþ Crist, þat moveþ himsilf to holde Goddis heestis; for þis weie wente Crist and failide in no tyme to do his Fadiris wille. And þis word answeriþ to þe Holi Goost, as two wordis bifore menen þe Fadir and þe Sone, for þe name of God þat is al myȝti answeriþ bi proprete to þe firste persone, and man shal denye himsilf for þis name; and so whanne we preien to God in oure Pater noster, we seien first to þe Fadir, Halowid be þi name. Þe crosse bitokeneþ þe persone of Crist, for he was done on þe crosse for love of mankynde, and shape him evermore to suffre bi comun counceil. And here azen þis Trinite synnen many men; as, he þat bi mannis lawe is clepid to an office, in which he mai not kepe him silf in charite, and answeriþ for þis name and takiþ on him þis office, þis man synneþ azens Goddis name, and denyeþ not him silf for love of God.

But after Crist ȝyveþ a reule to kepe þes þree þingis, and seiþ, *Who so wole make his lyf saaf, mut nedis lesen it, lyvyng in þis world, but he þat lesiþ his lyf for þe love of Crist shal fynde it, in þe toþer world.* Þat man lesiþ his lyf, þat puttiþ it

<sup>1</sup> *passiþ, E.*

<sup>a</sup> 'telle azen' is meant as the literal rendering of 're-nuntiare.'

bihinde and þe love of God bifore, whanne þe caas comeþ, and so it is al oon a man for to lese his lyf and denye himsilf, or ellis to hate himsilf; and who þat leesip not his lyf here on þis manere, he failip in charite and in þe firste mandement. But sip a mannis lyf is ordeyned of God evermore to be, it is not lost to God, but he, for whom þis lyf is lost, kepip it wele and 3yveþ it him in blis in þe toþer world. And who wolde not chaffre þus wip his owne lyf? Clerkis witen wele how a mannis soule and a mannis lyfe ben boþe oon in a manere, for lyf is þe firste acte þat comeþ of a mannis soule, and of siche actis taken þingis names, as clerkis clepen angels undirstondingis\*. And þus spekip þe gospel of a mannis lyf, and Crist provede bi resoun þat men shulden chaffare þus, *For what profitip it to a man, if he wynne al þis world, if he suffre þerbi þeiringe of his soule; or what chaunginge shal a man 3yve for his soule.* Sip a mannis soule is persone of þis man, he shulde 3yve al his catel for savyng of þis soule; and sip a mannis bodi is worse þan his soule, ech man shulde more love his soule þan his bodi. And so he shulde hate his bodi for love of þis soule, and speciali sip sich chaffare shulde turne him to betere. And ground of þis speche stondip in þis bileve, *For Crist is to come fro hevene in his glorie at þe dai of doome wip hise aungelis to juge ech man, and þanne shal he 3yve to ech man after hise workes.* And sip þis lore<sup>1</sup> of Crist deserveþ hevene blis, he is a greet fool þat wole not chaffare here. Defaute of bileve lettip algatis þis chaffare.

The Trans-  
figuration  
predicted.

And for þis sentence is hard for to trowe, þefore tellip Crist of his glorifyng, how he shal shewe him here glorious in his bodi, so þat bi þis shewyng here in þis lyf, þei ben more stablid in þis to trowe in Crist. *Sopeli, seiþ Crist, Y seie to 3ou, þere be sum of men þat stonden here, þat shulen not laaste deþ, til þei seen me comyng in my rewme in blis of my bodi.* And for þis was done in þe kynde of Cristis bodi, þefore he clepip him here sone of a man; and þis was done in dede, as Matheu tellip after, for Petir, Johun, and James

<sup>1</sup> So both A and E; but the sense evidently requires *love*.

<sup>2</sup> Or 'intelligences;' a translation of the Latin *intelligentiæ*.



weren here wiþ Crist, and his face shynede as sunne, and Moises and Helye apperiden to him. And þus Crist cam in his rewme, or þese disciplis weren dede; and þis was a greet skile to move hem to trowe in Crist, and to traveile bisily to gete sich a blisse, for sich a bodili lyf were wel chaungid for þis lyf. And herefore seid Petir, It is good to us to be here and þerefore make we here þree tabernaclis. And þus who so trowiþ wele bi love of þe gospel, he shal trowe to Cristis lore and lyve þerafter. Ne drede we þes sophists þat Crist seide here fals, whanne he seide þat he cam here in his<sup>1</sup> rewme, for as part of þe Chirche is treuli clepid þe Chirche, so part of Cristis rewme is treuli clepid his rewme. And siþ many aungels comen wiþ þes þree men, and Crist cam to þes apostlis in dowers<sup>2</sup> of his bodi, it was soþeli seid þat he cam here in his rewme. For men here þat shulen be saaf as weren Cristis apostlis, ben clepid his rewme in þe Pater noster; whi not þes seintis in which Crist cam here?

IN DAI OF O MARTIR.

[SERMON LXI.]

*Qui vos audit, me audit.*—LUC. x. [16.]

Þis gospel telliþ a lore of Crist, how he tauȝte his disciplis, to holde hem in mekenesse, and to flee veyn glorie, þat is a fendis synne. Þe gospel telliþ how lasse disciplis, þat weren two and seventy, comen aȝen to Crist wiþ joie, and seiden, as þe gospel telliþ after, and we shulen reherce. Crist ȝyveþ autorite first to hise disciplis, and spekiþ to hise membris as þes þat shulen be saved, and seiþ; *He þat heeriþ ȝou*, in þat *he heeriþ me* and *he þat dispisiþ ȝou*, in þat *he dispisiþ me*; for whanne a messenger spekiþ in name of a man, he þat heeriþ him or dispisiþ him þus, heeriþ or dispisiþ him in whos name he spekiþ. And bi þis cause shulden men worshiþe prechours,

True preachers  
have authority  
direct from  
Christ

<sup>1</sup> So E: A has þus.

<sup>2</sup> dowers, E.

and dispisen hem<sup>1</sup> þat prechen fablis or lesingis, for þei comen in þe fendis name, as her work shewiþ. And þus if prechours holden hem prechinge in Cristis name, þei han ful autorite more þan prelatiſ moun ȝyve hem; and if a man preche aȝens Cristis biddinge, as in falskede, or for begginge, or for worldeli wynnyng, þe autorite þat he haþ comeþ of þe fend, for þe fend is his maistir, in whos name he prechiþ, and þis is þe autour þat lettiþ prechinge to profite. But Crist telliþ over, how hard it is to dispise him, for, *who ever dispisiþ Crist, dispisiþ him þat sente Crist*, and so he dispisiþ þe Fadir and al þe Trinite. And þus telliþ Luke þat after þis autorite ȝyven to Cristis disciplis, *two and seventi turneden aȝen, and hadden unskillful joie, and seiden to Crist; Lord, ȝhe, þe fendis ben suget to us in þe name of þee*. But Crist shewide þat he was God, and answeride to þes disciplis, not to þe wordis þat þei spaken, but to þe caas þat þei weren inne, and it is propre to God to wite þus synne of þe soule.

On the nature  
of thunder.

*Crist seiþ to þes disciplis þat he saiȝ Sabanas fallinge fro hevene, as þe þunder flook falliþ fro þe cloude*. It is knowun to clerkes of þree þingis in þe þundir, þe liȝtning and þe noise and þe þundir stoon. Þe liȝtninge is first in brekinge of cloudis, as if two stoones on a nyȝt weren knockid togider, and þis noise is maad of þis hard hurtling; but liȝt is more swift þan heeryng in perseyvyng, as sowne comeþ softe, but liȝt comeþ soone; and þis is cause whi þat liȝt is perseyved bifore soun, and þus comeþ mannis liȝt bifore mannis heering. But þe þridde propirte þat falliþ sum tyme in þundir is as it were a whirlewynd led aboute among cloudis, and comyng to þe erþe and doinge þere woundris; and þes men þat knowen þe worchinge of þe elementis, how manere of saltis and poudir fleep fier, and worchiþ woundir bi craft in mevyng of currauntis, woundren lesse of þis þundir flook. Sum tyme, it cleveþ grete okes in sundir, and sum tyme it meveþ grete stoness fro her place; sum tyme it moltiþ þe swerd in þe sheþe, and ȝit þe sheþe is al hool, and many oþere woundris; and al þis is maad bi a sutil mater þat is moved fro þe cloudis bi

kynde of þe elementis. And þus seiþ Crist, þat Saþanas bi pryde, and kynde of Goddis justice, fel sudenli fro hevene, and in þis fallinge he dide woundris, more þan þis þundir flook, and he was stinkyng wiþ synne, as þis blast stinkip sum tyme. And þis fal of þe fend sai Crist bi his Godhede; and al þis was of pride, þat God myzte not suffre more, þat ne þe<sup>1</sup> angel in hevene was dryvun þus in to helle. How myche shulden men drede pryde, þat God wole þus punishe, and have no vein glorie þat þei ben Cristis aungels, and don woundris in his name in casting out of fendis! And to be war wiþ þis pride spekip Crist þus þese wordis, for Crist knewe wel her pryde þat þei hadden in her hertis, and to remove þis pride spak Crist to her hertis.

For as it is ofte seid, þer ben foure passious in a mannis soule, in which stondip synne or mede after þei ben reulid. And þes foure ben þes, joie and sorewe, hope and drede of þingis þat shulen come. Summe han joie of sich manere hiþenese, and summe han joie of synne or richesse of þe world, and sum men han sorewe of oþer mennis welfare or lesinge of worldeli goodis, for þei loven hem to myche, and sum men han hope of welfare of þis world, and dreden of fallinge þerfro; but men shulden have sorewe for her synne and oþer mennis. And þus Crist wepte þries, and ever more for synne, for synne is worse þan ony peyne mai be; and siþ þe worsnesse of þing is matere of sorewe, man shulde have more sorewe for synne þan for ony oþer þing, and more joie of hevenli blis þan ony worldeli welfare or hiþyng of mannis staat, were it nevere so myche. And herfore seiþ Crist, *Lo, I have ȝouun ȝou power to defoule upon neddris*<sup>2</sup>, for many seintis, as Margarete<sup>a</sup>, hadde power of God to defoule þe fendis þat weren

Four predomi-  
nant passions  
in the soul.

<sup>1</sup> om. E.

<sup>2</sup> *adleris*, E.

<sup>a</sup> St. Margaret, whose legend makes her a native of Antioch in the fourth or fifth century, was so popular a saint in England from the eleventh century, that no less than 238 parish churches are said to be dedicated in her honour. According to the more popular version of her story here alluded to, the foul fiend

in the form of a dragon, visited her in the prison into which the persecuting governor of Antioch had thrown her, and swallowed her up; but immediately burst asunder, so that the holy virgin came forth unhurt. A good general account of her may be found in Mrs. Jameson's *Sacred and Legendary Art*. See also

in forme of dragouns, and sette her feet upon hem, and heeld hem azens her wille. And þis was grete peyne to þes proude fendis; and sich manere of power hadde Cristis disciplis upon fendis, for þei castiden hem out of placis þat þei wolden dwelle inne, and made hem to dwelle in placis þat þei wolden not dwelle inne, and sich subjeccioun is noious to proude spiritis. But Crist badde his disciplis, joie not þus for suche power. And þus, to speke goostli, þis power to defoule eddris, and to defoule scorpionous, is power to overcome þe fendis whanne þei tempten men to synne bi stingginge of her venym; and herfore seiþ Crist, *þat he hap ʒouun hem power upon al power of her enemye and he shal not noie hem.* But nepeles, joie ʒe not in þis þing to vein glorie, *þat spiritis ben suget to ʒou<sup>1</sup>,* for þis mai falle to dampned men, as many men moun reise þe fend, and make him worche woundris, and ʒit in alle þes dedis þei moun be fendis as he is; for bi vertue of Crist þes fendis ben þus suget, and þes names han vertue to make þe fend drede kindeli. But Crist techiþ hise disciplis to *joie more of þis, þat her names ben writun in hevene,* for to come to blisse. Of þis shulde þei have more joie, and holde hem in mekenes. And Crist telliþ not þis to men as he dide to þes disciplis, but if he kepe hem in vertues and bringe hem to hevene, for ellis Crist tauʒte hem to joie of þingis þat weren fals. And þus it semeþ þat þese disciplis weren confermyd in manere, and ʒit God leet hem falle, to teche his Chirche to flee pride; and þus Crist leet Petir falle ofte, after þat he was apostle, and þat, to teche prelatiſ after, to joie not to myche of her staat, for sich boost is fendis synne, þat stynkiþ foule bifore God, and it is maad in feyned power to loose men and bynde. Men shulden loke þat þei weren certeyn þat God wolde worche þus wiþ hem, bifore þei spaken of þis power, and of þe dedis of þat to men, and þanne wiþ grete mekenes, to moven men to þanke God; for liynge in sich a caas smatchide a myche more synne, þan was in þes disciplis þat Crist reprevyde so sharpli. For þei seiden

<sup>1</sup> This passage is rightly marked as a quotation in E, but not in A.

*Seinte Marberete Tbe Meiden ant Martyr* (a version of the legend in old English prose of the thirteenth century), among the publications of the Early English Text Society

soþ and herieden God, and in þes boþe failen prelatiſ, for þei for pride feynen falseli and coveitise of wordeli goodis, to do þing þat þei moun not do; and þis is a greet synne, for it were synne to a pore man to defoule a kingis cloþis, moche more synne were it to men to putte falsehede upon treuþe. For þis is a foul blasfemye, þat is a foul synne of alle oþere; as, if a man putte on God falshede þat he myzte not have, he dispiside in þis his God more þan þe fende durste ever do. It is no drede alle þes popis þat seien þat þey graunten sich pardons, seien opinly ynow; þat God grauntiþ hem bifore, and if God knowe hem unworþi to have siche pardon of him, þes popis blasfemen in God more þan evere þe Apostliſ dursten. And þus shulden prelatiſ be war to graunt no þing in þe name of God but if þei weren sikir bifore þat Goddis justice grauntide it, and þis myzte þei not knowe but if þei hadden revelacioun; and if oure prelatiſ abiden ever sich revelacioun, þey shulden disseyve fewe men or noon in grauntinge of suche pardons; but as Petir held his pees in grauntinge of siche þingis; so shulden þei holden þer pees, siþ þei ben lasse worþ þan Petir, and þe comun peple shulde not trowe hem in siche casis.

Papal indul-  
gences

IN DAI OF OON MARTIR.

[SERMON LXII.]

*Si quis venit ad me.*—LUC. xiiii. [26.]

Þis gospel telliþ men how þei shulen dispose hem to be disciplis of Crist, and certis ellis þei shulen not come to hevене; for be he knyzt, be he clerk, but if he be Cristis disciple þenke he not to come to hevене; and so it were good to lerne þis lore. Crist seiþ at þe bigynnyng, *If ony man come to him and hate not þes seven þingis, he mai not be Cristis disciple*, and so he mai not be saved, for ech man þat sueþ Crist is disciple of Crist; and þus knyztis in Cristis tyme weren his privy disciplis, as Joseph of Armaphie, and centurio also, and Nichodeme, and oþer moo, as þe gospel telliþ us. First mut a man *hate his*

Conditions  
annexed to the  
discipleship of  
Christ.

*fadir* and siþ *hate his modir*; þe þridde tyme mut a man *hate his wyf* and þe fourþe tyme *hise children*; þe fiþþe tyme he shulde *hate his breþeren* and þe sixte tyme *his sisters*; þe sevente tyme moost of alle he moste hate *his owne lyf*. First men shulden wite here what were to hate in þis gospel, for Crist moveþ algatis to love, and no tyme to envye; but here it is seid bifore þat þis hating is denying, and þis is, lovyng in ordre as þe þing shulde be loved. And so þes sevene þingis shulden be loved, but lasse þan Crist or his lawe; and þus puttinge bihinde of love, is hating þat Crist spekij of.

Objections answered.

But ȝit sophistris replien here and seien þat many men comen to Crist þat han not þes sevene þingis, and no man hatij but þing þat is. But here men moten lerne to speke to þat witt þat Goddis lawe spekij. Here fewe men or noon comen to ordre of Crist, but if þei have fadir and modir oþer next or fer. Sum men have fadir and modir þat geten hem into þis world, and sum men han eldris bifore þat gaten sich fadirs and modirs, and alle þes ben clepid fadir in Goddis lawe þat is trewe. Adam and Eve hadde noon sich fadris, but þei hadden erþe and erþeli þing, and þes myȝten be clepid here modirs, and her fadir was mannis kynde; and as þei mosten nede be saved, so God was her fadir. And siþ ech word þat Crist seiþ is trewe to his entent, and he seiþ þat who ever doiþ þe wille of his Fadir in hevene, he is his broþer and his sister, and his modir also, no man wantij here þes frendis, al if þei wanten sich for a tyme; and if mennis eldris ben dede, þanne þei han suche for sum tyme<sup>1</sup>. And mannis fleishe is his wyf, and her workes ben hise children; and so ech haþ such a wyf, and sich children of his wyf; and so siche sevene þingis ben longinge to ech man, and alle þes sevene shulden men love lasse þan þei loven Crist her God. And þis is þe reule of Crist, þat passij alle þes newe ordris, and who ever loveþ not Crist more þan alle þes sevene wantij charite, and brekip alle Goddis hestis. And þis is veyn religioun, and so, as we seiden bifore, *who ever berij not his crosse and comeþ in lyvyng after Crist,*

Against the new orders.

<sup>1</sup> a tyme. E.

*mai not wij þis be his disciple.* And þis is lizt for to prove, for man shulde hate his own lyf, and so suffre for Cristis sake, and ellis he brekiþ Cristis ordre; and þes newe religiouse moten nedis breke þis reule of Crist, for þei loven more þes newe ordris þan þei done reule of þe gospel. And þus þei feynen ofte tyme to stonde wij lawe of þe gospel; and if men axen whi þei done so, þei seien þat ellis here ordre were loste, but God cursiþ alle sich ordris þat neden men to hate her God.

And to printe þis in mennis hertis Crist telliþ two hard parablis. First he seiþ, þat, *Ech of hem þat wolde make an<sup>1</sup> nedeful tour, shulde sitte first and acounte dispensis nedeful herefore þat he have to make þis tour, lest he faile aftirward whanne he haþ sett þe foundement, and alle men þat seen þis bigynen for to scorne him; and seien, þis man bigan to bilde but he myzte not make an ende.* Þis tour is ful nedeful to ech man þat shal be saved. Þis toure is gedringe of vertues, and þe ground is mekenesse, grounded in Crist, þat is mene persone of God; and as no þing mai be lower þan is the myddil of þe world, so no man mai meker be þan is Crist, þat is þis ground. And siþ þis tour mute reche to hevene, men moten nedis take þis ground; and herfore seiþ Poul, þat no man mai sette oþer ground þan is sett, þe which ground is Jesus Crist, for no man is meke but in his vertue. Þe hizest part of þis tour is briteysing<sup>2</sup> of charite þat lastiþ into hevene, for charite falliþ not down, but lastiþ boþe in þis worlde and after þe dai of dome. Oþer vertues put in<sup>3</sup> ordre maken þe myddil of þis tour; and þus we shulde avise us what staat or religioun were most acordinge to þis makinge, and reste þerinne, and make þis toure. And bileve techiþ us þat þe staat of Cristis sect is moost certein and nedeful to men, þat wolen arere þis tour, for no man mai arere it, but if he be of Cristis ordre. And þus boþe aungels good and yvel scornen men þat kepen þis ground, and after wenden fro Cristis ordre, to newe ordris þat ben worse, for bi þis weye mai no man eende<sup>3</sup> þe laste bretais<sup>4</sup> of þis tour. Þis tour is algatis sure to men þat putten hem wel upon þis ground, and holden hem wel þeron, and reulen hem bi þe firste reule, þat þei baggen not þerfro;

The parable of the unfinished tower.

1 Cor. iii. 11.

<sup>1</sup> a. E.

<sup>2</sup> britasyng, E.

<sup>3</sup> for eende, E reads *wende but zif be have.*

<sup>4</sup> britayse, E.

for none enemyes mai anoie þat man þat bildiþ þus his tour, for þe fend and oþer enemyes moun not meve azens þis ground. And þus a man in þis tour dredriþ not arwis ne dartis, but arwis of Goddis Word overcomen enemyes þat ben wiþoute. Traveil þat men hav in vertues, ben dispensis to make þis toure, and suyng after Cristis lyf, as many gospels techen bifore, is þe hijinge of þis toure, and growinge into charite. And þus shulde ech man chese his staat, and do þe traveil þat falliþ to vertues, and algatis reule his wal<sup>1</sup> after Crist and his lawe; and if he have endeles lastinge here, he mai not faile of þis makinge.

The parable of  
the two kings.

But, for it falliþ to a werriour sum tyme to go<sup>2</sup> out and fiȝte, þe secounde parable of Crist telliþ of þis fiȝtinge, and seiþ: *What king shulde wende to do batel azens anoþer kyng, þat he ne wolde sitte bifore and þenke wiseli, wheþer he myȝte wiþ ten þousynd fiȝte wiþ him þat cam azens him wiþ twenti þousand; ellis whilis he lediþ afer his oost, þe lesse kyng preieþ him of pees.* Dyvers men undirstonden þis text to dyvers wittis bineþe bileve, but we weren wont to telle it þat ech man shulde be a kyng and governe þe rewme of his soule bi keping of ten comandementis; and good keping of þes ten þousynd is ynow<sup>3</sup> to ech man. Þe toþer kyng wiþ twenti þousand, is comunli seide þe fend, for Joob seiþ þat he is kyng upon alle children of pride, and he doublip ten þousynd of werriours azens Crist; for he passiþ fro unyte, as doiþ þe noumbre of two, and azens ech comandement he haþ cautil of double entent. And if þese ten þousynd ben alle þo þat helpen Goddis part, and þes twenti þousynd alle þo þat loven doublenesse to helpe þe fend, it semeþ not azens Goddis witt, siþ his wordis ben plentenouse. If þis first king wexe coward and traitour to his God, and love richesse of þe world and worldeli frendship of men, and lustis of his bodi, and pees fro pursueris here, he sendiþ message to þis fend, and many tokenes of cowardise, and preieþ him of his pees, and he wole serve unto him; and þus failen many men from hardynesse in Goddis cause and bicomen þe fendis servauntis, for þei seien þe world axiþ þis, and so, þat þat her enemye axiþ, þei graunten to him cowardli.

Job xli 24

<sup>1</sup> walle, E.

<sup>2</sup> So E; goene, A.



Oþer wittis of þese wordis for shortnesse we leven here. But Crist seiþ in þe ende oo word of greet hardynesse; *Þus ech of you þat renounsip not to alle þingis þat he haþ, mai not be my disciple.* For þanne he telliþ aȝen to þe fend, to þe world, and to his fleish, þat his hiȝeste charite is stabli sett in God, and he loveþ noon oþer þingis but in ordre of þis love; and þus þe world, þat haþ lest<sup>1</sup> colour, is overcome bi Goddis clerk, and þe fend, wiþ mannis fleishe, ben also overcomun wiþ þis word<sup>2</sup>. For if a man have no desire ne no lust regnyng in him, þat ne he telliþ þe same tale how he moost loveþ his God, alle his enemes ben discumfitid bi þe first þousynd of his oost. And here men seien soþeli þat men renounsen on many maneres; as Crist wiþ hise apostlis forsok e þis world wiþ lastinge havynge, for he hadde no more of þis world but as him nedide to his lyf; and þus shulden preestis do, þat entren in to Cristis ordre, for ellis goode and yvele wole scorne hem of her folie. But ech man þat shal be saved, renounsip alle þese worldeli goodis, whan he leveþ alle hem bihynde to love more God and his lawe. But þis is þe fouleste synne þat falliþ here to ony preest, to love more þese newe ordres þan to love Cristis lawe. Bi þis þe fend overcomeþ manye wiþ þe dart of ypocrisie, whanne he makip hise servauntis, þat ben oblischid to serve him, to seme holi to þe peple, and seme hooli to lyve so. And herfore Crist lyvede comun lyf, and hise apostlis after him, and weren not weddid wiþ þese newe signes, as now þes ypocritis ben. And herfore Crist, to purge his Chirche, distriede þes þree sectis, Phariseis, Saduceis, and Essees also, but þe fend bi his cautel haþ brouȝt inne now oþer þree, as monkes, chanouns, and freris, and many braunchis of hem. And sich fals religioun, bi þe lawe of Antecrist, is bitwixe prelati now and preestis þat ben her sugettis, but reule of Cristis lawe wolde<sup>3</sup> þat alle men shulden renounsen to hem obedience or oþer service but as þei shulden obeishe to Crist.

Against monks,  
canons, and  
friars

<sup>1</sup> lost, E.

<sup>2</sup> world, E.

<sup>3</sup> So E; wolden, A.

ÞE GOSPEL ON FEESTE OF OON MARTIR.

[SERMON LXIII.]

*Nihil opertum quod non reveletur.*—MATT. x. [26.]

Þis gospel confortiþ martirs, and telliþ hid syne þat is in þes newe ordris, biside þe ordre of Crist. Crist seiþ þat, *nouȝt is hilið, þat ne it shal be shewid and no þing is so pryvy, þat ne it shal be knowun.* Þes wordis ben of bileve, for alle þingis ben knowun of God, and þat myrroure shewiþ forþ þe moost pryvy þing in þis world; and at þe dai of dome, whanne bokis shulen ben opin, þe whiche bokis ben mennis soulis, and conscience of hem, þanne shulen boþe gode and yvele knowe mennis þouȝtis and her werkes. And herfore shulden alle men hardeli stonde bi treuþe, and speciali bi Goddis lawe, for þerinne liyþ no shame; and herfore biddiþ Crist þat, *þat he haþ seid in derknes, þei shulden seið eft in liȝt,* more comounli and more clereli, boþe in lyf and in word. And þis reule of Cristis ordre shulden men kepe, but algatis preestis, and to þis entent biddiþ Crist þat þat þei have herd in her eere, þei shulden preche opinli upon platrowes of housis, for þus shulde þe comune of men betere undirstonde; and þus wole Crist, þat alle þingis þat God spekij to eeres of soule, shulden þese heereris speke forþ, and drede no worldeli muk in housis. And þanne men prechen aboven hilingis, lyvyng comun lyf as briddis, and taken noon heede to worldeli goodis þat ben closid wiþinne housis. But, for sich preching axiþ hardynesse and martirdom, þerfore Crist confortiþ hise to drede not sleynge of bodi; *Nyle ȝe, seiþ Crist, drede þese men þat sleen þe bodi, and mai not after slee þe soule,* ne lette God to quyke þat þing þat þei killen, and to make þat betere; *but rapere drede him þat haþ power to leese boþe þe bodi and soule into helle* for evermore, for to dwelle þere in peyne. Ne ben not two sparowis sold for þe leste moneie in chaffaringe,—for, as Luk telliþ, fyve ben sold for two ferþingis,—and ȝit God ordeyneþ for alle þes foulis. And siþ þes foulis ben

The true rule  
for preachers

lital of prys and uncerteyn in þeir mevyng, and ȝit God ordeyneþ for hem whanne ever þei liȝten upon þe erþe, more God shulde ordeyne for ech man, þat haþ a soule to Goddis ymage; and speciali for such men þat serven truli to her God more þan ony foul may, for þei ben not able to serve þus. And siþ God ordeyneþ þus for foulis, oþer men moten graunten God unwise, or moche more he shulde ordeyne for men, þat ben hise trewe servauntis. And þis resoun þat Crist makij moveþ trewe men þat han witt, to be hardi in Goddis cause, and for him to suffre martirdom; and no man can avoide þat oþer men shulden þus suffre, or ellis be untrew to God, as ben þes heretikes. And þus seiþ Crist of Goddis wisdom, þat alle þe heeris of hise disciplis ben noumbrid to Goddis knowinge, and noon of hem mai fulli perishe; and siþ þes heeris of mennes heedis ben leste worþi of ony part of man, and noon of þese mai perishe þus, how shulden betere partis perishe? And þus ben martirs confortid to putte her bodies for Goddis lawe, for no part of her bodi mai þus perishe to harme of hem; and myche more soulis of siche men, and alle vertues of her soule, mai not perishe fro hem, for þe soule mai not be quenchild. And nedli after þe soule moten sue þe vertues þerof, as afur a mannis bodi suen quantite and figure; and no drede, as God wole ordeyne, whanne he restoriþ a mannis bodi, noubre and quantite and figure þat is moost acordinge to þis bodi, moche more God ordeyneþ to the soule vertues þat it shulde have.

And trewe we not to foolis here þat seien þat þis ben accidentis which God mai putte bi hem silf, and freeli take þes fro men, so þat neiþer in bodi ne in soule man hadde ony siche accidentis; as who seide, men moun be, al if þei hangen not on God, for siche a dependence of men is accident unto hem. Þese foolis moten lerne predicamentis and ten kyndis of þingis, and þanne þei moun se her foli, and folie of heresie þat groundijþ hem. And of þis concludijþ Crist treuli to hise apostlis, þat þei shulden not wille to drede, siþ þei ben betere þan many sparewis; and oure bileve techijþ us þat God kepijþ þingis after her valu, for if ony þing be betere, God makij it to be betere.

And so Crist spekiþ here a word þat shulde move men to

Auricular, as  
opposed to  
open, con-  
fession.

stonde wiþ him; *Ech man þat shal knowelich<sup>1</sup> me bifore men* bi boþe my kyndis, *I shal knoweliche þat man bifore my Fadir*, to þat mannis worshiþe. Here we shulen undirstonde, þat confessioun, þat Crist nameþ here, is not rownyngē in preestis eere, to telle him synne þat we han done, but it is grauntinge of treuþe, þe which is apertly seid, wiþ redines to suffre þefore, what ever man denyeþ it. And so þat man confessiþ Crist þat grauntiþ þat he is God and man, and al þing þat wole sue herof; and þese ben ful many truþis, for al þe gospel þat Crist seiþ, such a man mut confesse, and al þat sueþ of þe gospel, and þis displeiþ to sinful men. And certis a man confessiþ not Crist, þat he is boþe God and man, but if he confesse of Crist þat he may no weie synne, ne gabbe, ne bere fals witnessē of no word þat Crist haþ seid. And so ech word of Goddis lawe is trewe, siþ Crist witnessiþ it, and ech treuþe þat is þerinne; and so ech prest confessiþ Crist bifore men, þat tellen<sup>2</sup> to hem þat Crist is boþe God and man; and þus Crist seiþ and mai not lie. Certis if a man seiē þus, and faile not for cowardise to telle Goddis lawe to men þat synnen, he puttiþ him wel to martirdome; and every sich man, seiþ Crist, he shal confesse to his Fadir. And þanne Crist wole confesse þis man to be trewe in Goddis cause, and worþi to have mede after worþinesse of his traveile, and to be crownd wiþouten eende in hevene bifore þis greet lord, þat falliþ not to ȝyve such seruauntis but if he ȝyve hem blisse of hevene; for gretnesse of siche a lord rewardiþ not lesse his knyȝtis. O Lord, if a man þat traveiliþ in werre wiþ a capteyne, wolde telle myche<sup>a</sup> þat þis capteyne wroot of him to his kyng and seide þat he were a good werriour, and worþili and hardili traveilide in þe kingis cause, and herefore þis erþeli kyng schulde have him and hise comendid; how mouche more were it worþ þat þe persone of Jesus Crist comendide bi his owne word a trewe seruaunt unto God, and telde þat God schulde þenke on him and ȝyve him blisse wiþouten ende! And as confessioun of treuþe is to be loved of Goddis knyȝtis, so confessioun of cowardise is to drede of men in erþe; and þus

<sup>1</sup> *knowleche*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *telliþ*, E.

<sup>a</sup> That is, 'would esteem it a great gain.'

defaute of bileve lettij men to traveile in Goddis cause. But wordis of þis gospel ben yvel undirstonden of manye, þat, bi logik þat þei han, graunten þat alle þe heeres of seintis be knowen wel of God, but God woot not how many þei ben, for noon heeris ben þes alle, siþ þanne þei weren wiþouten noumbre, and ech greet þing in erþe were maad of partis indevisible. And siche errours þat men han in logik and in kyndeli science, bryngen men yn, as heretikes, to graunte after many fals þingis. Soþ it is þat God knowij alle þe partis of a man, and how many þes partis ben, for þei ben fewe to Goddis witt; and so ech þing þat God contynneþ<sup>1</sup> is maad of partis indyvysible, and o gretter þing haþ mo siche. But þis is hid to mennis knowyng, but after þei shal wite it wel, whanne God shal shew it hem in hevene.

OF O MARTIR AND BISHOP.

[SERMON LXIV.]

*Circuibat Jesus civitates.*—MATHEW ix. [35.]

Þis gospel tellij of þe office þat shulde falle to Cristis disciplis. And so it tellij how prestis shulde now, boþe more and lasse, occupie hem in þe Church in servise of God. And first, Jesus dide in dede þe lore þat he tauzte. Þe gospel seiþ how, *Jesus wente aboute in þe cuntre*, boþ to more places and lesse, *as citees and castellis*, to teche us to profete generali to men, and not to lette to preche to a peple for þei be few, and oure fame shulde be litil, for we shulden traveile for God, of whom we shulde hope oure þank. Castels ben undirstonden litil touns, but wallid, as Jerusalem is clepid a cite bi Mathew; and sich grete castels ben clepid citees. And no drede Crist wente to smale uplondishe touns, as to Bethfage and to Cana in Galile; for Crist went to þese places, where he wiste to do

How Christ  
preached his  
gospel.

<sup>1</sup> *conteyneþ*, E.

good and he travelide not for wynnynge of moneie; for he was not smyttid wiþ pryde ne wiþ coveityse. He cheese him places to teche in þe peple þat were moost able, as synagogis among Jewis. For synagogis weren among hem as churchis ben among us; and Crist was not lettid þanne bi feyned iurisdiction, to preche among þe folk, al if he wrappide þe prelati; for þis use in iurisdiction was not ȝit brouȝt in by cautel of þe fend, as it now is, to lette trewe preching. Crist prechide not fables, *but þe Gospel of God, þat was good tȝingis of þe kyngdom of hevene.* And Crist was not occupied al oonli in þis preching, but in heeling of syke men, and men þat were in languishe. For two men hav nede of bodili heele. Sum men hav sykenesse or hurtinge in her bodi þat men moun see at ȝe, and þis is clepid sykenesse. Sum men have languishe, and þat on two maneris; as sum men ben syke wiþinneforþ, but þis sykenesse is hid to men, as men þat ben in fevers or oþer sykenesse of herte; and sum men ben syke bi sorewe of herte, and of discourfort of þingis þat fallen hem. And þese men were in languishe, and ofte weren heeled by Crist; and if we hav not virtue to hele þese two sykenessis, ȝit we moun have wille to do þat is in us, and conforte and preie for men þat we delen wiþ.

and sent his apostles to preach it.

And Crist ceeside not here to do good to men, but he ordeynede hise disciplis many, to traveile among men, þat þe peple weren not alle traveilid in heering of oo man. For, as þe gospel telliþ, *Crist saie þe peple traveilid in þis, and hadde mercy on hem, for þei weren traveilid and ligginge as sheep wiþouten heerde; and þanne he seide to hise disciplis, Þere is myche ripe corn and fewe workmen þereaboute, and þerfore preie ȝe God to move his prechours, boþ in bodi and in soule, to traveile among þe puple,* as gosselleris shulden. *Crist bade hem wende forþ and preche to þe peple þat þe kyngdom of hevene shal come,* al if hem þenke þat it dwelle longe; for many peplis shal turne to God fro þeir synful lyf, and afterward come to hevene whanne þat þei be dede. ȝhe, þe dai of dome comeþ ful fast, siþ no tyme mai come faster þan þis dai comeþ. For, as clerkis seien, tyme passiþ as swifly as ony tyme mai passe, or come into þis world.

And herfore Crist ȝiveþ power to hise disciplis of þis office, to heele speciali foure manere of siikenessis. First, he ȝiveþ hem power to heele men wiþynne forþ; but þe moste power in þis was of her wordis, þat Crist wrouȝte wiþ hem, and heelide þe peple in soule; and, for Crist wolde not þat his power were idil, þerefore he biddiþ hem *heele siike men*. After he biddiþ þese disciplis *reise up dede men*; þat mai be undirstondun upon two maneres. For þese disciplis hadden power to reise up dede men in bodi, and to quykene bi Goddis grace dede men in soul; and þis virtue is more, siþ þe soule is betere þan þe bodi. Þe þridde tyme Crist ȝiveþ hem power *to heele mesele men*; and boþ siche syknessis and ordres of hem shulde be more to charge in soule of a man, þan þei shulde be of a mannis bodi. Meselrie is comunli figure of heresie, or of ony oþer synne þat fouleþ men wiþoutenforþ, for þus done bodili meselis to men þat dwelle among hem; and herfore in þe eelde lawe shoulde meselis stond afer. And al if many synnes defoulen men biside hem, neþeles heresies done myche harme. And þerefore men shulde bisili distrie sich heresies; as a greet heresie is, in dowinge of þe Church wiþ lordship of þe world, as it is now dowid. And breeþ of þis heresie fouliþ many clerkes, for it is seied in oþer placis þat Goddis lawe forbediþ sich lordship to clerkes, for alle þei shulden lyve in mekenesse and povertie. And to distroie þis heresie shulden lordis traveilen bisili, for þis myȝten þei do listly and leve fulli to draw awei her owne goodis, by which þei harmen clerkes. For it were inowȝ to us to have offringis and dymes, siþ Crist and hise apostlis holden hem paiid on lesse. Þe fourþe and þe laste dede þat Crist bad hise disciplis do was, *to caste out fendis þat dwelliden in men*. And as God ȝaf hem power to cast hem out bodili, so he ȝaf hem power to caste hem out of þe soul, whanne he ȝaf virtue to his wordis to converte þe peple, and of a soule þat first was nest of þe fend, to make a nest of God, to dwelle by grace and by virtues.

And after þes foure vertues Crist telleþ hem a maner þat þei shulen algatis kepe in worchinge of Goddis work. For Crist seiþ þus: *ȝe token of God freely*, and *þerfore ȝve freeli* youre traveile to þe peple; and þanne shal it be medeful.

gving them  
a fourfold  
comuission  
of healing.

The present  
endowment of  
the church  
amounts to a  
heresy.

How to cure it.

The mendicancy of friars is indirect simony

and ellis is it symonye. And here is begginge of prechours forfendid of God, siþ it is an hid sillinge<sup>1</sup> of prechinge of Goddis word. And for it is a privy synne, covered wiþ ypocrisie, þis synne is the more and foulir before God; and herfore techet Poul, to be siker of þis syne, þat preestis shulden be paied wiþ mete and wiþ hilinge. It is leefful us to take þese two, þat ben nedeful<sup>2</sup> to þis service of God, and þere wiseli ceesse. But freris and preestis þat gadren hem trespere, and maken riche churchis and housis wiþ oþer gere, and algatis fynden a peple superflue and charginge, passyn Goddis lawe bi a cursid ground, for Seint Poul biddiþ þat he þat traveliþ not, shulde not ete by colour of þis office. And preisynge of preier þat is now brouȝt in, is a foule synne among many preestis.

<sup>2</sup> Thess. iii 10.

Bad priests are like wolves among sheep.

And Christ telliþ after how hise disciplis shulen bere hem among yvel peple þat þei travelen among, and so moun þei liztlyer dele wiþ good peple. Christ seiþ, *I send you as sheep among wolves, and herfore loke ye be prudent as neddris<sup>3</sup>, and symple as doves*, for warnesse of þes two is ynow<sup>3</sup> to you to dwelle among men. And it is comunli seid þat wolves be beestis of raveyne, and yvele for to daunte fro spoilinge of meke beestis; and whanne þei bigynen to zoule, þei turnen her snowte to hevene ward. And so pseudo-clerkes, for her greet covertise, spuylen symple men as wolves doone sheepe; and Crist clepiþ trewe men in God sheep for many enchesouns; and as þe wolf wiþ zoulinge makith sheep to flokke for drede, so prelatis bi cursinges maken men to gadere hem and ȝyve þese prelatis goodis þat þei wolen have. And ȝit þei hav an oþer cautel þat þese ypocritis usen: þei seien þat þei wolen ȝyven suffragies goostli to menis soulis þat passen al þis worldis good; and to coloure al þis ypocrisie þei turnen her snowte to hevene, and seien þat God haþ ȝovun hem power to ȝyve pardone as þei wolen. And here þei ȝoulen comunli, and blasfemen in God, and where Crist biddiþ hem be sheep dwellinge amonge wolves, oure prelatis, by þe fendis lore, ben turned to þe contrarie, whan þei stranglen and killen men and

<sup>1</sup> sellyng, E.

<sup>2</sup> leveful, E.

<sup>3</sup> eddres, E.



spoilē hem of her goodis<sup>a</sup>. And occupiynḡ þat Crist bad hise prestis traveile inne is put al bihynde, and fendis service is putt before; and þus flokkis of sheep ben maid of lewyde men, and flokkis of wolves ben maid of preestis.

But Crist biddiþ hise disciplis be prudent as eddris. An eddre haþ þis witt; whanne charmeris come to take him, þe toon of hise eeris he clappiþ to þe erþe, and wiþ þe eende of his tail he stoppiþ þe toþer. And so Goddis children, whanne þei be temptid to synne, þei þenken mekeli how freel þei ben maid of þe erþe, and wiþ greet þouzt of her deþ, þat shal come, þei witen not whanne, and drede of her jugement lest þei ben demyd to helle, þei stoppen her oþer eere and kepen hem wel fro synne. And þus þei hav prudence, þat God haþ ʒovun to serpentis. And symplenesse of doves stondeþ in þis; þei hav no clawis to fiȝte as oþer foulis, but whanne þei ben assailid of foulis of raveyne, þei tristen not to her owne strengþe, but fallen on stones, and þese haukis dreden þanne to smyte at hem, lest þei frushen<sup>1</sup> her owne brest at þe hard stoone. So Cristis disciplis knowen mekeli her freelti, and liȝten on þe corner stoon, þat is Jesus Crist; and þanne fendis of helle dreden hem to swippen<sup>2</sup> at<sup>8</sup> hem, lest þei harmen hem silf at þe stoone of hurtinge. And þus Cristis disciplis ben goostli dowves. But þis lore is forȝete<sup>4</sup>, and þe fendis lore take<sup>5</sup>.

Christian  
prudence,

and innocence.

IN FEESTIS OF MANY MARTIRIS.

[SERMON LXV.]

*Elevatis Jesus oculis.*—LUKE vi. [20.]

Þis gospel telleþ foure confortis of martiris, in whiche þei shulden have joie for pursuynge of Crist. Þe gospel telliþ how, *Jesus lifte up hise iȝen on hise disciplis*, and seide þus;

The joys of  
martyrs.

<sup>1</sup> *flusche*, E.    <sup>2</sup> *assayle*, E.    <sup>3</sup> om. E.    <sup>4</sup> *forȝetun*, E.    <sup>5</sup> *taken*, E.

<sup>a</sup> The bearing of this passage on sermons has been already discussed the authorship and date of these in the Introduction.

*Blessid be pore men in spirit, for 3e, þat þus be pore men, han þus certeinli þe kyngdome of hevene.* Þis poverte is a virtue þat men shulden first sue Crist inne, and it is hard for to use, and þefore telleþ Crist þus þe meede. And þese men þat hav þis virtue, as weren Cristis apostlis, hadden here þe rewme of hevene, for þei hadden here Crist; and Crist, heed of þis rewme, is ofte tymes clepid þis rewme; for he is þe moste jewel of al þis rewme, in which ech part of þis rewme is many weies conteyned. And þus he mai by many causis be clepid al þis rewme. In þat he is God, he is ende of al þing, and in him we lyven, we moven, and we ben; and for him, as ende, we done alle our dedis. For in virtue of him al his Chirche worcheþ, and by þis moun men se wher men ben lymes of Holy Chirche; for þanne þei ben groundid in his lyf, and his worchinge. And if þei ben in stait or werkes ungroundid<sup>1</sup> in Cristis lyf, it is licy to men þat þei ben Antichristis disciplis; for Crist seiþ and mai not lye, þat, Who is not wiþ me, he is aȝens me; and so he is wiþ Anticrist. And so if stait of þese freris be not groundid in Crist, and þei gabben many maneres upon þe lyf of Crist, as in begginge, and asoilinge, and oþer feyned lesyngis; þanne it is a tokene þat þei ben not of holy Chirche, but Saþanas children whos dedis þei done. For if þei ben more bisie aboute worldeli goodis, þan þei ben of dedis þat vertu techiþ to do, þanne þei ben wiþ Mammon, and he lediþ hem. For worldeli goodis, þe which Crist clepid Mammona of wickidnesse, ben moost souzt of sich men. And so þis fend lediþ hem, and siþ uneven departinge of suche worldeli goodis makij dissencioun, 3he, þe mooste þat here is, it semeþ þat sich freris ben cause of þis dissencioun. But þei have goodis in comun unevenly departid; 3he, more þan hem nedide ech man to have ynow; and þus þis nest of Mammon ganderij many strives, and 3it þe fend techiþ hem to seiþ þat þei have nouzt, but ben more pore in spirit þan weren Crist and hise apostlis. But certis þis is not poverte of which Crist spekiþ here, siþ Crist spekeþ here of poverte in spirit, to mekeli holde men in havynge of wordli goodis, as moche as nedij to sus-

Attack on  
the friars.

<sup>1</sup> þat ben not groundid, E.

teyne her office. And he þat forsakeþ þus for þe love of Crist worldeli richesse, and fame þat comeþ to þe world for havynge of siche goodis, is a pore man in spirit, as Crist spekiþ here. For þanne he synneþ not in havynge of goodis for to make feestis, ne to make riche housis, ne noo costli ornamentis þat fallen to men, but it is inow<sup>3</sup> to him to hav foode and hilinge. And al his bisynesse is to helpe Cristis Chirche, and he disseyveþ not men in multitude of coventis, but lokip how fewe prestis moun profite to Cristis Chirche, and how he mai holde þe office þat Crist haþ bedun in his lawe; for his desire stondeþ in þe kyngdome of hevene. And þus ben vertues knyttid oon wiþ anoþer, and algatis in preestis, þat hiȝer suen Crist. And, for suche poverte bringip ofte tymes in hunger, þerfor in þe secounde blyss seiþ Crist<sup>1</sup>, *þat þei ben blessid now*. And it is no drede Crist spekiþ of sich hunger þat is vertuoussli take<sup>2</sup>, after þe Trinite; for a þeef mai hunger aȝens his wille in prisoun, and a werriour mai hunger for an yvel ende; but loke who haþ power to robbe mennis goodis, and ȝit he spareþ upon resouns, for þe love of God, and þat man hungrip as Crist spekiþ here. And þus alle þese comunes of þes newe religiouse, þat<sup>3</sup> wasten Goddis goodis, for fame of þe world, or love of her belye, synnen aȝens þis virtue; and þei shulden hungre now to deþ, as done þese martirs, or þei wastiden þus þese pore mennis goodis. And if þei han greet wille to do þis for Goddis sake, þei han now a maner of blis, delitinge in Goddis lawe; and it is no drede þes men shulen be fillid, whanne þei shulen have full joie in pleyne filling of Goddis wille. For after þe day of dome noþing shall displese hem, for þei shulen wel wite þat God ordeyneþ al þings þanne, riȝt as it shulde be, by resoun of Goddis wille. And þis ordenaunce is so faire and so plesinge to seintis, þat þei shulden be fulfillid in wille of her soule, and þat shal be inow<sup>3</sup> to hem to boþe her kyndis. For þanne þei shulen have no hunger of þing þat þei desiren, for þei shulen be fulfillid in bodi and in soule, and þus trowen seintis þat hungre endip here.

Þe þridde blisse is seid to þe same entent. *Blessid be ȝe þat*

<sup>1</sup> So E; A includes 'seiþ Crist' in the italics.    <sup>2</sup> taken, E.    <sup>3</sup> So in E; om. A.

*wepen now, for ȝe shulen leiȝe.* It is knowen þat whoso lastiþ fulli in Goddis lawe he mut nedis wepe here, for enemyes to Crist; for suche Goddis proctours shulen be pursued, for reprevyng of synners þat ben Goddis enemyes, and he is a coward aȝens God þat spekiþ not boldly aȝens synne. And herfore Joon Baptist and Cristis apostlis token ensaumple of Crist to þus repreve synne; and þus þei wepten for pursuyte, and algatis for synne, siþ Crist in all hise þre wepingis wepte for oþer mennis synne. For he loveþ nowȝt wel Crist and his Modir þat sorowiþ not for her injurie, and despite þat is done to him. And sich men of charite shall leiȝe at ȝe dai of dome, for Salomon seiþ, þe Churche shall leiȝe in þe last dai; and sich gostli gladness is clepid here leiȝyng<sup>1</sup>, for bodili leiȝyng is fer fro þis purpos. And of þese þree pursuyngis þat comen to þe Chirche, þe firste is leste of alle, þe secound is myddil, and þe þridde is moost; and þus it is of þe<sup>2</sup> þree rewardis.

Prov. i. 26.

Persecution  
of Christ's  
servants.

Þe fourþ word þat Crist seiþ conteyneþ þre pursuingis; ȝe *shulen be blessid*, seiþ Crist, *whanne men shulen hate ȝou, and whanne þei shulen departe ȝou, and after repreve ȝou.* Cristis servantis on many maneris ben departid here. Worldeli men fleen hem, and leven hem by hemsilf; þei ben cursid of Anticrist, and put out of chirchis, and þei ben partid in prisouns fro oþer men of þe world. And in alle þes statis þei suffren reproves, and if þei ben certeyn, bi lore of her bileve, þat þei suffren in all þis fro cause of her God, þei moun be blessid and joiful for hope of þe ende, as a syk man gladli wole suffre peyne whanne he hopiþ þerbi to come aftir to hele. And joie þat seintis shulen have whanne þei suffren þus is a manere of blisse þat þei han here, for it is more joie þan all þese worldli lustis. And, as Crist telliþ, þese þat stonden in Cristis cause, *han her names cast out* as cursid men and heretikes, for her enemyes ben so blynde, and so depe in her synne, þat þei clepen good, yvel, and yvel, good. But woo be to suche. And Crist biddiþ his servantis *to joie þat dai in her herte, and shewe a glad countynauce*, to men þat ben about hem, *for certis her mede is moche in þe blisse of hevene.* And þis word coun-

<sup>1</sup> *leyȝyng*, E.<sup>2</sup> om. E.

fortiþ symple men, þat been clepid ertikes, and enemyes to þe Chirch, for þei tellen Goddis lawe; for þei ben somynned and reprovyd many weies, and after put in prison, and brend<sup>1</sup> or kild as worse þan þeves<sup>a</sup>. And maistris of þis pursuyng ben preestis more and less, and moost pryvy freris wiþ lesingis þat þei feynen, as Crist was pursued wiþ Caiphas and oþer preestis, but privyly wiþ Pharisees þat weren hise falsseste<sup>2</sup> enemyes. And þis gospel is confort to alle þat ben þus pursued.

But certis as tradiciouns maid biside Goddis lawe, of preestis and of scribis and of Phariseis, blyndiden hem in Goddis lawe and made it dispisid, so it is now of Goddis lawe by newe mennis lawis, as decretals and decrees. And þe Sixte, wiþ Clementyns<sup>b</sup>, done myche harm to Goddis lawe, and enfeblen bileve. And þus done þese newe reulis of þese þree ordris, as þei harmen rewmes and cuntreis þat þei dwellen inne. But remedie agens þis is used of many men, to dispise all þese lawis whanne þei ben aleggid, and seien unto men þat alegggen hem, þat falsehede is more suspect for witesse of siche lawis, siþ Goddis lawe telliþ al truþe þat is nedeful to men. In þis laste pursuyng of our modyr, þat is greet and perilous, haþ Anticrist moche part azens Jesus Crist, and feyneþ bi ipocrisie þat he haþ þe riȝt part. And defaute of bileve is ground of all þis errour.

<sup>1</sup> brent, E.

<sup>2</sup> falsest, E.

<sup>a</sup> See note on p. 201.

<sup>b</sup> The compilation of the Sixth Book of the Decretals was made by order of Boniface VIII. and promulgated by him in 1297. It is entitled Sextus, or the Sixth, as following and being supplementary to the five books of Decretals published by Gregory IX. in 1234, (on which see Milman's *Latin Christianity*, vi. 163):—

Gregorii noni post libros quinque, vocatur Sextus; nomen habens ordinis a numero\*.

The Clementines were first published by Clement V at the Council of Vienne in 1312; they were afterwards given out in a fully digested form by John XXII in 1316. They treat of various points of canon law and church discipline, and are supplementary to the Sextus.

\* These lines are in a fine copy of the Sextus in the Bodleian Library, edited by Giles Perrin, 1572.

ÞE GOSPE[L] OF MANY MARTRIS.

[SERMON LXVI.]

*Cum persequentur vos in una civitate.*—MATH. x. [23.]

How the true patience of Christ's martyrs is to be shown in the present struggle between Christ and Antichrist.

Þis gospel telliþ a medicine of Crist, how hise martirs shulen do in tyme of her pursuynge. Crist biddiþ hise disciplis to flee from her enemyes; for vertuous pacience and sich manere cowardice ben armes to Cristene men to overcome her enemyes. For hope of our victorie is in Jesus Crist, and þerfor we trustyn in him þat he doeþ þe dedis. And so<sup>1</sup> Crist and Anticrist striven togidere, and oon seiþ þat he haþ þe just part and þe hooli; and þe toþer reversiþ him and seiþ þat he haþ Cristis part. And as anentis Cristis lawe þat men shulden grounde hem inne, Anticrist haþ foundun þis cautel, to seie þat it is myche fals. And if men seien þat Goddis lawe mut nedis be soþ to Goddis entent, þei graunten þat þis is soþ, but þe entent lieþ in hem. So, as princes of prestis, and Phariseis joyned wiþ hem, wolen interprete Goddis lawe, aff hem shal it be taken; and so her exposicioun is more in auctorite þan is text of Goddis lawe; for by þe firste, men shulen be demyd. And by þe cautel of þe fend þese ben maid myȝti to þe world, and by ȝiftis þat þei ȝyven to seculer men, and to sum clerkis, þei hav many comunnes wiþ hem, and of all manere of men, and crien þat þus seiþ holi Church, to which we shulden algatis trowe, and do worshiþe to it, and reve it nouȝt but ȝyve it more. And þus is Cristis cause feld down for a tyme, but ȝit þere ben many men stondinge þerewiþ, as þei doren. And þis reule han many men to juge wel in þis mater; if a man lyve riȝt lyf boþe to God and to man, and have for him text of Goddis lawe, and witt þat sowneþ to charite, and symplenesse in lyvyng, wiþ forsakinge of worldeli liif, it is tokene þat þis man haþ þe riȝt part of Jesus Crist. For Anticrist drawiþ evere to pryde and

<sup>1</sup> So E: A reads *for*, which gives neither sense nor syntax.

to coveitise; and herbi moun men knowe what man holdip wiþ Anticrist. But beware with ypocrisie, for þat bigilip many men to trowe þat men ben Cristis children, alþif þei ben þe fendis lymes. And so bi loore þat Crist techip men shulden trowe to sich mennis workes more þan to her wordis, for þei speken ofte in striif, and Poul seiþ þat he and hise breþeren have noon custum to speke þus.

1 Cor. xi. 16.

Þe first biddinge þat Crist biddip here stondip in þese wordis, þat we shulen kepe. *And whanne many enemyes shulden pursue you fro oon citee, þat 3e have dwelt inne, fle 3e into anoþer*; but ever wiþ discrecioun, for if þis were ever kept no men nedide to be martris, for þei myzt fle fro toun to toun, and nevere countre wiþ her enemyes; and þus Crist wiþ hise disciplis hadde do agens his owne lore. And here men studien wiþ rulis, whanne þei shulden flee þus, and whanne þei shulden stonde and suffre. In boþe þese tauzte Crist, and it is no doute to men þat ofte it profitip on boþe sidis to flee from oo toun to anoþer, for bi þis fleinge ofte tymes hav boþe þe partis space to turne to Crist and profite, more þan þei shulden to suffre deþ, abidinge in oo place. And here Y can<sup>1</sup> not grounde of God, þat we shulden fleoure enemyes, riht whanne þei folowen us and seen us in mennys presence, for þis were yvel cowardice, to feere men þat saien þis flizt; but Crist spekip here, as we þinkip, of hid removynge before. And þus Crist fledde ofte tymes, and hidde him among þe peple. And if þou axe whanne men shulden flee, and whanne stonde in Goddis cause, certis sum tyme men ben constreyned to come, and to answeere for Crist; and so, if we lyven good lyf and lette not þe love of Crist, he shal teche us for to flee and to answeere as we shulden.

But algatis be we war þat we confesse not falsehede, and denye not Cristis lawe, for no cais þat mai falle. If we undirstonden not þe witt, graunte we þe forme of þe wordis, and confesse we þe truþe of hem, al if we witen not which it is. And þus faile we not God in liif, and he wole not faile us in loore; for þus he biholip þat we shal have in

<sup>1</sup> kan. E.

sich hour what we shulden speke. But here it is good to us, if we ben in myche pees, to knowe and love Goddis lawe, for bi þis we moun betir lyve, and wite how we shulen answere men whanne we ben opposid of fendis. But ȝit men miȝten replie here þat Cristis lore were not ynow<sup>3</sup>, for men myȝten liztli take a citee where alle weren enemyes and noon trewe men. But lyve we wel, and Crist wole teche to what a citee we shulen go; and herfore seiþ Crist after, *Sopli, I seie to zou, ȝe shulen not ende þe citees of Israele til þat mannīs sone come, at þe laste dai of Jugement.* A flok of trewe men is citee of Israele, for þese men seen God, and ben redi to helpe hise lymes, whanne þei be þus pursued, and suffre Cristis disciplis to tra-veile, and lette Anticristis bi her power; and such flokkis shulen not faile, boþe to worche and to helpe. And in þe dai of dome it shal be no nede to axe help, for þanne shal Cristis baner be rerid, and alle hise enemyes shulen lurke.

Persecution of  
the writer's  
party.

And herfore seiþ Crist after, *þer is no disciple aboute his maistir ne servant aboute his Lord.* But þus was Crist himsilf pursued, and þis forme kepte Crist, in fleyinge and in answeyng. *And it is ynow<sup>3</sup> to þe disciple þat he be as his maistir, and to servaunt þat he be as his Lord.* In þis þing and bi þis weie shulden Cristis servauntis kepe mekenesse and hope in God, and wite wel bi her bileve þat þei moun not do wiþouten him. And herfore seiþ Crist; *If þei clepiden þe good Lord Belzabub, moche more þei shulden dorre<sup>1</sup> mysseie þe servantis of þe Lord.* And oþer pursuytis and bodili deþ shulen sue aftir, siþ Crist hadde hem, and þefore Crist telliþ ofte, how hise shal be sikir of þese. And þefore Cristis armure is good to ech to Cristen man to hav, for it noieþ not hevely, neþer in pees ne in werre, and it makip Cristen men hardi aȝens þe fend and alle hise lymes. And herfore seiþ Crist to hise; *þefore drede ȝe hem not;* for we have betere ground þan þei, and more helpe þan þei have; butoure helpe is spiritual, hid to þis world and for<sup>2</sup> þe toþer. And þis lore is nedeful now in þis world, for Anticrist; for he haþ turned hise clerkes to covetise and worldli love, and so blindid þe people and derkid þe lawe of Crist, þat hise servantis ben

<sup>1</sup> *dore. E;* meaning *dare.*

<sup>2</sup> *fro. E.*



þikke, and fewe ben on Cristis side. And algatis þei dispisen þat men shulden knowe Cristis liif, for bi his liif and his loore shulde help rise on his side, and prestis shulden shame of her lyves, and speciali þes hiȝe prestis, for þei reversen Crist boþe in word and dede. And herfore oo greet Bishop of Engelond, as men seien, is yvel paied þat Goddis lawe is writun in Englis, to lewde men; and he pursueþ a preest, for he writiþ to<sup>1</sup> men<sup>2</sup> þis Englishe, and somoniþ him and traveiliþ him, þat it is hard to him to rowte<sup>3</sup>. And þus he pursueþ anoþer preest bi þe helpe of Phariseis, for he prechide Cristis gospel freeli wiþouten fablis. O<sup>4</sup> men þat ben on Cristis half, helpe ȝe now aȝens Anticrist! for þe perilous tyme is comen þat Crist and Poul telden bifore. Butt oo confort is of knyȝttis, þat þei savoren myche þe gospel and han wille to rede in Englishe þe gospel of Cristis liif. For aftirward, if God wole, þis lordship shal be taken from preestis; and so þe staaft þat makip hem hardi aȝens Crist and his lawe. For þree sectis fiȝten here, aȝens Cristene mennis secte. Þe firste is þe pope and cardinals, bi fals lawe þat þei han made; þe secounde is emperours<sup>5</sup> bishopis, whiche dispisen<sup>6</sup> Cristis lawe; þe þridde is þes Pharisees, possessioners and beggeris. Alle þes þree, Goddis enemyes, traveilen in ypocrisie, and in worldli coveitise, and idilnesse in Goddis lawe. Crist helpe his Chirche from þese fendis, for þei fiȝten perilously.

There is a great bishop who is displeased that God's law should be written in English.

FE GOSPEL OF MANY MARTRIS.

[SERMON LXVII.]

*Ponite in cordibus vestris.*—LUC. xxi<sup>7</sup>. [14.]

Þis gospel telliþ, as oþer bifore, how Crist helpiþ his martris, whan þe fend and hise lymis pursuen hem for Cristis lawe. For Christ suffride for þis lawe al þe peyne þat he suffride, and hise martris aftir him suffriden for þis same law. Crist tauȝte

Christ's help to his martyrs.

<sup>1</sup> om. E.      <sup>2</sup> om. E.      <sup>3</sup> route, E.      <sup>4</sup> So in E; A has oo.  
<sup>5</sup> So E; emperour, A.      <sup>6</sup> dispensen, E.      <sup>7</sup> So in E; xi. A, perperam.

Plenary indulgences granted to those who fight against the Antipope.

opinli his lawe to þe peple, and þe hiȝe preestis of þe temple, wiȝ Scribis and Phariseis, þouȝten þat þis was aȝens hem; and þus þei weren aȝens him; and speciali, for Cristis wordis weren aȝens þese þre mennis pride, and aȝens her covetise, in which þei disseyveden þe peple, but not bi so opyn blasfemye as prelatiſ use to daie. For þei seien, þat þei han power of Crist to assoile alle men þat helpen in her cause, for to gete þis worldli worshiþe, to assoile men of peyne and synne<sup>a</sup>, boþe in þis world and in þe toþir, and so whanne þei dien, flee to hevene wiȝouten peyne. And þus durst not þe fend feyne for þe tyme þat Crist was here; and siche blynde leden blynde men, and maken falle boþe in þe lake. And þus þis is a perilous tyme, for many men ben dryvun to helle, and þat is more perilouse þan ony deef þat þe<sup>1</sup> bodi haþ here, and þe peril is þus more for feynynge of ypocrisie; and we moun not see þis peril, ne fele it in þis liif. And many witnessis ben aȝens þis, and seien þat it is fals; but, as þei seien, we han þe fals part, and þei han þe goode religion. And so þis is more perilous þan sectis de-partid fro Crist, as Jewis or Sarasines, or oþer heþene men; for þese worchen bi ypocrisie and ben myȝti heretikes, and medlid among trewe men, and þus her fiȝting is feller.

But neþeles Crist supposiþ þat hise disciplis shulden sue him, and lyven wel after his lawe, and þei shulen be sure ynow<sup>3</sup>, for þanne God shal fiȝte for hem aȝens enemyes of Crist. And herfore bigynniþ Crist and biddiþ hem, *putte in þeir hertis, not to þenke bifore wiȝ businessse, how þei shulen answere to her enemyes, for Crist shal answere þanne for hem, and ȝyve hem þanne mouþ and witt, to which alle her adversaries moun not aȝenstonde ne aȝenseie.* And siþ þei ben not þo þat speken, but þe Holi Goost spekiþ in hem, it is soþ þat God himself shal answere for his part. It is seid ofte tymes, þat maner of speche of Goddis lawe is to denye þe instrument, and to graunte þe principal, and þus seiþ Crist þat þei speken not but þe Hooli Goost in hem. But Crist prophecieþ of betraying þat hise shal hav: *ȝe shulen be betrayed, he seiþ, of your owne eldris,*

<sup>1</sup> So in E; om. A.

<sup>a</sup> See page 136, note.

of *zoure breþeren, and zoure cosyns, and zoure owne frendis.* Dis lettre was verified of martiris of Crist, for alle þes foure consentiden to deþ of þese martiris, for þei þouzten obeishe to God in killinge of Cristene men. And as Cristis lawe seiþ þat sevene þingis shulden be hatid for Crist, as fadir and modir, wyves and children, breþeren and sistren, and mennis owne liif, so feynede þe fend þat þese foure frendis shal be hatid of man, for þe love of Anticrist. And þus many fadris killiden her owne children, for þei confessiden Crist; and þus, as we supposen, þe Jewis diden. And to speken generali of Anticristis scole, þese popis ben fadris, and her churches ben modirs, þese bishopis ben breþeren, and oþer prelatis ben cosyns; seculer men for muk ben to þese prelatis, frendis, and alle þese betraien Cristene men to turment, and putten hem to deep for holdinge of Cristis lawe. And þis is more perilous for her fals feyning, for þei seien þat her Chirche mai no weie faile þat haþ lastid so longe in truþe and in holinesse. And þus as Crist was pursued and kild of þese foure folk, so bi cautels of Anticrist ben men kild to dai. And ȝit þe pope is clepid holyeste fadir, and þe bishopis hise breþeren, and abbotis his cosyns, and seculers ben frendis þat helpen to þis pursuyte; and þese foure goostli frendis ben most perilous. And Crist telliþ hise disciplis how *þei shulen be hatid of alle worldli men, for þe name of him;* and þus ben men hatid now bi lesengis of freris, for þei holdin þe gospel and lawis of Crist. But Crist comforteþ hise and telleþ hem þat no part of her bodi shal perishe at þe daie of dome; so *þat an heere of her<sup>1</sup> heed shal not þanne perishe.* And armer to fiȝte wiþ in Criste<sup>2</sup> men is pacience, for wiþ þis fouzte Crist, and alle hise gloriouse lymes; *and in þis pacience bihetiþ Crist to hise, þat þei shulen hav her soulis in pees, as Crist hadde his soule.*

The hierarchy and many of the lavy united in persecuting Christian men.

And here moven many men, siþ Cristis lawe is opyn, and his part is knowun good, and Anticristis wickid, and many devoute men holden wiþ Crist, what moveþ Cristene men to move hem not to fiȝtinge? For siþ þe fend haþ but þree partis for his side, Cristene men myzte soone meve to fle þes þree partis.

Armed resistance not advisable.

<sup>1</sup> om. E.

<sup>2</sup> Cristen. E.

For popis and bishopis and prestis of her sort, and þese new religiouse, possessioneris and beggeris, and seculer men þat ben disseyved wiþ hem, ben þe moste enemyes to Crist and his lawe. Whi wolen not holi seculars risen azens þese þree, siþ þei moven seculars to fiȝte azens her enemyes? Here men þenken þat Cristene men shulden algatis loven pees, and not procure to fiȝte; for Crist is a pesible kyng, and he seiþ in his gospel þat in oure greet pacience we shulen have oure victorie; and Crist shal fiȝte for us. But many men þenken þat seculer men shulden helpe here, not to fiȝte bodili azens Cristis enemyes, but wiþdrawe her conceil and consent fro þes þree folk; and þis dede were sure before God and man.

And siþ þese false freris camen last into þe Churche, it semeþ þat at hem shulden men begynne to practise, for þei semen leste groundid or rotid in malice, al if her malice be sharpest, as fevere of a daie. Þe rote of possessioners semeþ harder to overcome, for þei ben rotid in richessis and frendship of þe world; but liȝtli miȝten trewe men discomfite þese freris, not but wiþdraw her defence and consente to hem; and þese fendis shulden faile, as þei began wiþouten ground. And here moun men liȝtli se wheþer seculars ben trewe men, for þei confessen comunli þat þei loven Crist moost, and wolen stonde bi his lawe, and also bi his ordonaunce, for to suffre deþ, but þei failen in þes wordis. Hem nedip neþer to fiȝte ne dispende ne traveile, but consent not wiþ þes fendis, ne defende hem azens Crist, and þei shulden soone be destroyed among hemsilf. Wel Y woot þat begging holdiþ hem up, and oþer lesingis upon Crist and his Churche. Comune not wiþ hem, ne ȝyve hem noon almesse, bifoore þei hav declarid þese<sup>1</sup> gabbingis azens bileve, and liȝtli shulde be an ende of þese false prophetis. Her preieris, and her massis, and oþer false signes, ben signes þat þei chaffaren wiþ disseyvyng e þe peple. But dwelle we in þis bileve, and tell hem boldli þat þei witen never<sup>2</sup> wher þei ben fendis; and if þese ypocritis ben fendis, her preiris doiþ harm, ȝhe, boþ to hemsilf and to oþer men; and no man þat hadde witt shulde chaffare wiþ her preiris. And herfore biddiþ Crist

He appeals to the laity.

<sup>1</sup> þe, E.

<sup>2</sup> not, E.

flee from false prophetis þat come in cloþing of sheep, but þei ben wolves wiþ men, and her comyng is moost to ravyshe bi ypocrisie.

As anentis her massis, a man þat hadde Cristis hert shulde seie hem soþeli, þat he wolde not truste þerynne, but if þei purgiden hem of heresie, of which þei ben suspect. It was taken as bileve, longe bifore þat freris cam ynne, þat þe sacrid ost þat men seen at ize is verrili Goddis bodi, bi vertue of hise wordis. Freris seien þat þis is fals, but it is an accident wiþouten ony suget, and þei gilen þe peple. If a man charge Goddis lawe more þan fals in name of sich Iyeris in þe world, þat doiþ myche harm. Comune he not wiþ hem, ne 3yve hem no goodis, before he have asaied wheþer þei ben here heretikes; and seie he, þat Crist takip not service of man but if he 3yve betere aȝen, and þus shulden prestis done; and herfore, but if þe frere bringe under his comune seel, what is þe sacrid oost, þei wolen not comune wiþ him. For, as Seint Joon seip, whoever gretip an heretike shal hav of his synne, what man ever he be. And þus, if a trewe man love more Crist þan þe worldis fame, he mai listli wiþ worship avoide sich fals freris. And certis þis dede were unsuspect boþe to God and man. For if þei hav a riȝt bileve, þei shulden telle it for charite, and if her bileve were fals, þei shulden wille þat it were destroyed. And algatis þei witen wel, þat þei varien in bileve fro þe gospel and comun peple, and many weies disseve men. For þei tellen not what is þat, but þat þis is Goddis bodi. But þese idiotis shulen wite, þat boþe þere and everywhere is betere þing þan Goddis bodi, for þe holi Trinitie is in ech place. And so men axen what is þat, þat þe prest sacrip, and aftur brekip, and þat men worshipen as Goddis bodi, but not accident wiþouten suget. And þus defaute of riȝt bileve, practisid among þes freris, shulden dampne hem as heretikes, and take hem in her owne falshede.

And so, bi alle oper signes þat þei feynen in religioun, asprie how þes freris camen inne, and by whos auctorite; for if þei camen not in bi Crist, þat is dore of his Church, þei ben þeves and heretikes, and stien up by þe roof. And þis proof were not costli, ne chargiours, ne shameful; and

The doctrine  
of frars con-  
cerning the  
Eucharist.

2 John, 11.

for levyng of siche proofe synnen men ful grevousely bope aʒens Crist and his Church, ʒhe, aʒens freris þat men þenken þei helpen. And þis shulden alle men do in dede, and stire oþer men þerto, sum bi love, sum bi drede; and þus shulden oure bileve be shewid, and rotyn heresie, hid now, shulde come to proof wiþ false lesingis. And here moun men wel assaie wheþer clerkes and knyztis wiþ her comunes love God as þei confessen, and doren stonde bi his lawe; for he þat is negligent in so litil þing for to do, wolde soon be negligent in harder þing of more charge.

ÞE GOSPEL OF MANY MARTRIS.

[SERMON LXVIII.]

*Descendens Jesus de monte.*—LUC. vi. [17.]

Þis Gospel telliþ, as we hav seid, how þe peple lovede Crist, and how Crist ʒafe hem loore þat was betir þan al þis world. And so Crist, as a good knyzt, stood now in hil, and now in pleyn, now in water, and now in erþe, to telle þat he was Lord of alle. But here he stood in the pleyn feld, for þer men miȝten betere heere him; and þus he techiþ, þat he loveþ all men þat holden his lawe, be þei clerkis, be þei kniȝtis, or laborers þat maynteynen tilþe. *And þus Crist cam down of þe hill, and stood in a feldi place, and to him cam dyverse folkis, as sum men þat weren hise disciplis, and a great multitude of oþer folk fro fyve places. Sum men camen fro fer countrees of þe lond of Jude, and sum camen fro Jerusalem, and sum camen fro þe see, and sum men fro þe lond of Tire, and sum fro þe lond of Sidon.*

And men seien comunli þat men sueden Crist for fyve causis. Sum men camen to sue Crist, to lerne of him Goddis lawe; and þus sueden þe apostlis Crist þat speciali sueden him, and oþer trewe men, bi riȝt entent to be informed in Goddis lawe, and speciali at þis tyme; for now ʒaf Crist his lawe, and so he ordeynede many folk to here alweie þis newe lawe. Þe secounde cause þat men sueden Crist for, was to be heclid of

How Christ deals with those that love him.

Five causes why men followed Christ.

Crist. For alle manere of sykenessis of men he helid wiþouten hire; and so seiþ þe gospel here þat many folkis camen to Crist, *to heere him, and to be helid of syknesse* þat þei were inne. Þe þridde cause whi folk sueden him was for to se wondris of Crist, as men traueilen in fer weie to se pleies<sup>1</sup> in þe world; and more woundris þan Crist dide was not seen bifore ne aftir. Þe fourþe cause whi sum folk cam to Crist was cumpanye, þat oþer men cam to Crist, oþer for oo cause or for oþer. And þus þei camen to se Crist for sum cause þat here is seid. Þe fiftte cause, and þe worste, þat sum men camen to here Crist was to take him in wordis, as ofte tymes camen hise enemyes, as Pharisees and oþer seruauntis of hiþe preestis of þe temple.

And þus seiþ þe gospel here;—*þat men travelid of þe fendis weren heclid, and al þe peple covetide to touche Crist, for vertue wente out of him, and helide alle men. And Crist cast up hise iþen in hise disciplis*, and seide foure wordis, as it is told bifore in þe firstte sermoun of martirs<sup>a</sup>. First seiþ Crist, *Blessid be þe<sup>2</sup> pore men, for þoure is þe kyngdom of God*; and comunli such men þat ben pore of goodis here, ben also pore in soule, as seiþ þe gospel of Matheu. For sum men ben proude in her herte of fair chirchis and hiþe steplis, and sum of faire zate housis, and sum men of hiþe kycchynes<sup>3</sup>; and so if pryde were fulli layd doun, few or noon wolden hav sich housis. And if all þe good were weied þat comeþ of sich costli þing, it were but pure fantasie, and worldli pryde þat comeþ þerof. And if we þenken how Crist was pore, more þan ony of us mai be, we shulden not bolue for richesse of þe world, for no good þat comeþ þerof. And so we shulen understonde þese þree wordis þat come after;—*Blessid be þe þat hungren now, for þe shulen aftir be fillid. Blessid be þe þat wepen now, for þe shulen leiþe aftir; and blessid shulen þe be whanne þat men shulen hate þou, and whanne þei departen þou fro Cristene men þat þei loven, and whanne þei shulen reprove þou, and caste out þour name as iuel, for þe holden wiþ Cristis lawe*, al if it displese to þe world. *In þat dai joie*

<sup>1</sup> for to see pleyes, E.<sup>2</sup> þe, E.<sup>3</sup> kycchynes, E.<sup>a</sup> See Sermon LXX, p. 201.

3e wipine, and make 3e glad countynauce wipouten, for lo 3oure neede is moche in hevene; and by pis weie 3e deserven it.

Against monks  
and canons.

As it is seid bifore, God haþ many enemyes þat feynen bi her professioun þat þei ben pore as was Crist, and 3it þei han worldi goodis, boþ meblis and unmeblis, and þei disturblen Cristis ordre, and contreis þat þei dwellen ynne, as monkis and chanouns wip her degrees, and oþer possessioneris. Crist techep hem to be pore for love of him, but wilfulli; and þei crepen ynne to be riche, bi falsnesse of ipocrisie; and þus ben lordis and rewmes poorid, to whos stait schulde<sup>1</sup> richesse falle; and 3it boþ prelatiſ and lordis and oþer folk ben so blyndid, þat þei holden up þis fendis cause and cursen trewe men þat letten it. And it is oon to do þus, and to curse Cristene men, for þei holden on Cristis side aʒens þe fend, and his helpe; for he haþ so blyndid men bi unbileve of Goddis lawe, þat dedis þat ben aʒens it ben holden good and nedeful: as twelve lawis ben alleggid how God ordeyneþ clerkes to lyve, and confirme hem bi his Sone, and bi liif of hise apostlis, and 3it men seien þei ben acursid, þat travellen to kepe þese lawis. But as þei feynen, þei han prelatiſ, and þe hizeste is þe pope; and but if men have leve of hem no man schulde take þes goodis aweie. And heron ben lawis ordeyned and cursingis wipouten nombre, and lordis ben undermined wip sultitees of the fend; and but if God send a gretter<sup>2</sup> grace, þis heresie wole not be amendid, but if some conquest come, or þe laste dai of dome.

Bi many causis moveþ the fend to holde þis cause aʒens aʒens Crist, for herbi he haþ foundun pley in clerkis, knyztis, and in comunes; for clerkis herbi ben proude and worldli, and leve þe office þat God haþ bedun clerkis do to profite of his churche. For herbi clerkis ben oþer lewid or occupied aboute þe world, so þat prechyng and techyng ben aweie for þe more part; and þes prelatiſ above seen þat bi þe same skile þei shulden wante her worldli richesse, as wantide boþ Crist and Petir, and herfore for to flee þis eende þei maken meenes in weie bifore. And siþ averise<sup>3</sup> driep more, þes

<sup>1</sup> So E; *shulden*, A.

<sup>2</sup> *grete*, E.

<sup>3</sup> *averice*, E.



prelatis ben þus coveitous, and seculer lordis boþe, for lordship is taken fro hem. And þus þe pore comuns bien<sup>1</sup> þe trespas of Goddis lawe, but not so myche as þes two oþer; for þei bien it more in helle. Þe fend traveileþ bisili to holde þis nest aþens Crist, and ypocrisie of preestis is þe beste mene þat he haþ; and þus officeris of Cristis hous ben so turned in her service, þat if<sup>2</sup> Peter were now alyve, and saie how preestis weren occupied, he wolde seie þei weren not prestis of Crist, but proctours of Anticrist. But, for þe fend dredidþ him þat Cristene men shulden knowe þis wille, to<sup>3</sup> fordo þis fendis falsehede, and turne aþen to Cristis lawe, and algatis þat Cristis preestis shulden lyv in povertie as he dide, he haþ cast anoþer weie to preise preiyinge of sich preestis, and telle þat it is more worþ þan al þe lordship of þis world boþe to lordis and to her eldris, and specialy at mydnyzt, as þese religieuse preien. But here men speken aþen þe fend, and seien he blyndidþ here but foolis, for men wilen þat God loveþ more just liif þan siche preier, and it is a fendis folie to chaunge office of Cristis servauntis. Crist haþ ordeyned hise preestis boþe to teche and preche hise gospel, and not for to preie þus, and to be hid in sich closettis; and þus a liif of oo just man, þat held wel Goddis lawe, were worthi many such preieris as now ben procurid folily. And if þe fend allegge þe Psalm, þat Daviþ<sup>4</sup> roos at mydnyzt to confesse to his God; whi shulden not we now do so? But here we axen þe fendis clerk, siþ Crist dwellide at nyzt in his preier, and in þe dai tauzte þe peple, and dide hise workes privyly for to flee ypocrisie, why shulden not preestis now do þus? and siþ þe same Psalm seiþ, Lord how Y have loved þi lawe, al þe dai it is my þouzt, whi shulde we not holde þis more? siþ it is moche betere þan to rise at mydnyzt. And if Baal preest feynen þat þanne God mai here wele, and þanne lordis of þe worldlyven in lustes in hers bedde, and good it is þat God be sued ech hour of sum men; wite þei wele þat God lokidþ betere to goode dedis þan to sich preieris. But neþeles devoute men þat be disposed to preie þanne, God forbede þat þei shulden be lettid; but make we

Ps. cxix. 55.

Ps. cxix. 97.

<sup>1</sup> *byen*, E.<sup>2</sup> *3if*, E.<sup>3</sup> *and*, E.<sup>4</sup> *Davyt*, E.

no general reule to undispose men on þe dai, whanne þei shulden do workes of list. Wel I woot þat þeves usen to worche on nyȝt and slepe on þe dai, and so usen þese neuwe þeves þat comen in abov þe dore; for Crist koude have tauȝt þis preier if it hadde more plesid him, as he koude hav tauȝte to preie, and lefte to preche his gospel to men. And siþ sich religiouse moun not preie God for hemsilf to come to hevene, for þei shulen be dampned, how moche wole God here sich fendis preier for oþer men! However þe fend seiþ here, þe office þat Crist haþ ordeyned of hise servantis in his hous is þe beste of alle oþer.

ÞE GOSPEL ON FEESTE OF MANY MARTRIS.

[SERMON LXIX.]

*Cum audieritis proelia.*—LUC. xxi. [9.]

Þis gospel telliþ to Cristis martris, what peril shal falle on his house boþ bifore and aftir here, er<sup>1</sup> þe dai of dome come. And þus shulden martris be confortid bi witt and ordenance of Crist, and suffre wiþ good wille, riȝt as þis Lord haþ ordeyned; for certis he ordeyneþ for þe beste, to his worship and to his Church.

First spekiþ Crist to hise disciplis; and biddiþ hem, *þat þei shulden not be adred, whanne þei shulden here batels and contekes wiþ men*<sup>2</sup>; for þes þingis moten nedis be, but ȝit is not anoon ende. And þanne Crist seide to hem of sevene perils þat shulden come. Þe first peril of þese sevene is, þat oo folk shulden rise azens anoþer, as Cristene men fiȝten wiþ Sarasyne, and oo secte wiþ anoþer; and þus boþe eldir men and ȝonger hatiden divisioun in þe peple, for suche divisioun is cause of bateillis and strives among men; ne it is not oo peple, but for oonhede of lord and lawes. And þus alle Cristene men shulden holde of Crist and his

The signs  
which shall  
precede the  
Day of Judgment.

Seven perils to  
the Churches -  
The first peril.

<sup>1</sup> or, E.

<sup>2</sup> wiþynne, E.

lawe, and obeisse to hise bailies, in as myche as Crist biddiþ obeisse to hem.

The secounde harm þat shal come to Cristis Chirche for synne of men, is, *þat oo rewme shal rise azens anoþer* for wantinge of charite, and cause hereof shall be defaute of keping of Cristis ordenaunce. For Crist ordeynede his Chirche to stonde in sich an evene mesure, þat ech part shulde profite to oþer, and noon reverse oþer in liif; as partis of mannis bodi þat is hoole fiȝten not togidir, but raþer oon helpiþ anoþer, and kepiþ it fro many harmis. And þus partyng of lordships among preestis must nedis make fiȝtinge: and so sectis þat soutren þe peple oþer weie þan Crist ordeynede, as þese newe religiouse, moten disturble helpe of rewmes.

The second  
peril.

Þe þridde peril þat Crist telliþ here, *is grete erþe-denes<sup>1</sup> bi places*; for as þe erþ-denes, as clerkis seien, comeþ of wyndis closid wiþinne þe erþe, so wyndis closid in proude preestis, and oþer men of þe world, ben figurid by erþedene. And þei distrien countreis and citees, for prelatiſ more and lesse here bosten more þan Goddis lawe techiþ, and þese wyndis be algatis closid wiþinne þe boundis of Goddis lawe, for þei ben evene as grete as Goddis lawe wole suffren hem. And as it wole close hem or ponishen<sup>2</sup> hem, so it is; and whanne þei ben aventid, bi conquest or oþer manere, Goddis lawe lymyteþ how þes wyndis shulen passe aweie.

The third peril.

Þe fourþe and þe fiȝþe peril, shal *be pestilencis and hungriſ*, for as distempour of þe eir shal sle men and unable þe erþe, so distempour of wyndis of pride shal lette preching of Cristis word, and þanne comeþ pestilence of soule worse þan pestilence of bodi, as hungre of Goddis lawe is worse þan bodili hungre. And siþ hevene worchiþ in erþe, after þat erþe is disposid, þere mut come into erþe pestilence and hungre. Pestilence shal come of distempour of elementis, and of oþer medlid bodies þat ben unkyndeli temprid; for þe fumes of þese blowun wiþ þe wyndis, and drawun in to man,

The fourth and  
fifth perils.

<sup>1</sup> *erþedones*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *punysche*, E.

distemperen his bodi, and maken hise humours and alle hise lymes to wante her kyndeli tempour; and þus comeþ pestilence, boþe to man and beste. And siþ corn and oþer fruytis ben nurished by þis eir, and þis is so distemperid bi causes þat ben bifore seid, þe blewinge<sup>1</sup> of þes fruytis mut faille for þis same cause, and so hungre mut come for defaute of sich fruyte. But Crist spekþ more here of spiritual veniaunce þat is more to drede þan bodili peynes.

The sixth and seventh perils.

And so þe sixte and þe sevenþe perils þat Crist telliþ ben, *feringis fro hevene and oþer grete signes*; and as þes muten come bi kynde for variance of þe erþe, so mut oo synne bifore bringe in anoþer synne, and þus shal Goddis veniaunce<sup>2</sup> be varied after þes synnes. As it is distempour, þat erþeli men shal calengen here to be evene wiþ Crist, and do more þingis þan he wole do,—so after siche signes moten come to men peyneful wondris, as it is an hidouse þing þat men contrarien to Crist boþe in word and in dede, and, ledinge of oþer peple, seien þat þei moun do wiþ þis as myche as þe manhede of Crist, and wiþ þis senden out signes to witnesse þis blasfemye. Þese ben more hidous signes þan bodili comynge fro hevene. But Crist telliþ to hise disciplis *þat bifore alle þes sevene, þe ferventeste enemies<sup>3</sup> to Crist shal caste hondis upon hem, and pursue hem, and 3yve hem in to hondis of false preestis*; and þei shulen putte hem in to feyned holdis, and punishe hem many weies, and after þei shulen drawe hem to kyngis and to justices, þat ben myzti in þis world. And þus for Crist shulen þei be ponished; and liche to þis falliþ now by ponishing of Anticrist. But Crist seiþ to hise disciplis *þat it shal falle in to hem into witnesse*, þat þei ben on þe trewe side, *þat þei shulen have clere answeere, to which alle her adversaries shal not moun<sup>4</sup> azenstonde*; and þis shal be Goddis loore comynge to hem so privyli. And Crist seiþ as he dide bifore how he shal 3yve hem alle þis wisdom, to þe witt þat is seid bifore.

An invective against the prelates.

And here men noten comunli how prelatiſ weren disposid by Crist to take of him wisdom, to cunne reule his Church; and so oþer Cristis bileve failleþ, or prelatiſ be undisposid now to take

<sup>1</sup> blowing, E.

<sup>2</sup> vengeance, E.

<sup>3</sup> þe moste enemy, E.

<sup>4</sup> motwe, E.

wisdom of Crist to reule his Churche wel. And siþ a prelat mai not do, but if he hav keies of þe Churche, þe which ben power and science to dispence Goddis tresour, it semeþ þat prelatiſ now failen in boþe þes. For bi mannis traveile þei hav not passingli geten þis witt, siþ þei hav ben occupied in þe world, and ben simple of lettrure of Cristis lawe, and of inspiring bi Goddis grace. It semeþ þat siche prelatiſ ben ful fer to take of God suche liþnyng of Goddis cunnyng, fer þei ben ful of worldeli witt in worldeli occupacioun, and herbi unclene in þouȝt, to take siche wisdom of God. And dedis of þes men, wiþ fruytis of her liif, shewen þat þei ben not ful cunnyng in wisdom of Goddis lawe, and so þei ben untrewē dispencers of tresour þat þei feynen of God. And siþ a wastour of worldeli goodis shulde be blamyd of God and man, how myche a wastour of betere goodis is more for to blame; and moche more if a prelate feyne by ypocrisie þat he haþ power and witt, ȝovun of God to reule his Chirche, and doþ al amys<sup>1</sup> in þis, and sueþ not God ne his lawe. Certis, syche an ypocrite addiþ first a lesinge, and bi his feyned traitorie he lediþ amys Cristis sheep; and if wastinge of Goddis goodis be worse, þat þe goodis be betere, þis is worse wiþouten mesure þan wastinge of erþeli goodis. And ȝit men þat shulden be martris ben so smytun wiþ cowardise, þat þei deren not speke a word for riȝt bileve in þis matere; but þei constreynen men as bestis to bileve a fals-hede, þat þis prelate haþ power and witt of God to do þus. And whoever denyeþ þis he cursiþ hem, and pursueþ hem.

First þei begynnen wiþ þis:—þat he is hede of holi Chirche; and of þis þei bringen forþ more, þat God mut comune wiþ him his tresour; and where God haþ ordeyned to hide, wheþer men shal be saved or dampned, þese ypocritis seien þei witen wel þat þei ben heed of hooli Chirche, and þanne þei shulen be saif, and wite of Goddis privytees, which man he wole have saif, and how longe þis shal be in peyne. And so he woot<sup>2</sup> bi Goddis lore whanne þe dai of dome shal be, for he mai not for shame graunte pardon after þe dai of dome; for after þis daie ben but two places in which pardone mai be feyned, and in ne-

Their pre-  
sumptuous  
claims,

<sup>1</sup> So in E. A has *almys*.

<sup>2</sup> *wote*, E.

especially with regard to indulgences.

þer moun suche prelatiſ pardoun profite to men þat þer ben. And whanne þei graunten many þouſynd wynter of ſuch pardone, oþer þei witen, þat þiſ tyme ſhal be bifore þiſ dai, or ellis þiſ pardoun ſhal ſerve of nouȝt. Siȝ ben many blaſfeme leſingis feyned of popiſ and oþer prelatiſ; and whoſo reuerſiþ hem in Criſt he mai be martir if he dair; and betir cauſe of martirdom fynde we noon to Goddiſ ſeruauntis. For aſ meyntheyng of bileve iſ a cauſe of martirdome, ſo mayntenyng of þing not bileve ſhulde be reuerſid of Criſten men, for ellis miȝte al bileve be changid, eeld<sup>1</sup> put out, and newe brouȝt inne. For þei ſeien þiſ iſ bileve, þat þiſ iſ heed of holi Chirche, and what þing þat he feyneþ iſ performed of Criſt. And more perilouſ herieſie waſ never feyned of þe fend.

ON DAI OF MANY MARTRIS.

[SERMON LXX.]

*Attendite a fermento Phariſaeorum.*—LUC. xii. [1.]

Þiſ goſpel telliþ, aſ oþer hav don, how men ſhulen be confortid bi Criſt, and ſtonde in hiſ feiþ to deþ, for good þat ſhal come þerof. *Fle ȝe, ſeiþ Criſt, fro þe ſynne of Phariſeeſ, þat iſ ypocriſie.* For among oþer ſynnes þat þe comuns be blyndid bi, þiſ iſ oon of þe moſte þat rengneþ<sup>2</sup> in preſtiſ, boþe among prelatiſ and al maner religiouſ. For aſ Criſt likiþ mooſt in good werk and wilful, ſo þe fend likiþ mooſt in yvel werk and wilful. For aſ þe firſt mut nede be good, ſo þe toþer mut nede be yvel. And ſo men ſeien þat ypocriſie iſ falſ feynge of holynesse, and falliþ whanne evere a man feyneþ þat he haþ ſpiritual good of God, and he haþ not þiſ good, but ſynne for hiſ falſ feynge. And al if many ſpiritual goodiſ ben feyned of ypocriſiſ, neþeleſ holynesse and witt ben feyned more comunli; and bi þeſe two ben folk diſſeyved, in þing þat touchiþ ſouliſ helþe. And, for þiſ

The ſin of hypocrisy.

<sup>1</sup> olde, E.

<sup>2</sup> regneþ, E.

þing mai not be seen, and power of God is feyned to prelatiſ, þerfore þis synne is more hid, and more privily diſſeyveþ þe peple. And ſo þe fend caſt a long tyme to marre men in bileve, and bi þis errour bringe aftir<sup>1</sup> inne more ſynnes to blynde þe peple.

And ſiþ Criſt is holi treuþe, and ypocriſie is falſ feyning, it ſemeþ þat þis ypocriſie is moost ſynne aȝens Criſt. And ſo aſ lordiſ weren bifore tormentours of þe fend, ſo þeſ preſtiſ and Phariſeeſ ben tormentours of Anticriſt, and more falſeli diſſeyven þe peple, and more turmenten Criſtiſ ſervantiſ. And herfore Criſt biddiþ fle þis ſynne of Phariſeeſ. Criſt biddiþ attende hiſ lawe, þat iſ, biſili to perceyve it; and he biddiþ attende from falſe propheteſ; and þat telliþ two þingiſ, þat iſ, to perceyve Goddiſ lawe, and flee from falſhede feyned þerof. For we ſuppoſen þat in Goddiſ law iſ al treuþe þat iſ needful, and if þis feyned þing of ypocriſiſ were nedeful to Criſtene men, he wolde telle þat, aſ he doiþ oþer, but now he leveþ þat ypocriſiſ ſeien. And, for ypocriſiſ ben cautellouſ for to take men in wordiſ, þerfore Criſt biddiþ flee hem, and calliþ her ſynne ſour dow<sup>2</sup>; and riȝt aſ ſour dow<sup>3</sup> ſhendiþ þe dow<sup>3</sup> þat it to longe dwelliþ wiþ, ſo ſynne of þeſe Phariſeeſ ſhendiþ men þat conſenten to it. And wiſdom of water þat iſ feyned, ſtablið to hem bi longe tyme, confermeþ þis ſynne to men, and makeþ hem bileve amys<sup>4</sup>; and herfore biddiþ Poul to clenſe out þiſ old ſynne þat þei be new ſpringinge of flour, aſ þei ben clene in þe newe lawe. Criſt ordeynede in hiſ law alle hiſe children to be free, and flee riſe<sup>5</sup> of Phariſeeſ þat cumbren þe folk before. Loke we þat þiſ be not knodyn<sup>4</sup> wiþ uſ, but holde we uſ in þe whete flour, þat tauȝte uſ fulli Goddiſ lawe, and þe weie to come to hevене. Cunne we wel Goddiſ lawe, and loke wher Fariseiſ grounden hem in it; and if þei done not, flee we her ſentence aſ herēſie or fendiſ glewe<sup>5</sup>. And, for we ſhulden

as exemplified  
in the modern  
Pharisees,

1 Cor. v. 7.

<sup>1</sup> om. E.    <sup>2</sup> *dou*, E.    <sup>3</sup> *riȝtiſ*, E.    <sup>4</sup> *knoden*, E.    <sup>5</sup> *gleu*, E.

<sup>a</sup> The meaning ſeemſ to be:—aſ ‘ſour dow<sup>3</sup>,’ or leaven, iſ made from a mixture of pure flour with water, and, if left too long with freſh dough, ſpoilſ it,—ſo the doctrine of the hypocriteſ, being compounded,

partly of Chriſtian truth, partly of an unſound philoſophy of their own invention (‘wiſdom of water þat iſ feyned’), if it haſ eſtabliſhed itſelf firmly and for a long time in men’s mindſ, makeſ them ‘bileve amys.’

must be  
shunned.

examyne it bi þe flour of Goddis lawe, þerfore Crist biddiþ flee fro it whanne we witen þat it is ungroundid. And so men hav tauzt comunli þat men shulden not holde al gold þat shyneþ as gold, for many þingis ben fourboshid ful falseli. And so, but if Goddis lawe telle a feiþ, trowe it not, but fle it as falskede, and dispise þe techeris of it. And on þis wise spekiþ Crist to fle þis synne of Pharises, for it is not ynow3 men to be spoiled þus of her goodis; but worse it is to be spoild of bileve and oþer vertues. And if þis synne be now hid in soulis of ypo-critis, neþeles it shal be knowun at þe laste jugement of Crist; for he seiþ, *þat now3t is hilid þat ne it shal be shewid þanne, and noþing is privy now þat ne it shal be knowun þanne.* Alle false castis and her ententis, shulen be knowun þanne to þe world; and so riht trupis of Cristis disciplis shulen be seid þanne in list, al if þei doren not seien hem now opinli unto þe world.

And for sich cowardise in synne, þat many servantis speken in drede, Crist seiþ to his disciplis, *þat what þei hav seid in derknessis shal be seid þanne in list, and þat þei rowned<sup>1</sup> in erre<sup>2</sup> in beddis, shal be prechid upon housis.* And þus, as Crist haþ seid bifore, he hirtiþ<sup>3</sup> and confortiþ hise frendis, *to be not aferd of þese men þat mai oonli slee her bodi, and hav no more to ponishe hem,* neiþer in bodi ne in soule. For deed bodi feeliþ noo soore, and þe soule goiþ whidir is Goddis wille; for enemyes moun not cacche þe soule and ponishe it, as þe bodi. And þus seiþ Crist, *þat he shal shewe hem what lord þei shulen drede.* *Drede þe Lord of bodi and soule, þat after he haþ slawe<sup>4</sup> þe bodi, haþ power to sende boþe þe bodi and þe soule in to helle.* So, seiþ Crist, *Y seie to 3ou, drede 3e þis Lord þat haþ þis powir.* *Ne ben not fyve sparewis sold for a weihte of two ferþingis; and oon of hem so lytil of priis is not<sup>5</sup> forzetten to fore 3oure<sup>6</sup> Fadir?* Moche more God wole þenke upon hise owne childre here, þat tellen opynli his treuþe, and susteynen his lawe to men. And for surete of þis feiþ, Crist seiþ, as he seide bifore, *þat þe heeris of 3oure heed alle ben noumbrid unto God;* and þerfore Crist biddiþ hem not drede, *for þei ben betere þan many sparewis.*

<sup>1</sup> *ban rownyd*, E.    <sup>2</sup> *eren*, E.    <sup>3</sup> *bertiþ*, E.    <sup>4</sup> *slowen*, E.    <sup>5</sup> So in E; in A, the word, after being written, has been cancelled.    <sup>6</sup> *oure*, E.



*And þus I seie to you, seiþ Crist, þat ech man þat confessiþ me bifore men, 3he, if he die, I shal confesse him bifore Goddis aungelis, how he was trewe servant to God.*

And here men douten comunli of bileve of Cristene men; it semeþ þat þe pope mai ordeyne lawe even wiþ Goddis lawe, siþ he ponishiþ more for his lawe, þan he ponishiþ for Goddis lawe, and oþer he doeþ wrong in þis, or his lawe is betere þan þe firste. But who dar seie þat he doiþ wrong in such ponishinge for lawis? Also þe pope mai ordeyne sum lawe, as done Princis of þis worlde; but whi mai he not make as many as him likiþ to profite to þe Chirche?—what ert þou þat settist a mark þat he mai make þese, and no moo? For bi þis same skill he was longe siþen at his mesure, and þus shulden<sup>1</sup> him faille power now to reule þe Chirche bi his lawe. Also, ellis we diden amys in singinge, and in service seiynge, and so in al þat we doen, siþ we taken þis of þe pope; and þus in lower prelat moten we graunten siche power, for ellis failide obedience, and alle þes ordris þat ben newe. Here men seien þat popis and bishopis and oþer men mai make lawis, so þat þei acorden wiþ Goddis lawe, and sumwise ben in Goddis lawe, for þus þei techen Goddis lawe more opinli þan it was tauzt bifore. But, for boþe errour and pride suen ofte tymes to þis dede, þerfore seintis after Crist helden hem paied on Cristis lawis; for if þei weren executid, þei weren sufficient and ynow<sup>3</sup>. But newe turnyng of Anticrist to newe office in þe Chirche, mut nede bringe in newe lawis, and putte Cristis lawe abak; and þus seiþ þe Psalm of Anticrist, þat God shal putte a maker of lawe, and reule hem after her coveitise biside þe lawe þat Crist haþ ordeyned.

And þis mai ben opynli seen in benefices departid to men, and newe ordris þat now ben maad, to greet chargis of Cristis Chirche. But folk shulde knowe þat þei ben men, and holden hem paied of Cristis boundis; for if þei ben reulid by resoun, Cristis lawe is best, and ynow<sup>3</sup>, and oþer lawis men shulden not take, but as braunchis of Goddis lawe. And herfore biddiþ bileve to men, neþer adde to, ne draw fro;

On the limits of the right of the Pope to legislate for the Church.

Ps. cix. 6?

Christ's law is best, and is sufficient.

<sup>1</sup> schulde, E.

and if þei done, God cursiþ hem, and in þis cursing hav many men ben depid bi long tyme. And þus is ordenance of Crist put abak, and newe brouȝt inne. Ne it falliþ not to us to justifie þes newe officis, ne to defende þat þei ben leueful, alle þe dedis þat prelatis done; for it is ynow<sup>3</sup> to us to cunne and declare Goddis lawe, and shewe þat it were ynow<sup>3</sup>, if oþer lawis weren aweie; and so amende by Goddis lawe þe ordris þat weren maad by Crist, and not for synne of þes ordris to bringe in newe ordris to hem. For alle moten lyve on þe peple<sup>a</sup>; and þe secounde ben þe worse, siþ betere were bi Cristis lawe to amende men of his ordre, þan to putte more unstable ordris, and algatis worse to þe Chirche. But litil errour bringiþ inne more, and at þe laste goiþ al doun; and herfore boundis of Cristis ordenaunce shulde be holde of alle men. And it falliþ not to us to assoile þese fresshe resouns, þat þus þe Chirche doiþ amys in many þingis þat it defendiþ.

IN DAI OF MANY MARTRIS.

[SERMON LXXI.]

*Sedente Jesu super montem Olyveti.*—MATTHEW xxiv. [3.]

In þis gospel telliþ Crist how hise membris shulen be pursued, and what perils þei shal be inne for holdinge wiþ him and his lawe. Þe gospel telliþ first, *how Jesus sat on þe Mounte*

<sup>a</sup> *alle moten lyve on þe peple.*] There was a growing feeling in England towards the end of the fourteenth century, that the monastic and mendicant fraternities were becoming so numerous as to form a serious burden on the industry of the country. Besides direct statements to that effect, such as the passage in the text, and others that might be gathered from the *Vision of Piers Plowman*, there is an exquisite piece of irony in Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*, which really says the same thing, though in such forms as became the

tender and tolerant genius of the large-minded poet. In the prologue to her tale, the Wife of Bath, after saying that England was once 'ful-filled of faerie,' adds,—

I speke of many hundred yeres ago;  
But now can no man see non elves no;  
For now the grete charitee and prayers  
Of luntoures and other holy freres,  
That serchen every land and every streme,  
As thikke as motes in the sunne-beme,  
Blissing halles, chambres, kitchenes, and boures,  
Citees and burghes, castles high and toures,  
Thropes and bernes, shepenes and daires,  
This makith that ther ben no faeries:  
For ther as wont to walken was an elf,  
Ther walketh now the luntour himself,  
In undermeles and in morweingnes,  
And sayth his mattres and his holy thinges,  
As he goth in his luntatoun.

of *Olyvete*, and he wiþ hise disciplis spaken of þe makinge of þe temple, and how al þis shulde be distried, and how þe dai of dome shulde come, and of many þingis þat shulden be, as þe gospel telliþ bifore.

And þus telliþ þis gospel, *how Cristis disciplis comen priuyli; and axiden him of þese þingis, and what tyme þei shulden falle, and bi what signes men shulden wite þat Crist shulde come to þe jugement.* For bi þis myzten þei knowe *whanne þis world shulde be eendid.* But Jesus answeride and seide to hem þingis þat weren betere for hem to cunne; and bi þis answeere moun we se how curioustie of science or unskilful coveitise of cunnynge, is to dampne. For riȝt as coveitise of man is yvel sett for erþeli goodis, so coveitise of cunnynge, þat profitiþ not to come to blisse. For man mai disuse cunnynge to his harm, as Poul seiþ, but if men coveiten to plesse God and profite in charite. And in suche comune desiris mai not a man synne; but, as comun þing is ofte soþe, whanne þe singuler is fals, so it falliþ ofte tyme of comun witt and comune wille. And þus techiþ Crist here men, to knowe treuþe for her profit.

And þis is a comun synne among men now on lyve, for þei tellen more priis bi lawe, civile or canoun, to cunne hem or oþer jappis<sup>1</sup>, þan to cunne Goddis lawe; and for sich wrong cunnynge comeþ harm to many men. And many prelatis, for coveitise setten her wille on sich cunnynge, for þei ben out of bileve, and coveiten more worldli muk þan Goddis worship, or hevenli bliss. And þis is a grevous synne, boþe among prelatis and comuns, for þis synne makþ hem rude and unable to Goddis lawe, and unable in wille and maneres to lyve wel as Godd<sup>2</sup> biddiþ. And herfore seien sum men, þat þe pope and his lawe ben cursid for sum part, for þei loven not Cristis lawe, but avaunsen and loven men þat holde wiþ his rotun lawe. For as men loven Jesus Crist, so shulden men love his lawe. But Poul seiþ, If ony man love not Crist, cursid be he; and þis cursinge is more þan any oþer prelatis cursinge. And for þis cursinge seien sum men þat

The sin of unchastened curiosty.

1 Cor. viii. 1.

which makes the canon law more prized than the law of Christ.

1 Cor. xvi. 22

<sup>1</sup> jappis, E

<sup>2</sup> God, E.

þe pope is more ypocrite, for he makþ him Cristis felowe, and seiþ he is 'moost holi fadir.' But Crist wole þat þis fole wite not wheþer he be a fend or not; and þis is moost ypocrisie, and moost azens skile. For what cause shulde meve þe pope to make him clepid moost blessid fadir, siþ neþer truþe ne leve of God moveþ þat he is ouzt blessid? But to morewe, whanne he is deed, ceessiþ þis ypocritis name, for he hirþ his name, and þe hire goeþ wiþ his deþ; neþeles, if he were blessid, he shulde be more blessid after his deþ. Alle þe ypocritis in Cristis tyme dursten not speke so greet blasfemye, and of þis ypocrisie ben many oþer falshedis coloured.

The 'false Christs' of the gospel paralleled in the present hierarchy.

*But Crist seiþ to hise disciplis, þat þei shulden loke þat noon discyveden hem;* and speciali in bileve for þis knowing is more nedeful, and þis peril shulde be beter fled for þe word þat Crist seiþ aftir: *Many shulen come in my name, and seie þat, I am Crist, for 3e shulen heere batels and opynyons of batels.* For now in tyme of oure popis ben many opynyouns of batels, siþ ech lond haþ opynyoun to fiȝt for his pope; and pseudo clerkes and freris seien þat preestis shulden fiȝten sounest. And sich disseit was not herd siþ þe tyme þat Crist was born, and certeinli it haþ ben gaderid of eelde synne of many popis. Crist is a comune name to preestis þat ben anointid of God, but Crist takun by himsilf bitokeneþ oon passage oþer, as þe pope passiþ oþere preestis, boþe in witt and power, and algatis in holynesse, as he makþ men to seie. But Crist seiþ *þat such Cristis shulen disseyven many men;* and no prophecie is soþer, ne more to note of trewe men, siþ þis disseit of Anticrist is moost perilous of oþer.

*But Crist confortiþ hise disciplis, and biddiþ hem loke þat þei be not troublid; for þese þing moten be, but not 3it is þe eende.* For of þis rote of striif, shal folk fiȝte azens folk, as Sarasynis azens Latyns, þat clepen hem Cristene men; *and rewme shal fiȝte azens rewme,* as we seen now at iȝe. And pride of þis cursid rote is cause of þis fiȝtinge, for if þe empire were hool, and lordshipes of oþer rewmes, so þat þei weren not cursidli partid among clerkes,—þanne wolde God move seculars to lyve in pees, as he haþ bedun hem. But siþ God seiþ in his lawe, þat hise preestis shulden

not be lordis, þe pope and hise holden þis lordship aȝens þe law and wille of God, and more opinli myȝte no fend aȝentonde God and his ordenance. But Joob axiþ, who ever aȝentstood God, and hadde pees in him silf? And of þes harmes comen aftir *pestilencis and hungriſ*, as it is seid, and *alle þes bigynyngis of ſorewiſ*, þat ſhal be boþe here and in helle. *Þanne ſhulen þei put ȝou to turmente*, and oþer þat wolen stonde wiþ truþe. *And after þei ſhulen ſlee ȝou, and ȝe ſhulen be in hate to alle folk for my name*. And herfore haþ þe fend ordeyned to ſende curroures of hise leſingis to diuerſe rewmes and men, and move hem by hise tipingis; and þus ben rewmes troublid, and men ſclaundrid and diſſeyved. And herfore seiþ Crīst, *þat þanne many ſhulen be ſclaundrid, and ſhal bitraie hem togidir; and oon ſhal hate anoþer, and many pseudo profetis ſhulen riſe and ſhulen diſceyve manye*. And þis ſemeþ to many men to be ſeid of false freris. And, *for wickedneſſe ſhal be plentenous boþe bifore and þanne, þe charite of many men ſhal þanne wexe cold; but he þat laſtiþ to þe eende ſhal be ſaiſ bi God*.

And here it ſemeþ to many men, þat Crīst ſpak of þis tyme, in which þes two popis fiȝten þus togidir; for siþ Crīst is al witti, and loveþ wel his Chirche, and telliþ in Apocalips of many leſſe perils, whi ſhulde he not tell of þis þat is ſo perilous? And clerkis hav a rule, þat a word ſeid bi himſilf ſhulde be underſtonden for þe more famous. Wel Y woot þat many preeſtis hav comen in Crīſtis name, and ech ſeide þat, I am Crīst, but noon oþer as þe pope; and herfore seiþ Crīst in þe ſame chapter, þat þere ſhal be þanne greet tribulacioun, what maner was never fro þe begynnyge of þe world to now, and ſhal not be after. For bodili turment is now ful greet, whanne oo pope ſendiþ biſhopis and many men to ſle many men, wymen, and children, and for þe toþer pope comen many aȝens hem; and cauſe of þis fiȝtinge is a fendis cauſe, for no man of erþe woot wheþer of þes popis be a fend to be dampnyd in helle, or ellis þei boþe. And bileve techiþ us þat Crīst reproveide Petir, for he wolde ſave hiſ liif, þat was beter þan þes boþe, and made him put up hiſ ſwerd, and ſuffride pacientli, whanne he miȝte wiþ a word have venciſid

Job ix.

May not the words of the gospel be a prophecy of the present schiſm?

hem alle. And Crist techiþ bi word þe maner of a good herde, how he puttiþ his owne liif for his sheep; and so of bileve he is Anticrist þat puttiþ many þousynd lyves for his owne foule liif. And however Anticrist speke here, it is opynli Cristis lawe þat men shulden not fiȝte þus, ne for sich a cause; for ȝif þe pope shal be dampned, as God woot wheþer þei boþ shal, þanne men fiȝten for falskede in cause of a fend; and sich a cause was never herd so opynli azens treuþe.

But gretter tribulacioun is in dampnyng of soulis, which ben in false bileve of þes ypocritis; for boþe sitten in Goddis temple and seien þei ben Cristis vikeris and hav more power þan even Crist hadde. For Crist had no power to graunte sich asoiling, and lyve on siche maner, as þes popis done. And so in many pointis þes popis feynen falseli þat þei passen in power oure Lord Jesus Crist. But Crist biddiþ his children to trowe not here neþer þe ferþer ne þe nerrer, but reste in oolde bileve. And not oonli where men fiȝten is þis persecucion, but in fer cuntreis bitwixe contrarie parties. And so, if men tellen Goddis lawe opinli in þis matter, how men shulden not fiȝte þus, but reste in old bileve, þe fend haþ many proctours to pursue siche men; and so, siþ consente is evene wiþ þe dede, þe more part of men is partener in þis dede. Many oþere wordis seiþ Crist in þis chapitre which mai be applied to þis tribulacion; but oo word of confort telliþ Crist here, þat þe daies shal be abreggid of þis fel pursuyng, for men þat ben chosen unto blisse of hevene. Oþer men þat have tyme to expowne þis chapitre<sup>1</sup>, and ben tauȝte of God, and meved for to telle it, and speciali ȝif þei seen þe dede acorde wiþ þe speche, mai telle more of Cristis wordis here. But holde we us in bileve, of which we ben certain.

<sup>1</sup> *capitule*, E.

The danger to souls from the present state of things is the greatest of all.

THE GOSPEL OF MANY MARTIRS.

## [SERMON LXXII.]

*Nolite arbitrari.*—MATT. x. [34.]

Dis gospel techiþ men how þei shal riȝtfulli love God, and makij martirs hardi to suffre for Cristis sake. And, for many ben cowardis to suffre in Cristis cause, and seien þat it is wisdom to lyve here in pees, and entermete not<sup>1</sup> of þingis þat wolen greve men, þefore biddij Crist his children *not to jage þat he cam to sende sich pees here in erþe. He cam not to sende sich pees but swerd.* Þis swerd semeþ to many men not material swerd, or bodili fiȝtinge, þat Crist techiþ here, but wise wordis boþe of reпреef<sup>2</sup> and pacience, and suffringe for truþe, ȝif þat deef falle; for comunli in holy writt is swerd clepid word. And þis is a swerd sharpe on boþe sidis, boþe to kerve away synne, and to nurishe virtues, for sich a swerd of wordis kerveþ and departij, and so plantij love, and puttij out cowardise. And for witt of þis gospel shulden men first undirstonde, þat boþ pees and discord is on two maneres. First is veri pees bitwixe God and man; þe secounde is acord bitwixe man and his enemye. As, if þe fend and þi fleish and þe world acorde togidir, sich acord is clepid pees, al ȝif it be aȝens God; and þus on two maneres is taken striif or discord. Þis secounde is clepid pees, likyng to þe fleish, and ȝit it is to a man venymous discord. And of þis pees spekiþ Crist, þat he cam not to sende it, but discord and fiȝting aȝens sich pees. And þus seiþ Crist *þat he cam to parte a man aȝens his fadir.* For he techiþ how a soule shulde more love God þan ouȝte ellis; and so love þat man shulde hav to God shulde passe love and lawe of kinde, for al siche kyndeli love shulde serve to þe love of God. *And so Crist cam to parte þe douȝter aȝens her modir;* and þat he doij whanne fleishli wille holdij wiþ God aȝens þe fleish, as

In what sense  
Christ came  
not to send  
peace but  
a sword.

<sup>1</sup> *entermete men not, E.*<sup>2</sup> *reproue, E.*

þei þat taken worldli fode ever in resoun, to serve God, and not to lustli fede þe fleish, for likyng þat is þerinne. Þe þridde tyme seiþ Crist, *he cam to departe þe housebondis broþer azens his wyves sister*; and þat is done whan love of manhede of Crist puttij awei fleishli workis. And þus not oonli fleishli fadir but goostli fadir shulde be left, whanne þei ben azens God, for þat love shulde be kyng. 3he, 3if þi pope or þi bishop or þi persoun bidde þee do þat God biddij þee not do, leve hem þanne and holde wijþ God. And we mai not seie to þes, þat þei mai not erre, ne be azens mannis soule, siþ þei ben put to reule it;—certis so ben many þingis put bi kynde to helpe and reule, and 3it yvel custom of mannis enemy mai turne hem to anoie þe soule, much more þes þree fadris<sup>a</sup> þat ben more strange fro<sup>1</sup> man. And þus seiþ Crist, þat mannis enemyes ben his owne homely; for more enemyes haþ no man þan is lust þat sueþ his fleishe, and moche more þes þree fadris, þat shulden helpe man to hele of soule. For ech þing þat lettij þis hele, and bringij in siknes of soule, is enemy to þis man, 3he, more þan he þat sleep his bodi.

And to shewe þat al pis reule stondij in skilful love of God, seiþ Crist moreover, *þat whoso loveþ his fadir or modir more þan Crist, he is not worþi of him*, for he is not worþi to have Crist in hevene, boþe God and broþer. And so bi reule þat Crist 3yveþ here, boþe fleishli fadir and modir shulde be lesse loved þan Crist, and if þei stireden azens Crist þei shulden be left, and dispisid, and moche more þes oþer fadirs þat ben more strange to men. As, 3if þi pope or þi bishop or þi persoun bidde þee fiþte or 3yve him of þi goodis azens þe resoun þat Crist haþ 3ovun, dispise hem utterli, and holde þe reule þat Crist techij; and ever flee þis heresie, þat þes fadirs mai not erre here. And to þis witt seiþ Crist after, *þat he þat loveþ his sone or douzter more þan Crist, is not worþi of him*; and þis is soþ of fleishli children and of workes þat þe soule doij, for summe ben workes of þe soule, and summe workes of þe fleishe. And ofte tymes in boþe þes errij a man fro þe reule of treuþ, as ofte tymes is a mannis soule occupied to

Human authority and affection to be despised if they clash with the law and love of Christ.

<sup>1</sup> to, E.

<sup>a</sup> Namely, a man's pope, bishop, and parish priest.



lerne and teche worldli lawis; and God biddiþ þat his law shulde be tauzt bifore þese. And þes men loven more her sones, þan þei loven Jesus Crist;—for it is oon to love him, and in dede to love his lawe; and so whoso loveþ better goode gobetis, or lustli<sup>1</sup> workes þan he loveþ dedis of Crist, he loveþ more his owne douzter þan he loveþ þis holi abbot. And þus, he brekiþ his ordre for defaute of skilful love.

And, for þis love is shewid in dede, and speciali in mannis suffringe, þerfore seiþ Crist afterward, þat *he þat takiþ not his crosse, and sueþ him, is not worþi of him.* It is seid ofte tymes bifore, þat þis cros þat Crist spekiþ of is redynesse of mannis wille to suffre for Cristis sake, boþe to dispise alle erþeli þingis þat stretchiþ doun to þe erþe, þat is þe stok of þis crosse, and to dispise alle frendshipis boþe of kyn and of þe worlde,—and þes ben clepid two armis of þis crosse. And þanne mannis love lokip freeli to hise Jesu above him; and defaute of þis cros bringiþ men alle maner of synne. And þis is cause whi men now ben not martirs as þei weren wont; for a man shulde weie<sup>2</sup> þis love, and loke þat he hadde þis crosse, and suede Crist in wille and dede, redi to suffre for his sake:—but what clerk wole not now leeve þe treuþe of Goddis lawe, ouþer for love of his fleish, or for love of þe world. And cause of þis defaute in love is scatering of mannis love; for men loven cloutid ordris, and þat lettiþ moche love of Crist; and sum men loven worldli worschippis, and worldly<sup>3</sup> lordshipis þat bringen hem inne; and sum men loven worldli goodis, boþe for worshipis<sup>4</sup> of þe world and for lustis of her fleish. And sich shenden Cristis ordre. And herfore Crist forbede his preestis siche lordshipis, and siche goodis, for he woolde þat her love were hooli gaderid in him. And ech man, boþ knyzt and clerk, shulde be bisi to kepe þis lawe, and make oþer to kepen it; or ellis þei loven not Jesus Crist. And what man þat haþ þis cros, and seeþ Cristis lawe reversid, shulde putte him forþ for love of Crist, and fihte wiþ swerd of wise wordis, and telle to men, as Joon Baptist, þat it is not leueful to lyve þus? And siþ ech

We must take up the cross.

Absence of a spirit of martyrdom.

Causes of this.

<sup>1</sup> *lusty*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *weyze*, F.

<sup>3</sup> So E: A om. *worschippis and worldly*.

<sup>4</sup> *worschip*, E.

man schulde fizte þus wiþ him þat doip azens Goddis lawe, sich a synner wolde þenke anon þat he moste do oon of þes two; or to sle siche a man, þat meveþ þus azens his wille, or ellis to amenden his lyf, as it is tauzt bi Cristis lawe. And þus shulden sum men ben martris, and sum mennis lyf be amendid. But charite of manye is woxen cold, and þat makip þe Chirche bareyne; for litil fruyt growip in wynter, for coldnesse þat is þanne.

And þus seiþ Crist afterward, þat, *Who þat hap founden his liif shal lese it, and he þat leseþ his lyf for me, shal afterwarde fynde it in blis.* Þis sentence seiþ Crist ofte to meve hise martiris to sue him, for no man myzte lerne here better chaffare or merchandise. For lese þi liif here for God in þe tyme þat is now present, and þou shalt trowe to fynde þy liif aftirward in blisse of hevene. And bileve mot grounden þis dede; for, as Poul seiþ, bi þis wrouzten martiris. And þus failen now in men, feiþ, hope, and charite. And, for men shulden not forsake to holden þis reule þat Crist zeveþ here, for drede of worldli sustynance, þat þe world schulde faile hem, herfore seiþ Crist to hise disciplis, *þat, who ever resseyveþ hem resseyveþ him and his Fadir þat hap sent him, and who resseyveþ a prophete in þe name of a profete shal resseyve mede of a profete.* And so it is of oþer vertues. *And he þat resseyveþ a just man, in þe name of þe first juste man, he shal take mede of his juste man; and who ever zeve oo of þe leste of þes in name of disciple of Crist, zhe, a drauzt of cold water, sobeli Crist seiþ to us, þat he shal not lese his mede.* And þis vertue of Cristis wordis shulde meve men to helpe goode preestis, and to zyve hem of worldeli þingis, to done her office þat Crist biddip; for Crist mai not faile in wordis ne in dedis þat he hap ordeyned. For ouper defaute is in þe prestis, or her peyne is profitable; as sum maken a newe reule to charge þe peple in noumbre and spensis. And þes men moten nedis falle<sup>1</sup> in peyne of her former synne; and þus cam in begginge and lying and failing of trewe preching. And to þes men shulden noon zyve goodis in name of Crist, as he biddip here, for þei reversen Crist as his enemyes, and traveilen not in name of him.

The messengers of Christ are to be received and helped.

Heb. xi. 32-40

<sup>1</sup> fayne, E.

ÞE GOSPEL OF MANY MARTRIS.

[SERMON LXXIII.]

*Egressus Jesus de Templo.*—MATT. xxiv. [1.]

Þis gospel tellip, as oþer bifore, how men shulden lyve in þis world, and suffre persecucioun þat mut nedis falle here. Þe story tellip, þat Jesu wente out of þe temple, and his disciplis camen after him, to shewe him þe making of þe temple; for it was fallinge to his wordis þat he hadde seid bifore to þe peple, to wite, what Crist felide of þis making of þe temple. *But Crist answeride and seid to hem; Se 3e alle þes. Sobeli, Y seie to 3ou þat here shal not be a stoon lefte upon anoþer undistryed.* And þis þing was fulfillid, wiþinne fifty 3eer after, for þe secunde and forty yeer after þat Crist was steied to hevене cam two princis of Rome, Titus and Vaspasian, and ensegiden þe citee, whan it was ful of men at þe feste of Paske, as Crist tolde bifore bi Luke. And þis oost envyrounede þis citee on ech side, and lettide þe peple to go out, and slewe þe folk, and at þe laste toke þe cite; and þanne was þe temple distroied, and al þe citee was turnid, so þat þe mount of Calvarie was sette fer wiþinne þe citee, whan it was bifore wiþouten. And so was not a stoon left upon anoþer undistroied, for all þe citee and þe temple weren turned to make newe citee. And bi þes wordis men taken þat Crist tolde litil by þe temple, or ony siche workes of crafte þat passen þe state of innocence; for clene liif wiþouten siche is beter to Crist þan siche churchis. Alle siche profiten not, but in as moche as þei helpen þe peple to heere Goddis word, and betere þere to preie God; and þis is comunli betere don in þe eire under hevене, but ofte tyme, in reyny wedir, chirchis don good on halidai. And þus curiuste of foolis is ungroundid by Goddis lawe. *And whanne Crist sat on þe hill of Olyvete, þe disciplis comen and axiden Crist, to telle hem whanne þis shuldc be, and whanne shulden be þe daie of dome.* But Crist tolde hem of sounere perils, þat was betere hem to knowe, and lefte þis þing hid to hem, as it is told bifore.

Christ foretells  
the destruction  
of Jerusalem.

Three things  
hidden from  
men.

And so men seien þat þree þingis wole God have hid to men. God wole þat tyme of deþ be comunli unknowun to men, and whanne þe daie of dome shal be. For men shulden ever more wake, and kepe hem from peril of synne, siþ þei witen never whanne God hall come; so þat whanne he come he fynde hem redi to take þe jugement of God. For servauntis shulden biden þe Lord, and not þe Lord abide hise servauntis; but whanne ful tyme is comen to God, þanne falliþ him to make amende. And siþ God wole þat his tyme be hid, þei synnen gretli þat traveilen here to knowe þis tyme, and leven oþer þing þat God wole þat men knowen and done; and þus, as it is seid bifore, popis ben gretli to blame þat menen þat þei shulden knowe þis dai, bi fool<sup>1</sup> granting þat þei graunten<sup>a</sup>. Þe þridde þing þat God wole have hid to men is pryvte of his ordenance, wheþer God have ordeyned to save þes men, or ellis to dampne hem for her synne. And cause of þis is as bifore, for men shulden ever be redi to God, and ever serve þis Lord in drede, lest he dampne men at þe laste. And þus many men synnen in God azens his firste comandement, þat wolen not rise out of her synne, but dwelle þerinne, and chese<sup>2</sup> a tyme; for Crist seiþ to false men þat he is Lord, 3he of tyme.

And þus seiþ Crist, *þat of þat daie no man knoweþ in þis liif, but aloonli þe Fadir of Hevene*<sup>3</sup>, and two oþer persones of þe Fadir; for þing proprid to þe Godhede is þus aproprid to þe Fadir. And herbi it is not denyed to þe two Persones aftir. But 3if it acorde to þe Fadir, in as moche as He is God, it mut nedis acorde to þe Sone, and also to þe Hooli Goost, siþ þei ben þe same God. But it falliþ not þus to aungels, ne to ony oþer creature, for in þat þat þei ben, þei ben divers from her God. And þus, whan þe Fadir haþ ony þing in þat þat he is God, þe Sone and þe Holi Goost hav comunli þis same þing, siþ it is comune and propre to hem for to be þe same God. And

<sup>1</sup> *foole*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *cbesen hem*, E.

<sup>3</sup> So E; no italics in A.

<sup>a</sup> No indulgence could conceivably be of any avail, except in the interval between death and the day of judgment; the writer means therefore, that by granting indulgences for specified terms of years, the

popes did in effect assert the possession of a knowledge respecting the time of the day of judgment which Scripture expressly denies to all men.

We have  
knowledge  
enough to  
guide our  
lives.

þus þe general undirstonding of þe laste dai of dome shulde be knowe unto men, and special knowinge shulde be hid, and whanne and how it shal be. And þerfore Cristen men ben apaied in knowing of Goddis lawe, for þat is ynow<sup>3</sup> to hem, and þerafter þei shulden lyve. And 3if þei ben idil from þis knowinge, God wole axe ful streite acountis. So 3if a lord al witty as God 3af a man al þat he hadde, in noumbre and mesure and in weizte, to serve þis lord after þes goodis, þis lord wolde seie to þis servant, þat axide more þan were 3now<sup>3</sup>: Servant, holdist þou me a fool? how usist þou þat þat þou hast? ne have Y not 3ove þee 3now<sup>3</sup> of cunyng nedeful to þee? And moche cuninge hast þou hid, and puttist it not in werk; and þou shuldist wite þat þee were better to worche after þis cuninge þan for to have newe cunninge, and þus to be idil wiþ þis God is þis lord þat mesuriþ man bi cuninge þat he 3yveþ to him, and wole þat man worche after þis cuninge; and þus shal man occupie him, and not aboute newe cunnyng, and leve þe work þat he shulde do. And þus synnede<sup>1</sup> oure firste fadris, bi byheste þat þe fend hihte hem, þat þei shulden not die to ete þus, but be as Goddis, knowing good and yvel; and þus synneþ ech man þat is slow in Goddis service, for he leeevþ to putte in work þe witt þat God haþ 3ovun him, and languishþ after a newe cunninge þat comeþ of his idilnesse; and þis is a sinful ende, þat mote nede bring in peyne. And so we synnen comunli here bi þe firste synne of þe fend, and aþens þe witt of God, as 3if we wolden be al cunnyng. Þenke what witt þou hast of God, in which þou art now ydil, and putt wiseli þat witt in work, and holde þee paied of Goddis grace; for ellis þou takist þis grace in veyn, and runnest in dett aþens þi God.

And þis is a comune synne in prelati, boþe more and lasse; for God haþ 3ovun hem witt in mesure, how þei shulden profite to his Chirche, and þei disusen ofte þis tresour, and languishen after witt as fendis; for þe presumen and tempten God, and graunten pardoun for longe tyme, and þei witen never where God haþ ordeyned þat þis pardon mai stonde bi him. And þus if men wolden wel examyne dedis ungroundid in holi witt, þei

Abuse of indulgences.

<sup>1</sup> *synneden*, E.

shulden shame of þes dedis, how þei ben aʒens God. Trowe we not, þat Petre wiste how he shulde spende Goddis tresour, and how he shulde after, wiþ Goddis goodis, do profite unto his Chirche? Who dar putt on Petre þis synne, þat he was negligent in þis, þat he sparide Goddis tresour, þe which popis profiten wiseli now? And þis shulden alle men, but algatis prelatiſ, overſe her aſtait and her liif, wheþer it be acordinge to Goddis lawe or after customes of þe fend, and contynue þing wel don, and mende þat is amys. And siche a rekenyng shulde a man make ech dai wiþ him silf, for þis is a comun word þat many seintis have in mouþ;—ech tyme þat God haþ ʒouun þee, God wole axe ful sharpli how þou hast dispendid it; wel in his service, or amys. And þis rekenyng shulde ech man drede, but speciali þes hiʒe preestis; for her office is more perilous, and more medeful ʒif it be wel. Þefore is nede hem to wite what dedis þat þei shulden do, and algatis faile not in her work, for peril þat wole come þerof; siþ synne of hem turneþ to harm of many sheep þat þei shulden kepe.

The pastoral  
office three-  
fold.

And howeuer þat men feynen her office, it is toold in Cristis lawe, how þei shulden be occupied in þre officis of shepherdis. Þei shulden wiseli lede her sheep in sound pasture of Goddis lawe, and þe sheep þat weren scabbid heelen, and stablen in good liif, and algatis putte her liif to save her sheep aʒens wolves. And þes herdis shulden flee sich tyme, in which þeeves sleen þe sheep, and coveiten more þe wole of hem, and þe donge, wiþ oþer goodis, þan þei coveiten her soule helþe; for þis is a wolvis entent, and ʒif þei taken þus þe office of herde, þei ben wolves at þe bigynnyng. And so þis tyme is wasted to hem, in which þei traveilen, for her hie stait, or for coveitise of richesſe or ony oþer þing oþer þan Goddis worship, or oþer þan profite of her sheep bi þe reulis of Goddis lawe. And þus if þei hiden Goddis lawe, and hiʒen her owne lawe for þis eende, þei lesen her tyme to þer dampnyng, and to harmyng of her sheep. Sich þing shulden þes herdis þenken; for þei moten nedis reken wiþ God, siþ tyme is a precieuse tresour, þat God ʒeveþ to spende wel. And tyme shal comen whanne we dien, þat we hadden lever to have a dai þan al þe worship or richesſe þat hav fallen us in þis world. And þanne our judgement shall

be hool, and wille a þing after þat it is good. Siche oversiȝt of oure lyf, and speciali of hiȝe prelatiȝ helpiþ þis Chirche, and makip hem to drede God and serve him<sup>1</sup>.

OF MANY MARTRIS.

[SERMON LXXIV.]

*Dicebat Jesus turbis<sup>2</sup> Judeorum.*—LUC. xi. [29.]

Þis gospel telliþ what prelatiȝ shulden do, and whereof þei shal be reproved. And þis wole bringe in martirdom, boþe in o man and in anoþer. And þus is told of martirdom þe begynnyng and þe ende. Crist spake here to princis of prestis and to þe comuns of Jewis, for in boþe þes was þe kynrede which slowȝ þes martirs. Þer ben two kynredis þat Crist spekiþ ofte of, þe kynrede of Goddis children, and kynrede of fendis children; and at þe bigynnyng of þis world bigan þes two kynredis. Þe firste kynrede of martirs bigan in a man at Abel; þe secounde kynrede toke bigynnyng at Cayn; and þes two kynredis shal not faile bifore þe dai of dome come. Þe laste seint þat shal lyve here shal be of þe firste kynrede, and þe laste þat shal be dampned shal be of þe toþer kynrede; and þes kynredis ben scatirid among many folke, ne þei gone not bi lyne of blood, but bi medling<sup>3</sup> bi lynes of kynde. But þe firste kynrede hadde bigynnyng bifore þe toþer, for it bigan at Adam, siþ Adam is saved. Þe toþer began at Adames sone, þat slowȝ þe firste martir. But, for Adam was not martir, þus slayn for Goddis love, and martirs ben þe moste and beste þat ben in þis kynrede, þerfore it is marked to begynne at Abel; for þe toþer kynrede was sum maner cause of þis forþer. And, as many men supposen, aboute þe daie of dome shal þis firste longe lyve here, whanne þe toþer shal be aweie; for bi vertue of Crist, þat is begynnyng and endinge, shal men þikke turne to him, and leeve þe fend wiþ hiȝe workes.

The kindred of  
God's children  
and the kin-  
dred of the  
devil's children.

<sup>1</sup> *serven him wel*, E  
E reads *ben medlid*.

<sup>2</sup> So in E; A has *turbas*.

<sup>3</sup> For *bi medling*

John xvi. 2.

But leve we now þis mater, and sue we þe storie of þe gospel. Crist grette þis kynrede and seide; *Woo be to zou þat maken þe graves of prophetis, and zoure fadris killiden hem. Certis ze beren witnesse þat ze consenten to her workes;* for al ȝif þei killiden hem and ze maken faire her sepulcris, nepeles ze wolen kille Crist, þat is heed of martiris. And bi þis polishing, ze tellen ȝour ipocrisie, bi which ze florishen ȝoure synne in killinge of martiris; for, as Crist seiþ to þis kyn, þei demen in þis to obeishe to God. And Caiphaz þat ȝaf ȝou conceil seide, it helpiþ o man to die<sup>1</sup> for þe folk; but al if þese wordis weren soþ, ȝit þis ypocrite seide hem falseli; and so þis kynrede bi her ypocrisie telde how þei wolden kille Crist. And þus seiþ Crist here; *ȝoure fadris killiden þes prophetis, and ze bilden her sepulcris,* as who seide, we wolen amende; but as Crist seiþ bi Matheu, þei þenken þei wolen fille þe mesure of þat þat her fadris bigan, in killinge of þe heed of prophetis. And herfore telliþ Crist to hem, how þe wisdom of God seide of þis kyn; *I shal sende to hem prophetis and apostlis, and of þese shal þei boþe pursue and kille.* Þe Jewis killiden not alle þe apostlis, for Joon was not þus killid, but þei killiden James, and pursueden oþer in oþer contreis: *so þat þe blood of alle prophetis, fro þe begynnyng of þe world, be souzt of þis kynrede,* siþ þis haþ done hem alle to deþ, *fro þe blood of juste Abel unto þe blood of Zacharie, which þis kynrede killiden, bitwixe þe auter and þe temple.* It is no nede to trete which was þis Zacharie<sup>a</sup>, and which Barachie was his fadir, and whanne þis martirdom was done; for siþ o persone haþ mony names, and Crist takiþ sum tyme þe witt of þe name, it is noo drede þat ne Crist seiþ soþ here, as nedip us to knowe it. And, for þese prestis shulden printe betir þes wordis in her soulis, þerfore Crist rehersiþ to hem, and seiþ on þis maner; *ȝhe, I seiþ to zou, þis blood shal be souzte of þis kynrede.* For alȝif þis kynrede hadde two divers

<sup>1</sup> þat o man dye, E.

<sup>a</sup> 'There has been much dispute who this Zacharias was. From the time of Origen, who relates that the father of John the Baptist was killed in the temple, many of the Greek Fathers have maintained that this

is the person to whom our Lord alludes; but there can be little or no doubt that the allusion is to Zacharias, the son of Jehoiada (2 Chron. xxiv. 20, 21).' Smith's Bib. Dict. Article 'Zacharias.'



partis:—þe firste slew martiris from Abel unto þis Zacharie, þe secunde slou; martiris fro Zacharie to þe laste;—neþeles boþe alle þes killeris and martiris þat ben killid maken two kynredis, and ech helpeþ oþer. For as seintis taken part and helpe of oþer seintis, so shrewis taken part and harm of her felowis.

And Crist gretip hem after, for þo þat holden hem wise men, and seiþ; *Woo be to you, wise men of þe lawe, þat token aweie þe keie of cunningge, and 3e entriden not inne; and oþer men þat entriden 3e have forfendid.* And here streyneþ þe pope, what þing is þis keie; and he wole algatis have þat it is not cunningg, for often tymes mony oþer þan popis han moch more cunningg, and 3it han not þes keies. And herfore he feyneþ þat þes keies ben poweris, boþ upon clerkis and eke upon seculers;—power of jurisdiccion, and power to assoile and bynde. But many men þenken here þat þei shulden more trowe to Crist þan to many Pope Joonis<sup>1</sup>, for he is suspect here. Crist clepiþ þis cunningg here, þe keie of cunningg, and alle þe fendis in helle shulden not move<sup>2</sup> to denye Crist. Þes feyned poweris mai not be proved ne perceyved in dede; and þerfore ben þei feynid, and by cautelis of ypocritis is þe folk bigilid. And þus trewe men seien here, þat þer ben two keies: þe firste is keie of cunningge, and þe toþer keie of power. Þese keies hadden Peter and many oþer apostlis; but Peter hadde prerogatif bifore hise oþer breþeren. Þis cunningg was not speculatif, of gemetrie, ne oþer sciencis, but practik, put in dede, how men shulde lyve by Goddis lawe. And after þis science cam power to bynde and unbinde; and to whom God grauntip þe first he grauntip þe secunde. And oonhede of þes keies was not oonli 3ovun to Peter, siþ hevene was open to oþer folk in cuntreis þat Peter cam not inne, bi keies þat Crist 3af to oþer apostlis. And so þese feynede keies ben keies of helle, 3if þei open helle gatis to children of pride; and 3if þis pope hav cunningge to þis work, he is maister of þes keies. For God wole 3eve cunningg to teche his weie to hevene to whom ever him likip; and he is Petris viker, al3if neiþer fendis ne cardinalis putten him in his trone.

Exaggerated  
papal preten-  
sions.

<sup>1</sup> *Popis Jons.* E.

<sup>2</sup> So E; *move*, A.

*Whanne Crist seide þese treupis* unto þes hie prestis, Phariseis and men of lawe stoden gretli azens him, and stoppiden his mouþ wiþ many false wordis, and lettiden Crist to speke more, as a man þat spak blasfemye. And herfore þes lawyeris, for þes wordis of Crist, layen in awayte more to do Crist to þe deþ. And God wote where þe court wolde þus shape for men, þat seiden sharpli to hem þis sentence of þe gospel; and if þei done, þei ben þanne of þe secounde kynrede. For þis kynrede lepiþ from oo folk to anoþer; for it is now among Jewis and now among heþen men, and now comeþ azen, as þe fend hopiþ victorie, and failing of Goddis lawe, and growinge of mannis lawe. For noþing is beter post to likyng of þe fend. And siþ þis kynrede is now moost among prestis, as it was in Cristis tyme, trewe men shulden speke to hem sharpli as Crist dide. For þe fend haþ hem moost helperis in þis cause, and makeris of martiris bi pursuyng and sleynge. And ȝif þei senden men to hevene, þat is on wrong maner; but þei senden men evene to helle, as to her owne hous, for þei have exilid Goddis lawe, bi which þei shulden worche, and brouȝt in þe fendis lawe bi which þei rengnen.

And after seiþ Crist, how þes lawyeris *aspieden how þei myȝten take ouȝt of Cristis mouþ for to accuse him*, and so do him to deþ; and þus þese ypocritis feyneden to fulfille her law. And þus it is to daie of þes hiȝe prestis; for þei hav newe lawis maad biside Goddis lawe to dampne men to deþ as open heretikes. And to do þis dede þei counseiliden not wiþ Goddis lawe, but wiþ foundun<sup>1</sup> heresies þat hemsilf holden, þat þei mai not synne ne erre in siche jugementis. But þei jugen for heretikes al maner of sich men þat seien þat þei shulden sue Crist, and leeve her worldli liif. ȝif þei leven Cristis liif, and ȝeven hem þus to lordship, þei ben þe fendis children and open Anticristis; for þei mai not be Cristis children, but ȝif þei suen him, and holden hem in his boundis, and go not out by newe lawes, and speciali holde hem in mekeness and poverte. And here we mai assaie where þei doren be martiris.

<sup>1</sup> *founden*, E.

IN FEESTIS OF MANY MARTRIS.

## [SERMON LXXV.]

*Egrediente Jesu de Templo.*—MARK xiii. [I.]

Þis gospel telliþ, as oþer bifore<sup>a</sup>, how Crist mesuride his disciplis, boþe in wit and wille, to suffre for his love. Þis gospel telliþ, as oþer bifore, *how Jesus wente out of þe temple, and oon of his disciplis seide to him; Maister, loke what stoones and makingis ben of þis grete temple. And Jesus answeride and seide to him:—Seest þou þese grete bildingis. Þer shal not be a stoon lefte upon a stoon, þat ne it shal be distried. And whanne Crist satt upon þe Mounte of Olyves, azen þe temple, his disciplis axiden him, þes foure bi hem silf, Peter and Joon and James and Andrew:—Telle þou us whanne þes þingis shal be don, and what tokene shal be, whanne alle þes shal bigynne to have an ende. And Jesus answeringe, bigan to seie to hem; See 3e first þat no man disseyve zou; for many shal come in my name, and seie þat Y am he þat governeþ holi Chirche, and þei shal disseyve many. But whanne 3e shal here bateilis, and opynyons of batels, drede 3e not, but be 3e sadde in bileve.*

Christ foretells  
the destruction  
of Jerusalem.

Moo opynyons of batels, herden we never; for men wiþ þe oo pope seien þat it is needful to fizte wiþ men þat holden wiþ þat oþer, and þei wiþ þe toþer pope have contrarious opynyons. And 3it men wiþ oure pope hav þis opynyoun; þat prelatiſ and prestis shulden fizte azens þe toþer pope, and men þat holdiþ wiþ him, but if þei converte hem. Sum of us have þis opynyoun; þat preestis shulden not fizte, but move men bi resoun and Goddis lawe to treupe, and preie mekeli for men þat þei do after Goddis wille; and þat it is not bileve þat oþer pis, or pis, be Pope; for 3if he shal not be saif, he is noo part of holi Chirche. And so þis is no cause to Cristen men to fizte inne; but raþer shulde boþe þes popis go mekeli to þe emperour, and renounse al her lordship þat þei have of seculers; and siþ

Rumours of  
wars between  
the adherents  
of the rival  
popes.

<sup>a</sup> See Sermon LXXIII.

lyve a pore liif as Peter and Poul diden, and algatis move no men, ne counseille hem, for to fiȝte þus. And in þis opynyoun resten many meke prestis. In<sup>1</sup> oþer pointis of þis mater ben an hundred opynyouns among clerkes, and lewde men, and alle ben of bateiles.

Interpretation  
of the gospel.

*And after, seiþ Crist, þat alle þes moten ben, but ȝit is noo eende, to make þe dai of dome. Folk shal rise azens folk, as Sarasins azens Latyns; rewme azens rewme, as Ingland<sup>2</sup> azens Franche<sup>3</sup>; and erþe-dene<sup>4</sup> shal be, bi placis, and hungris, as men hav feelid<sup>a</sup>. Þes ben bigynnynge of sorewis; and þerfore loke wel ȝou silf, for þei shall bitraie ȝou in her counceilis, and in her sinagogis shal ȝe be betyn; and bifore kyngis and justices shal ȝe stonde, for me, in witnes to hem. And in alle folk moot first be prechid þe gospel. And þis ordeynede Crist of his grete wisdom; for bifore þei hadden killid þes hooli apostlis, þer was no maner of folk, Grekis ne Latyns, ne barbares, þat ne þei hadden þe gospel of Crist prechid unto hem. And whan þei shal lede ȝou, and bitraie ȝou to jugis, þenke ȝe not bifore bisili, what ȝe shal speke; but what shal be ȝovun ȝou in þat hour, speke ȝe þat, for þat seiþ God. For ȝe ben not spekinge, but þe Holi Goost, siþ ȝe ben hise instrumentis, and he spekiþ first;—O<sup>5</sup> broþer shal bitraie his broþer in to his deþ, and þe fadir shal bitraie his sone, and þe sones shal rise azens her fadris, and do hem to deep. And ȝe shal be in hate to alle men for my name; but he þat lastiþ to þe eende he shal be saf.*

Þe lettre of þis gospel is told bifore, and so it is ynowȝ here

<sup>1</sup> So E; om. A.

<sup>2</sup> Englonde, E.

<sup>3</sup> Fraunce, E.

<sup>4</sup> erþedone, E.  
<sup>5</sup> one, E.

<sup>a</sup> This passage might be expected to supply the means of fixing the date of the composition of these sermons, but I have not found it so. In Professor Rogers' valuable *History of Agriculture and Prices in England* (i. 217), I find it stated that in the fourteenth century, 'the following are years of famine, the average price of wheat having risen above 10s. the quarter:—1315, 1318, 1321, 1351, 1369.' Again,—'It rose above 9s. in 1294 and 1370: 'above 8s. in 1293, 1314, 1350, 1363, 1367, 1374.

1390.' In the years 1381–1386, within which these sermons must have been composed if Wyclif was their author, the price of wheat was remarkably low. These statistics refer to the southern and midland counties, and are thoroughly reliable. Either then, if Wyclif wrote the sermon, the reference must have been to a time of scarcity as far back as 1374; or, if we suppose the scarcity of 1390 to be pointed at, Wyclif was not the author of the sermon.

to telle pleyne storie. Here men moven liztli, siþ Crist tolde alle þes perils, it semerþ þat þei mut nedis be; but who myzte þanne lette hem? Here men seien comunli, þat al þing mut nedis be, and 3it men moten nedis azensstonde many of þes; and so þei moten nedis have mede of siche azenstondinge. For as we moten nedis preie for þingis þat nedis moten be, as shewen þree þe firste axingis of þe Pater noster; so we moten nedis enforse azens þingis þat nedis moten be. And of sich enforsinge mote nedis come mede; for ellis shulden no men lette yvel to come; and mede in azenstonding, and conseillinge to goode, weren al aweye bi þis lewede resoun. And, for alle þes ben false, and many oþer þat suen, enforse we azens yvel, and preie we for goode, al3if God have ordeyned þat þei moten nedis come. And, for men shulden do þus, þerfore haþ God ordeyned, þat comynge of many sich þingis ben unknowen to men.

But here men douten over þis, of ordre of þis help to þe Chirche; but here seien Cristene men, þat no man shulde doute to helpe þe Chirche, but alle men shulden help it here, ech man on his maner; siþ God telliþ us bi his lawe þat þis is his wille. Seculer lordis shulden helpe here principali, for many causis. Oon, for God haþ 3ovun hem swerd for to helpe his Chirche bi strengþe, and strengþe wiþ mennis drede is nedeful to do þis dede. Also lordis of þis worlde ben þo, to whiche þis harm is don, who shulde stonde more for þis cause, þan lordis þat hav lost þis lordship. Also, þat man þat haþ synned shulde algatis make aseerþ; but þe generacion of lordis bi folie brou3t in þis wrong, and herfore it falliþ to hem to make aseerþ for þis synne. And þus shulde knyztis knowe, how þei shulden stonde for Goddis cause, and not al oonli kille men in mennis cause, as boucheris. Þei shulden have shame how þei ben hardi in cause of þe world and of þe fend, but in þe cause of God þei ben boþ cowardis and foolis. And nepeles þis lord doiþ worship and profite to knyztis þat serven him, and þei mai not denye þis, þat ne for blyndenesse and cowardise holdiþ þe fend azens God þis lordship þat þei shulden have.

But over þis, men have doute what ordre men shulden have, and where men shulden begynne to worche, in iust restoringe of

A predestinarian objection answered.

Church-reform

should begin  
at Rome.

þes goodis. But here men seien, siþ þis wrong is brood sprad in Cristendom, and Goddis oost shulde be myȝti to do þis dede aȝens þe fend, in many placis shulden men worche on þis weie to helpen her modir. But siþ þe nest and heed hereof is at Rome, where it bigan, it semeþ to many men þat at Rome shulde þis riȝting bigynne; and so shulde þis heed be stoppid to feyne censuris aȝens God, and fere foolis bi cursingis for þei fulfillen Goddis lawe; and wiþ þis boþe lordis and comuns mai lette freris to harmen þe Chirche. And þus were Goddis word soþ whanne he spekiþ to þe fend, and seiþ, a woman shal disquatte<sup>1</sup> his heed. And Marie helpe<sup>2</sup> þe Chirche þat it be so. For ȝif richesse and worldli lordship weren taken aweie from prelatiſ and preestis, moche of þe fendis pride were abatid in þes clerkes; and Goddis name were not dispisid ech dai as it is now, but his lawe shulde be betere holde, and Anticristis jugementis shulde ceesse.

Spiritual arms  
alone should  
be used to heal  
the schism.

But ȝit men douten wheþer þei shulden fiȝten in þis cause aȝens her enemyes;—speciali, siþ Crist movede two princis of Rome for to fiȝte, Titus and Vaspasian, þat distroieden Jerusalem. Here men þenken, þat Cristene men shulden not fiȝte but if Crist bad hem; for Crist seide þat his yoke is softe and his charge liȝt to bere. And so neiþer bodili swerd neiþer oþer armes, ne fiȝtinge shulde be here usid of Cristene men; ne oþer lawe but Goddis lawe, and lordis drede, and manassing to clerkis þat wolden aȝenstonde. And to bindinge and prisoninge of hem shulde alle maner of men helpe; but bi Goddis grace þis shulde not falle, siþ clerkis shulde helpe here in Goddis cause, and feyn<sup>3</sup> to be dischargid of erþeli goodis, þat þei beren now. And þanne þei shulden go liȝt to hevене, and drawe þe world after hem; þer þei doppen now to helle, and drawen many men wiþ hem. Freris shulden help in þis cause, siþ þei ben groundid in poverte, and þei have but temporal goodis<sup>a</sup>, þe which ben knytt to her hertis. And shortly alle maner of men, ȝhe, prestis boþe more and lesse, shulden helpe here in Goddis cause, for love þat þei shulden love her modir.

<sup>1</sup> *disquate*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *helpe Marie*, E.

<sup>3</sup> *fayn*, E.

<sup>a</sup> As opposed to lands or lordships.

But now þei clepen good, yvel, and harm, profit, and bondage, fredom; but þanne shulden þei wel witen how al þat helpiþ to hevене is good, and al þat shulde be by Goddis lawe were free and helpli<sup>1</sup> to þis eende.

And þus þe lord preisþ his baili, for he forþaf to his tenaunte fifty barels of oile. And so þis gifte was riȝtful, siþ þis lord is God himsilf; and þis tenaunte is kynde of clerkis, for þei shulden ȝeve devocioun, and be paid of lital corn<sup>a</sup>. For, as Poul techiþ, þei shulden holde hem paid wiþ bodili fode and hileyng. And þus shulden preestis preche to lordis, to holde hem paid of worldli goodis, and sette her wille in hevenli goodis, which wille shulde make hem liȝt to hevене. But þe fend haþ stranglid þese houndis wiþ talwe<sup>2</sup>, þat þei mai not berke. And þus siþ seculer men shulden be moo þan prestis shulden be, and prestis shulden have, by titil of almesse, her sustenance of þe peple, wiþdrawing of her service aȝen shulde move to wiþdraw þes goodis. And whoever aȝenstandiþ þis sentence is unlawful aȝens God.

And so men shulden graunte in dede to obeishe to þe pope, as þe peple obeishide to Petre, and as Goddis lawe wole axe; but it were to myche to pass þis, for þanne men obeishiden to þe fend, siþ Goddis lawe shulde be reule, and teche how God wole þat men obeishe. And siþ þe freris accusen þe court, in matter of þe sacrid oost, and saien þat it techiþ þat þis oost is not Goddis bodi, but accident wiþouten suget þat alle men knowen not, men shulden axe þis treuþe of þis court wiþ good grounding<sup>b</sup>. And ȝif þis court faile in þis, þei failen in

The pope should be obeyed, as far as consistent with the laws of God.

<sup>1</sup> *helpiþ*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *talow*, E.

<sup>a</sup> Does this mean,—the clergy should be content to retain for themselves ‘lital corn,’ or temporal riches, just as the debtor in the parable retained only twenty for his own profit out of the hundred measures of wheat that he had to render to his lord, but they should rejoice in being permitted to keep an abundant measure (fifty out of a hundred barrels) of ‘oile,’ or devotion? See Serm. LXXXV.

<sup>b</sup> The general drift of this remarkable passage seems to be as follows. The friars,—after the synod

of 1382, which had been promoted, and indeed ordered, by ‘the Court,’ or, as we should say now, by the Government,—and after the sending down of letters patent into all the counties (see Lewis, p. 106), appointing inquisitors, who would be in many or most instances friars, to search out heretical writings and their fautors,—might well say that the Court taught their doctrine concerning the Eucharist, and condemned that of Wyclif. This is called by the writer, *accusing* the Court of teaching the said doctrine; because.

The doctrine of  
the Eucharist.

moost þat þei shulden do; for þei shulden teche men bileve þe which is ground of Cristis ordre. But Crist seiþ wiþ many seintis, þat þis oost is Goddis bodi, al if it be breed in his kynde, as Poul techiþ ofte tymes. Þus shulden rewmes stoppe first fruytes, and avaunsing of Cardinalis, wiþ oþer spoilingis of þis court, bi þe which rewmes and peplis ben chargid. And 3if men seiþ þat rewmes mai not defenden hem fro sich spoiling, certis þanne þei ben to feble to defende hem from oþer enemyes; and 3if cowardise lette hem, bi feynynge of Anticrist, þanne þei ben to unstable for defaute of bileve. For neþer God ne man mai noie, and moche more alle fendis of helle, but 3if þe law of Holi Writt accuse men<sup>1</sup> azens God.

ÞE GOSPEL OF OON CONFESSOR AND BISHOP.

[SERMON LXXVI.]

*Vigilate, quia nescitis qua hora.*—MATT. xxiv. [42.]

The duty of  
watchfulness

ÞESE gospellis ben passid þat fallen to þes martiris, and now comen gospelis þat fallen to confessouris. And so þis gospel techiþ a wisdom of Crist, how men þat have cure shulden kepe þer sheep; and þis lore perteyneþ to moo þan to preestis, but þei shulden kepe passingli þe lore þat Crist techiþ here. Crist biddiþ first þat hise servantis *wake, for þei witen never whanne þe Lord is to come.* And it is knowen to men þat Crist spekiþ here of wakinge fro synne, for þat is þe best wakyng, and þis beste Lord spekiþ of beste þing; for as creaturis tellen a man his God, so þingis of kynde tellen men how þei shulden serve God. It is knowen to clerkis þat man haþ fyve wittis, and stopping of þese wittis bringiþ in sleep to man; and þanne man is half

<sup>1</sup> *hem, E.*

as he goes on to say, Christ and many of the saints unmistakably taught *his* doctrine. He proceeds to suggest, apparently in the hope of setting himself right with the Court by appealing to its self-interest, that the existing hierarchy was terribly

burdensome both to Court and nation, and that to 'stoppe first fruytis,' and other ecclesiastical exactions, would be greatly to the advantage of the state. The advice was not acted upon till the year 1534.



deed, and unable for to worche or to defende himsilf azens enemys þat wolen harmyn<sup>1</sup> him. Þese wittis ben clepid sizte and heering, smelling and taist, wiþ groping; and alle þes shulden be fed wiþ God, þat mai never faile fro mannis witt. But stopping of love wiþ worldli þingis lettij mannis heed to perceyve God; and so, as clerkis seien, þes fyve wittis comen of a vertue wiþinne in þe heed, and 3if a man bi sleep be lettid in þis vertue, ouþer bi fumes, or drunkenes, or oþer cause, þes fyve wittis ben stoppid and wanten her worching. And letting of þese fyve wittis is clepid mannis sleep. But al þat man haþ is 3ovun to him of God, for to serve his God, ouþer worching or suffring; and 3if he leve þis service, þanne he slepiþ goostli. And wit wiþinne in mannis heed, þat is God himself, mut move his out-wittis to worche as þei shulden; and so al þat lettij man to be moved þus of God bringij in sleep of synne, and lettij him to wake. And so erþeli fumes comyng fro þe stomak ben grete cause of þis sleep, and lettij<sup>2</sup> helping of God; for God dwellij not wiþ man bisi aboute erþeli þingis. But worching of a mannis soule aboute siche þingis makij worldli fumes lette<sup>3</sup> a mannis resoun to knowe hevenli goodis, and wake wiþ hise wittis; for sich a man loveþ more goodis of þis world þanne he loveþ his God, for on hem his wille is more sett.

And þefore clepiþ Poul þese averouse men, serveris of maw-mettis, and brekeris of Goddis heestis; and alle wittis of sich men slepen fro Goddis service. We shulden wake to resoun, and knowe þat our sizte is 3ovun us of God, to serven him and oure soules; and 3if we failen hereof, for synne þat we ben inne, we misusen oure sizte, and slepen wiþ it. Sizte is 3ovun to man as hiest out-witt, for to sue his profite, and flee þing þat harmeþ him; and þingis þat ben bifore him, þe which he shulde do, shulde a man wel knowe, and take to him þe profitable. And þus, as Crist techij, men synnen in sizte of wymmen, for he þat seeþ a woman for to coveite her, he haþ in þat done lecherie in his herte. For, as Crist techij, þe rote of a man's synne is wiþinne in his herte bifore þat it be in dede, and herfore men shulden flee cause þat þus bringij synne to mannis herte. Þe

Eph. v. 5.

Sins of sight.

<sup>1</sup> barmen, E.<sup>2</sup> om. E.<sup>3</sup> and lettij, E.

1 John ii. 16.

synne of siȝt is not þus oonli in lecherie of fleish, but it is also in covetise of worldli goodis; as whanne þou seest erþeli þing, and covetist to hav it, aȝens þe wille of þi God, þou synnest þanne in þi siȝte. And þus seiþ Seint Joon, þat in covetise of iȝen is understonden al covetise of oþer wittis aȝens resoun. Ne a man synneþ not in siȝt, al oonli on þes two maneres, but whanne he is idil in his siȝt, and aspieþ not his profit; as sum men loken to veyn plaies, and many siȝtis of worldli þingis, þe which profiten not to her soule, but raþer doiþ hem harm. And siȝt is þe first witt stoppid whanne a man slepiþ. Sopeli we shulden ever loke upon God, as we mai here seen him bi mirrou, in a derknes of þingis þat he haþ maad; ȝhe, boþe niȝt and dai, slepinge and wakinge, shulde we þus þenke on God and his lawe.

Sins of hearing.

Rom. x. 17.

þe secounde uttir witt is heeringe of man, þat is brouȝt many weies in to sleping of synne. For God haþ ȝovun us þis virtue for to heeren him, and so to heeren pees and charite þat he spekiþ in us; but men ben now redi to heeren of unpees, batailis, and strives, and chidingis of neiȝboris; and cause of sich heeringe is assent to siche þingis, for litil worldli wyning and lesyng of pees. And bi sich heeringe men mai knowe whos children þei ben. We shulden witen þat heeryng was graunted to man for to cunne his bileve, as Seint Poul seiþ; and so bileve is of heering, and heering is by Cristis word. And for þis, Crist wole þat men preche þe gospel; and for þis haþ kynde ordeyned þat heering shulde be in a sercle, bifore men, and bihinde men, and on<sup>1</sup> ech side of men, as bileve is of treuþis, bifore us, and bihinde us. And to oure bileve shulde we shape oure heering. And þis is o defaute þat men have in heeringe, þat þei wolen gladli heere fablis, and falsehedis, and slaundris of her neiȝbouris, al ȝif þei knowen hem false. But al ȝif sich telleris ben moche for to blame, neþeles sich heereris ben hatid of God. For kynde haþ ȝovun to men to heeren voicis in þe eire, and not in erþe bineþen us, where voices comen not; in tokne þat we shulden ȝyve oure wittis to trowe þing þat mai be in eire, þat is aboven us, which

<sup>1</sup> So E; oon, A.

þing profitiþ to oure soule. And if we heeren sich falsenes þat we wite profitiþ not, we shulden not heeren but wiþ peyne, and trowe not þerto, and algatis fle sich men þat tellen sich talis; for God haþ ʒovun us heeringe to heeren his workes, þat ben moo and sutiler þan þis witt wole suffise to.

And herfore þe gospel telliþ how Crist dide a miracle, and heelide a deaf man and domb upon þis manere: Crist toke him aside fro þe comune peple, and putte his fyngris in his eeris, and wiþ his spitting touchide his tonge, and ʒaf him þanne vertue to heeren and to speke. God here techiþ man for to fle fablis þat ben in comune peple, and take hede to him. Þe sutil workes of God ben hise smale fyngris, þat men shulden heer and trowe, and þerwiþ fede þer wittis, and wiþ sich savery treuþis occupien her speechis. And þus mai we þenke how we ben deffe and dumbe; but we shulden wiþ þes two wittis wake to oure God, for he wole have rekenynge, boþe in oure deþ and at þe daie of dome, how we have dispendid vertues þat he haþ ʒovun us.

And siþ we witen not whanne þis rekenynge shal falle, it is a greet wisdom to wake aʒens þis tyme; and herfore seiþ Crist, *Dis þing wite we wel, þat ʒif þe hosebonde wiste whanne þe þeef were to come, certis he wolde wake, and suffre him not to myne his hous*<sup>a</sup>. Þis þeef is þe fend, joyned to man, to tempte him, and to harme him al þat he can, and speciali in tyme þat þis man shulde die; for if he take þeeffi virtues fro þis man in hour of hise deef, he doiþ þise þeste moost. And ʒif he have maistrie to sle siche a man, he chesiþ sich a tyme whanne he is moost unredi; and þanne he is ful bisie to bringe in þe worste synne, for þanne his ful victorie is endid in þat man. And here men douten comunli, what hour men shal dien, wheþer God shal take hem in her beste tyme. But here we shal wite, þat alle þo þat shal be saif waken in hour of her deþ, and over comen þe fend, and suffren him not þanne to undirmyne her hous. And so þes men dien, whanne þei ben moost ripe. But ʒif þe fend lede hem þanne as his owne servantis, and þei shal be dampned, he waitiþ him a tyme whanne he trowiþ best

The cure of  
the deaf and  
dumb man.

<sup>a</sup> In the first Wycliffite version—'suffre not his hous to be undirmynyd.'

to overcome þes men; and so þes men dien in her worste tyme, for in tyme þat þei have þe synne þat evermore shal laste. And þat is þe worste yvel, þat God mai suffre to be; for God mote nedis punishe þis synne in helle wiþouten ende. And for þis peril of þis þeef shulden men waken warli; but, for þis harm of þis þeef is not but bi Goddis jugement, þerfore seiþ Crist to warn alle men; *And þerfore be 3e redi, for in þat hour þat 3e hopen not Crist is to come.* For, as it is ofte seid, deef is þe þridde þing<sup>a</sup> þat God wole have unknowun to man, for he shulde ever be redi.

The faithful servant.

And, for ech man shulde gouerne alle his wittis, and make hem serve to hise profit, as a man doip his meyne, þerfore seiþ Crist þus: *Who, trowest þou, is a trewe servant, þat þe Lord hap put to be upon his meynè, þat he 3yve hem mete in good tyme to ete?* Þis Lord is God himsilf, and we ben hise servantis; þis meynè of þis Lord ben alle oure wittis, which we 3even mete for to serve God, whanne we leden hem bi resoun to profite to oure soule. *Blessid be þat servant, þat whanne his Lord is comen, he hap foundun him doinge so unto þis meynè; sobeli Y seie to 3ou, þat he shal putte him upon alle hise goodis, and make him his eire.* Þat man þat doip þus shal come to hevене, and þere shal he be Cristis eire, and ful lord of Cristis heritage; and þis lordshipe shal serven to alle Cristis children.

ÞE GOSPEL OF OON CONFESSOUR AND BISHOP.

[SERMON LXXVII.]

*Homo quidam peregre proficiscens.*—MATT. xxv. [14.]

The parable of the talents.

Þis gospel telliþ a parable þat Crist tauhte his disciplis, and, in hem, alle Cristene men, how þei shulden chaffare here. And þis parable telliþ þe resoun whi men shulden wiseli chaffare þus:—*A man, seiþ Crist, goinge a pilgrimage, clepide hise servantis, and 3af hem his goodis. And oon he 3af fyve besauntis,*

<sup>a</sup> See p. 236.

and two to anoþer, and to anoþer von, ech on after his owne virtue. And whanne he hadde delid þus, he wente anoon his pilgrimage. And of þes þree servantis, þe first, þat hadde fyve besauntis, wente and wrouzle in hem, and gat oþer fyve; þe secounde, þat hadde two besauntis, wan oþer two; but he þat took oon, wente and dalf<sup>1</sup> in þe erþe, and hidde þe monie of his lord wipouten encreese. And after long tyme cam þe lord of þese servantis and rekenede wip hem. And þe firste, þat hadde fyve besauntis, cam to þe lord and offride him oþer fyve, and seide; Lord þou 3avest me fyve besauntis, lo I have geten over<sup>2</sup> oþer fyve. And his lord seide to him; Wel be þe, good servaunt and trewe; for þou was trewe of litil, upon many þingis Y shal putte þee; entre in to þe joie of þi lord. Þe secounde cam nyze þat hadde two besauntis, and seide; Lord þou 3avest me two besauntis, lo, oþer two have Y wonne ouer. And his lord seide to him; Wel be þee, good servaunt and trewe; for þou was trewe of fewe þingis, Y shall putte þee upon many þingis; entre into joie of þi lord.

Þis o man þat wente þus in pilgrimage is comunli seid, oure Lord Jesus Crist, for he is o man among alle oþere. His wendinge on pilgrimage is taken on two maners; comunli it is takun for his steynge in to hevene, for dwellinge in hevene is strange to mannis fleish. Þe secounde maner of pilgrimage of þis o man is clepid dwellinge in þis world bi manheed of Crist; for þis was strange pilgrimage to Cristis Godhede. And algatis in þis pilgrimage clepide Crist hise servantis, and 3af hem his goodis to profite wipal. But þese þre manere goodis 3ovun to þes þree servantis, is comunli understonden upon two maneres, as doctouris varien in þese two pilgrimadis. For as a man is two þingis, þe spirit and þe bodi, so Crist is two kyndis, þe Godhede and þe manhede. As anentis his Godhede, his waundringe here, is pilgrimage; and as anentis his manhede, his steynge to hevene is pilgrimage. And he clepide hise servantis bi a long cleping, fro þe bigynnyng of þe world to þe laste dai, but at þis dai of dome he makijþ a ful rekenyng. And siþ Cristis Godhede is everywhere, he mai wel clepe þese servantis, and 3yve hem his goodis, siþ þei have nouȝt but of

Interpretation  
of the parable.

<sup>1</sup> dalve it, E.

<sup>2</sup> om. E.

The explanation of  
St. Gregory.

God. It semeþ þat Gregory meneþ þus þes þree partingis of þes goodis<sup>a</sup>. Sum men have of God her fyve outwittis wiþ her purtenaunce; and þes ben þe firste men þat have þese fyve besauntis. Þe secounde men wiþ two besauntis, ben siche trewe men þat passen not in þese wittis, but have good undirstonding, and þerwiþ riȝtful workes. After þis undirstondinge, þe þridde servant is wickid men wiþ sutil undirstonding, gaderid of her wittis wiþouten and wiþinne-forþ; but þei failen juste workes answeringe to þese wittis. And þes men delven her wittis in undirstondinge of þis worlde, and profiten not to heveneward, ne to þe Chirche, ne to hem silf.

Another  
explanation.

Þe secounde undirstondinge of þis parable of Crist is more sutil and traveilous, and acording wiþ þe text, as boþe þes undirstondingis may be aplied to þe text. Þese fyve besauntis of þe firste man ben fyve maner of goodis þat God ȝeveþ to sum men, þat he wole have saved. Goodis of grace ben þe firste, þat Austin telliþ moche bi<sup>b</sup>, and fallen to sich men þat lyven to Goddis worship and to profite of her soulis; for þei have ever goodis of grace in all oþer þat þei have. Goodis of kynde ben goodis of vertues, boþe bodili and goostli, bi which a man worchiþ to disserve þe blisse of hevene. Þe þridde ben goodis of fortune þe which God ȝyveþ to men, to serven him and to wynne hem blisse, bi wise delyng of þes goodis; and þus weren Job and Abraham riche, wiþ seintis of þe newe lawe. Þe fourþe manere of goodis þat God ȝeveþ here to men, ben goodis of good fame, þat God grauntiþ in þis world; for sum men have alle þes þree goodis and þerwiþ a good fame, þat þei serven wel to God, and to profit of his Chirche. Þe fiftte goodis, ben sparkelis of glorie, þat sum men have here in þis world; þe which ben joie of hevenli blisse þat þei hopen fulli to have, and blisse<sup>1</sup> hem on

<sup>1</sup> *blessen*, E.

<sup>a</sup> S. Greg. *In Evang.* Homil. ix.: 'Quinque ergo talentis donum quinque sensuum, id est exteriorum scientia exprimitur. Duobus vero, intellectus et operatio designatur. Unius autem talenti nomine, intellectus tantummodo designatur.'

<sup>b</sup> It would be idle to seek to il-

lustrate the statement in the text by passages from the works of the great doctor of grace, seeing that hardly a treatise of any length came from his marvellous pen in which the doctrine of the necessity of prevenient grace in order to good works is not more or less enforced.

sum manere<sup>a</sup>, þe while þei lyven here on erþe. Þes men ben þe firste servant, þat profitiþ in þes fyve besauntis. Þe secounde servaunt wiþ two besauntis is undirstonden alle siche men þat have in plentee goodis of kynde and goodis of grace, and worchen wiþ hem. Þe þridde servant wiþ o besaunt is undirstonden alle sich men þat have in plente goodis of kynde, and profiten not wiþ þes goodis, for worldli occupacions letten to disserve hem blisse. And þes men delven in þe erþe, and hiden þe goodis þat God haþ ȝovun hem. And to þes þree men, and no moo, partiþ God here hise goodis. Þese two firste worchen wiþ God wiþ witt and wille þat þei have, and turnen al her lyvyng here to worship of God, and profite to his Chirche; and herfore þei maken hem worþi to take fulle goodis at þe dai of dome. And so doublyng of her workes is merite þat þei have added, bi which God makip hem able for to have þe blisse of hevene; and alle þese goodis þat men have here ben but litil to hevenli goodis, for þere men shal have fulli alle þe goodis of hevene and erþe.

And God shal grete his trewe servantis þus at þe daie of dome, whanne he shal seie; Come ȝee þat ben blessid, my Fadris children, and take ȝe now þe rewme of hevene, þat was maad redi to ȝou fro þe bigynnyng of þe world. For ever God is making redi þe blis þat hise seintis shal have; and alle þe goodis þat we have here ben now but fewe and litil, to regarde of þe goodis þat we shal have in hevenli blis. For ȝif man shal come to þis joie, he shal have al þat he wole, and as fulli as he wole, and on what manere þat he wole; but here we languishen for oþer havyng þat us falliþ to have in hevene.

And here men seien þat goodis of fortune ben þe leste of þes fyve, siþ a man wolde skilfulli ȝyve alle þes goodis for his helþe, and heelþe of bodi is good of kinde wiþ oþer partis þat man haþ. And siþ a man shulde chaffare here, and lese all þes goodis of kynde for to wynne him goodis of grace, goodis of grace ben algatis beter. And siþ mannis

The goods of fortune preferred by most men to all the other four

<sup>a</sup> De Lyra's explanation does not differ much from this. He interprets the five talents to mean, the

goods of nature, those of grace, those of knowledge, those of power, and those of wealth. *Bibl. Sac.* vol. v.

fame, þat is his name writun in þe book of liif, is betere þanne alle þes oþer, and þerof man shulde more joie, þese fourþe goodis ben betere þan þe goodis told bifore. And siþ a man travailiþ here for to gete þe fifte<sup>1</sup> good, it moot nedis be beter þan þei, siþ it is eende of alle bifore. And in traveile aboute þese goodis, and algatis in priis<sup>2</sup> of hem, stondiþ al þe mede in þis liif, and al unþank of peyne of helle; for now þis worlde haþ blindid men aþens her witt and her resoun, þat goodis of fortune, þat ben lest, ben moost told bi of þes fyve. And for þes, and worldli name, men fiþten and traveilen hugeli; but al if þes ben goode in kynde, neþeles havyng of hem profitiþ not to man here, but for vertues and goodis of blisse. And ofte it falliþ, þat þis havyng þat philosophris tellen leest bi, harmeþ to man in oþer goodis, for unskilful love of hem; and so in love of mannis soule, wiseli weyed as it shulde be, stondiþ al þe mede of man, þat he haþ here in erþe. Loke þat he love moost his God, siþ he is þe beste þing þat mai be, and siþ, he love<sup>3</sup> him silf, and aungelis wiþ<sup>4</sup> neiþboris, as þei ben goode. But in þis love, man shal have ordre; as kynde haþ tauzte him for to love first himsilf, and oþer in kynde after þat þei ben nere to him. And in anoþer ordre of love, betere and ferþere, shal man love more; but þis craft of good love is turned now up so doun, for þis world and worldli goodis passen now in weiþte of love. And herfore þes worldli men chaffaren aboute worldli goodis, and her traveile wiþ þer bisynesse techen þat þei loven moost þes goodis. And certis þei failen in craft of love, and comen not to þe goode of blisse; and bi þis cause haþ Crist ordeyned his prestis to be not worldli, but to lyve in povert of þis world, and in peyne of her bodi. For þus dide Crist wiþ hise disciplis, and tauzte us to sue him. And bi þis cause men supposen þat many prelatis of þis Chirche hiden Goddis tresour in þe erþe, to her owne dampnacion; and so at þe daie of dome, God shal not seie, Wel be þee, but God shal seie, austernli; Of þi mouþ Y juge þee, for þou shuldest have þis cunnynge, and lyve þerafter bi þy state<sup>5</sup>. And þus diden þes confessouris, and so þei camen to joie of hevене;

because their  
love is ill  
directed.

The last end  
of the new  
crusaders.

<sup>1</sup> fyveþe, E.      <sup>2</sup> pris, E.      <sup>3</sup> So E; A has *loveþ*.      <sup>4</sup> and, E.  
<sup>5</sup> So E; A reads, *love þerafter bi þe state*, which is nonsense.



and þus þese martiris of þese werres, siþ þei ben þe fendis ser-  
vantis, ben in martirdom of helle þat shal lasten wiþouten ende.  
And her techeris more and lesse ben not confessouris of Crist  
but confessouris of þe fend, whos lawe þei holden and techen.

ÞE GOSPEL OF O CONFESSOR AND BISHOP.

[SERMON LXXVIII.]

*Homo quidam nobilis abiit in regionem.*—LUC. xix. [12.]

Þis gospel telliþ how men shulden lyve, as þe nexte bifore  
dide in a lyeche parable, and knyttiþ þerto many treupis. And  
it mai falle ful wel þat Crist in dyvers tymes seide dyvers  
parablis, þe which weren of liche sentencis. Crist seiþ þat,  
*o noble man wente out into a fer contre for to take to him a  
rewme, and turne azen*, whan he hadde do. Doctouris seien  
comunli þat þis nobleman is Crist, þat wente out of þe God-  
hede, and bicam man heere in erþe, for to gete him a rewme  
of þe Church of trewe men. But Crist leste not to be God,  
al if he made his manhede wiþouten; and þus he styede azen  
to hevене, whanne he hadde made þis marchandize<sup>1</sup>. And þis  
is a noble man, as þis regioun is ferre; for nobler man þan is  
Crist mai noon be in þis world, siþ speciali God is his Fadir,  
and his modir is wiþouten synne, and þis child is God and  
man. But where mai be a nobler man? And as moche as  
Crist made him lasse, as fer fro Godhede is þis regioun. And  
here taken many men, how Crist þat is þis noble man was  
porest man here in erþe, and suffride for us many peynes.  
And noblei of oure prelatis shulde not lette hem to be pore,  
siþ þei ben sinful wiþ her eldris, and mai not come to Cristis  
noblei. And siþ al þat Crist suffride here, he suffride for love  
of hīs lawe, he loveþ to litil Crist or his lawe þat grutchiþ azen  
þis povertē. And false glosis seid in þis mater maken prestis  
synne more grevous, for it is a moche synne a preest to seie

The parable  
of the ten  
pounds.

Ps. cvi. 6.

<sup>1</sup> *marcbaudise*, E.

þat he is Cristis viker, and by auctorite of Crist reuliþ fulli his liif, and ȝit he gabbijþ upon Crist and bi blasfemye bigiliþ þe peple.

*Þis noble man clepide ten servantis*, þat ben alle þe kynde of men, and *ȝaf hem ten besauntis*, þat weren delid among hem; and *bad hem chaffare wiþ þis moneie til þat he come aȝen*. Þes ten besauntis ben alle þe goodis þat Crist ȝaf here to mankynde, and her chaffaryng wiþ þes is her profitable worching; and Crist at þe dai of dome wole axe rekenyng of alle þes. It is no charge to us now to wite how moche þis moneie is, for moneie changiþ ofte in priis, after þat þe prince wole ordeyne. *Þe citisenis of þis noble man* weren hiȝe prestis of þe temple, wiþ scribis and Phariseis; and al þis peple *hatide Crist and senten message after him*, now bi prestis, now bi dekenes, now bi knyȝtis of Heroude, and ever to take Crist in wordis to fynde hem cause to dampne him. And, for þei myȝten not bi her lawe, þei feyneden many gabbingis. And ever þei meneden and seiden in dede, *þat þei wolden not þat Crist rengnede on hem*; and neþeles Crist is hiȝest king and regneþ upon al þis world. And cause of þis rebelliou was þe lore of Cristis lawe, for he tauȝt poverte and mekenesse, and lore to bringe men to hevene; and al þis displeside hem, for þei weren þe fendis children. And þus have cardinalis pursued þe pope<sup>a</sup>, and many sugettis her prelati, and many prelati pursuen trewe men þat grutchen aȝens her lordship; and alle þes seien in dede þat þei wolen not þat Crist rengne over hem. And for þer message is fals, and failiþ þe ground of truþe, þefore seiþ God þat þei senden<sup>1</sup> a message bihinde him, for þis<sup>2</sup> is feyned vanite, for to putte treuþe bihinde<sup>3</sup>. *But it is maad*, longe after at tyme of þe dai of dome, þat *Crist cam aȝen*, whanne he had gaderid al his rewme, for þanne shal holi Chirche be hool, and ever dwelle wiþ her kyng. And for hool cumyng of þis rewme we preien in our Pater nosters.

<sup>1</sup> *senten*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *and for þis*, A; E om. *and*.

<sup>3</sup> om. E.

<sup>a</sup> *pursued the Pope*. This seems to be an allusion to the rejection of Urban after his election by the majority of the Cardinals in 1378. The 'persecution of their prelates

by subjects' may possibly refer to the rising of the Commons in 1381 and the murder of Archbishop Sudbury.

Whanne þis kyng shal come aȝen for to juge alle maner men, he shal bidde clepe hise servantis, to whom he ȝaf bifore his moneie, þat þei shewen how þei hadde chaffard wip goodis, þat þei hadde take<sup>1</sup> of God<sup>2</sup>. *De juste servant come and seide; Lord, þi besaunt haþ geten ten. And þe kyng seide to him, Wel be þee, goode servaunte; for þou was<sup>3</sup> trewe in litil, þou shalt ben havyngge power upon ten citees.* Þes ten citees ben alle þe goodis þat seintis shal have in hevене. *And þe toper servaunt cam, and seide; Lord, þi besant haþ maad fyve. And þe kyng seide to him, And be þou upon fyve citees. And þe bridde wickede servant came, and seide to þe lord; Sire, lo here þi besaunt, put aȝen in a sudarie. For Y drede þee herfore, þat þou art austerne<sup>4</sup> man þat takist þing þat þou puttist not, and repest þat þou hast not sowun.* Þe king seiþ to him, *Of þi owne mouþ Y juge þee, wickide servaunt. Þou seiest, þou wistist þat Y was an austerne man, taking þing þat Y putte not here, and reping þat Y have not sowun; and whi ȝavest þou not my moneie to þe table, to be occurid<sup>5</sup>, and Y shulde have axid after my moneie, wip oker þerof.*

Þer ben sum men þat lyven here in swete and bisynesse, and casten hem not for to profiten wip goodis þat God haþ lent hem for to wynne þe blisse of hevене, as God haþ bodyn hem to do. And þes ben þe þridde servant þat shewip Goddis moneie in a cloiþ; for goodis of kynde shal man bringe to Goddis dome, mawgrey<sup>6</sup> his. And his liif in þis world is money wlapid in sweting cloiþ. But God jugiþ sich men of her owne conscience, siþ ech man shulde wite, þat God, over goodis þat he ȝyveþ, axiþ profite of mennis workes; but to men, and noon to him. And so, siþ God puttiþ in chaffare þing to profite bi mennis traveile, men shulden traveile fast þerwip for to profite to hem silf; and so God repiþ many þingis þat he sue<sup>7</sup> not bi him silve, for he helpiþ man to worche, and al þe profit he ȝeveþ to man. And þus seiþ Austin<sup>a</sup> þat Goddis oker is leueful and gracious, for God

God's mode of usury.

<sup>1</sup> taken, E.      <sup>2</sup> So E; A wrongly includes the words wip—God in the italics.      <sup>3</sup> wast, E.      <sup>4</sup> an austerne, E.      <sup>5</sup> to be occurid, E, and excludes rightly from the italics; A includes.      <sup>6</sup> magrey, E.      <sup>7</sup> sewe, E.

<sup>a</sup> S. Aug. *Enarratio In Psalm.*      nerator. Minus vult dare certe, et XXXVI. 'Attende quid facit foe- plus accipere: hoc fac et tu: da

okuriþ not wiþ man, but 3if God make þe encrees; and al þe vantage of þis okir, God kepith to man and not to him. And so man 3yveþ Goddis moneie for to drawe at þe table, whanne he puttith Goddis 3yftis to wynne him þe blisse of hevene; and þanne þis kyng haþ encrees to his worship, and mannis profite.

And so seiþ Jesus Crist to aungels þat stonden biside; *Take þis besaunt fro þis þef, and 3yve it him þat haþ ten besauntis. And þes seintis seiden to Crist, Lord, he haþ ten besauntis.* For evry þing seiþ himsilf, and ech þing seiþ oþer to God; and þus tellith Cristis jugement to men, þat Crist wole not bigile. For soþe Y seiþ to 3ou; to ech þat haþ shal it be 3ovun, and bi þis 3ifte shal he have plente; but from him þat haþ not, þat þat he haþ shal be taken away. For þis is trewe sentence of seintis, þat just men þat han hevene, han alle worldli þingis bi resoun of her Lord: and so alle unjste men, þat God 3yveþ helle for her service, have not justli, al 3if þei semen to have moche. And 3if þou axe who shal take aweie goodis fro þese uniuste men, siþ þei ben comunli myzte, and no man dar take fro hem; Crist answerith here and mai not gabbe, þis just man to whom God 3eveþ hevene takith fro þis uniuste man þat þat him semeþ to have; and not bi his owne autorite, ne bi strengþe of him silf, but bi autorite of God, and bi vertue of his lawe. And al 3if worldli men semen to have myche goodis, 3it þis is a false havynge, for it is unjste to God; and siþ God is chief lord, þat jugith men þus to have and þus to wante bi his lawe, no man shulde aȝen-seie þis. And uniust occupacion, clepid havynge to þis world, is soþeli noon havynge, but holding of oþer mennis goodis<sup>a</sup>. And sum men þat shal be saif, al if þei semen now pore, neþeles þei have now hevene, and alle goodis of þis world: but þis havynge is now hid, and 3it unknowen to men, for Goddis riȝt is not 3it put in possessioun. Þis trewe sentence of seintis is now

modica, accipe magna. Vide quam late crescat foenus tuum. Da temporalia, accipe aeterna: da terram, accipe coelum. Et cui dabo, forte dicis? Ipse Dominus procedit quem foeneres, qui tibi jubebat ne foenerares.

<sup>a</sup> This favourite opinion of Wyclif's, that mortal sin invalidates the right to hold property or lordship,

both as regards laymen and as regards ecclesiastics, is set forth at large in his *De Dominio Civili* and other treatises. Among the twenty-four propositions condemned by the Synod of 1382 (Lewis, p. 108), was the assertion 'that a civil lord is no lord, a bishop no bishop, a prelate no prelate, whilst he is in mortal sin.'

The property  
of wicked men  
is not truly  
their own

scorned bi mannis lawe; neþeles seintis have now alle þing þat þei wolen have. And as philosophris seien, havyng is on many maneres. And herfore þis gospel seiþ þat unjust man haþ not sich þing, and þe gospel of Mathew seiþ þat him semeþ to have it; for if man robbe oþer mannis goodis, and waste hem at his wille, neþeles he haþ hem not, but occupieþ þingis þat ben not his.

But Crist spekiþ at þe dai of dome of false prestis, þat weren his enemyes, to angelis and seintis in hevene; þat þei shulden bringe hem bifore hem, and sle hem in his presence, for þei shal be dampned by Goddis jugement. And þis dampnyng to helle is a manere of sleying more noyous þan bodili sleying. And seintis shal here juge wiþ God. And þe storie of þe gospel telliþ, how Crist, whanne he hadde seid þes wordis, wente bifore oþer men and stieden<sup>1</sup> into Jerusalem. And þis bitokeneþ þat þis sentence, al if it be scorned here in erþe, ȝit it is kept saf in hevene, and is above mannis power.

## OF OON CONFESSOR AND BISHOP.

## [SERMON LXXIX.]

*Videte, et vigilate, et orate.*—MARK xiii. [33.]

Þis gospel gaderiþ shortli þe sentence bifore seid, and telliþ how men shal wake, and speciali bishops. First Crist biddiþ pree þingis þat<sup>2</sup> hav hem in ordre; first, he biddiþ *þat we shal see*, and after *þat we shal wake*, and þe þridde tyme *þat we shal preie*, to contynue þes two. Þe firste is needful to prelatiþ; for riȝt as þe witt of siȝt shewiþ a man moost wakinge among oþer wittis, so siȝt of Goddis lawe mak iþ a man moost wake to God. For þis lawe is bileve, þat man shulde moost stodie inne. Crist biddiþ þat man shulde see, not vanitees of þe world, ne unstable mannis lawe, for boþe þes siȝtis don harm to men, but lawe of Crist þat is book of liif, and Goddis word, Jesus

Clear vision,  
watchfulness,  
prayer; virtues  
specially  
episcopal.

<sup>1</sup> *stysede*, E.

<sup>2</sup> So E; A has þan.

Ps. lxxxv. 8.

2 Cor. ii. 15.

Ps. xxxiv. 8.

Crist. And so here we ben bodun to eendyn oure firste witt at God. For þe secounde witt, seiþ David, þat he shal heere what God spekiþ in him; for he is certeyn of bileve þat God spekiþ pees to his peple. And so ȝif bullis bidden werre, to kille men for unknowun cause, it is oþer not Goddis bidding, or þe folk is þe fendis peple. Of þe þridde witt seiþ Poul, þat he and his felowis ben good smel of Crist to God, for þei suen Crist in lyvyng. Of þe fourþe witt seiþ þe Psalme; Taste ȝe and understonde, how þat þe Lord is swete, and oþer worldli þingis ben bittere; for al ȝif þei semen swete first, þe laste of hem is bittere as wormod. For þe fifte witt, seiþ Crist; Take my ȝoke upon ȝou, and lerne of me þes two lessouns, þat Y am mylde and meke of hert; for my ȝoke is swete and softe, and my charge is liȝt ynowȝ, siþ it drawiþ men upward, and puttiþ not down to helle. And so shulde we wake wel, and reste þes fyve wittis in God; for if a man have al bileve þat Goddis lawe techiþ ouwher<sup>1</sup>, but ȝif he wake in charite, al siȝt of þis man is nouȝt. And þefore biddiþ þe secound word þat we shulen algatis wake to God. And, for we mai not laste in þis, but ȝif God contynue his grace, þefore þe þridde word biddiþ þat for þis grace we shulden preie. But, for þe secounde word of wakinge is ful nedeful here to men, and wakinge is loosing of wittis, to perseyve þings present, and it is told of siȝt and heering<sup>a</sup>, of oþer þree wittis were to speke.

The nature of  
Christian  
sawowp.

And first of smelling of a man, more spiritual þan oþer two, as þe nose is more hiȝer in þe heed þan is þe tunge. It is speche of holi writt, þat name þat man haþ in þis lyf to þe jugement of God is smeling of þat man; and so sum men ben good smelling and sum men stinking to God. And þus seiþ Poul, for he was certeyn þat þei sueden Crist in lyvyng, þat þei weren a good odour of Crist to God for her liif; for as we shulden be membris of Crist, so we shulden be odours of Crist. And so we shulden sue Crist here in al oure manere of lyvyng; and ȝif we lyven a contrarie lyf, and go fro Crist spirituali, we ben stinking bifore God bi synne and ypocrisie, for þat synne stinkip

<sup>1</sup> *owȝubere*, E.

<sup>a</sup> See Sermon LXXVI.

moost bifore God of alle oper. And so, ȝif þat hiȝe prelatiſ taken þe fame of good name, and gon fro þe weie of Crist, no man stynkiþ more þan þei. And herfore ofte God heeriþ not þe preier of þe comune peple, for þe liif of her prelate is so stinking bifore God. And þus spekiþ Goddis lawe, þat God smellide brent tiþes, for devocioun of hem þat offriden smellide wel unto God; and þus preieþ David þat his preier stretche to God as incense. But stinke unto men, as Goddis children stonke to Pharao, is not moche for to flee, but stinkinge to Goddis jugement; and þus wake we in þis witt þat al oure liif smelle wel to God, for alle þat slepyn in synne ben stynkinge bifore God.

Gen. viii. 21;  
compare  
Ez. xx. 40, 41.

Ps. cxli. 2.

Þe secounde witt of þes þree, is tastinge of mannis tonge; and bi mannis speche mai we wite who tastiþ of Goddis sweetnesse, for þat man haþ delite to speke of God and his lawe. And oper men ben in feveris, and tasten not of Goddis word, but it semeþ bitter to hem, for her tast is turned amys; and þes moten be goostli heeled, as þei heelen men of feveris. And deedli signe of sich syk men is þat hem wantiþ appetit of Goddis word, þat shulde be her food and lyf, as Goddis lawe techiþ. And herfore techiþ Seint Petre, þat ȝif ony man speke, loke þat he speke Goddis wordis; and bi þis tokene he is hool. Here mai we see how mannis lawis hav distemperid kynde of men, and turned hem into swyn þat þei savere not Goddis word.

Taste.

1 Peter iv. 11.

Þe þridde witt is felynge, þat is everywhere in þe bodi, boþe above and beneþe, for it is so nedeful; and herfore haþ kynde ordeyned his instrument bi al þe bodi, al ȝif it take roote of þe herte, in which is jugement of taist. And it is ful nedeful to fede mennis bodi in mesure, for þe bodi serveþ to þe soule, and is horse to it in many goode workes. And þus all þes þree wittis ben more fleishli þan þes oper two, and moven man unevenli to glotonye and lecherie; and herfore þe fend temptiþ algatis bi þis þridde witt, as he temptide Adam and Eve to ete of þing þat God forbad. And ȝif we þenken on þat state, and how we shulden ever sue God, and how exces and defaute in þe feding of oure fleish, whanne it passiþ good resoun, smacchiþ synne azens God, it is ful hard in þis liif to kepe

Feeling.

us fro synne of taist; but as his instrument is everywhere as a nett in mannys bodi, so þe fend haþ many wylis, to make man slepe bi þis witt. And nepeles þis wakip last, among oþer wittis of man. And so þe fend, bi þis witt, bringip deef of oþer wittis, and makip a man falle fro God in dedeli synne, and fele not, al 3if his wittis semen opyn to judgement of oþer men. And þis is þe fallinge yvel, in which mennis i3en ben sum tym opyn, and 3it þei mai no more see, þan an ymage þat haþ noo witt. For her nerves of charite, bi which þei shulden love God moost, failen in her herte, and þere þei shulde moove her lymes to serve God. And þus we shulde wake to God in þre wittis of our soule.

Responsibility  
of Christian  
ministers.

Þe resoun þat Crist tellip whi we shulden wake þus is told bifore bi Mathew, how we witen never whanne þe Lord comeþ. *For 3e witen never, seiþ Crist, whanne is tyme for to wake; as a man þat wente in pilgrimage lefte his house, and 3af powver to his servantis of ech work of his hous, and bad his porter wake wele.* Þis man þat wente in pilgrimage is Jesus Crist, boþe God and man, and lefte þe goodis of his Chirche in mannys hondis after him. And so alle þe goodis of þis world haþ he put in mennes hondis, but speciali in prelatys hondis; whom he biddip kepe his Chirche, and speciali soulis, þat þei shulden kepe and teche hem bi Goddis lawe. And siþ Cristis Chirche is men þat shal after be saf in hevene, and þes men hav here al þis world, and moche more þis grete prelatys, þes shulden kepe alle Goddis workes, and algatis wake in charite. For þei shulden be fisheris to God, and open and shette þe dore of hevene bi þe keies þat God haþ 3ovun, oonli to profite to þe Chirche. And þus it semeþ to manye þat no man shulde take prelacie ne cure of soulis but in greet drede, lest þei weren unable to God and sich men þat shulden be dampned; and þe sheep shulden be savyd. For þanne her care of prelacie doiþ hem moche harm of soule, algatis 3if þei taken sich cure for wynnynge or worldli worship; for God 3yveþ men cure ynou3, and speciali unto his prestis, to whiche he 3yveþ power and wit to govern his Chirche after his lawe; whereto shulde men take more care, siþ þis is hard and mouche ynou3. Þus Petre and oþer apostlis token care of



Cristis Chirche, and not bi chesing of man and jurisdiccoun  
 is now usid.

But it is drede now þat prestis kepen dritt and vanite,  
 and to þis is her entent; and herto þei shapen lawis. For  
 þe lawe þat Crist haþ ʒovun, and þe chesinge þat he haþ  
 chosen, were ynow; to governe his Chirche wiþouten lawis  
 now maad. And office for to preche þe gospel, wiþ few oþer  
 sacramentis, weren service list and ynow; to siche preestis  
 for to kepe; and þis diden Petre and Poule and oþer apostlis  
 everychon. Þei stryven not for mannis choise, ne for juris-  
 diccoun, for ʒit was not þe Chirche dowid, for to take þes  
 worldli goodis, but for to take mede of Crist for good kepinge  
 of his Chirche. And not al oonli siche preestis have keping of  
 Cristis Chirche, but kingis and princis of þis world, as Ysidere  
 berij witnesse<sup>a</sup>. And so ech man þat God ʒyveþ power and  
 witt for to knowe his wille, shulden, after her power and witt,  
 profite to Cristis Chirche; for God wole þis streitli at domes dai  
 of alle siche men. For God haþ ʒovun þese men siche power  
 to serve God þus in erþe; and to profite to her modir holi  
 Chirche þat þei shulde helpe. And þis bond is streite ynow;,  
 al ʒif man made noon oþer bond, for þis bindiþ ech man to  
 profite to his modir. What nedē is it to make newe bondis, þe  
 which done more harm þan good, and man can neiþer kytte ne  
 loose, but if God telle hem speciali.

*And herfore biddiþ Crist men wake, and speciali for þis*

<sup>a</sup> I am again indebted to the kindness of Professor Stubbs for pointing out to me the curious passage to which the text probably refers. It is in the *Sententie* of Isidore, Bishop of Seville, lib. iii. cap. li, and is so interesting in itself, that I quote it at some length:—'Principes seculi nonnunquam intra Ecclesiam potestatis adeptæ culmina tenent: ut per eandem potestatem disciplinam Ecclesiasticam muniant. Ceterum intra Ecclesiam potestates necessariae non essent, nisi ut, quod non praevaleret sacerdos efficere per doctrinae sermonem, potestas hoc imperet per disciplinae terrorem. Saepe per regnum terrenum celeste regnum pro-

ficat, ut qui intra Ecclesiam positi contra fidem et disciplinam Ecclesiae agunt, rigore principum conterantur: ipsamque disciplinam quam Ecclesiae humilitas exercere non praevaleret, cervicibus superbiorum potestas principalis imponat; et ut venerationem mereatur, virtute potestatis impertiat. — Cognoscant principes saeculi Deo debere se rationem reddere propter Ecclesiam, quam a Christo tuendam suscipiunt. Nam, sive augeatur pax et disciplina Ecclesiae per fideles principes, sive solvatur; ille ab eis rationem exiget, qui eorum potestati suam Ecclesiam creditit.'

Kings and  
 princes are  
 keepers of  
 Christ's  
 Church as well  
 as priests.

Christ's exceeding love for his Church.

cause:—for þei witen not whanne þe lord of þis house ~~shal~~ come, in tyme of mennis deþ, ne in tyme of his laste dome. And þanne he shal speke in þis cause moost sharpi of alle oþer. For þis cause he chargiþ moost; siþ ~~he~~ loveþ more his Chirche þan ony persone þerof, and bad ~~alle~~ to worshiþe þis modir boþe in þe olde lawe and in þe ~~newe~~. And, for God shal come privyly to þes two jugementis ~~at un-~~knowinge of men, þefore he is seid to come *on þe nyzt*. ~~A nyzt~~ is partid in foure houres; as *evenynge and mydnyzt, cockis crow-inge and morewynnge*; and alle þes houres ben unknowun. For if we departe our lif to our deþ in foure houris, or tyme to þe laste dome in four houris, evene to hemsilf, we witen never how nyzt or ferre is þe comynge of þis Lord. And ~~algatis~~, ~~þif~~ we wole be saved, we moten waken fro synne, so þat ~~we be not~~ foundun þanne on deed sleep. For þe trumpe shal ~~waken us~~, ouþer to blisse or to peyne. And þis Lord shal dampne ~~alle þo~~ þat he shal þanne fynde sleping; for ech man þat shal be saved shal be clene at þe dai of dome. And þus Crist spekiþ generali, to printe þis love in alle mennis hertis; *þat þing þat Y seie to þou, Y seie to alle,—wake ȝe.*

ÞE GOSPEL OF OON CONFESSOR AND DOCTOUR.

[SERMON LXXX.]

*Vos estis*<sup>1</sup> *sal terre.*—MATT. v. [13.]

The salt of the earth.

Þis gospel is seid of Crist, as it semep to many men, to alle þo þat he ȝyveþ witt to profite to his Churche. But it is seid speciali to bishopis, and to confessouris, and to techeris of Goddis lawe, for to alle þes God ȝyveþ salt. And Crist telliþ to alle siche what office þat þei shal have, and whanne þei faile in her office, and what wise þei shal be punished. First seiþ Crist to þes servantis: *ȝe ben salt of þe erþe. And ȝif þe salt vanishe away, in what þing shal þe erþe be saltid? Þis salt is not worþ after but to be casten out and be defoulid of men, þat shulden*

<sup>1</sup> So E; *Vos qui estis*. A.

take hede to þis salt. Þis salt of þe erþe ben techeris þe whiche bi þe lawe of Crist speken sharpli to men, and tellen hem þer defaultis. Þis þei done to erþeli men whanne God rubbiþ þy hem his lawe. We shal first wite þe kynde of salt, and siþ what properties it haþ. And bi þis mai we wite where men þat comen as apostlis done þe office of her stat, or ellis þei failen of her office. Clerkis seien þat salt is maad of gravel and of water, wiþ hete of þe sonne or of fier, and maad hard wiþ blast of þe wynd. And by Aristotlis reule it is dissolved bi þe contrarie <sup>a</sup>. And so cold þing and moist dissolvþ salt, siþ hote þing and drie makþ it hard. Þes disciplis ben made salt, þat sum tyme weren unstable as gravel, bi þe water of baptem, and hete of charite, and wynd of þe Holi Goost, to savore men as salt doþ. And þes ben maad whittere þan snow fro þe blaknes of her synne. And kynde of water saddid in hem bitokeneþ þe stable witt of God. And þus, for Goddis lawe commandiþ in offringe to be devocion and hete of charite, þerwiþ Goddis lawe biddiþ, in figure of þis, in ech offringe to be salt offrid. And þus shulden doctours teche þe peple how þei shulden lyv to God, and how þei shulden do here almes. For ȝif coveitouse men rubben to hem, þei ben not salt but cold water.

The composition of salt.

Many propirteis ben of salt, and to telle few here is ynow<sup>3</sup>. O propirte of salt is þat it makþ fleish drie and kepþ it fro rotting and fro stinkinge and fro wormes. So prestis, bi Goddis wordis, shulden have hem to fleishli men. Þei shulden drie hem from lecherie, and kepe hem from yvel conscience, and fro stynking of synne, and þanne þei hav þe kynde of salt. And þus salt makþ mete savory, and salt makþ þe erpe bareyne, and salt heliþ fleishli woundis whanne it is stoppid in hem. Bi þes þre propirtees of salt shulden doctours worchen in fleishli men, and avoide hem fro ivel workis, and make hem bareyne fro fleishli dedis. And þei shulden savore Goddis wordis, and declare hem bi resoun, and pronounce hem to þe peple, as þes wordis wolden plese to hem. And þus depe woundis in man þat weren groundid

The properties of salt.

<sup>a</sup> οὐδὲν δοκεῖ ἅμα τὰ ἐναντία ἐπιδέχασθαι. *Categ.* 6, 18; compare *Topi-  
corum*, ii. 7. 4.

in old synne shulden be heeled bi virtue of God. And þanne men kepten þe kynde of salt, and failing in ony of þes wolde make failinge in oure salt.

And þus mai men wite wher bishopis or oþer prechours to þe peple failen in þis kynde of salt, or ellis done treuli her office. Crist techiþ þat ȝif þei failen þei shal be cast out, and defoulid of men, and to þes two ben þei worpi. And þis shal be at þe last dome, whanne þese false men shal be cast out into þe fier of helle and to be defoulid of many men. But, as many þenken, sich men shulden be punishid here, and be put out of her office and be defoulid of oþer men. Þus þe wise kyng Salomon tretede þe hiȝe preest of his fadir. For siþ lordis shulden reule Cristis Chirche, and þes don so moche harm þerto, a greet charite were it in lordis to put doun þes Goddis enemyes, and bi forme of Goddis lawe to maken hem serve in her office. And þis is oon þe moste defaute þat rengneþ now in þe Chirche. Þese prelatiþ þat shulden be salt and make Goddis lawe savory — for, as Seint Poul techiþ, oure word shulde be savorid wiþ salt—þei ben now fresh brotel<sup>1</sup> and stinkinge, and turnid al fro þe kynde of salt, and wiþ stinkinge wordis and lawe þei maken Goddis lawe unsavory. And goodis put in preestis possessioun is rote of al þis synne; for þei wolden ellis be stable as salt and savoren her word and stonde þerbi, and suffre for Goddis lawe deþ, and distrie þe fendis lawe. But now þei ben fresh as foolis and wanten witt and charite. And herfore þe charite of many wexiþ cold, as Crist haþ told.

Þe secound word of þis gospel seiþ to þes Cristis disciplis : *ȝe ben liȝt of þe world.* And foure propirtees ben in liȝt, þat shulden acorde to þese techeris; and þanne Crist seiþ soþ of hem as he dide of his apostlis. Þe first propirte of liȝt stondiþ in þis þing, þat among bodili qualitees liȝt is more spiritual. Þe secounde propirte of liȝt stondiþ in þis þing, þat among bodili formes liȝt is moost general, for it bringiþ forþ alle þing þat groweþ here in erþe. Þe þridde propirte of liȝt stondiþ in þis, þat in al his worchinge it worchiþ bi ordre; for

1 Kings ii. 26.

Col iv. 6.

Wealth the  
cause of the  
corruption of  
the clergy.

Matt. xxiv. 22.

Light and its  
properties.

<sup>1</sup> *brutl*, E.

reule of þe<sup>1</sup> hiȝe kynd lediþ liȝt ever. Þe fourþ propirte of liȝt stondiþ in þis, þat among oþer qualitees it confortiþ more man; for a man kyndeli hidousiþ derknesse and is gladid bi liȝt as oure witt telliþ. As anentis þe firste propirte prelatiſ shulde be spiritual, and holden hem paied of litil bodili goodis; for so dide Crist and Baptist and oþer apostliſ; but now þei axen worldli fare in fode and aray. As anentis þe secounde propirtee, prelatiſ shulden be comun and profite to alle men, and acorde wiþ hem in goode, and be to alle alle þingis, as Seint Poul was. For he shulde grutche aȝens nouȝt but þat þat smacchiþ synne. After þe þridde propirte prelatiſ shulden worche wiseli, now prechinge, now preiyng, now wel lvyng. And what liif ever þei lyveden shulde<sup>2</sup> profite to þe Chirche, and wher þei myȝten more profite, more þei shulden worche. After þe fourþe propirte a prelat shulde ȝyve confort to lyve after Crist, and fle derkenes of synne, and nevere speke of peyne but for þis entent, to make men fle synne and ȝyve hem to virtues. And al þe lif of prelatiſ shulde sowne counfort to þe peple. And shortli, noþing falliþ to þe reule of preestis þat it ne is ensamplid in propirtees of liȝt. Liȝt worchiþ redili, and boþe in fair and in foule, and takiþ not but beyng of þe place to which it profitiþ. And þus shulde prestis be liȝt of þis world, and gendre witt and charite among men þat þei delen wiþ.

Þe þridde tyme lickeneþ Crist his clerkes to a *cite*, and seiþ, *þat it may not be hid whanne it is sett on a hill*. Prelatiſ shulde be a citee and take fleying of þe contre whanne þei ben pursued of her goostli enemyes. Liȝt and al maner of fode shulde þis cite hav, þat ȝif it failide in þe contre þere shulden men fynde it. Al maner of marchaundise shulde it have to selle, and store þe contre wiþouten ony charging; for goostli þing encresiþ whanne it is more usid. And so as Ysaye techiþ, þei shulden not chaffere wiþ moneie; but as þei token freeli of God so shulden þei ȝyve freeli. This cite shulde be sett upon an hill, þe which hil is Jesus Crist, þat is hied over oþer hillis as Ysay telliþ. For Crist is fondement and hill and dore bi many resouns. And no man shulde take þis state but in virtu of Crist, lest he be a smoky hill, wyndi, and of yvel wedris.

<sup>1</sup> om. E.<sup>2</sup> So E; *shulden*, A.

The clergy  
should be the  
city set on  
a hill.

Is. l. l.

And like the  
candle set on  
a candlestick.

Ʒe fourþe liknesse of Crist is of a *lyzt lanterne þat men putte on a candelsticke in a derk hous, þat men þat comen in see soone lyzt*. And, for sich prelatiſ ben not lyzt in kynde, þerfore þei ben likned of Crist to a lanterne; and wyndis of þis world shulden not quenche her lyzt. Ʒe candilsticke þat þei ben inne shulde be Cristis lawe. And so, ȝif a prelate implie him wiþ seculer nedis, he crepiþ undir a bushel and failiþ of his lyztung. *Þis hous is holi Chirche, to which prelatiſ shulde profite wiþouten envie for taking of her lyzt*. And herfore biddiþ Crist to his disciplis, *þat her lyzt shal shyne in presence of men, þat þei see her goode workes, and so þanke God of hevene*. And here mai we see how dowing of þe Chirche is not tauzt of Crist, but evene þe contrarie of it. For bi þis prestis ben hid under þe bushel, and þe peple seeþ not þer postliſ workes, but workes of þe world. And þei glorifie not God bi hem, but preisen þe emperour. And wise men holden him a fool, for he derkide þus þe Chirche. And, for men myzten seien þat Crist cam to unbinde þe lawe, and so office of his preestis shulden change fro þe olde lawe, as Anticristis prestis serven now to þe world,—herfore seiþ Crist, *þat men shulden not gesse þat he cam to louse þe lawe, but for to fulfille it*. And so as preestis in þe olde lawe weren bisee aboute her bestis, so prestis in Cristis lawe shulden be more spiritual, and lyztne folk bi þe gospel, and bicom e profetis. But þe fend haþ turned þis work al to worldli liif, alȝif disciplis of þis worlde shulden have here her blisse. And for filling of þis law Crist seiþ þus: *Sopeli, Ʒ seie to ȝou, til þat hevene and erþe passe aweie, an i ne a tulle shal not passe fro þe lawe bifore alle þingis ben doone*. And þis word of Crist is aȝens lawe of Anticrist, for Crist spekiþ here of þe old lawe of God, and wole þat, as longe tyme as hevene goiþ aboute, and peple dwelliþ here in erþe by chaunging of men, þe leste mandement of God, [is]<sup>1</sup> undirstonden bi leste letre<sup>a</sup>, ne þe leste counseil, or þe witt of ceremonie, shall not passe fro Goddis lawe til þe dai of dome come. For alȝif Anticrist have brouzt a lawe þat lett iþ þe use<sup>2</sup> of Goddis lawe, ȝit þe treuþe

<sup>1</sup> om. E; rightly.

<sup>2</sup> So E; *uss*, A.

<sup>a</sup> Yōdh, or iōta, the smallest letter in the Hebrew alphabet.

of Goddis lawe and þe dette to usen it lastiþ evermore and bindiþ men ful harde. And it is not list to unbinde oon of Goddis heestis; for Crist bihetiþ here; *þat who ever doþ þus he shal be clepid leste in þis Chirche wanderinge*, siþ þe Chirche above jugiþ him in þis Chirche and not of þe Chirche, but to be dampned in helle. And þis cleping of þe Chirche above mut nedelingis stonde; but defending and teching of þe lawe of God makij a man clepid of him grete in þe blisse of hevene.

OF OON CONFESSOUR AND ABBOT.

[SERMON LXXXI.]

*Nemo accendit lucernam.*—LUC. xi. [33.]

Þis gospel techiþ how ech confessour shulde kepe him, and speciali abotis and þes newe religiouse. But, as it semeþ to juste men, Crist telliþ litil bi þes ordris, but telliþ ech man of his Chirche how he<sup>1</sup> shal profite þerto, and how he shal kepe himself in state of salvacioun. First spekiþ Crist in figuratife speche, and seiþ þat, *no man listiþ a lanterne in derknesse, and puttiþ it in oon of þes two infamous<sup>2</sup> places; neþer in hid place<sup>3</sup> ne undir a bushel.* Ech man shulde be a lanterne listid of God. Þe bodi of þis lanterne is mannis bodi; þe hornes of þis lanterne ben spiritis in man, and þe remanent of his bodi, as fleish and boon, ben oþer tres<sup>4</sup> in which þis horn is picchid. Þe list in þis lanterne is mannis soule, and listnyge wiþinneforþ is witt þat God 3eveþ man. Þat man puttiþ his lanterne in hidd place or undir a bushel, þat lyveþ in worldli bisynes and not profiteþ to þe Chirche. For God haþ 3ovun him soule and witt, to list men here in erþe þat ben in derknes of synne, as ech man shulde liste to oþere; for ech man haþ sum knowing þat failiþ to anoþer man; and so ech man shulde be lanterne to listne sum men of Goddis hous; and herfore 3eveþ God

How Christian men are to keep themselves in the state of salvation

<sup>1</sup> So E; *we. A.*

<sup>2</sup> *famous, E*

<sup>3</sup> *placis. E.*

<sup>4</sup> *trees, E.*

þis liȝt to liȝte sum men in þis world. And þanne þe liȝt failiþ in þis lanterne whanne þe man is deed in bodi. And ȝif he be deed in good workes þis lanterne is deed in a man. But riȝt as lanterne wantiþ of himsilf liȝt to shyne wiþinne or wiþout, so mannis bodi wantiþ of himsilf liȝt of liif and of witt.

And so God biddiþ þis lanterne to be put *on hȝe on a candilstick* to *ȝeve men liȝt in Goddis hous*, and algatis to liȝt þis hous. And so þis candilstick may be state þat God approveþ to þis ende, as sevene candilstickis of gold ben sevene statis of bishopis. And, as many men þenken, alle þes newe religious ben hid bi mannis ordenaunce to bere liȝt to Cristis Chirche; for ȝif a man be closid in a cloistre, what profitiþ he, bi Cristis ordenance, to make liȝt to his broþer þat feiliþ not of his profit? And þus closing of þes cloistres, or hiȝe housis, þat men hav foundun, is biside Cristis lawe, foundun of prince of þis erþe. And so alle þes ben yvel hid fro profit of holi Chirche.

And þus spekiþ Crist generali to Cristen men, and seiþ, *þe lanterne of þi bodi is þin iȝe*. And þat is on double manere; for sum men hav *a simple iȝe*, and *þat eiȝe liȝtiþ al þe bodi*; and *ȝif þin eye be wayward*, *ȝhe, þi bodi shal be derk*. Here is þe lanterne clepid, þe liȝt þat shulde be in þis lanterne; for þis liȝt is þe ende wherfore God haþ maad þis lanterne. And ȝif þis liȝt be of riȝt entent þanne is þin iȝe simple; as men þat wolen profite to Cristis Chirche, after Goddis lawe, hav a riȝt eiȝe and a simple, even after Goddis wille. And so a simple þing is seid wiþouten folding fro þis riȝt. And þe liȝt of charite shyneþ in siche a lanterne; for as Poul seiþ:—Charite sekþ not his owne wyngnyng, but how it myȝte best profite to many men of þe Chirche. But he haþ a blynd eyȝe turned awayward from God þat sekþ more his owne wyngnyng þan profit of Cristis Chirche; and in þis angle of þis eiȝe is derknesse fro charite. And þes men wanten liȝt of God, þat shulden shyne riȝtli bi hem. And but ȝif Goddis grace worche bi hem, þei ben derke as to merite. And so seiþ Crist, þat simple iȝe makþ al þe bodi shynnyng, and iȝe þat is turned amys makþ þe bodi al derk. And þe bodi may be clepid þe multitude of mannis workes, or mannis liif, þat is medeful or sinful bi sich ententis; for bi þes man haþ charite or wantiþ charite in his workes. And herby

Apoc. i. 20.

The religious  
inutility of  
cloistered  
orders.

The single  
eye.

1 Cor. xiii. 5.



mannis lyf is medeful or dampnable bi Goddis lawe. And þus þe charite of Crist stretchip riȝtli wiþouten angle, to profit of Cristis Chirche, and not to profit of him silf. And þus Poul souȝte many mennis profit, and not his owne worldli wynnyng; for sich entent is algatis derk, and liȝt of God goip not þerby.

1 Cor. x. 33.

And herfore biddip Crist to us *þat we shulde see þat liȝt in us be not derknesse*, bi yvel entent; for þanne it is an yvel liȝt. No man is here in erþe þat ne God ȝeveþ him sum liȝt: as sum knowing and sum entent in coveiting of sum good. And ȝif þis liȝt be riȝtful, wiþouten angle of crokidnesse, þanne Goddis grace shyneþ wiþ him, and ellis his liȝt is derknesse; for sich crokidnesse bringip aȝen derknesse of mannis liif. *And so, ȝif al þi bodi be al shynnyng, havynge noo part of derknesse, it shal be shynnyng al, and it shal liȝtne þee as a lanterne of shynnyng.* Þes wordis semen superflu and seid of Crist wiþouten witt. But it is aȝens bileve to trowe þus of Cristis wordis; and þerfore we shal undirstonde þat þer ben two goodnessis in workes; goodnesse in kynde of workes, and goodnesse in vertues. Þe firste mai be wiþouten þe secounde, but þe secounde is þe betere; as ȝif a man bi ypocrisie ȝyve good to nedi men, þan his ȝyvyng is good and his work is ful of liȝt; but it haþ oonli liȝt of kynde and not liȝt of vertues. And þis techip Crist us: þat ȝif al þe bodi of oure workes be shynnyng bi liȝt in kynde, and hav noo part of derknesse, neiþer in kynde ne in vertues, þanne it shal be al liȝt bi double liȝt of kynde and vertues. And þis secounde liȝt of vertues men shulden moche telle bi, and fle derknes in vertues, al ȝif þei have liȝt in kinde. For God lokip to þis secounde liȝt, and blessip men in hevene þerfore; and for þe first liȝt of kynde a man mai be depe dampned in helle: as ȝif þou bi ypocrisie do good to þi neiȝbore, and die in þis ypocrisie, þou shalt be depe dampned in helle; and for þis good þat þou didist þou shalt be dampned wiþouten ende. And ȝif þou ponishe a man of þe Chirche, for double love þat þou hast, boþe to þe Chirche and to þis man, al if þou erre in þis man, supposing þat he be yvel, and he be good to siȝt of God, and God excusip þi ignoraunce for derkness hid to þee; ȝit þou maist be saif in hevene for þis yvel werk in his

Objective  
goodness and  
subjective  
goodness.

kynde, and goodnesse þat it haþ in vertues<sup>a</sup>. And þerfore loke to þis godenesse. And þus seiþ Crist: þat ȝif þi workes ben alle ful of liȝt of kynde, and þei have noo derkness of vertues, þanne þei shal be algatis liȝt, and liȝten þee as lanterne of shynyng. And þus þou shuldist riȝte þi iȝe, and alȝatis from derknes of vertues. And ȝif þou have þes two liȝtis, it makij more shynyng to þee. But algatis have þis secounde liȝt; for wiþouten it is noȝt medeful. And herfore seiþ Crist here, þat þis bodi of þi workes shal liȝte þee as a lanterne of shynyng bi Goddis grace. And þus, ȝif we studien wel, þes wordis of Crist, þat semen unsavery, and rehersid wiþouten witt, ben ful of witt þat men shulde knowe; siþ mannis entente shulde be reulid bi riȝtnes of his vertues, and man shulde also be bisie to done his workes good in kynde. But riȝtnes of þis oþer entent is algatis nedeful to man, siþ mannis entent moot nedis be reulid bi þe lawe of God, þat he do bi charite alle hise workes þat he doijþ. And so blyndnesse of þe first liȝt takij man in excusing; but blyndnesse of þe secounde liȝt mai no way be excusid. But boþe þes blyndenesis shulden be fled; siþ þe firste bringijþ in þe toþer.

Application to  
the frars.

And blyndenes of þes newe ordris makij many men to be dampned; siþ þe state of preestis þat Crist ordeyned was liȝt and esi for to knowe, but þe fend marieþ<sup>1</sup> manye wiþ newe statis þat he brouȝt inne; and he mooveþ hem to speke aȝens þe lore þat Crist haþ tauȝt. And, for þes derke wordis of Crist maken many men to muse, men seken divers weies to undirstonde Cristis wordis:—as sum men seien þat Crist techij here, þat ȝif alle workes of þi liif be, at þi deþ, shynynge by grace, þei shal be shynyng after in hevene, and liȝte þee as a lanterne of briȝtnes; for men shal after be briȝt in hevene, moche more þanne we weny<sup>2</sup> here. How ever Crist undirstood, we bileve þes wordis ben soþ, and ful of resoun and witt, and knowun to hem þat he wole shewe it.

<sup>1</sup> *marriþ*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *wenen*, E.

<sup>a</sup> 'In kynde,' that is, objectively, the persecution of an innocent man is an evil work; but 'in vertues,' or subjectively, and by virtue of your

pure intention, it may be a good work, and may help to make you 'saif in hevene.'

THE GOSPEL ON FEESTIS OF MANY CONFESSOURS.

[SERMON LXXXII.]

*Sint lumbi vestri praecincti.*—Luc. xii. [35.]

Þis gospel techiþ alle men how þat þei shulden lyve to Crist, but speciali prelatis, þat shulden be list to þe peple. And so, for confessours kepten þis lore in her liif bifore oþer men, þefore þe Chirche rediþ þis gospel whanne men seien of confessouris. First Crist biddiþ to his disciplis, *þat her lendis be girdid bifore, and lanternes brennyng in her hondis, as þei shulden bide her Lord whanne he comeþ azen fro bridalís.* Þes lendis þat Crist spekiþ of ben þe fleishli kynde joyned wiþ þe soule. And þes lendis helpen þe spirit upon two maneres; and for þes two maneris þei ben clepid lendis. Þis fleish serveþ to þe soule, suffringe as it shulde suffre, and doinge as it shulde do, whanne it is tauȝt wel of þe soule. And þus seiþ Poul<sup>a</sup>, þat Crist was in Abrahams lendis. And so Crist techiþ here chastite, as Gregory seiþ<sup>b</sup>;—but not oonli chastite but alle fleishli vertues. Þes lendis ben girded bifore, whanne man, by discrescioun, drawiþ from his fleish þe norishment þerof; or chastiseþ it, on oþer manere, bifore it falle in synne. Brennyng lanternes ben medeful workes þat men have in her vertue, bi whiche þei shulden worche; and, for þes workes comen bope of bodi and of soule, þefore þei ben clepid of Crist two lanternes, and þei ben in oure hondis whanne we worchen wiþ hem. For it is not ynow; to kepe us fro synnes, but if we worken gode workes bi þes two lanternes.

The saintly life.

But for þes bridalís, we shal wite þat þei ben taken on many maneres; first for þe weddingis þat Crist is joyned wiþ þe soule; after for þe dwellinge þat Crist dwelliþ wiþ þe soule;

The lord's return from the wedding.

<sup>a</sup> Compare Hebrews vii. 10, Gal. iii. 17. The writer of the sermon appears to have misunderstood the first of these passages.

<sup>b</sup> S. Greg. Homilia xiii. 'Lumbos enim praecingimus, cum carnis luxuriam per continentiam coarctamus.'

and þe þridde for þe goostli fode þat soulis ben fed wip Crist in blisse. And so þei ben þree weddingis þat Crist is weddid here; first whanne he toke mankynde, and made it oo persone wip him; after whanne he takip his Chirche, and makip it oo spouse wip him; þe þridde wedding is particuler, whanne Crist takip oo soule to him. And so Crist is seid to turne aȝen fro bridalys on two maneris. First, whanne a man is deed þat Crist haȝ ordeyned to come to blisse, Crist turneȝ aȝen to his soule from dwelling wip þe Chirche in hevene. But Crist leveȝ not þis Chirche, but on new manere dwellip wip þis soule. But þanne he must have dwelt bifore, or ellis þis soule cam not bi þis state. And so we shulden be liche to men þat abiden þe comyng of Crist, in tyme of deȝ, or þe dai of dome. And þis abiding shulde alle men marke, for þis comyng is uncertein, and þis tyme is perilous; siȝ þis drauȝt mot be wel drawn ȝif oure liif shal ouȝte profite. And so to þes comyngis of Crist shulde ech man make him redi; siȝ Crist shal come and knocke at doris, and entre to hem þat ben wakinge, and redi to resseyve Crist wipouten sleping in synne. And þis openyng shal be doon anoon, as liȝtning of sonne<sup>1</sup> is in þe eir. And so Crist knockip at oure doris whanne he techip us signes of deȝ, or signe of þe dai of dome; but þe laste knockyng is sudeyne. ȝif a man be redi bifore to dwellen wip Crist wipouten ende, þanne he openeȝ to Crist, siȝ þis openyng is redynesse. And þus seiȝ Crist ful sopli, *þat þes servauntis ben blessid whiche, whanne þe Lord comeȝ, he findeȝ þus wakinge. Sopeli, Y seie to ȝou, þat þis Lord shal girde him, and make hem sitte to mete, and passe and mynystre to hem.* Þe sitting to mete of seintis, is confermyng of hem in blisse; þe passing of þis Lord bi hem is his shewing to oon and oȝer. And al ȝif þis shewing be togidere, ȝit her taking is divers; and her diversite is signefied bi þis passing of Crist. Þis service is liȝt to Crist, for it is but Cristis shewing of his Godhede, and his manhede, in which seintis shal be fed.

Opening to  
him.

The meaning  
of the three  
watches;

*And ȝif þis Lord come in þe secounde vigile, and eke in þe þridde, and fynde sich redynesse in þes servantis, ful blessid ben þes servantis, siȝ þei anoon ben blessid of God. Þes þre vigiles þat Crist tellip*

<sup>1</sup> sunne, E.

of here, ben þre wakingis fro synne, and algatis fro þe laste synne þat is þe worste yvel þat mai be; and so we preien in þe Pater noster God to delyvere us fro þis yvel. Þes vigiles ben clepid þre, for þe Holy Trinite, for þouȝt of resoun of him, shulde make men to wake wel. And so ech tyme þat man lyveþ here is departid in þree parties, and tyme to þe dai of dome is also departid in þree; and, for þe quantite of þes þree is uncertein to man, þefore he shulde ever wake, and þanne he wakip þes þree vigilis. Þe first þree haþ ech seint, bifore þe soule go fro þe bodi; þe toþer þre haþ þe Chirche, bifore þe dai of dome come. And so unknowing of þes tymes, and knowinge how men shulden ever wake, profitip unto Goddis children, as done alle þingis. As Poul seiþ<sup>a</sup>, bi þat þat we knowun not þe quantite of þes þre tymes, shulden we ever more be in drede and ever wake out of synne.

And þis lore techip Crist in a parable to his children. *Þis þing he seiþ, wite we<sup>1</sup> wel þat ȝif þe housebonde wiste what tyme þe<sup>2</sup> þeef wolde come, and stele his goodis, he wolde wake warli, and suffre not þis þeef þus to breken his hous, and spoylen him. It is touchid bifore<sup>b</sup> how þis þeef is þe fend, þat doiþ al his diligence to tempte man whanne he shal die. For ech man and a fend ben couplid togider in a liste and fiȝten boþe niȝt and dai, and algatis whanne þe fend hopip to overcome. And so whanne þe nyȝt of synne blindip men to knowun hemsilf, þanne is tyme to þe fend to fiȝte fastist<sup>3</sup> wiþ his make; for riȝt as nestis in a sunne beem ben wel perceyved wiþ filþe of man, so synnes ben wel perceyved of a man þat is in grace. Þis þeef worchip ever bi disseitis, and fiȝtip blebeliest<sup>4</sup> on nyȝtis; and in tyme of mannis deþ he enforsip moost to overcome, for þis victorie shal ever laste, on wheþer side þat it falle. Þis housebondis hous is his bodi, þat his soule is kept ynne; and undirmynyng of þis hous mai be don on two maneres. First, whanne þe fend supposip þat a man shal die here, he gaderip togidere mannis spiritis, and temptip him to mony synnes, as to ire and lecherie, and algatis to dis-*

and of the thief.

<sup>1</sup> ȝe, E.

<sup>2</sup> So E; om. A.

<sup>3</sup> fast, E.

<sup>4</sup> So E; *blelyerst*, A.

<sup>a</sup> The passage referred to is not in any of the Pauline epistles, but in 1 Pet. i. 17.

<sup>b</sup> See Sermon LXXVI, p. 251.

Spiritual safe-  
guards.

peire. But blesse we us wiþ þe Trinite, and þenken on him in þis cais; and aʒens þe firste synne þenke we mekeli on Goddis power, how God is stronger þan þe fend, and wiþouten him mai we nouȝt do. And sich þouȝt of þe Fadir of Hevene shulde overcome þe fend in hour of deþ. Aʒens þe secounde synne of þe fend we shulden þenke on God þe Sone, how kyndeli he is spouse to us, and bouȝte us wiþ his precious blood, and how he mai not parte fro us, but ȝif oure unkyndenesse be in cause; how fair and good a spouse is Crist, and how foul is þe fend; and bi sich þouȝtis Crist wolde ȝeve vertue to men to overcome þe fend, whanne he temptiþ man in hour of deþ to þenke on lecherie. Aʒens dispeir we shulden þenke on goodnesse of þe Holy Goost, how oure good God may not leeve us, but ȝif oure folie be in cause; and ȝif we hav synned nevere so moche, and nevere so longe have leien in synne, axe we God mercy in oure þouȝte, and have we sorewe for þis synne, and God is redi to forȝeve it, how ever þat preestis failen.—For þe fend may be away fro mannis soule, but not God; and þe mercy of God is more þan is envie of þe fend, and goodnesse of God is more þan is hate of þe fend. What shulde move men to dispeire, siþ þei may so listli be saif?

The hour of  
death.

And noþing is more in mannis power þan is þouȝt of his soule, but we mote have alone drede to oure God in þis hour; siþ we witen þat olde synne may be so hard þanne in oure soule, þat we shal not be þanne in power to aʒenstonde tempting of þe fend. For as a ȝerde mai growe so greet, and be so stiff in his strengþe, þat men shal not wriþe it, þouȝ þei wolde never so fayn, so synne may growe in man, and be so strong in tyme of deþ, þat riȝtwisnes of God wole lette man to obeie þanne þus to God. Þis drede of God shulde we have, and algatis in hour of deþ; and þis is a good defence aʒens þe fend and dispeir. But þis mote be alone drede, and hope in þe love of God; how þat God haþ more love þan þe fend haþ envye; for Goddis love is wiþouten ende, but þis envie is foul and feble; and þis envie mai not do but in vertue of Goddis love; for love þat God loveþ riȝtwisnesse makþ overcomyng in þis hour. Lord! siþ good God ȝeveþ us strengþe to love him, and to hope in him, and þe fend mai not lette to þenke on þis ȝifte of God,

what man shulde dispeire of God, in our<sup>1</sup> þat God departiþ þe soule? God suffriþ þe fend to have power to haste a man to his dep, but gode God wole nevere suffre þat ne man mai freli þenke on him; and ȝif þis power be for barrid<sup>2</sup>, synne of man is þe cause, and resouns of þe fend ben blindid in þis matere. Þe fend puttþ to us grete synnes þat we have done in work and þouzt, and for gretenesse of þes synnes Goddis riȝtwisnes haþ hardid us. But þis foole shal wel wite how þat we wolen answe're here. We graunte mekeli þat we have synned in þouzt, and word, and in dede; but we wite þat Goddis grace is moche more þan al oure synne. And þis fool knowiþ not how þat God haþ mekid us now, for we felen þe grace of God, how we hopen in his goodnesse, and sorowen for oure synne. And þis þe fend knowiþ not, but ȝit þe fend argueþ þus: algatis sum man mote be dampned; but who shulde be dampned, but þou, þat þus hast ben unkynde to God? Here we answeren to þe fool, þat he takiþ a þing þat is soþ, but how can þis fend prove þat Goddis riȝt wole have me dampned? siþ Y have hope in my soule, þat is hid to þe fend. And wel Y woot þe fend knowiþ not þis pryvy ordenaunce of God, as he knewe not his owne dampnyng, how God shope it to blis of seintis. But ȝit þe fend argueþ þat alle þingis þat shal come mut nedis come bi þe ordenance of God, and þus þe fend mote have of me a glorious victorie. But here we answeren to þis fend, and graunte him þat he takiþ; and so he mut nedis be dampned for folie þat he is inne; for he travalliþ bisili to have victorie of us, but ȝit we hopen þat he shal faile, bi sparclis of grace þat we felen. And wel we witen as bileve, ȝif þe fend overcome us, it shal not be glorious to him, but more to his dampnacioun; for ever þe more harm þat he doiþ, ever þe worse shal he be punishid. And so men þat shal be dampned wiþ him shal be ever peyne-ful to him, for he shal ever forþinken þat he dide so myche yvel. And so þe fend, concludid in insolible, shal ever forþinke and like togidere. What man þat knowiþ þis foolis castis shulde be overcomen wiþ þis fend, siþ oure good God is so nyȝe, and his mercy is so greet, and folie of þis proude fend in bostinge of þingis þat he knowiþ not is so stynkinge bifore God, and so knowun to Goddis children?

Reflections  
against  
despair.

<sup>1</sup> *boure*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *forbarrid*, E.

ÞE GOSPEL ON FEESTIS OF MANY CONFESSOURS.

[SERMON LXXXIII.]

*Misit Jesus duodecim discipulos.*—MATT. X. [5.]

The mission of  
the Apostles  
and their  
successors.

Þis gospel telliþ how preestis shulden traveile in Goddis cause, and how kynde þat þei shulden be boþe to God and to þe peple. For wordis seid to Cristis disciplis shulden teche us preestis how we shulden do, siþ we shulden be vikeris of hem; and ellis Crist bindiþ us bi no lore. And þus a prest dampneþ himsilf þat seiþ þat Crist spekiþ not here to him; for he seiþ in a maner þat he is þe fendis child. And for his unkyndnes Crist wolde not bidde him do Goddis work, but do as yvel as he mai; and Crist þerafter shal dampne him; and þis man beriþ upon him mater of his dispeiring. And þis shulde moove prestis alle to fille þe wordis þat Crist bad; for if þei dispisen þes wordis, þei mai dispeire as fendis children. And þus boþe bishopis and freris beren her dispeir wiþ hem, and þis will not be shaken of, but 3if þei leven her olde synne, and suen þe love of Crist þat he techiþ in þis gospel.

Þis gospel telliþ how, *Jesus sente hise twelve disciplis, and comandise hem: Go 3e not out azens my bidding in to weie of heþene men, and entre 3e not into citees, þe which ben of Samaritans.* Þese wordis moten be wel undirstondun to þe witt þat God spekiþ hem; for Crist himsilve wente ofte tymes to Gentilis and Samaritans; and he biddiþ at his departing þat þei shulden teche alle folk; and þus þes Gentile folk weren turned, many moo þan weren of Jewis. And herfore seien holi men þat Crist tauzte ordre in preching, how men shulde first go to her kyn, and first moove hem to turne to God; and 3if God telde hem unablite<sup>1</sup> of her kyn, þei shulden speke to oþer. And to þis entente dide Crist, and tauzte hise apostlis to do. And so men seien comunli þat Crist here forbed goinge

<sup>1</sup> þe inablite, E.



in to þe weie of Gentile folk; but he forbed not to go to hem; but Crist biddiþ *raþer go to þe sheep þat perischiden<sup>1</sup> of þe hous of Israel*. And it semeþ þat þes sheep þen þo men þat shal be saif; for all þes ben of Goddis hous, and men þat seen God in hevene. And alle þes weren in point to perishe bifore Cristis treuþe was teld to hem. To þes folk shulden men preche; for Cristis word wole florishe in hem, and mede and worship is in hevene to men þat prechen to þis peple. *Crist bad hem go and preche þis:—þat þe kingdom of hevene shulde neiþe*. And þis is soþ; for Crist shal come to his laste jugement, and rekene sharpli wiþ hise, boþ wiþ servauntis good and yvele. And Crist is ofte clepid in þe gospel þe kingedom of hevene, for he is heed. And þis bileve, among oþer, shulde meve men to turne to Crist. For love of þis gode Lord and drede of his ponishinge shulde be two sporis to Cristene men for to drawe in Cristis ʒok; but wanting of bileve makij many men dolle<sup>2</sup> in þis.

And fyve maneres enjoyneþ Crist to his prechours for to kepe. First, þat *þei shal hele sike men*, oþer of bodili sykenesse, or þerwiþ of goostli sekenesse. Boþe þes hadde Cristis apostlis, but we have unneþe þe toon; for we have greet grace of God ʒif we heele men fro synne. And we failen in þis craft whanne we bosten of oure power, and leven Cristis lore, or<sup>3</sup> to lyve or to preche. Þe secound manere þat we shulden have shulde be, *to reisen up deed men*; and þis mai be on two maneris. As it was seid of þe firste, algatis we shulden traveile to reise up men deed bi synne; for þis is more þan þe firste, and eende wherfore þe firste is good. And ʒif we don oure diligence þat God haþ ʒovun us power to, we mai liztli do þes two; for synne is picke sownen in londe. Þe þridde cure þat we shulden do, we shulden *hele leprouse men*. And siþ lepre is heresie, a synne bi þe whiche men ben defoulid, we have power to do þis wondir, ʒif we worchen after oure power; and oo lepre left unheeled mai enblemishe many folk. And þus we shulden be diligent to worche þis wondir in þe Chirche; for o leprous mai foule a flok, and a flok mai foule a more<sup>a</sup>. Þe fourþe work þat

Five rules for preachers.

<sup>1</sup> So E; *perichiden*, A.

<sup>2</sup> *dul*, E.

<sup>3</sup> *oþer*, E.

<sup>a</sup> A tainted flock may taint a whole moor.

preestis shulden do shulde be, þat þei shulden caste out fendis. And þis we done on betere manere 3if we casten out synnes fro men; for ech synne haþ a fend, þat goiþ whanne þis synne goiþ. But þe fend on two maneres is in diverse men. In sum men he is to tempte hem, al if he be not in her soule: In sum men he is incorporate, as in men þat have synne; and in þes soulis þe fend dwelliþ, as who shulde dwelle in his house. Þe fite manere þat prestis shulden have shulde be þankful<sup>a</sup> travailinge; for 3if þei wolen have þank of God, þei shulden here fle symonie, and neiþer sille her preching ne oþer workes þat þei done. And þis forgeten many men, boþe more prestis and lesse; for popis wolen have þe firste fruytis for benefices þat þei 3yven, and bishopis an hundrid shillingis for halewyng of oo Chirche<sup>b</sup>; and lordis wolen have longe service for o Chirche þat þei 3yven, and þis is worþ 3eer bi 3eer moche rente or moche moneie. And howevere we speken, God woot wel how þis chaffaringe is maad, pryvyli or apertli; for God knowiþ al kyn þingis, and God biddiþ us do þes dedis and hope noȝte here for hem; for 3if we hopen to be here rewarid oure hope perishiþ to have blisse.

Attack upon  
the friars.

And wiþ þis synne ben freris bleckid þat shapen to preche wynnyng here; and herfore þei prechen þe peple fablis and falskede to plesen hem. And in tokene of þis chaffare, þei beggen after þat þei have prechid; as who seiþ, 3yve me þi moneie, þat Y am worþi bi my preching. And þis chaffare is sellinge of preching, however þat it be florishid. Soþeli preestis mai medefulli, after þer sermons, ete wiþ folk; but not calenge for her sermons, neiþer bi dette ne bi custome. And herfore seien many preestis, þat no men þat have cure shal lyve but on Goddis part, as on dymes and on offringis; and so bi clene

Tithes and  
offerings suffi-  
cient for the  
support of  
the clergy.

<sup>a</sup> That is, gratuitous.

<sup>b</sup> This, if ever really exacted, must have been an excessive charge. Originally, the bishop was to receive nothing for consecrating a church; but by degrees the custom crept in of allowing a reasonable 'procuracion,' not for the consecration itself, but for the expenses of travelling, lodging, &c., which it entailed on the bishop. The amount of this

procuracion varied, says Gibson, in different dioceses. He had collected scarcely any information on the subject, beyond the single fact that in the time of Archbishop Warham (circa 1530) the sum of £10 was paid for the consecration of three churches in the diocese of Bath and Wells, or at the rate of £3 6s. 8d. for each consecration. (*Codex*, Tit. ix, cap. 1.)

titil of almes shulden þei have goodis þat þei have. For þus lyvede Crist, hiȝest pope. What art þou þat wole not lyve þus? wolt þou be gretter þan Crist þat is Lord of al þis world? Also þis manere is more meedeful to men þat shulden fynde þes preestis, and more meke and lesse worldli to prestis þat shulden be susteyned. And so it is on boþ sidis more vertuous<sup>1</sup> þan þes rentis now. And þanne God, wipouten doute, biddiþ þat þis manere be kept. Who dredip<sup>a</sup> þat ne it is more mede man to ȝeve wel his charite þan to ȝyven his worldeli dette which he oweþ bi worldli lawe? And who dredip þat ne it is more meke to be paied on Goddis part þan to calenge bi worldis titil more þan Goddis lawe axip? For þis were neer to Poulis reule, þat preestis shulden be paied of foode and hiliyng wipouten more worldli richesse; and þanne our titil myȝte be groundid; and oþer is feyned of þe fend. Also men myȝten bi conscience ȝyve good men, and take fro trauantis<sup>2</sup> betere þan þei now done. And so þis were Goddis wille, bi what resoun shulde he have dymes and offringis of þe peple þat lyveþ in lustis and in ydilnes, and profitiþ not to þis peple? Certis þis were a fendis lawe, to ȝyve Goddis part to sich men. And so comunes weren excludid of false ȝyvyng to alyens; as to popis, and cardinals, and siche Antecristis disciplis. Þei weren also excusid of ȝifte to persouns þat ben lordis clerkis, þat lyven unclerkliche; and þei weren excludid wel of þes Chirches þat ben aproprid to ȝyve Goddis part to men which ben of þe fendis covent<sup>b</sup>. And cursinge noieþ not to man, but ȝif he lyve aȝens resoun. Freris wolen have anoþer titil, and plete and fiȝte for siche goodis; but þis is Goddis lawe, however þe fend termyne. And þus curatis shulden not selle no kyn service þat þei done; but do freeli, and taken aȝen almes þat men wolen ȝyve hem; and never more curse, ne plete for sich almes of þe peple, but flee sich lawis þat techen þis, as þei weren lawis of Anticrist. And þus preestis shulden lyve clenli bi Goddis lawe, as þei diden first. And þus men shulden

<sup>1</sup> So E; *vertues*, A.

<sup>2</sup> *tirauntis*, E.

<sup>a</sup> 'who dredip' means 'who can doubt:' compare the expression, so constantly occurring in these sermons,—'it is no drede.'

<sup>b</sup> That is, parishes, the tithes of which were impropriated to monastic communities, which then served the cures from their abbey or priory.

wiþdrawen her hond fro freris þat beggen whanne þei have prechid; for þei ben coupable bi consente þat ȝeven hem on þis manere. For al þis chaunging shulde be free, þat man shulde do bi Goddis titil.

What may properly be given to priests.

And þus seiþ þe gospel here, *Sif we token freeli of God we shulden freeli ȝyve to men*, for hope of more mede in hevene. But here þe peple shulde be tauzt how þei shulden freeli ȝyve þingis þat ben nedeful to preestis, for tyme þat þei shulden serve hem; for þus ȝeveþ God to his servauntis þing nedeful to his service, and man ȝeveþ to his bodi þing nedeful to serve him. And herfore Poul seiþ it is litil ȝif we taken þing nedeful to us. But first, er<sup>1</sup> men done symony, þei shulden travaile wiþ her hondis, or go to anoþer peple, or raþer sterve in her bodi. But þis wolde falle late or never, but ȝif oure synne be in cause. And þus men þenken þat prestis mai take almes of her parishis, and go to scole, and gadere hem lore to teche hem este þe wey to hevene; but þis is fer fro dwelling of lordis<sup>2</sup>, or from oþer unhoneste liif, or from wendinge to Rome to gete a fattere benefice. Myche þing shulden men knowe here þat is hid bi þe fend, and lettiþ service of Cristis Chirche þat he ordeynede to be done.

1 Cor. ix. 11.

ÞE GOSPEL ON FEESTIS OF OON VIRGYN AND MARTIR.

[SERMON LXXXIV.]

*Simile est regnum caelorum thesauro.*—MATT. xiii. [44.]

Þis gospel, in þre parablis, spekiþ of virgines; and here men reden it, whanne þei seien of a virgyn þat was virgin and martir, as was þe heed of virginis. Þese þree parablis ben þe laste of sevene þat Crist seide togidere in þe gospel of Mathew. For God spake ofte in parablis; as David propheciede of him, and seiþ, in Cristis persone, Y shal opene my mouþ in parablis and shal speke in proposiciouns þat weren beyng and hidd at

The parables of the hidden treasure, the pearl of great price, and the net cast into the sea.

Ps. lxxviii. 2.

<sup>1</sup> or, E.

<sup>2</sup> wiþ lordis, E; which seems the better reading.

þe bigynnyng of þe world. Parablis on good manere tellen many faire treupis; and þus, for many causis, Crist spake ofte in parablis.

þe first parable of þes þree is seid þus of Crist; *þe rewme of hevene is like to tresour hid in þe feld, þe which, whanne a man findiþ, hidit<sup>1</sup>, and for joie þerof goiþ and selliþ al þat he haþ, and goiþ and biþ þat feld.* þe rewme of hevene is ofte taken for heed of þis rewme, þat is Jesus Crist, for he is in manere al þis rewme, siþ Crist is in manere ech part of himsilf. And so þe rewme of hevene, of which Crist spekiþ here, is Goddis word, oure Lord Jesus Crist. þis feld is undirstonden þe feiþ of Holi Writt, and Goddis word is hid everywhere in þis feld; for every part of Holi Writt telliþ Goddis word,—þe olde law in figure, and þe gospel expressly. Man findiþ þis tresour, whanne he takiþ þe feiþ of Goddis Sone of hevene, þat is 3it hid; for bileve is a þing hid to men þat bileven, siþ bileve is a þing þat men kyndeli seen not. And so siþte of bileve, þat is an hid siþte, is ofte tymes clepid no siþte, but treupe. He hidit þis tresour founden in þis feld þat kepiþ Holi Writt in forme of her wordis, and kepiþ þe witt of it in his soule; for no man schulde presume to amende Holi Writt, but kepe it in þe fourme þat God himsilf haþ 3ovun it. He goiþ for joie and silliþ alle his goodis to bigge þis feld, and after to traveile þerinne. He haþ first joie of þis foundun tresour, for man haþ moche joie of his riht bileve. He silliþ al þat he haþ, þat renounsiþ al his erþeli goodis, and 3eveþ him to þouzt and studie of Hooli Writt. And þus he biggiþ þis feld for erþeli substance, as prestis, þat wolen be pore for to be Cristis disciplis, and occupien her wittis in wordis of þe gospel. And al3if þis be wisdom to jugement of God, it is holden foli to men of þe world; but jugement of God mai no wey faile, and jugement of þe world is algatis fals and failinge. And so þis chaffare of þis feeld is wijs<sup>2</sup> and profitable; for rotis of bileve hid in þis feld springen out into erbis and wel-smellinge flouris. And þis susteyneþ þe Chirche here, and bringiþ it to blis; and oþer worldli profitees ben nouzt to þis profite. And þus shulden

The hidden treasure.

<sup>1</sup> So both A and E. The Wycliffite versions render, 'whiche a man þat findiþ hidit.'

<sup>2</sup> wise, E.

bishopis and prelatiſ chaffaren, and studie in Holi Writt, and levee worldli richesſes, and panne þei miȝten be doctours and disciplis of Crist.

The pearl of  
great price.

Þe secounde parable of Crist is seid in þes wordis; *Eft soone þe rewme of hevene is liche to a man marchaund þat souȝte good margaritees, and whanne he hadde foundun oon presciouse margarite, he wente out and selde al þat he hadde, and bouȝte þis margarite.* Þe rewme of hevene is clepid here þe Chirche, waundringe after Crist; for Crist, heed of al þe Chirche, bigan þe newe Testament; and fadirs of þis lawe, wiȝ vertues of Crist, mai be clepid here þe kyngdom of hevene. Þis man þat chaffareþ here is clepid ech man þat comiȝ to Goddis lawe and lyveþ þerafter. Þes margaritees ben treuþis foundun in Goddis law: Þis o margarite is Goddis word, treuþe of alle treuþis, oure Lord Jesus Crist, and þe same tresour þat was bifore foundun. Clerkis seien þat margarites ben prescious stones foundun in þe see wiȝinne shellefishe; and þei ben on two maneres: sum hoolid<sup>1</sup> and sum hool. And margaritis ben a cordial medecine, and þei maken faire mennis atire, and conforten mennis hertis. Þis oo margarite is oure Lord Jesus Crist, foundun in tribulacioun of see of þis world; and oþer margarites ben lymes of Crist, foundun in shellis of smale se<sup>2</sup> fishes. Þe manheed of Crist is a margarite þat worshipiȝ his Chirche and confortiȝ mennis hertis. Þe shelle of þis fishe is bodi of Crist, þat was stable and stef<sup>3</sup> in all his temptaciouns. And he wiȝ his martiris weren hoolid margarites. And so Crist, bi his two kyndis, is o margarite, holid and unholid; for Cristis Godheed miȝte not be hoolid; but his manheed was hoolid, as shewen his fyve woundis. And to bigge þis margarite many seintis han traveiled in þe state of grace, and bicamen ful herty; for þis medecine of margarites haȝ confortid alle martiris, and made hem herty for to die for þe love of treuþe. Confessouris and virgynes ben maad faire bi þis margarite, and ech state of men þat shal be saaf in hevene. Alle þes men sellen her goodis, as we have seid bifore, and bien þis margarite wiȝouten any chaunging. For, as Ysay seiȝ, sich

Is. lv. 1.

<sup>1</sup> *bolide*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *see*, E.

<sup>3</sup> *stiffe*, E.

men bien, wiþouten silver and wiþout chaunging, boþ wyn and mylk. For men þat chaffaren wiþ God and bien hem hevene lesen not þat þei 3yven, but hav alle þingis betere þat<sup>1</sup> þei hadden bifore, and bi a stabler titel.

þe þridde parable þat Crist telliþ is told in þes wordis: *Eft soone þe rewme of hevene is liche to a net sent in to þe see, and gaderinge in him alle maner of fishe; þe which net, whanne it was fillid, þei þat ledden it out, [and]<sup>a</sup> sitting bi þe brinke, chesiden good fishes in to her vessilis, and senten out yvel fishes. So shal it be in eendinge of þis world; angels shal wende out and shal departe yvel men fro juste men, and shal sende yvel men in to þe chymeney of fier; þer shal be wepinge and gnashing of teþ<sup>2</sup>. And after Crist axiþ hem where þei undirstonden alle þes þingis, and þei seiden, 3he. And Crist seide to hem, þerfore, ech tauzt writere in þe rewme of hevene is liche to an housebonde man þat bringiþ forþ of his tresour boþe newe þingis and olde.*

The net cast into the sea.

þis rewme of hevene is þis fizinge Chirche, sent into þe see of þis world. And þis Chirche haþ lawis knyttide togidere; and in þe myddis þerof is Crist, a blessid worm<sup>b</sup>, þat alle men coveiten kyndeli. And so alle maner of men ben gaderid into Cristis Chirche; but on two maners ben men in þis Chirche. Sum men ben in þis Chirche, and eke of þis Chirche; and þes men mai not wende out of þis nette. And oþer men ben oonli in þis Chirche and not of þis Chirche, and þes men wenden out; and in figure herof, Petre fisshide twyes; firste bifore Cristis deþ, and þanne his net was broken; and eft after Cristis deþ, and toke many grete fishes; and alþif þei weren so many, þe net was not broken. For alle þes men þat God haþ ordeyned to hevene, mai not wend out of þe nett þat is of Goddis lawis, siþ þei moten holde hem in þe bondis of þe ten comandementis. And so Crist takiþ in his Chirche two manere of juste men. Sum men þat he ordeyneþ ever to be in blisse, and þes mai not

<sup>1</sup> þan, E.

<sup>2</sup> teþ, E.

<sup>a</sup> The construction requires the omission of the conjunction, which however is found both in A and E. The earlier Wycliffite version renders, 'men ledyng out, and sit-

tyng bysidis þe brynke, chesiden, &c.'

<sup>b</sup> The 'worm' must signify here the bait that is put in the net to attract the fish.

be dampned for strengþe of Goddis ordenaunce. And sum men ben in Cristis Chirche juste for a tyme, þat fallen fro Cristis Chirche for her owne folie, siþ þei breken Goddis heestis, and lasten ever þus unkynde. But þes fishes gon not but wilfulli out of Goddis net. But þis net is nevere ful bifore þat men ben in þe Chirche, as many as God wole have saved, wiþ oþer þat he wole have dampned. Aungels of hevene ben þo þat sitten on þe banke and drawun þis nett in þe see of þis world, and bringen hem to Crist at þe daie of doom. And so þis fishinge lastiþ in tyme of boþe lawis; but þes angels departen yvel men fro juste men; and bringen juste men to hevene, and senden yvel men to helle. And þus dwellingis in hevene for dyverse holi men ben diverse vesselis into which þei ben takun. And þe chemyney of fier is þe fier of helle; for alle sich manere of fier, glowing of pikke mater, shal be closid in helle at þe daie of dome. And how þis shal be fillid þe gospel telliþ after. Þe weping þat shal be in helle is sorewe þat dampned men shal have; and gnashing of her teep is harm of her lesing; and þis is more peyne þan þe firste is.

The duties  
of bishops.

Alle þes þingis undirstonden Cristis disciplis; for oure good maistre tauzte hem more speciali. And herfore ech bishop and ech curate in þe Chirche shulde cunne þis lessoun, to teche it to þe peple. For at þe dai of dome þes uncunynge prelatis þat can not þis lore shal be unknowun for to come to blisse; and þefore we shulden ouþer denye for to be prelatis, or, ȝif we ben prelatis, we shulden cunne Goddis lawe, and preche it to þe peple, ȝif we wolen come to hevene. And þus seiþ Crist of sich goode prelatis, þat herfore ech writere, tauzt þus of God, is liche to an housebonde man þat ordeyneþ for his hous; siþ a prelate shulde more ordeyne for goostli fode þan an housebonde shulde ordeyne for bodili fode to his folk. And as þis ordeyning is betere, for þe soule passiþ þe bodi, so þis defaute of goostli foode is more dampnable bifore God. And þes prelatis ben not writeris þat ben tauzt of God, for neiþer þei ben writun in þe book of liif, neiþer þei can write vertues in mannis soule. And so þes doumbe men ben not writeris in þe rewme of hevene, but raper doumbe foolis in þe rewme of helle; for as þe fend is a king, so he haþ a rewme;

WYCLIF.



and alle men þat shal be dampned mai be clepid þe rewme of helle. And þes ben rewme of þe fend, siþ he is þer alþer-kyng. But, as a good housebonde serveþ his meynè wiþ olde fruyte and wiþ newe, þat ben of two ȝeris, so a good prelate, þat shulde teche his peple, shulde cunne two Goddis lawis, and how þei acorden togider, and teche his peple, and knowe two weies<sup>1</sup>, to go þe weye of hevene, and flee þe weie of helle; and cast out now þe ritis of þe olde lawe. But mandementis of þe olde lawe ben evermore newe; and, in tokene herof, a bishop haþ a mytre þat haþ two hornes, oon behinde and anoþer bifore; and þes two hornes bitokenen þat þei cunnen two Goddis lawis; and ȝif þei tokene falsly, he is a fals prelate, and an horned devyl to be dampned in helle.

Symbolical  
meaning of the  
bishop's mitre.

OF A VIRGYN AND NOT MARTIR.

[SERMON LXXXV.]

*Simile est regnum coelorum decem virginibus.*—MATT. XXV. [I.]

Þis laste sermoun of þe Comoun is red in two manere of festis:—in feste of o virgine, not martir, and in festis of many virgins;—and it telliþ þe state of þe Chirche, boþe now, and at þe daie of dome; and speciali bi þis part þat shulde quyke þe toþer half. For, riȝt as a man is maad boþe of bodi and of soule, so þis Chirche shulde be maad of actyves and contemplatyves. And, for þis spiritual part shulde be more worþi þan þe toþer, as þe soule is betere þan þe bodi, þefore it haþ name of al þe Chirche. Crist seiþ þus at þe bigynnyng:—*Þe rewme of hevene is like to ten virginis, þe which token her lampis, and wente<sup>2</sup> out aȝens þe spouse and his wyf; but fyve of hem were foolis, and fyve of hem weren ware. But þe fyve foolis token her lampis, but þei token not oile wiþ hem: þes ober fyve war virginis token oile in her vesselis wiþ her lampis.*

The parable  
of the ten  
virgins.

Þis rewme of hevene is þis Chirche: þes ten virginis ben þei

Interpretation.

<sup>1</sup> and teche his puple two weyes, E.

<sup>2</sup> wenten, E.

þat ben spiritual, as ben prestis, and religious, and many oþer in þe Chirche; for as þe soule shulde quykene þe bodi, so þes shulden quykene þe actyve part. But þes ten virginis ben partid in two, in fyve foolis and fyve wise. Alle þei ben virgyns herfore, for þei ben chast of bodi, and kepen hem from outward synnes þat mai be knowun to sizte of men. And boþe þes partis ben in fyve; for þe wise shal be in hevене evere in a sercle of blisse, as fyve is noubre in a sercle<sup>a</sup>; and þe toþer fyve foolis shal be dampned in helle wipouten eende. And as a sercle haþ noon eende, so shal not peyne of þes ypocritis. And þus telliþ Crist fair, how boþe þes partis ben fyve. Þis oile is riȝt devocioun<sup>b</sup>, þat alle þes virgyns shulden have. Þes vesselis of þe virginis ben þe poweris of her soulis; for riȝt as a vessel holdiþ oile, so þe power of þe soule shulde holde riȝt devocioun in alle þe workes þat man doiþ. And riȝt as oile mak iþ þe bodi soft, and ever more fletiþ above, so

<sup>a</sup> *Fyve is noubre in a sercle.* On the mysterious virtues and significance supposed by the ancients to reside in the number five, the reader may, if he cares to do so, consult the treatise in Plutarch's *Moralia*, Περὶ τοῦ Εἰ τοῦ ἐν Δέλφοις, and Sir Thomas Browne's *Garden of Cyrus*. The relation of five to the circle, and also to the sphere, is arrived at in two or three ways. Plutarch ascribes to Plato the opinion that if there are more worlds than the one which we inhabit, there must be *five*, neither more nor less; and that, even if there be only one, that one may be considered as compounded out of five subordinate worlds,—the four elements, and the sky, or fifth essence, 'to which alone,' he says, 'amongst all bodies, the property of revolving in a circle naturally appertains.' The apparent revolution of the celestial sphere round the earth is evidently intended. Again, Sir Thomas Browne, in noticing the singular frequency of the quinary arrangement in nature, observes (it is a thing indeed which many have observed independently) upon the very large number of flowers which have *five* petals, as if that was

the simplest and most fundamental division of a circle into sectors. 'Five-leaved flowers are commonly disposed circularly about the stylus, according to the higher geometry of nature, dividing a circle by five radii, which concur not to make diameters, as in quadrilateral and sexangular intersections.' (*Garden of Cyrus*, p. 526, ed. Bohn.) The next paragraph begins,—'Now the number of five is remarkable in every circle,' but as I cannot understand the reasoning which follows, I forbear to quote it. In a curious statement quoted by the editor of Browne from Mr. Colebrooke, it is clearly shown that the simplest distribution of groups of objects round a central and interior group is a *quinary* arrangement, while at the same time, when the groups come to be multiplied indefinitely, it is necessarily spheroidal. The reader will remember also the quinary grouping of animals by Mr. Macleay, once so famous, and the remarkable vindication of the theory in the *Vestiges of the Natural History of the Creation*.

<sup>b</sup> See p. 247, note A.

devocioun of men makij hem soft in her traveile, and makij hem ever more lijt to bisie hem for hevenli blisse. Þes lampis ben goode workes in kynde, þat boþ þes partis of virgins done; but þes lampis brennen not ne shynen bifore God, but 3if þei have rijt devocioun in þe workes þat þei done. And as oile haþ moche of þe eir and of þe fier, wel medlid wiþ water, so men of rijt devocioun han mouche of hevenli þouztis, and also myche of charite. And her tribulacioun semeþ litil, and herbi ben þei lijt and glad to go þis litil wey. And þus Crist, heed of þe Chirche, was glad here to renne his<sup>1</sup> wey; for he hadde greet desire to suffre peyne for mannis kynde. And so of his oile shulden we take part in goinge of oure traveilous weie. Þes fyve foolis hadden lampis, but þei hadden noon oile wiþ hem; for many men in þis lyf, boþe oon and oþer, don myche good; but hem wantij rijt devocioun, bi which þei shulden go lijt to hevене. For al oure traveile here in erþe shulde be don for þis ende; to meete wiþ Crist and his Chirche rijtli at þe dai of dome. And þe Chirche þat comeþ from hevене wiþ Crist at þe dai of dome is clepid þe wif of Jesus Crist; for þei ben weddid ever togidere.

It were for to telle here how devocioun wantij in clerkis; as popis taken þer stat here for a foule devocioun, to be worshipid in þis world and have moche of worldli lordshipe. And so done þes cardinalis and þes bishopis also. Curatis taken benefices for þe same cause, but lesse; and preestis taken her ordris for devocioun of ten mark<sup>a</sup>; religious possessioneris

<sup>1</sup> þis, E.

The mdevotion and worldliness of the clergy, from the Pope downwards.

<sup>a</sup> for devocioun of ten mark.] This sounds like a phrase in common use at the time, as if one were to say now that a curate took orders for his £100 a year. The passage is of some importance, as showing that, in spite of the efforts both of the court and the bishops to keep down the salaries of priests, the average rate of pay to a working priest, (the passage has nothing to do with the *parsons* of livings,) in the reign of Richard II, was ten marks, or £6 13s. 4d. per annum. It may be as well to take this opportunity of putting together a few particulars

respecting the salaries of non-beneficed clerks in England between the thirteenth and fifteenth centuries.

A constitution of Stephen Langton, dated in 1222, thus regulates the pay of vicars perpetual:—

‘Statuimus, ut vicario perpetuo ad minus redditus quinque Marcarum assignentur, qui scilicet pro quinque Marcis solet dari ad Firmam; nisi forte in illis partibus Wallie sit . . .’ where the parish is too poor to afford so high a stipend.

Five marks then were esteemed a competent salary in the early part of the reign of Henry III. Nearly a

for devocioun of her bely; and many freris taken her stait to lyve lustli in pis world, for ellis þei shulden be laborers, and lyve hard lyf in lewid stait. And so devocioun of clerkis, fro þe firste to þe laste, is studie of avarice, and no trewe devocioun; and so freris, in her statis, wanten riȝt devocioun; for þei taken not her degres, neiþer in scole, ne in office, for riȝt devocioun to renne þe weie þat Crist haȝ tauȝt. And þei wolen not be confessours,—speciali of lordis and ladies,—for þe devocioun þat þei have for to make her soulis clene, but for devocioun of worldli likyng, þat þei taken wiþ þes folk, (for þus þei ben exempt from cloistre and from risyng at mydnyȝt, and fro fastinge in her fraitour<sup>1</sup>, and oþer workes of obedience,) and

<sup>1</sup> *freytor*, E.

century and a half later the standard had varied but very little. In a constitution of 1362 Archbishop Islep ordains that a priest simply celebrating 'annals,' or masses by the year, for the repose of departed souls, shall be satisfied with five marks a year, but that if he have also cure of souls, he shall receive six marks. Following up this constitution, the act of 36 Edw. III (1363) prohibits under penalties any layman from paying more than five marks a year to a priest residing in his house, and having no cure of souls.

The next fifty years witness a rapid change in the value of money. Archbishop Sudbury orders that the stipends which Islep had fixed at five and six marks, shall for the same duties, 'on account of the changed times,' be raised to seven and eight marks respectively. But these were doubtless the minimum rates, and in practice more was usually given. There is even distinct evidence that *ten marks* was a customary rate of salary for a priest to ask. The act of 2 Henry V (1414), after reciting the act of Edw. III previously mentioned and setting forth that the priests 'which now be' will not serve but for twelve marks, or *ten marks by year at the least*, to the great damage of the king's liege people enacts that seven and eight

marks shall be the legal salaries, unless by special license of the ordinary; nine marks not to be exceeded even in that case.

But the changing times soon rendered this statute ineffectual, if it was not ineffectual from the outset. A constitution of Archbishop Chicheley, dated in 1415, ordains that all through the province of Canterbury the stipends of needy vicars shall be augmented as a general rule to at least *twelve marks* a year, if the parish revenues equal that amount.

The above particulars are found in Gibson's *Codex Juris Ecclesiastici Anglicani*, pp. 748, 755, 938-9.

In the province of York the rates appear to have been lower. From the *Testamenta Eboracensia*, published by the Surtees Society (vol. ii, p. 118) it appears that at York, in the middle of the fifteenth century, the customary payment in respect of a single mass was fourpence. Thus in a will dated in 1446 we find—'Lego ad quindecim missas pro anima meâ in ecclesia Sti Nicholai apud Novum Castrum super Tinam Vs.' And the ordinary annual payment at the same period, to a priest celebrating masses for the repose of souls, was in Yorkshire seven marks.

In preparing this note I have been greatly assisted by Professor Stubbs.

<sup>a</sup> *Fraitour*, or *freyour*, is a corruption of refectorium, in old French.

lustis, þat þei have wiþ ladies, oþer þan þei shulden have at hom. And þus þes laste folk semen virginis; but þei ben foule putis. And assaie her wordis and her lyves, and þanne þou maist betre wite. Defaute in<sup>1</sup> oile of<sup>2</sup> oþer beggers þat ben walkinge in þis world mai men see þat take hede, and of oþer pore men boþe, as trouauntis can feynen hem sike and defourme hem in bodi; and þis is foul ypocrisie and no riȝt devocioun. So it is to drede to many þat ben pore and lyven chast, þat þei shal, at þe dai of dome, wante oile in her lampis.

*But whanne þis spouse made dwelling, alle þes virgines naptē and sleptē.* Bi which wordis God undirstondij many faire wittis. And goode napping of þes fyve wyse virginis is short deþ þat þei have here to tyme of þe dai of dome. For þis deþ is clepid slepinge; but þes foolis slepen ever bi slepe of everlasting synne. And so þes ten al togidir sleptē and nappiden on þis manere; but foolis sleptē þis longe sleep, a part here and a part in helle. And þus dwelling of þis spouse is abidinge to þe dai of dome. *Certis at mydnyȝt was maad a crie: Lo! þe spouse comē, go ȝe out aȝens him. Þanne risen up alle þe virgyns, and maden þer lampis fair. And þes foole virginis seiden to þes wise virgyns; ȝyve ȝe to us of ȝoure oile, for oure lampis ben quenched. And þes wise virgyns answeriden and seiden, Lest it suffice not to us and to ȝou, go ȝe raper to hem þat sellen oile, and bie ȝe oile to ȝou silf. And while þei wenten to bie oile, þe spouse cam. And þes virgyns þat weren redi entriden<sup>3</sup> in wiþ þe spouse; and anon þe ȝate was shut.*

Þis myddil of þe nyȝt is þe tyme þat Crist shal come to þe laste dome. For certein enchesoun þis tyme is nyȝt; for it is derk and unknowun to men whanne it shal be, and wheþer þei shal go þanne to hevене or to helle. And it is þe myddel for þis enchesoun. It is after þe derknesse, þat goiþ bifore þis jugement,

<sup>1</sup> of, E.<sup>2</sup> in, E.<sup>3</sup> So E; *entride*, A.

*refreitor.* It means the dining-hall of a monastery. In later times the word was further corrupted to *Fraterhouse*. Thus Davies, in his *Ancient Rites and Monuments of the Church of Durban* (1672), says, 'In the south alley of the cloisters is a fair large hall, called the *Frater-House*. finely

wainscoted on the north and south sides, as also on the west.' See Halliwell's *Glossary*. Benoît, in his *Chronicle of the Dukes of Normandy*, l. 10998, writes,—'Cloistre i fist faire e dormor, Cœlier, quisine. e *refreitor*.'

Interpretation continued.

and bifore þe derknes þat ever shal be in helle. Þis crie is warnyng of aungels, þat shal be to þis daie, þat Poul clepid þe laste trompe, and sum, Gabrielis horn. Þanne shal it be seid in sentence: Lo, now comeþ þe spouse of holi Chirche; go 3e azens him. And þis bidding of God shal not be azenseid. And þus men þat shal be savyd and dampned, shal rise azens þis daie of dome, and make hem redi to answeere of dedis þat þei have done. And þanne her conscience shal be open of alle þe lyves þat þei have led. And þus shal þes foolis wite þat hem failide devocioun, and herfore þei shal be dampned, but 3if þei can excuse hem. Þe axing of þes foolis of men þat shal be saif, is a privy wishinge of þes founed virgyns, þat þei taken part of devocioun of seintis; and wel mai þes be foolis þat þanne have siche desiris. But þes men þat now dremen an accident wiþouten suget mai falle aborde wiþ þese foolis, and axe þis as possible. Þe answeere of þes wise virginis telliþ treuþe to þes foolis, how devocioun þat þei have sufficiþ not for hem boþe; and þefore shulden þei go to seintis, þat sellen in weye devocioun. But þat tyme is passid now; and so moten nedis þei dispeire. And in tyme þat þei þenken þus, how þei shulden have lyved rihtfulli, and have had devocioun in good workes þat þei diden, comeþ Crist to þe dome, and takiþ to heven just men. Alle þes þingis have ordre of kynde, al if þei hav not ordre of tyme. *At þe laste comen þes founed virgyns, and seien to Crist in þis wise: Lord, Lord, opene to us. And Crist answeriþ unto hem: Sopeli, I seie to 3ou, I knowe 3ou not: Goiþ forþ 3our weie. And þefore, wake 3e, seiþ Crist, for 3e knowun not þe daie, ne þe hour.* Þis comyng of þes fool virginis, after þat seintis ben in blisse, is grutchinge of her conscience azens Goddis jugement; and cryng of openyng of Crist is languishing to come to hevene. But answeere þat Crist 3eveþ azen, is stabling of her peyne in helle; for þei shal þanne be certain þat her double peyne in helle moot nedis be, bi Cristis jugement, for her wickid lyving here. And so her double cryng þanne is her unfamous conscience; for þanne hem shal wante fame, boþe of þis world and of þe toþer. And þus, as Crist concludiþ ofte, alle manere of men shulde wake, siþ þei knowen not þe daie of dome, ne hour in which þei shal be deed.

## PROPRIUM SANCTORUM.

[BISHOP BALE, in the later edition of his *Summarium*, dated Basle, 1559, thus enters the following series of sermons for the *Proprium Sanctorum* on his list of Wyclif's works:—

In *Evangelia festivalia*, lib. I. 'Hoc Evangelium historicè narrat.'

The writer, whether Wyclif or not, composed the thirty-eight\* sermons which follow upon gospels which he took, partly from the *Proprium de Tempore*, partly from the *Proprium Sanctorum* or *Sanctorale*, of the *Sarum Missal*. The title '*Proprium Sanctorum*' is not therefore strictly appropriate. Those on gospels taken from the '*Proper of the Season*' are ten in number, and are numbered in the present edition LXXXIX to XCVII and CIV. The offices for the first nine of the festivals thus included in the writer's plan, stand all in close juxtaposition in the *Sarum Missal*, except that the office for St. Thomas of Canterbury (Thomas à Becket,) comes between those for the Holy Innocents and the Sixth Day after Christmas, and St. Sylvester precedes the Circumcision. The omission of St. Thomas' feast by the writer is perhaps significant, and may be taken as the first premonitory symptom of the storm raised against the Archbishop's memory, and against the popular devotion to him, in the reign of Henry VIII.]

THE GOSPEL ON SEINT ANDREWS EVYN.

## [SERMON LXXXVI.]

*Stabat Johannes.*—JOHN i. [29.]

Dis gospel telliþ in storie, how Crist gederide his disciplis, and seiþ, þat *Joon stood and two of Joones disciplis, and Joon biheld Jesus wandringe, and seide þus of him: Lo, þe lombe of God.* Joon Baptist was bifore Crist to make þe weie redi to

John sending  
disciples to  
Christ.

\* By an error of the scribe these sermons are numbered as thirty-seven only in MS. Bodl. 788, the same number being assigned to ser-

mons CIV and CV; and the mistake is repeated in Dr. Shirley's Catalogue.

him; and al his entent was to hiȝe Crist and his ordre. And þus whanne he clepide Crist þe lombe of God, he tolde þe innocence of Crist, and how he shulde die for man. And þis was figurid in sleying of þe Pask lombe. For as þe Pask lombe was offrid of oo ȝeer wipouten wemm, so Crist was offrid at Pask to bie his Chirche, of þe firste preest; and þis preest is boþe God and man. And þus Crist is þe lomb of God; and as a lomb haþ no kyndeli gendrure, but it is clene wipouten scabbe, so Crist was evermore a virgyn, and clene wipouten ony synne. *And two disciplis of Joon herden him speke, and sueden Jesus. And Jesus turnede aȝen and saw hem suyng him, and seide to hem: What seke ȝe? And þei seiden to Crist, Maistre, where dwellist þou? And Crist seide to hem, þat þei shulden come and see. Þei comen and sawen where Crist shulde dwelle, and dwelliden wip him þat dai; and it was as þe tenþe hour. And oon of þe two disciplis was Andreu, Symondis broþer, þat<sup>1</sup> herden þeir maistir Joon speke þus, and sueden Crist for good entent.*

Comparison  
between the  
behaviour of  
John the Bap-  
tist and the  
friars.

Sopli Joon Baptist hadde disciplis, to make hem redi to Cristis ordre. And þis priour grutchide not, but was fayne þat þei wenten to Crist; for he synneþ hugeli þat of two goodis chesihþ þe worse. And wolde God þat oure newe ordris wolden wel undirstonde þis storie. Þanne þei shulden preise Crist and his ordre, and be mekeli his disciplis, and make þer disciplis redi to come to Cristis ordre, and grutche not for þei wenten out fre from hem to Cristis ordre. For certis Baptistis ordre was betre þan ben alle þes newe ordris, and he grutchide not but was ful fayn þat þei ȝeden fro him to Crist. And so shulden alle þes privat patrons be fayn of þer disciplis whanne þei wenten fro þer ordre, and camen freli to Cristis ordre; for Cristis ordre is betere þan is hern, as we taken here of bileve. And þus alle þes synnen gretli, þat taken þis worse and leven þe betere. And it is a fendis envie, on þis manere to harme þer breþren, and algatis, for a pride bifore, to hie aȝen Crist þer rotun ordre. And ȝif þou seie þat þis skile wente forþ<sup>2</sup>, ȝif Crist were dwelling here in erþe, and gedride to him<sup>3</sup> disciplis as he

<sup>1</sup> So E. A has *and*.

<sup>2</sup> *forþe wente*. E.

<sup>3</sup> *hym*, E.



dide in Baptist tyme; but now Crist is went to hevене, and men gaderen to hem disciplis; certis þis feyned skile wolde distrie alle þes ordris. For þer patroun, as þei seien, is went to hevене, and dwelliþ wiþ Crist. And ȝif þer ordre dwelliþ aftir, muchil more shulde Cristis ordre, siþ Crist is ever wiþ his disciplis oþerwise þan þes patrours mai. And where þou seiest þat þes ordris gederen disciplis unto Cristis ordre, certis þanne þei erren foulli, to cloute þus to Cristis reule; as, if men varieden þus fro þer reule, þei wolden seie þei broken þer ordre, siþ þes ordris acorden more togidere, þan ony of þes and Cristis<sup>1</sup> ordre, þat is comoun to Cristyn men, and was bifore þes ordris bigan. Lord! siþ þes ordris wolden bere hevȝ þat men wenten to an oþer ordre, how shulden not Crist and hise bere hevȝ þat men wenten out of Cristis ordre? and moche more<sup>2</sup> ȝif fendis lettiden to come aȝen freeli to Crist. Þis synne wole Crist juge, þat is weie, treuþe, and liif, how men letten to wenden his weie. And errour wole not excuse, siþ Poul wende he hadde do wel plesing God whanne he blasfemyde. Þis prisonyng in þes ordris, þat letten men to go freeli out of hem to Cristis ordre, is worse þan ony oþer sect, and liik to þe fendis ordre, þat lettȝ men to go from him. For fro Crist mai men go freeli unto þe fend; but þis condicioun of þe feend, foundun in þes<sup>3</sup> newe ordris, is sprongen to popis and to kyngis boþe, þat consenten and helpen herto.

ACTS xxvi. 9.

*Þis Andreu fond first his broþer, þat is seid Symound, and seide to him: We han foundun Messi<sup>4</sup>, þe which is þe grete Crist. It was comun in þe olde lawe þat a greet profete shulde come of þe kynrede of Jewis, and bringe hem to ful freedom; and þis was clepid Messias, and Crist bi o witt. And Andrew ledde Petre to Jesus; and Jesus biheld Petre, and seide, þou art Symont, be sone of Johanna: Þou shalt be callid<sup>5</sup> Petre, and be maad capteyn of apostlis, for vertues þat Y see in þee. On þe morewe wolde Crist go out into Galile, and fond Philip, and seide, Sue me. Þis Philip was of Bepsaida, þat was citee of Andreu and Petre. And Philip fond Nathanael, and seide to him on þis manere: Him þat Moises hap writun in þe lawe and*

<sup>1</sup> So E; A has *Anticristis*, which gives no sense.<sup>2</sup> So in E: om. A.<sup>3</sup> So E; A has þis.<sup>4</sup> Messy. E.<sup>5</sup> clepid, E.

*prophetis, we han founden, Jesus, Josephis sone, of Nazareþ. And Nathanael seide to Philip, Of Nazareþ mai sum good be? And Philip seide to Nathanael þat he shulde come and se Jesus. Jesus saw Nathanael comyng to him, and seide of him: Lo, verili, a man of Israel in whom is noo gile. And Nathanael seide to Crist: Wherof hast þou knowe me? Jesus answeride and seide to him, Bifore þat Philip clepide þee, whanne þou was undir þe fige tree, Y saw þee. And here Crist techiþ his Godhed in a maner bi his speche þat he seiþ here. Nathanael was a wise man, and þerfor spak more sutilli. For as Poul seiþ, we speken wisdom among wise men. Crist telliþ here to Nathanael how he saw him undir þe fige tree. Þat mote be bi his Godhede; for bodili siȝt cam not þanne. And þus þat Crist knewe þe hert of Nathanael was bi his Godhede. And þus Crist telliþ, but privyly, whereof he knewe Nathanael,—for of his Godhede he knewe him, as Crist mente in hise wordis. And Nathanael answeride and seide to Crist: Maister, þou art Goddis sone, and þou art king of Israel. Jesus answeride and seide to him, For Y seide to þee þat Y saw þee undir þe fige tree, þou bilevest; þerfore þou shall se more þan þese. And Crist seide to þes men togider, Sobeli, I seie to ȝou, ȝe shal se hevene open, and aungels of God steynge up and comyngne doun upon me, al if Y be, mannis sone.*

In þis story mai we see many treuþis þat we shulden trowe. First, how proctours of Crist shulden gete disciplis to him bi skillful mevyng<sup>1</sup> of Goddis lawe, þat þei miȝten freeli come to Crist, and not bi chaffaryng of erþeli þingis, as þese newe ordris chaffaren. Men þat comen to þes dowid ordris [and]<sup>2</sup> bringen þer cloþyng wiþ hem, boþe for her bedde and bak; for richesse lettijþ to ȝyve hem þese; and over þis þei moten bringe boþe a cuppe and spone to drynke and ete þeir potage; for on þes þingis is þer þouȝt. In þes ordris of þese beggaris þei have contrarie maner; for þei, al ful of disseit, not wiþouten gile as Napanael, wiþ divers and litil ȝiftis, and false wordis, disseyven children. For þei abiden not to ful age, as weren Andrew, Peter, and Philip; but bifore men have discrecioun in þeir childhode þei ben þus begilid. And so þe first part of þes ordris telliþ

Christ teaches  
his divinity.

1 Cor. ii. 6.

<sup>1</sup> *movyng*, E.

<sup>2</sup> om. E; rightly.

how þei shal ever be nedi, and þat oþer latter part telliþ how þei shal ever be bigilid; but on neiþer of þes maners chees Crist his disciplis; but þes men likli ben oblischid unto fendis—to þe fend þat is Mammon, and to þe fadir of lesingis. And boþe þes ben fendis, as ben alle þat shal be dampned. But here þes ordris fagen, and seien, we knowun not þes entrees, for þes ordris wiþ possessiouns bi þis cause taken men wiþ goodis, þat þe worlde shulde knowe þat þei take not beggers, but riche, as þei shal ever be. Þe freris seien, þei taken in children, for þei ben moost innocentis, and liȝt to norishe in Goddis lawe, as þei ben at þe bigynnyng. But neiþer of þes grounden hem in Goddis lawe bi þer dedes. Þe firste word of þe firste ordre techiþ how he partiþ wiþ þe toþer patroun, and þe toþer partiþ wiþ him in synne, as seintis parten in good. Soplī þes possessioners maken in þer professioun þat þei professen povert, chastite, and obedience to Crist, and at þe bigynnyng þei moten nedes professen þe contrarie. And in tokene of þe firste, þat þei han renounsid<sup>1</sup> povert, and ben oblischid to worldli richesse, þei bringen her cuppe and her sponne, in tokene þat to drynke and pulment þei ben oblischid bifore oþer; and boþe þes ben no povert to sue Crist, but þe contrarie. Þes freris, þat oblischen þer breþren bi falshed and oþer giles, maken þer protestacioun þat þei forsaken after treuþe; and in reule of þe fadir of lesingis þei wolen drawe to þe deþ dai. And ȝif disseit of ȝong men bi Goddis lawe shulde be dampned, muche more disseit of children þat wanten discrescioun, but han þer eldris for þer keperis; for þei wittis wanten kyndeli<sup>a</sup>. And siþ God seiþ in his lawe, þat whoso stelīþ a man, he shal be kild bi Goddis lawe, it semeþ þat alle þes benperis shulden be kild of God by skile; for siþ þeste is taking of oþer mennis þingis, aȝens þe wille of þe lord, it semeþ þat þis takyng of children, þat freris shulden have bi noo lawe, is taking of oþer mennis þingis, for taking of fadirs þing and modirs. And þis tresour is moost presciouse and ful costli to þes fadirs. And where it be aȝens þeir wille, examine hem, and þei shal telle. And þes children comen in bi þeste, and þei ben þeves in al her lyf, to

Hypocrisy of  
the regulars.

EX. XLII. 16.

<sup>1</sup> So E; *renounsiþ*, A.

<sup>a</sup> That is. are naturally deficient.

caste how þei shal cleke to freris alle þe goodis þat þei mai geten, ouþer of þer frendis or of oþer, bi what menis þat þei can caste. And þes ordris folwen more to fendis þan don þe firste ordris of Mammon.

Why Nathanael was not chosen to be an apostle.

Over þis, men douten comunly, whi Crist chees not Nathanael, siþ he was witty and good to be Cristis apostle. But here men seien comunli þat þer ben many chesingis of Crist. Crist chesip sum to his disciplis for to come afterward to blis. And þus men supposen þat Crist ches þis Nathanael; for Crist preiside him ful myche, and algatis of<sup>1</sup> vertu of treuþe. And þus Crist haþ many disciplis þat ben hid, as Nathanael, as was Joseph and Nicodeme and oþer, til þe daie of dome; for ever Cristis ordre shal laste, and tellen here oþer þer defautes. But þis Nathanael was to wiis to be chosen Cristis apostle, for Crist wolde shewe bi miracle, bi rude<sup>2</sup> men to turne þe world. And þus he wolde make up of fisheris and oþer comunes his apostlis, and make hem passe in witt and wisdom alle oþer men of þis world.

Why some apostles were left for a time in the world.

But ȝit men douten comunli how Crist chees here þes þree apostlis, and toke hem<sup>3</sup> not anoon wiþ him, but lete hem wende into þe world and lyve comun lyf as laborers, as it was tauȝt in Petre and oþer. But here we trowen þat Crist dide þus to confounde þes cloistres; for Crist wiste wel þat þei shulden come and disseyve muche of þis world, and seie þat it fallip not to hem to labore, ne dwelle out of þer cloistre, siþ þei passen oþer men in newe signes þat þei han founden. And to distrie þis ypocrisie dide autor of religioun þis:—he chees not þes disciplis unto cloistre þat he dwelte inne, but into place removable, as was Moises tabernacle. And þis is better ordre here; siþ here we have noo citee dwellinge, but here we seken þe blisse of hevene. And þus wente Crist on þe morewe in to þe contre of Galile. But men seien comunli þat Crist clepide ofte his disciplis: first, to be homely wiþ him, and leve sumwhat of worldli curis; after, whanne þei weren more ripe, to suen him boþe dai and niȝt, and siþ, after his resureccioun, to don þer hiȝe apostlis workes. And þus was Poul chosun to be apostle after þe

<sup>1</sup> in, E.

<sup>2</sup> bustouse, E.

<sup>3</sup> So E. om. A.

assencioun of Crist; and anoon he wente and prechide and dide as hijest apostle shulde do. And algatis we ben tau3t bi Crist to flee prisonyng of men as þeves. But 3if þei wolen dwelle wiþ Crist, þei shulden freeli do þer werkes, and avente hem in þis world, and be not weddid wiþ erpeli þingis. Soþ it is þat Crist sum tyme constreynede men, shewing his Godhede; as Crist smot Poul down, and turnede his herte to love of him. But he wolde þat his ordre stood in pacience, mekenesse, and charite, and speciali to turne þe world fro richessis and lustis of bodi: but þes newe religious reversen Crist in alle þes þingis.

ÞE GOSPEL ON SEYNT ANDREUS DAY.

[SERMON LXXXVII.]

*Ambulans Jesus juxta mare Galilee.*—MATT. iv. [18.]

Þis gospel of Mathew telliþ how Crist clepide foure apostlis: Petre and Andrew, James and Joon, fro craft of þer fishing. And so seiþ Mathew þat *Crist wandride bi þe water of Galile.* Ebreus clepen ech water a see; and so ech ryver is a see. And þis ryver of Galile likide Crist ofte to wende<sup>1</sup> biside it. Crist saw þes foure breþeren þat weren fisheris in þis water. *First he saw Symound Petre, and Andreu þat was his broþer, putting þer nett into þe water; for þei weren fisheris. And he seide to hem, Come after me, and Y shal make 3ou to be maad fisheris of men.* Crist spak ofte bi his manhede, and dide worship to his Fadir; as here Crist bad þes two disciplis þat þei shulden come after him, —neiþer go bifore him ne come aside in þer lvyng,—but as þei sawen þer maistre lyve, so shulden þei sue him in þeir lyf. And herfore Crist reprovede Petre, as þe gospel telliþ after, and seide; Go bihinde me, Sathanas, for þou savorist not Goddis þingis. Crist clepide not þes two apostlis to his chaumbre to ete applis; but in þe comun feld, he clepide hem fro worldli travel, and tolde hem

The calling of Peter and Andrew and the two sons of Zebedee.

<sup>1</sup> go, E.

The gospel in every part true and self-consistent.

of a betere traveile, in which þei shulden take men. *And þes two anon leften þer nettis, and þer boot, and sueden Crist.* Mathew telliþ not how fer þes apostlis sueden Crist; but oo þing we trowen as bileve,—þat no gospel contrarieþ to oþer, and no part of þe gospel is fals; but ech part acordiþ to oþer. We trowen also þat Jesus Crist mevede þes men, boþe wiþinne and wiþoute, and shewide his vertue in þer soulis, and made hem bowe to his bidding. But God forbede þat we shulden trowe, for men wolen not bowe to us, þat we shulden clepe hem worldli, contrarie to Cristis cleping, or ellis grounde a newe ordre, as we wolden passe Crist. For if we wolen holde Cristis ordre, we moten nedeli sue Crist. And þus it semep<sup>a</sup> to many men þat patrouns of þes newe ordris gon bifore Crist, as Sathanas; and leeven and dispisen his ordre.

*And Jesus goinge forþ þennes, saw opere two breþeren, James and Joon, whiche weren Zebedees children; and wiþ þis fadir in þe boot, beetinge þer nettis to take fishe. And Crist clepide þes two breþeren; and þei anon leften þer nettis, and þer fadir, and sueden him;* for þes two disciplis weren meevyd of Crist, as oþer two, and it semep þei loveden more Crist, for þei leften more þer fadir; and þus þei weren worþi of Crist, siþ þei loveden him so muche. For Crist seiþ, whosoever loveþ ony man more þan him, he is not worþi of him, and so not worþi of hevenli blis. It is told ofte bifore of alle þes newe ordris, how þei ben not groundid in Crist, ne in ony dedis þat he dide. Þei done sumwhat þat is good, and many þingis amys; and so stondiþ þer cloutid reule, boþe in good and in yvel; and þus is Macometis lawe and conjourisons maad. And shortli, noon yvel is suffrid, but ȝif it be groundid in good.

But it were to wite over, wheþer þese chesingis þat preestis maken, and þis dowyng þat þei have, ben groundid in Goddis lawe. And trewe men witen wel þat boþe þes reversen Crist. As anentis þis chesing, foolis maken þis resoun. Crist chees him apostlis, and prelatis shulde sue Crist, and speciali popis

Attack on the friars.

Papal appointments to bishoprics and benefices discussed.

<sup>a</sup> Two leaves of the MS. E (Douce 321) are here wanting; the hiatus, beginning at this point, extends to the words 'muche in gloterie,' in-

clusive, on p. 306. The text is therefore solely dependent on A, up to that point.

and bishopis; whi shulden not þei chese curatis? for ellis shulden officeris perishe, and, bi defaute of hem, Goddis hous. And þus þes two þingis wolen sue: þat oþer popis shulden not sue Crist, or ellis þei shulden chese prelatis, as þe popis lawe techiþ. Þe secounde þing þat sueþ here is foule inconvenient, þat þe pope, Cristis viker, þat haþ his Chirche for to kepe, shulde lete þe Chirche perishe for defaute of siche chesinge. And it is fittinge þat þe pope, þat haþ more witt and autorite, shulde ordeyne for þis chesing, siþ he is heed of holy Chirche. Here we shal suppose, first, þat we speken in þis mater, as if þe pope hadde not ȝit ordeyned lawis of sich eleccioun, but how Goddis lawe and resoun wolde teche for to worche here; and þanne many men þenken þat þis eleccioun shulde not be, siþ it mai not be groundid in resoun ne in Goddis lawe. And to þe resoun þat is maad for þe contrarie part, we shal suppose þat ech man, but algatis þe pope, shulde sue Crist. But ȝit, for dignite of Crist, men shulden ever putte him bifore, and ȝyve to Crist a worþines þat mai oonli acorde to him, for ellis Crist were not abbot over alle oþer men, and maister over alle hise breþeren, as he is boþe God and man. And þus ech oþer preest shulde mekeli sue Crist, and neiþer go evene wiþ Crist, ne bifore him, as dide Petre, and þerfore he was clepide Saþanas, and beden go bihynde Crist. And þus a perel in þe Chirche, þat Poul tauȝte for to come, is, þat Anticrist hiȝe him above Crist, boþe God and man. And þus we graunten þat Crist chese to him apostlis and oþer disciplis, oþerwise þan þe Pope of Rome mai or can chese him servauntis; siþ Crist was boþe God and man, and knewe alle þingis þat shulde be, and wiste fulli what was best, and wrouȝte ever wiþoute defaute. And þus seiþ þe gospel bifore, þat disciplis sawun where Crist shulde dwelle; for alle þingis þat Crist dide he shulde do so for þe beste. And þus ȝif Crist chees disciplis, þe pope shulde not þerfore chese þus; for þe pope mai not be evene wiþ Crist, in witt, ne in autorite; but he shulde sue Crist here as diden Cristis apostlis bifore. Goddis lawe telliþ, whanne þei chosen Mathi as þe twelfþe postle of Crist in þe stede of Scarioth, þei kepten þis ordre in þis eleccioun: þei chosen two, þe whiche þei wisten moost able to be apostle, and moo þei wolden have

2 Thess. ii. 4.

chosen ȝif þei hadden knowe siche moo; but, for þei knewun not þe beter of Joseph and Mathi, þei putten it in Goddis jugement wheþer of þes two Crist wolde have; and preieden ful devouteli, siþ Crist knewe þe hertis of men, þat Crist shulde shewe wheþer of þes two he hadde chosen, bi casting of lottis. And siþ Petre and oþer apostlis weren in þis chesinge, and þei weren moo, and more witti, þan þe Pope of Rome, it semeþ þat he shulde after hem make his more elecciouns. Apostlis chosen preestis in contres þat þei wenten bi, and maden hem dwellinge curatis; and þei hadden myche goodis. But apostlis weren algatis pore men and overseeris; for þis poverté was perfeccioun þat felde more to hem. For Crist, her alþer maister, was moost pore man. But oþer fourme of chesinge can we not grounde in Goddis lawe. And siþ Crist, God and man, chees so fewe men in þis office, and þe pope chesip so many, wiþoute siȝt in Godhede, it semeþ þat he is hied over Crist, and so over al þat is seid God. For certis Crist myȝte not make al þes elecciouns; siþ Crist ne myȝte not chese, but þat he saw þe Godhede chese. But popis chesyn, for moneie or for preier of princis, many men þat ben unable to bere haly water in chirchis<sup>a</sup>. Lord! siþ Crist myȝte not do þis,—and þis þei taken for excellence,—how sich men hien hem not above Crist and al þat is God! for certeinli Crist myȝte not make siche elecciouns. Þes men suen not Crist, as diden Peter and oþer apostlis, but algatis gon bifore Crist. And so Crist clepide hem Saþanas; siþ Crist acceptip not persones, but takip ech man as he is worþi, sum men goode and sum men fendis, after þat þei suen Crist. And þus it semeþ to many men, ȝif þe Pope wolde be Cristis disciple, he shulde leeve þes elecciouns, or use hem as Petre dide. Wel Y woot þat Crist forsook to juge in temporal goodis; and þis jugement, evyl done, is myche worse to þe juge. And þus apostlis makinge preestis hadden

The Pope's proceedings appear to identify him with Antichrist.

<sup>a</sup> 'men þat ben unable to bere haly water in chirchis.'] This may either mean *laymen*,—men who are not qualified to discharge even the humblest ecclesiastical function,—or, as I am more inclined to believe, clerks, so ignorant and incompetent as to be unfit even for the duty of

an acolyte in carrying the Aspersorium with holy water, for the priest to use in the ceremony of the Asperges. *To bere* is the expression, not *to use*, for the act of sprinkling could only be performed by a priest. See Ferraris' *Bibliotheca*, articles *Aspersorium*, *Aqua Benedicta*, *Ordo*.



shewing of God; for ellis þei hadden do folili in þingis þat þei knewen not. And ȝif þe pope lefte þis þing for peril þat lieþ þerinne, holi Chirche shulde not perishe, but profite more þan it doiþ now. For þanne weren bishopis ful apostlis and pore men as þei weren first, and not chargious to þe peple, but doinge þingis þat felde to hem. And so, wiþouten sich signes, miȝte þe chirche be wel governed. And þus is þis resoun as-soillid þat was first maad for þe pope, þat he mot nede, for Cristis love, and for love of his Chirche, be þus occupied, for prelacie þat holi Chirche must nedis have. Certis þis is a false ground and mychel harm comeþ þerof. But whanne o blinde lediþ a blynde, þei fallen boþe in þe lake. And þus seien men, þat covetise of worshipis and worldli goodis blinden prestis bi symonye, þat al þe chirche fariþ þe worse. And þus mai men see here. If þes prelatis wolden sue Crist, and putte his Chirche out of peril, þei shulden leve þis, as Crist dide. But boþe þis chesing of þe pope, and oþer þing þat bringiþ<sup>a</sup> herto, is brouȝt in bi þe fend, and not bi Cristis autorite. For certis Crist miȝte not himsilf make þes elecciouns. But as þei seien, þe pope mai make a lewid man, for money, a greet bishop on his chirche; but þis is churche of wickide men.

And þus alle þes popis lawes, biside þe lawis þat Crist made, and alle þe dedis þat he doiþ þat ben not groundid in Cristis liif, ben ful venym to þe chirche,—ȝif a man durste seie þus,—and popis lawis beren no strengþe aȝens men þat holden þis. Lord, what vertue is in þis lawe!—þat ȝif two han þe popis grace, at o tyme, in oo cuntre, where many benefices mai falle, he þat presentij first his grace, he shal be sped bifore þe toþer. It haþ fallen ofte tymes, and so mai it falle hereafter, þat two men have grace at oo tyme of oo collacioun, and þe more unable man, þat loveþ more worldli good, presentij first his grace to patrons,—for Scarioth slepiþ not,—and þanne, bi vertue of þis lawe, shal þis fend be putt bifore, and þis good man putt bihynde. But þis is yvel fruyt of lawe; and God myȝte not make þis lawe, for God myȝte not do amys. How mai ony viker of Crist sue Crist in doinge þus? But certis he goiþ bifore

<sup>a</sup> That is, contributeth.

Crist, or ellis on oþer side weie. What woot þe pope þe stat of contreis of many hundrid myle from him? And wordis of false coveitouse men shulden not in þis lede þe pope; but he shulde lyve as Crist haþ tauȝt, and not þus blyndeli lede þe Chirche. Of þis comen a þousand errours, þat siche prelati fallen ynne. Þei seien þat þei mai not synne in þis state, as Crist myȝte not; for Crist haþ hiȝt to his Chirche, þat he shal never faile to it; and þus þe pope is God in erþe, and þe moste blessid fadir. Sich heresies ben sowen, þat a man þat lovede Crist, shulde, for to suffre deep, aȝens stonde þes heresies; for it were all oon to seie þus, and to putt Anticrist above Crist.

ON EȝTEȝ DAY OF SEYNT ANDREU<sup>a</sup>.

[SERMON LXXXVIII.]

• *Postquam autem traditus est Johannes.*—MARK i. [14.]

The necessity  
of penance.

Þis gospel telliþ, as oþer bifore, of chesing of Cristis Apostlis. And it semep þat Crist prechide first whanne Baptist was taken to prisoun. And ȝif Crist prechide privyli bifore Baptist was enprisoun, þat was in anoþer manere; for Crist wolde ȝeve Baptiste his time. *After þe tyme þat Joon was traied in to þe prisoun of Eroude cam Jesus in to Galile, prechinge þe gospel of Goddis rewme; and seide, þat tyme is fulfillid, and þe rewme of God shal come.* Matheu telliþ how Crist bigan to preche fro þe tyme þat Joon was taken, and toke þe same word for his teme þat Baptist toke whanne he prechide:—Do ȝe penance, for þe rewme of God shal come. It is knowen of Goddis lawe, how mannis kynde was exilid for synne of our firste fadir þat stood muche in gloterie<sup>b</sup>; and so resoun of God axide þat comyng aȝen of þis rewme shulde be gete bi penance contrarie to gloterie. And herfore Crist,oure first fadir in

<sup>a</sup> There is an office for the octave of St. Andrew's Day in the Sarum missal, and from it the writer took the gospel here preached upon. The

Roman missal has no office for the day.

<sup>b</sup> See note on p. 302.

spiritual gendrure, tauzte us for to do penaunce contrarie to Adam's lore; and Baptist, þat was Cristis spouse<sup>a</sup>, tauzte bifore þe same lessoun. And, for Goddis kingdom is to come, and not wiþouten sich penaunce, ech man þat wole have hevene shulde be aboute to do sich penance. And þus þe cause of Crist is pleyn to men þat wole undirstonde it. And þis forþinking is not ynow<sup>3</sup>, but 3if trouþe be joyned þerwiþ. And herfore seiþ Markus<sup>1</sup> Gospel:—*Forþenke 3e and trouwe 3e to þe gospel.* Penaunce disposiþ a man to take byleeve over a beest, and þanne bileve ordeyneþ him to be groundid in oþer vertues.

*And Jesus wendinge forþer biside þe see of Galile, saw Symount, and Andreu his broþer, castinge her nettis in to þe water; for þes two weren fisheris. And Jesus seide to hem, Come 3e after me and Y shal make 3ou to be maad fisheris of men; for my Fadir shal make þis. And anoon þei leften þer nettis and sueden him, as his disciplis.*

Calling of  
Soun Peter  
and Andrew.

It is noo drede Crist movede þes men, bi his Godhede, in þer soule, and disposide hem to religioun fro þe tyme þat he 3af hem witt; for siche men wolde Crist have to grounden men in Goddis lawe. But here men douten comunli whi Crist lovede þus fisheris, and hunteris he lovede but litil, as Lameth and Esau. But here shulden we bileve þat Crist acceptiþ noo persones; but after þat he makip hem good, he loviþ hem more or lesse. And so fisheris weren betere men, and þefore Crist lovede hem more. But 3it stondiþ þe doute moved, whi Crist made not hunteris betere men þan fisheris, siþ it is more gentil craft. Here is no greet questioun; for God mai worche as he wole. But 3it men seien here, þat fishing is þe porer craft, and more acording to men, and neer þe state of innocence; and þefore Crist lovede it þe more. Soþeli men huntun in Lenten, and gentil men,—to have þer game, whanne þei have noon oþer

Reasons for  
our Lord's sup-  
posed prefer-  
ence of fisher-  
men to hunters.

<sup>1</sup> Markis, E.

<sup>a</sup> St. Gregory (Homil. xx.), in commenting on the text, 'He that hath the bride is the bridegroom,' says, 'ac si [Johannes] diceret: ego sponsus non sum, sed amicus sponsi sum.' But our author, possibly from

imperfectly remembering the pas- sage, calls John the Baptist the *spouse* of our Lord, a title of dignity which I cannot find was ever conferred upon him by any of the Fathers or Doctors of the Church.

avauntage, alȝif þer trauaile be bisie and muche. But not so comunli falliþ þis in fishing. And fishis ben ner þe elementis, and not so like to mannish fleish; and þerfore men holden an ordre to ete fishe and leve fleish; and þus fishe is neer to mete þat man shulde have in Paradise, and sleying of fishe is ferþer from sleying of men þan is sleying of erþeli beestis, which fleish heweris usen. And God wolde þat man hadde orroure of sleying of his broþer; but now men usen a newe craft<sup>a</sup> to slee men comunli, more þan þis craft was usid fro þe tyme þat God was born; and seien, þat preestis shulden usen þis craft betere and more meedefulli þan shulde seculer men, as preestis shulden be lordis over hem. And þis lore is tauȝt bi freris bi myche merit feyned þerto. But what men þei shulden kille, oþer þer breþeren or aliens, þei holden ȝit in þeir purs; alȝif þei practisen on þer breþeren. But þis peple is wyde scaterid,—sum in Engelond, and sum wiþoute. And þes moo freris wiþouten seien þat men shulden moost kille English; and so lesse errour at bigynnyng growiþ to mykil and perilous.

Church endowment and its evils.

But leve we þis doute here, and trete we of þe Chirche dowyng; for bi þis mo men travailen bi symonie. For many, bi þe fendis cast, loven to be hye prelatish, for lordship and richesse, more þan to quykene þe Chirche after þe poverté of Crist. And we supposen, as declarid bi twelve lawis of þe two testamentis, þat preestis and clerkis shulden be pore, as Crist was wiþ hise Apostlis. And in tokene of þis poverté, þes freris ben pore, as þei seien; and ȝit þei passen Scarioth in averice and worldli goodis. And herfore þes blasfemes seien þat begging is medeful, and þat Crist tauȝte hem to begge. And þus þes traitours ben maad riche. Men have proved ofte tymes þat preestis shulden not þus be riche, ne þus be dowid in temporal lordship. Bi men of resoun, or of Goddis half, it is knowun þing ynow<sup>3</sup> þat sum tyme weren preestis pore, and þanne þei shulden, bi Cristis lawe, profite to þe Chirche after þer power; but dowing makijþ hem lesse of power, and þei profiten not more þan þei mai. And so bi þis dowyng þei ben more holden, and

<sup>a</sup> a newe craft. This seems to refer to the recent introduction of gunpowder, the invention or the

re-discovery of a friar, Roger Bacon, into the art of war.

lesse done. Þat þei ben more holden bi þis dowynge is list to prove bi mannis lawe; for siche a rente or benefice mot axe sum reward aȝen, but no reward is more fittinge þan spiritual office of preestis. And þat dowyng makij hem lesse of power mai men shewe bi þis maner. Þei have no more of kyndeli witt þan preestis hadden bifore þe dowynge; and siþ þes wittis ben moche occupied about dowing and worldli þingis, þei have lesse witt to be occupied aboute God and hevenli þingis. And no man of witt haþ drede þat ne þe world and worldli þingis distracten a man fro God and his service in spiritual þingis. And so it semeþ þat prestis moten nede oþer seie þat þei weren ydil bifore þe dowing, or, bi dowing, þei ben more unablid for to serve God, and to profite to his Chirche, and helpe goostli to ony man. And here it semeþ þat þes prestis ben moche<sup>1</sup> unholden to seculer lordis bi þe dowyng þat þei have take; for þei ben harmed so myche þerbi. And so folie on boþe partis bringij in harm in ech side; for no man doij aȝens God, but ȝif he have harm anoon. And it is knowun bi Goddis lawe þat traveile bi Cristis ordenance disposij a man to have grace, and to be more loved of Crist. And ȝif preestis lyveden as Crist ordeynede, þei shulden more encrese in vertues, and profite more to hem and to þe Chirche þan þei done reversynge Crist. And no man þat witt haþ wole seie, þat Crist ȝeveþ preestis more grace, for þei ben unkynde to Crist and leven þe ordenance þat he ȝaf hem. And over þis, it is knowen, þat he þat loveþ his God more shulde more profite to Cristis Chirche, and betere love his neizbour. But bileve techij us þat God biddij men to love him of al þer herte, of al þer liif, of al þer mynde, and of al þer strengþe; so þat, after þe ȝiftes of God, a man is holden more to serve him. And so, siþ prestis shulden not be idil, but do good after þeir power, þei shulden profite to þe Chirche bifore dowyng, as þei myȝten. But bi double folie, brouȝt in boþe in clerkes and worldli lordis, prestis ben of lesse power, boþe to serve God and his Chirche. And noo drede God axij acountis of þis foltish chaffering.

But here þe fend techij his clerkis to seke after feyned an-

An objection answered.

<sup>1</sup> om. E.

sweris. And þei seien, first, þat bi þis dowyng þei ben in quiet and in pees, and so þei serven God betere, as þei bi resoun ben more holden. And þus þei ben holden in scole to lerne philosophris lore, oþer weie þan þei shulden be, ȝif þis dowyng wantide hem. Here Cristen men shulden wite þat þe fend medliþ soþfastnes wiþ falshede to bigile þe folk, and turne hem fro Cristis lore. Soþeli men lernen of gentil craft<sup>a</sup> bi occasioun of dowyng, but not so muche as done þese beggers; for fadir of lesingis mai more in hem. Cristene men shulde lerne Goddis lawe, and holden hem paied þerof; and in þis mesure, and in þis nombre, and in þis weizte, shulden þei lyven here, and abiden lore in hevene þat men shulden have over þis. For þis lore þat Crist tauȝte ys ynow<sup>3</sup> for þis liif. And ȝif men lyven after him, þei shal have lore as þei have nede; and þus þis dowyng makij lore þat doij harm to Cristis Chirche, boþe lore of vanite, and þerto lore of mennis lawis. Crist ȝaf lore, þe which he lovede, þat he wolde teche Cristen men; and oþer lore, and more, over þis, wolde Crist þat were suspendid. But ȝit men replien, and seien, þat bi þis dowyng prestis ben many; and so, in multitude of clerkis, doij þis dowyng muche profit; for clerkes wolden not be so many but ȝif þis dowyng were here. God techij trewe men to graunte þat dowyng and feyned begging makij to multiplie prestis more þan God himsilf haþ ordeyned; for God coude ordeyne noo kyn þing, but in mesure, nombre and weizte. God wolde not þat alle weren preestis, ne alle knyȝtis, ne alle laboreris; but of alle þes þree partis, God wolde make his Chirche in mesure. And ȝif þou seist þat men faylen witt to ateyne<sup>1</sup> to Goddis nombre, lyve men wel, and God wole teche how muchel shulde be nombre of preestis. For defaute of Goddis lawe makij defaute in þis nombre. Lerne men wel Goddis lawe, and it shal teche mesure in þis, if men prechen wel þis lawe, and hiden it not fro þe peple. Wel I rede in Goddis lawe, whanne God wolde have myche travaile in beryng of þe tabernacle and sacrificis of many beestis, he wolde have, of twelve kynredis, but o kynrede of Levy, to serve his folk for preestis

<sup>1</sup> *attheyne*, E.

<sup>a</sup> *gentil craft* appears to mean what we call secular knowledge.

Earthly learning unnecessary, if we have the lore of Christ.

Another objection.

and dekenes. And ȝit he wiȝdrawȝ many of hem and unablidde hem to serve God þus for sykenesse þat he sente hem. And to alle þes preestis and dekenes God lymitted but dymes and offringis. Lord! ȝif Cristene men wolden be paied of þe mesure of Goddis ordenance, and have þe twelfþe part of<sup>1</sup> clerkis<sup>a</sup>, and ȝyve her dymes and offringis to hem and hyris<sup>2</sup> to lye bi, ȝit it were now ynowȝ, siȝ Apostlis wiȝ lesse goodis profitiden more to Cristis Chirche. And þus wiȝdrawe we kyngis clerkis and clerkis þat ben in lordis housis, and algatis þese religious þat ben to charge of Cristis Chirche; and passe we not þanne þe tenþe part, to dowe clerkis over oure God, and he wole teche us, bi riȝt liif, in what noumbre we shulden have clerkis.

ÞIS IS ÞE GOSPEL ÞAT IS RAD ON CRISTEMASSE EVYN.

[SERMON LXXXIX.]

*Cum esset desponsata.*—MATT. i. [18.]

Þis gospel telliȝ of Cristis birþe, how his modir was pore womman, and seiȝ; *Whanne Joseph was weddid to Marie*, þe which Marie was Jesus modir<sup>3</sup>, *bifore þat þei shulden com togidere, she was founden of her housebonde, havyng of þe Holi Goost*; for Joseph perseyyed wel þat oure Ladi was wiȝ childe. Here holy doctours seien þat Joseph was weddid wiȝ Marie, and, bifore þei shulden go to bedde, Marie was gret of þe angel, and conseyyed, of þe Holi Goost, Jesus oure Savyour. Soþeli þe Holi Trinite made þis concepcioun; but siȝ charite is proprid to þe Holi Goost, and moost charite was, þat God wolde make himsilf man, it is soþ þat Crist was conseyyed of þe Holi Goost. And bi þis þe two oþer Persones ben not excludid, but includid. Crist was conseyyed in oure Ladi of her clene blood wiȝouten

The nativity  
of Christ.

<sup>1</sup> om. E.      <sup>2</sup> *beris*, E.      <sup>3</sup> So in E; A includes the whole clause, except the word *Marie*, in the quotation.

<sup>a</sup> That is, 'if but a twelfth part among the Jews, devoted themselves of the population, as was the case to the service of the altar.'

man, and hadde anoon mannis forme, and growide in hir as oþer done. And þus Joseph, bi lyzt touching, or ellis bi þe lore of God, perceyvide þat she was wiþ childe, and wolde not disseyve oure Ladi. And seintis selen þat Crist was conceyved after þis weddinge; for Crist wolde be conseyyed in wedlok of his fadir and modir; and ellis myzten þe Jewis forsake Crist as unlawful, and not þe greet bihiȝte prophete. And so Joseph shulde have oure Ladi more unsuspect, and more love Crist, and betere kepe him as his lawful sone, and serve him, and nurishe him. And so we ben more certified of maidenhed of oure Ladi; for Joseph, ȝif he wiste<sup>1</sup> hir have knowe man bifore, for reproof he wolde have told it. And, for *Joseph was a just man* and loved of God, *God tolde him bi an angel þat he shulde not drede to take Marie to his wif*. Ech word of þis gospel shulde be take bi his sentence. And so, siþ Joseph was a just man, God myȝte not faile to him, how he shulde do in þingis þat weren hid to him. It is seid comunli, bi processe of Lukes gospel, þat oure Ladi, fro þat she was grett of Gabriel, as Luk telliþ, wente to Elizabeth, and dwelte wiþ her a long tyme, and in al þis tyme Crist growide in her wombe. And whanne she cam hoom to Joseph, he myȝte betere knowe hir wiþ childe; but Joseph wiste, bi Goddis lawe, þat ȝif oure Ladi were corrupt in þis caas, she shulde be punishid; but he coude not prove þis, and so he wolde not defame oure Ladi, ne put hir up to mannis jugement; siþ he trowide þat oure Ladi myȝte conceyve þus bi þe Hooli Goost. Not þat þe seed of þe Holi Goost was put in to oure Ladi, but þat God, of hir blood, gedride in place of hir wombe; and wiþouten oþer seed, God formede þis bodi, and ȝaf it soule. And þus, bi þe aungel's lore, Joseph was afer enfourmed, and not of alle þingis togidre, but now a litel, and now a litil; and þus he shulde betere lyve bi feiþ, and hope, and charite; for bi whiles he shulde be confortid bi speche of þis aungel, al ȝif he apperide to Joseph for þe tyme þat Joseph slepte. And þis is a beter siȝt þan ben comune dreemes of men. And Joseph was clepid Daviþis sone, for he shulde þenke þat Crist was bihiȝt for to come of Daviþis kynde; and

<sup>1</sup> *hadde wiste*, E.



so myzte he muse, and þenke how Marie myzte þus be wiþ childe. And he hadde noon occasioun to have Marie suspect, for þis tyme, and þes wordis of þe aungel, moveden Joseph to þis treuþe: *for þat þat is born in her is of the Holi Goost.* Wel he wiste þat ech man is maad of þe Holi Goost, but þis aungel mente sumwhat ellis; for ellis his speche hadde be veyn. And so Joseph undirstood þat Marie hadde conceyved bi myracle; and to þis witt he was disposid, but not to no<sup>1</sup> more 3it.

*Þe aungel seide þat Marie shulde bere a child, and he shulde clepe his name Jesus,* as Gabriel hadde seid bifore. And siþ Jesus is savour, bi þis Joseph þouzte more; and speciali, siþ þis aungel seide, *þat þis Jesus shulde save his peple fro þer synnes.* And þat is moche; for þanne he shulde boþe have a peple, and shulde save it fro synne, þat oonli God mai do. A man mai save fro bodili perilis, but oonli God mai save fro synne; and speciali fro þe laste synne, þat makip a man be dampned in helle.

Here men douten comounli, siþ alle men shulden sue Crist, how preestis shulde not have peple þat were suget to hem. And siþ þe peple shulde serve to prestis and do hem worldli worshipis, it semep þat for worship of God men shulden þus 3yve hem rentis, and þus encrease hooli Chirche in devocioun of dowyng. Here we graunten, as we seiden next<sup>a</sup>, þat ech man after Crist shulde sue him, ferþer or nerer, or ellis he comeþ never to hevене. And herfore Crist ledde comun lyf, neiþer to large ne to streit, þe which liif myzte be ensauple to alle men of þis world. But 3it Baptist, ne ony oþer, myzte not passe Crist in o vertue; for Cristis fasting was betere þan ony oþer fastyng myzte be, and his passioun was more as his charite was gretter. But siþ Crist dide al þing so þat he myzte not be amendid, he myzte not take worldli lordship to þe worship of his Chirche, for, if he hadde, he hadde fuylide<sup>2</sup> his stait, and fordone him and his Chirche. And þis wisten apostlis wel, and dwelten þerfor in þer povert. And þus pore staat of men is liker to staat of innocence þan is rich worldli staat, seme it

Poverty the proper state of ecclesiastics.

<sup>1</sup> om. E.

<sup>2</sup> So E; A has *foilid*.

<sup>a</sup> See page 310.

nevere so glorious. And þus þe pope, takinge dowing, — were it Silvester or oþer,—foulide<sup>1</sup> þe Chirche and dide it harm oþer weie þan Crist myzte do. And so it is not bileve þat ne þis pope synnede myche. But men supposen þat he hadde sorewe in his ende for þis synne; and so we supposen now, þat bi grace þat Crist gaf him, he is a seint now in hevene, as oþer men þat token þis downyng. But oþer apostlis, bi oure bileve, passen in heven sich staat; for it is bineþe bileve þat þes popis ben in hevene, siþ bileve of holi writt seiþ not þat þei ben seintis. And so for blyndenes of þis world þei token to worship þat was shame. And Crist myzte not have do þus, for Crist myzte not have synned. And þus, where ypocritis seien þat þis dowing doiþ worship, it doiþ myche shame to men, 3if riȝt bileve coude conceyve it. For shame of synne is þe moste þat ech man shulde eschewe, for it bringiþ to þe moste shame, þat shal be at þe daie of dome. Wel Y woot þat fendis lymes wolen argue azens þis sentence, and disprove oure wordis here; but jugement of þe firste treuþe, and his liif, wiþ his reule, techiþ us sumwhat here how þis is Goddis treuþe. And sich lordship of preestis, wiþ oþer synnes þat comen after, may distroie rewmes here, and do harm to al þe Chirche. For, siþ sich lordship is rote of bataillis and divisious, it mai falle bi þis synne þat prestis taken fiȝting fro lordis; and so þes lordis shulden lyve as vikeris, and þes prestis shulden lyve as knyztis. And þus myzte Cristis religioun be reversid for þe more part. And prelatis, boþe more and lesse, mai assente to þis sentence, and freris mai falle wiþ hem, and chide bi wordis þat it is soþ; as it falliþ in þis tyme þat prestis fiȝting is preisid, 3he, for a feyned cause, þat noon in þis world can grounde. And after þis synne mai falle, þat ladies ben taken privyly, and afterward apertli, fro þer hosebondis, bi preestis. And þis wey may fiȝting falle wiþinne rewmes and distrye hem; for preestis mai coveiten to myche of rewmes, and chef lordship of hem. God shilde us fro sich perils; for 3if þei fallen in oure tyme, many helpers shulden þei have of Anticristis clerkis þat darken now. For Goddis lawe seiþ þus; þat þei ben cursid of him þat bowen

<sup>1</sup> So E; A has *foilide*.

fro Goddis comandementis; and þis cursing is more to charge, for þis Lord mai not erre. And herfore alle men shulden defende Goddis lawe on þer manere; for litil errour in þis lawe wole growe to a greet harme.

Crist axiþ here mekenes and poverté, wiþ verri pees; and algatis in hise preestis þat ben hier in degree; and ever þe hijere þat þei ben, þe more þei shulde have of þes vertues. And 3if þou seie, þat þes richessis ben goode, and Cristis prestis ben more worþi; whi shulde not þei have þes goodis passinge bifore oþer men? many sich blynde resouns ben maad bi Anticristis clerkis; as sum men arguen for þeves, þat þei ben more hardi men, whi shulden þei not have þe goodis þat þei robben fro oþer men? Speciali, siþ bi Goddis lawe alle þingis shulden be comune. But here men seien, þat þeves ben hardi but to do synful dedes, and þei ben þe moste cowardis in doinge of dedes of vertue. And as a corde is a good þing, and þe tree is a good þing, but 3it þe hanging on þe galewis is harmful to þis þef; so worldli goodis ben good, but mysuse of hem is yvel. For God haþ put alle þingis in mesure, and passyng þerof is foul and yvel; as many creaturis ben good, and habitude of hem is yvel. And Goddis lawe techiþ þis ordre, and which of þis is better þan oþer. Certis, worldli richesse is good, but not so good as ben vertues; and cloþis of þe ordris ben good, but not so good as ordre in soule. Goddis lawe techiþ in what ordre hise servantis shulde use his goodis; and mesure of þis ordre is betere þan is havynge of þes goodis. And þus we graunten þat preestis shulden have peple þat were suget to hem, but first suget to Cristis lawe; and þus þei shulden have þis peple for þe traveile and þe service þat þei shulden do to þis peple. But Crist haþ in anoþer manere peple, and alle goodis of þis world; for he is boþe God and man, þat mai faile in noþing.



ÞE GOSPELS OF ÞE FIRSTE MASSE AND ÞE SECUNDE ON  
CRISTEMASSE MORWENYNG BEN EX[POUNDED]<sup>1</sup>  
IN OON SERMOUN TOGIDERE, AS IT SUEÞ.

## [SERMON XC.]

*Exiit edictum a Cesare Augusto.*—LUC. ii. [1.]

The Nativity.

Þis dai men singen þree massis in worship of þe Trinite; but þe þridde and þe moste is of þe manhede of Crist, þe which is boþe God and man for þe love of mankynde. Þe gospil of þe firste masse, and of þe secounde also, tellen what þingis bifellen in þe birþe of þis child. Þe Emperour of Rome was þanne in his flouris, and in pees on ech side, as þis atour of pees ordeynede. Men seien þat þis emperour was clepid Octavian; and in þe two and fourtiþe ȝeer, whanne he was in moost pees, was Crist born, God and man, in þe lond undir þis emperour. Men seien also, þat þis Cesare was moost in generalte and larges, and pees of his lordship; for more generali þan oþer hadde he lordship of þis world. Of Julius he took þis name to be clepid Cesare; and August he was clepid, for he alargide<sup>a</sup> þe empire. Þis emperour sente a comandement to al þe peple of his empire, to *discryve alle his londis*, þat was wel nyȝ al þis world. And he bigan at *Sirie*, for it was myddil of his empire. And so *Siryne*<sup>2</sup> b, þat was þere cheef undur þe emperour, bigan to make þis discripcion, and gaderide tribute to þe emperour. And þus myȝte þe emperour wite what peple he hadde in his empire, and what þei myȝten helpe him in tyme of nede, in men and moneie. And þus he deuidide þis rewme in þree partis, þat men shulden come in nyne ȝeer to Rome, and bringe tribute for her lond. But al þis is passid now; for þe pope and his covent haþ<sup>3</sup> so put down þe em-

<sup>1</sup> Restored conjecturally; the MS. (A) has only the letters *e x*, followed by the long stroke of a *p*.    <sup>2</sup> *Siryne*, E.    <sup>3</sup> *ban*, E.

<sup>a</sup> 'Augustus,' as if from *augeo*.

<sup>b</sup> In the authorized version, 'Cyrenius governor of Syria.'

perour<sup>a</sup>, þat litil rewmes tellen list by him. And so dukes, and eerlis, and lesse, wolen fiste wiþ him, and dispise him. *And so wente alle of Jude*, þat was ny Sirye, to make þer profession in her owne citee. Ech man hadde an heed toun þat was next to his dwelling, and þat was clepid his citee; and sum men clepen it cheping toun<sup>b</sup>.

*And Joseph wente fro Nazareth þat was a toun in Galile in to þe toun of Bedleem þat was sett in Judee.* For boþ Joseph and oure Ladi weren þe hous of Daviþ; and þe cite of Beedleem was Daviþis bi sum propirte, for Daviþ was borne in þat citee, as þe Book of Kingis telliþ. And so Joseph wente wiþ Marie, þat was his wyf, in to Bedelem, to make þis professioun þat þe emperour bad make. Þei brouzten an oxe and an asse wiþ hem, as men seien, for þis enchesoun;—Marie was greet wiþ childe; þefore she rood upon an asse; þe oxe þei brouzten for to selle; for Jewis haten begging. And Bedleem was fillid of men bifore þei camen to þe toun; and so þei hadden noon herborwe, but dwelten in a comune stable, and þes two beestis wiþ hem, til tyme cam to use hem.

And it felle, *while þei weren þere, oure Ladi bare hir child, þe which was hir firste child*, for him she bar and noon oþer. And þis is maner of Goddis lawe, to clepe sich children first born,—not for oþer was born; bifore ne after Crist she bar noon oþer. *And she wrapte Crist wiþ cloþis, and putte him in þe cratche*, for she hadde no betere place to put him in al þe hous. And so, as men singen and trowen, Crist lai bifore an oxe and an asse. And breeþ of þes two beestis kepte him hoot in þis cold tyme.

And *herdis weren in þe same contre, wakinge, and keeping þe houris of þe niȝt upon þer flok.* For þis was maner in Judee, whanne þe niȝt was lengest, to kepe þer sheep and wake þat

<sup>a</sup> This is an interesting allusion to the enfeebled condition of the 'Holy Roman Empire' since the fall of the Hohenstanfen dynasty, which was truly brought about, as the writer says, by the popes and their adherents. The emperor at this time reigning, Wenzel or Wenceslas, whose sister, Anne of Bo-

hemia, was married to our Richard II, was so utterly weak both in character and resources that the princes of the empire deposed him a few years later, and elected in his room his brother Sigismund.

<sup>b</sup> That is, market town; as in Chipping Norton, Chipping Campden. Chippenham, &c

nizt. And so men seien þat Crist was bore at þe myddil of þis nyzt, for þe myddil persone in Trinite lovede myddil in many þingis. *And lo, þe aungel of þe Lord stood bi þes heerdis, and clerenesse of God shynede aboute hem, and þei dreden bi greet drede. But þe aungel seide to hem, Wole 3e not drede, for loo, Y telle 3ou a greet joie þat shal be to al þe peple. For þis date is born to us a Savyour, þat is Crist þe Lord, in þe citee of Daviþ. And þis shal be tokene to 3ou: ye shal fynde þe child wlapid wiþ cloþis, and put in þe cratche, as Y shal telle 3ou. And sudeynli, þer was maad wiþ þis aungel a multitude of hevenli knyztis, herynge God and seynge; Glori be to God in hizeste hevenes, and pees be to men in erþe which ben of good wille.*

Here mai we see how Crist lovede comun povert on many maners; for he chees to be herborid in comun place, wiþouten pryde, and wiþouten worldli helpe boþe of men and of wymmen, and he chees a pore cradil þat þe child was put inne. But he hadde, passinge oþer, a pryvylegie in many þingis; for he was born wiþouten peyne or sorewe of his fadir and modir. For as he brak not Maries cloister whanne þat she was maad wiþ childe, so he brak not his modirs wombe whanne he cam out of þis cloister. And so þes just folk bifore God weren betere þan myche worldli peple, kingis or lordis and ladies, and<sup>1</sup> wiþ myche fare of þis world; for þis birþe was glorious, neer þe staat of innocence. Þe secounde confort of Cristis birþ was of þes many aungels; for þei weren betere þan many lordis, and her song was of greet confort. Ofte tyme, in þe olde law, apperiden aungels to men, but not in sich a multitude, ne in siche a joiful speche.

And whanne þe aungels wenten fro hem, *þes herdis spaken to hem silf, Passe we into Bedleem, and se we þis word þat is maad, þat þe Lord haþ maad, and shewid to us. And þei came hastinge, and fond þes þree persones, Marie and Joseph, and þe 3ong child putt in þe cratche. And whanne þes heerdis sawen þis þing, þei knewen of þe word þat was seid to hem of þis child bi þe aungel. And alle þe men of þe contre þat herden þis,*

<sup>1</sup> om. E.

wondriden, and<sup>a</sup> of þes þingis, þat weren seid of þe heerdemen to hem. But Marie kepte alle þes wordis, and bare hem to-gidere in her herte. And no drede she hadde greet confort, and undirstonding over oþere men. And þes heerdis turneden aȝen, glorifynge and herynge God in alle þingis þat þei herden and sawen, as it was seid to hem.

We supposen þat aungels ledden hem to þis place in Beed-leem, and confortiden hem many gatis, boþe in bodi and in soule. And þei wisten bi þes aungelis, and bi þe good will þat þei hadden, how þei shulden have pees in erpe; and herfore þei herieden God. And so, ȝif we taken hede, Crist hadde company of þre. First, of his fadir and of his modir, þat weren boþe holi folk; after, of herdemen þat lyveden symple and holi lyf. And þes weren licli mo þan two, and nyȝ þe state of innocence; for God lovede Abel betere þan Cayn þat was his broþer. And þe first was an heerde, and þe toþer a tilyng man; and tilyng men have more of craft þan have heerdis in þer dedis. And as God lovede Jacobes sones, þat weren alle heerdemen, so he lovede þes heerdis þat camen for to visite Crist. And so þis nativite of Crist was more þan ony oþer, ȝhe, and more þan Adames making, whanne he cam into þis world; for oure Ladi and Joseph passiden Adam and Eve, and þe company of aungelis passiden frendis þat weren wiþ oure firste eldris; and þes heerdis þat camen to hem passiden Adams children. And algatis þe birþ of Crist passide<sup>1</sup> oþer dedis þat ever God dide; for it is more to make God man, þan to make þis world of nouȝt. It is maistrie to make a virgyn bere a child, and dwelle a virgyn, more þan to make Adam of erpe, or to make Eve of Adams ribbe; but it is wiþouten mesure more to make God to be a man. For here mennis wittis moten faile. But oon ensample haȝ kynde ȝovun us: as þe spirit þat is mannis soule is þe same persone wiþ him, so þe secunde persone of God is þe same persone wiþ þis man. But diversite is greet here and þere, whoso wole loke. Leeve we þis and speke we of vertues. For þis child

<sup>1</sup> So E; *passiden*, A.

<sup>a</sup> Literally rendered from the Vulgate,—'omnes qui audierant mirati sunt, et de iis quae dicta erant a pastoribus.'

The holy company present at the Nativity.

Reflections on the Nativity.

is Goddis virtue, and wisdom of þe Fadir of hevene. But þis is bi his Godhede; and mo redelis<sup>1</sup> þan we can telle ben soþ of Crist bi his two kindis. And ȝif we taken good hede of him, Crist is þree kyndis, and o persone; for Crist is Godhede, and bodi, and soule, and ech oon of þes þree. And so, as sum men seien, Crist is sevene þingis, and ech of hem: for his spirit is þree þingis, and his bodi oþer þree þingis, and Crist is, over þis, his Godhede, but oonli oo persone of it. And so, as sevene is ful nombre of universite of þingis<sup>a</sup>, so Crist is ful rewme of hevene, and of þis world; for al þis world bi him is betirid, and as who made a newe world. For ech creature of þis world is beterid bi his birþ. For man is beterid siþ he is bouȝt and maad Goddis sone and his eire, and þerwiþ þe broþer of Crist, which is boþe God and man; angelis in hevene be beterid, siþ þei have more felouship, and sich felouship of seintis makij hem more glad togidere. And þus alle þe fendis in helle ben beterid aȝens þer wille; for þer cumpany is maad lesse, and þei have harm of many felowis.

Al þis world bodili shulde serve to God and to man; and it wantide þis eende til þat Crist was maad man; for bifore, þis world fauȝte wiþ God and tormentide man, but fro þat þis pees was maad, God made þis world to serve man. And herfore aungelis in hevene, for Cristis incarnacioun, wolden not take kneling of Joon, but seiden, þat þei weren his servantis, and servantis of his breþeren; and þis þei fulfillid in dede. And so ech part of þis world shulde joie for þis nativite; but þe fendis maken sorewe, for old envie þat þei have. And for þei shulden make ioie, þei synnen in þis, and harmen hemsilf. And herfore Crist is clepid a pesible kyng in þe Chirche; for he made pees in al þis world, and lefte fiȝtinge for more pees. For man fiȝtij wiþ þre enemys, to have more blessid pees in hevene. And so, as many men seien, alle þingis comen for þe beste; for alle comen for Goddis ordenance, and so þei

<sup>1</sup> *ridelis*, E.

<sup>a</sup> The number *seven*, formed from the union of the triad, the 'perfect' number, with the tetractys, which Pythagoras venerated so profoundly, itself prime and masculine, marking

the number of the planets, &c., &c., has been held sacred from the earliest times. See the article on 'Arithmetic' in the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*.



comen for God himsilf; and so alle þingis þat comen fallen for þe beste þing þat mai be. Moreover to anoþer witt men seien, þat þis world is betetid bi everyþing þat falliþ þerinne, where þat it be good or yvel; so moche, þat þis world is betere for synne þat is punishid in helle; for it falliþ to oure Lord to have a prisoun and prisoneris, and do his merci to hem, and savore more his seintis in hevене. And herfore seiþ Gregori<sup>a</sup>, þat it was a blesful synne þat Adam synnede and his kynde, for bi þis þe world is betetid; but þe ground of þis goodnesse stondiþ in grace of Jesus Crist.

But ȝit men mai muse how Crist is pesible kyng, siþ he seiþ, he cam not to sende pees in þe erþe but swerd, and þat bitokeneþ fizting and noo pees. Here men seien soþeli, þat þer ben two peesis, verri pees and fals pees, and þei ben ful dyvers. Verry pees is groundid in God, whanne God loveþ a man, and to þat pees sueþ pees wiþ alle creaturis; for to men þat þus loven God done alle þingis good. And þis pees stondiþ in pacience, and mekenes, and oþer vertues; and þus was Crist pesible kyng, and he and hise hadden pees here. Fals pees is groundid in reste wiþ oure enemys, whanne we assente to hem wiþouten aȝenstonding. And swerd aȝens sich pees cam Crist to sende into erþe; for þus fouȝte Poul aȝens his fleish, aȝens þe world and þe fend; and þus dide Crist, partinge fleishli frendis fro þe love of oþer, for þe more love þat þei shulden have to Crist þat is her God. Þis fals pees is cowardise, and enemyte of God; and auctor of þis pees is þe fend of helle. And Crist contrariede þis pees, wiþ synnes þat bringiþ it in, as ben pryde, envie and bateils, ydilnes, and oþer synnes. And where verri pees techiþ pacience, þis pees techiþ fizting, and blasfemeþ in God, as it wolde be his maistir. And to þis undirstonding was not Crist pesible kyng. And herfore þe prophete seiþ, þat in tyme of Crist, þei shulden welle þer swerdis to sharris<sup>1</sup>, and þer

What is the peace which Christ sends upon the earth.

Is II. 4

<sup>1</sup> *scharres*, E.

<sup>a</sup> A passage, not worded precisely as here stated, but with the same general meaning, may be found in Gregory's Commentary *In Primum Regum*, lib. iv. cap. 1. But there is a passage in the Sarum missal, in the office for Holy Saturday, con-

taining precisely the same thought; 'O certe necessarium Adae peccatum et nostrum, quod Christi morte deletum est! O felix culpa, quae talem ac tantum meruit habere redemptorem!'

Ps. xlv. 91  
lxxvi. 3.

speris to sykelis. For of Crist seip anoþer prophete, þat Crist schulde do awei bateilis to þe ende of þe erþe, and instrumentis of bateilis, as bowe, and sheld, and swerd, and oþer engynes of bataillis. Þus schulde it be; but þe fend reversiþ þis.

ON SEINT STEVENYS DAL.

[SERMON XCI.]

*Ecce, ego mitto ad vos prophetas.*—MATT. xxiii. [34.]

The Martyrs.

Þis gospel is songen in worship of Seint Steven, þat was þe firste martir aftir Cristis assencioun; for he was oon of þe sevene dekenes chosen of þe apostlis, and stood styffi to his deef for bileve azens Jewis. And so bileve techiþ us þat he is an hooli martir. Crist seide þes wordis to two maner of folk, þat weren þe fendis capteyns in killing of martiris; and þes weren princis of preestis, and comunte of Jewis. Crist supposiþ in þis speche, þat he is boþe God and man; and so al tyme þat was, or shal be, is present to him. And he supposiþ also þat þer ben two kynredis; good kynrede, and yvel, of which ben man-sleris fro þe bigynnyng of þe world to þe laste martir. And to þis kynrede shapiþ Crist his wordis:—*Lo, I sende to 3ou prophetis, and wise men, and scribis; and al þis is for 3our good, to teche 3ou Goddis lawe: and of hem shal 3e kille, and do upon þe crosse, and of hem shal 3e tormenten in 3our synagogis.* And here mai we see þe malis of þis kynrede, for a synagoge, as þei seien, is an holi place; and hereinne þei turmenten just men. And þe synne was<sup>1</sup> þe more, and blyndenesse of witt also, for þei wenden to do wel in þis. And so þei pursuen Cristene men fro cite to citee, þat shal veniaunce come on hem<sup>2</sup> at þe dai of jugement. And þus þei done her fadirs work, sleyinge martiris bi þer tyme, *þat al just blood come on hem, þat is shed in erþe, fro þe blood of just Abel to þe blood of Zacarie, þat was Barachies sone, slayn of hem bitwixe þe temple and þe auter.*

<sup>1</sup> So E; is, A.

<sup>2</sup> The words *And—hem* are italicized in E.

Dis is a blessid ende ordeyned bi Goddis lawe, for no synne mai be done, but ȝif justise be ȝerwip; and so, ȝis justise makip ȝe world more fair ȝan ȝis synne mai mak it foul. Muse we not of ȝis Zacarie, how he was Barachies sone and whanne he was kild, as ȝis gospel tellip; for many men have many names, and algatis in ȝe olde lawe; and a man is a sone of a fadir longe bifore; and many ȝingis ben hid to us, how ȝei weren speciali done<sup>a</sup>. And ȝus we taken ȝe word of Crist, and trowen it soȝ as bileve, siȝ ech word of ȝe gospel is trewe, siȝ it is bileeve; siȝ ech compleet resoun tellip treuȝe ȝat we shulde trowe, and ech part of ȝis resoun bitokeneȝ ȝe same treuȝe. Crist seiȝ to ȝis folk:—Soȝli, Y seiē to ȝou, alle ȝes ȝingis shal come upon ȝis kynrede. ȝes Jewis weren a part ȝerof, and so ȝis kynrede was ȝere, and herde ȝes wordis of Crist, for a part of it herde hem. Aftir, Crist declariȝ ȝat ȝis malice was oonli in hem; for God was of good wille to do good to his kyn; but sum of hem wolde not take ȝis goodness of God. And ȝus seiȝ Crist:—*Jerusalem, Jerusalem, how ofte wolde Y gadere ȝi children, as an henne gaderiȝ her chekenes undir hir wynges, and ȝou woldest not,* but toke in veyn Goddis grace.

And here men douten comunli how Goddis wille was reversid, siȝ ȝe Psalme seiȝ:—ȝat al ȝat God wolde, he dide generali in hevēne and in erȝe. But here it semeȝ ȝat Austin wolde seiē on ȝis manere<sup>b</sup>:—ȝat Goddis wille mut nedis ever more be fulfillid; and so, as ofte as Crist wolde gadere children of Jerusalem, as ofte weren ȝei gaderid undir his proteccioun; and whanne he wolde not gadere hem, her synne was in cause, and bi riȝt wisnesse of God, ȝei musten nedis be punishid; and so Goddis wille was fulfillid in punishing of hem. God wole sum ȝing uttirli, as ȝing ȝat he wole be; and ȝes ȝingis moten nedis be, siȝ God is al myȝtti. And sum ȝing wole God upon condicioun; and tellip men his wille, how, bi his lawe, men shal be punishid ȝat breken ȝis general wille in ony part ȝerof, ȝat is fulfillid in sum part. And so, siȝ God biddiȝ do ȝis ȝing, and ordeyneȝ to punishe for ȝe trespas, God wole on ȝis maner ȝat ȝis dede be don. And so ever Goddis wille is ful-

Ps. cxxxv. 6.

<sup>a</sup> See p. 240.<sup>b</sup> See St. Augustine's, *Enarratio in Psalmum cxxxiv.* § 10.

fillid, ouþer in dede, or penaunce. Ȝif a man do meedfulli þat God biddiþ him do, Goddis wille is riȝtli fillid in dede, as God biddiþ; Ȝif a man aȝenstondiþ God and doiþ aȝens his wille, Ȝit Goddis wille is fillid asideli<sup>1</sup> by punishinge of þis man. And God haþ ordeyned ever more siche wille to be fulfillid þus. And so, as men speken in Latyn<sup>a</sup>, Ȝif God biddiþ þee do þis dede, God wole þat þou do þis dede, al if þou doist it not; for þou art in dette to do þis dede, and in þat is Goddis wille endid. But God wole not þat þou doist þis dede, for God knowiþ not þis treuþe, but God wole þat þou do þis dede as God wole þat þou shuldist do þis<sup>b</sup>. And so Crist doubliþ þis citees name to telle defaute of þer unkyndenesse; *how þei sleen Goddis prophetis, and stoonen Goddis seruauntis sent to hem*, as was Stephen and many oþer, þe which al þis citee killide.

And after Crist telliþ þe veniaunce þat shal be taken for þis synne. *Lo, ȝour hous shal be lefte to ȝou desert*, for defaute of dwelleris. And þis þing cam after in dede, soone after þat Crist steiȝ to hevene. And so Christ seiþ to þis kinrede; *Certis, I seiȝe to ȝou, ȝe shal not se me fro hennis, til þat ȝe seien, blessid be he þat is comen in þe Lordis name*. Anoon þis kynrede diede fro Crist, and þanne þei wisten þat he was God, and how he cam to þer profit, al Ȝif þei weren unkynde to him. And þis knowing was peyneful to þis kynrede þat shulde be dampned; and þis folk suffride þis pey ne bifore þat þei sawen Crist. For God is redi in peyne ȝyvyng as he is redi to ȝyve blisse; for his justise nedip boþe to þe toon and to þe toþer.

<sup>1</sup> *sydely*, E.

<sup>a</sup> *as men speken in Latyn*. The reference in the text is probably to the great work of Archbishop Bradwardine, the 'profound Doctor,' entitled *De Causa Dei contra Pelagium*, in which the whole subject of free will and predestination was exhaustively handled, and the popularity of which was very great. It appeared about the year 1340, and, as Sir Henry Savile says (pref. to edition of Bradwardine's *De Causa Dei*, 1618) was immediately on its publication 'tanto omnium doctorum exceptus applausu, ut per omnes

fere bibliothecas totius Europae describeretur.' To this work Chaucer refers in the well-known passage in the Nun's Priest's tale, and reproduces some of its subtle argumentation in the fourth book of *Troilus and Cryseyde*.

<sup>b</sup> God does not will thee to do a particular act in obedience to his command, because he is ignorant of the truth (that thou wilt not do it); but God wills thee to do the act, *in so far as* he desires that thou shouldst obey his precepts, though thou in fact doest it not.

ON SEINT JHONES DAY.

## [SERMON XCII.]

*Dixit Jesus Petro.*—JOHN XXI. [15.]

Þis gospel telliþ how Crist ordeynede Joon to lyve and die, and how Crist wolde þat Joon cam to blisse wiþouten killing. Joon telliþ how *Jesus seide to Petir þat he shulde sue him*,—not oonli bi paas of feet,—but in suffringe deþ as dide Crist. And Peter knew þis witt of God, and wolde fayn wite how Joon shulde die. But Joon clepiþ himsilf bi þree names and leveþ his owne propre name. For þes wordis þat Joon telliþ here sounen to excellence of him; and þanne God wole þat men be pryvy, and ȝeve þe soþe to grace of God. And þus seiþ þis gospel of Joon, *how Petir turnede him and saw Joon*. And þe firste name of þes þree sowneþ in to Goddis grace, and is seid in þis maner: *Peter, as he turnede him, saw þat disciple þat Jesus lovede, how he suede Christ*, as Peter; but ȝit he wiste not of his deef. And þis souneþ to grace of Crist, þat he lovede þus Joon bifore; for more grace mai not God ȝyve þan sich love bifore disertis. Þe secounde name þat Joon clepiþ him, stondiþ in familiarite of Crist: how *Joon restide on Shir Þursdaie*<sup>1 a</sup> *in þe soþer on Cristis brest*. Þis homlynesse was a greet grace, and meveþ men for to trowe þat þis Joon hadde witt of Crist. And al þis cam of grace of Crist. Þe þridde name þat Joon clepiþ himself, þat Peter shulde knowe bi resoun, is þis þat Joon *seide to Crist, Lord, who is he þat shal traye þee?* Þis word was seid on Shir Þursdai, whanne Crist was at his soþer, for þanne tolde Crist, but comunli, þat oon of

Saint John describes himself in his gospel in three different ways.

<sup>1</sup> *Scher Thursday, E.*

<sup>a</sup> Shir Thursday is Maundy Thursday; 'so called,' says Nares in his *Glossary*, ed. 1859, 'from the custom of shearing or shaving the beard on that day.' He quotes from an old Homily,—'For that in old faders'

days the people would on that day *sbere* theyr hedes, and clyp theyr berdes, and pool theyr heedes, and so make them honest ayenst Easter day.'

hem shulde traye him; and Petir wolde wite which þat he were. For, as men seien, Petre wolde have fouzte wiþ him. And Petre saw þat Joon was nyȝ Crist, and homly<sup>1</sup> wiþ him, and spake to Joon þat he shulde axe Crist which was he þat shul traye Crist, as Crist hadde seid. And al þis souneþ to Cristis worship, and to wisdom of Crist. And þus Joon nempnede þis þridde name, and leeveþ to boste of himself.

The manner of  
Saint John's  
death.

*Whanne Peter sawȝ þis disciple, þat was Joon Evangelist, he axide of Jesus what shal worþe of þis Joon. But Jesus answerde to Petir in wisdom and pacience, and seide: Y wole þat he dwelle þus til Y come<sup>a</sup>; what is þat to þee? sue þou me. And it is ynowȝ þee to kunne, and to do<sup>2</sup> at þis tyme, and axe no more. Here mai we se, how Crist wolde þat neiþer Petre ne Joon wiste þanne Judas name, whom Crist wiste þanne to traye him. And so Crist shewide togidere boþ pacience and charite. But Crist shewide after lore more to note; how men shulden not bisien hem to knowe þingis unpertinent to þe helþe of per soule. And þus seide Crist: What is þat to þee. And so þis word wente among þe apostlis, þat þis Joon shulde nevere die. And so wordis þat ben wel seid mai liȝtli be taken amys; siþ apostlis token amys þis word of Crist so pleinli seid. And þus Joon telliþ þis defaute, and seide, þat Jesus seide not þat Joon shulde nevere die; but Jesus seide in þis maner: But I wole þat Joon dwelle þus till þat Y come, what is þat to thee. And Cristis wordis myȝten be verified on þis maner, ȝif Joon were deed; þat Crist wolde þat Joon lyvede longe, wiþouten martirdom in bodi, til Crist cam in his owne persone, and warnede Joon to come to him and ete in hevene wiþ his breþeren in Cristis feste þat he hadde ordeyned. And þus telliþ þe storie of Joon, þat was longe after; as it bifel, Crist cam to Joon, and tolde him how he shulde come to his breþeren upon Sundai next after, and so Joon diede in his grave<sup>b</sup>. Lord! siþ þes wordis*

<sup>1</sup> homely, E.

<sup>2</sup> do þat, E.

<sup>a</sup> So in the Vulgate, 'Sic eum volo manere donec veniam. Quid ad te?'

<sup>b</sup> This 'storie' is given at large in the *Legenda Aurea* of Jacobus de Voragine. 'Cum igitur esset Johannes XCIX annorum, a passione

Domini secundum Ysidorum anno LXVIII, apparuit ei Dominus cum discipulis suis dicens, Veni, dilecte mi, ad me, quod tempus est ut in mensa mea cum tuis fratribus epuleris. Surgens autem Johannes coepit ire.

of Crist mai be wel þus undirstonden, what shulde meve ony man to take fals wite bi hem? After þese meke wordis of Joon, and comendinge of Goddis grace, tellij Joon of himsilf: *how he is þat disciple þat berij witnesse of þes þingis and wroto þes þingis in þis gospel; and we witen þat his witnesse is soþ.* And sich a witnesse, unsuspect, shulde be trowid of trewe men and not be holden for fals, sij it is oure bileve. Prove þou þat þis gospel is fals, and after dampne it if þou canst.

ON CHILDREN MASSE DAY.

[SERMON XCIII.]

*Angelus domini apparuit.*—MATT. ii. [13.]

*Þe Lordis aungel apperide in sleep to Joseph, and seide: Rise, and take þe child and his modir, and flee into Egipt, and be þou þere til Y seie to þee; for it is to come þat Eroude seke þe child for to lese him and his felowis wip him. And Joseph roos up, and toke in þe nyzt þe child and his modir, and fledde into Egipt. And Joseph was þere to þe deef of Heroude. And þis was done of Joseph, for to fulfille þat þat was seid by þe prophete, þat seide: Out of Egipt Y clepe my sone, seiþ God of Crist. And þanne Heroude saw, þat he was disseyved of þe kyngis, and was ful wroþ, and sente into Bedelem, and slow, al þe children þat weren in Bedelem, and in alle þe coostis biside, þat weren of two 3eer and wipinne, after þe tyme þat he souzte out of þes kyngis, þat Crist shulde be of age. For as men seien comunli, þe same 3eer þat Crist was born, Eroude wente to Rome and brente þes kyngis*

The slaughter  
of the Inno-  
cents.

Cui Dominus, *Dominica die ad me venies.* The legend goes on to describe how St. John caused his grave to be dug near the altar in his church at Ephesus, and laid himself down in it; from which point the story evaporates, as it were, in a cloud of miracles, and makes no mention of his actual death. This,

however, our author might have found in St. Augustine, who, in Tract CXXIV *In Jobann. Evang.*, says that it was related in an apocryphal writing that the apostle, after his grave had been dug, 'ibi se tanquam in lectulo collocasse statimque eum esse defunctum.'

ship<sup>a</sup>, and dwelte pere aboute two ȝeer bifore he cam aȝen. And perfore he slow alle þe children þat weren two ȝeer, for he dredde him of Christ þat he shulde take his kingdom; siþ þis alien<sup>b</sup> was kyng bi þe graunt of Romayns, and he wiste not how Crist wolde do þat was bi kynde kyng. *And þanne was fulfillid þat was seid bi Jeremye: A vois was herd in hiȝ, which vois was a wepinge and a greet weiling,—Rachel was weping for hir children and she wolde not be confortid, for þei weren not, quic þus.*

Dis prophecie is undirstonden on many maneres of men. Sum men undirstonden it, þat Rachel wepte in spirit þat þei weren not hir children þat weren kild in Bedleem, but hir sistris children; for þei weren kild martiris. Oþer men undirstonden by Rachel holi Chirche; and þes martiris weren hir children þat she wepte fore, not for þe martirdom þat was in hem, but for þe synne þat was done aȝens hem. And þe remenant of þe word is undirstonden<sup>1</sup> denyngli, þat þe Chirche wolde not be confortid of þis, þat her children weren dede. For she pouȝte it no disconfort by many enchesouns; oon, þat it mut nede be, as God himsilf haȝ ordeyned,—and he ordeyneþ evere for þe beste, ȝif we coudyn perseyye it. How shulde we grutche aȝens God þat we trowen doiþ so wel? Also, we trowen

<sup>1</sup> So E; A has *undirstonding*.

<sup>a</sup> *brente þes kyngis ship*. This singular legend is not found, so far as I can discover, in any writer of earlier date than Petrus Comestor, (the Mangiadore of Dante, *Paradiso*, xii. 134), author of the *Historia Scholastica*, from whom De Lyra quotes it. Peter was a priest of Troyes in the twelfth century; the *Historia* is said to have been produced in the year 1181. In the dedication, addressed to the archbishop of Sens, Peter declares that he had written the work at the urgent entreaty of many friends, in order to 'elucidate the too brief and obscure narrative of holy scripture.' Labbe, in his *Scriptores Ecclesiastici*, thus writes of him;—'Historiam Ecclesiasticam consarcinavit eamque glossis tum falsissimis tum insulsissimis referavit, quae tamen ita tum

ubique obtinuit, ut ipsi scripturae sacrae nuda ac purae pene prefereretur.'

The story of the veracious Petrus is, that while Herod was on his way to Rome, whither he had been summoned by Augustus with reference to the quarrels between him and his sons, he stayed for a time at Tarsus in Cilicia, and burnt all the ships of the people of Tarsus, in revenge for their having provided the wise men with a ship to return home in. Whereby the prophecy in the forty-eighth Psalm was fulfilled, 'Thou shalt break the ships of Tarshish with an east wind,' Tarshish being of course identical with Tarsus!

<sup>b</sup> Herod was an alien and no Jew, being the son of Antipater the Idumaeen.



þat þes seintis weren take in þer best tyme, so þat many ben betere þan þei shulden have be unmartrid. Whi shulde þe Chirche sorowe for her grete goode? Many sich resouns ben maad, þat men shulden be pacient and confourme hem to Goddis wille, and enjoie of þe more goode. And þus men seien þat þe Chirche is worshipid bi martirs. Crist is heed of martiris, and oonli bi himsilf; but his membris ben martris upon þre maneres: sum in wille and dede,—and þus was Stephen martrid; and sum in wille, and not in dede,—and þus was Joon martrid; and sum men in dede and not in wille, and þus weren þes children martrid.

But men douten comunli how alle þes weren martris, siþ circumcisioun was þanne as nedeful as now is baptym. But licly many of hem weren kild bifore þe eizþe dai, and, bifore þat, þei shulden not be circumcidid bi þe lawe. Here many men þenken þat þer ben many circumcisiouns, as þer ben many baptemys, as it is knowun comunli. And God is not so oblishid to sensible sacramentis þat ne he mai, wiþouten hem, 3yve a man his grace. And as God 3af martiris grace, wiþouten baptym of water, bi baptym of þe Hooli Goost and bi water of Cristis side, so mai men suppose of circumcisioun; and so alle þes Innocentis weren circumcided in soule. Þus mai men suppose bineþe bileeve.

And many men supposen þis more þan of þes seintis þat now ben canonisid bi þe Court of Rome, for lordship, or money, or favour of partis; for þus may þe Court be blyndid in many sich canonisingis. Also, fals witnessis proven not bifore God; whi shulden we bileve þat þes witnessis seien soþ? also, many sich signes þat ben holden myraclis mai be done bi þe fend, and many moo þan þei; what evidence is of þes, þat þis soule is in hevene? Som soulis ben in hevene bi witnesse of holi writt, and þis witnes is more worþ þan a þousand courtis; and bileve of Cristen men is þat þes ben seintis. But men supposen bineþe bileve þat oþer men ben seintis, after evidence þat þei have, ouþer more or lesse: as sum men supposen, and sum lceven levefulli; and sum men trowen treuli, þat alle sich seintis profiten not to men but 3if þei maken hem love Crist. So, 3if men wolden betere love Crist wiþouten sich feestis,

Question raised whether all the Holy Innocents were martyrs.

He assails the canonization of saints as practised by the Court of Rome.

The multitude of festivals of doubtful profit to the Church.

it were beter to hem to wante sich seintis. But wiþ þis it is soþ, þat many ben seintis in hevene, as Laurence and Kateryne <sup>a</sup>, alȝif Rome canonise hem nevere. But siþ þes seintis ben not expressid in þe lawe of holi writt, men ben not holden to trowe it expressli þat þes ben seintis in hevene: for after þat treuþe is in holi writt shulden men trowe þis treuþe. And so, as it is ofte seid, holi writt conteyneþ al treuþe: sum treuþe expresli,—and þat shulden men þus trowe,—and sum treuþe pryvyli,—and þat shulden men trowe in comune. And God woot of þes festis, wheþer þe Chirche ben betere for hem; for if men loven more Crist and holden betere Goddis lawe bi þis multitude of festis, and bi þe seiying of her houris, þanne it profitiþ to sich men to kepe sich þingis wel. And ȝif þes festis, wiþ þes ymages and þes houris, weren left of men, and þanne þei loveden betere Crist, and diden betere service þat he bad hem; þanne it profitide to sich men to leve siche serymonies. And it semeþ to many men, siþ Crist, wiþ alle hise apostlis, lefte alle siche þingis and lyvede betere in charite, and kepte betere þe bidding of God, so men myzten now do. But men shulden not here diffyne, but ȝif God tolde it hem; for boþe sich doying and sich lyvyng myzte do, in caas, harm or good. But algatis men shulden seie, þat þei shulden not leve þe office þat Crist bad hem expresly for sich newe ordenaunce.

And it is knowun þat many harmes and many errours fallen bi þes festis; first, in þe purchasyng of canonisyng of seintis at Rome; after, in coveitouse occupyng togedre moneie bi siche seintis; and algatis in mystrowyng þat men have of sich seintis. As sum men trowen þat Saint Thomas, Erchebishop of Cantirbirie, diede for dowyng of þe Chirche, and to defende goodis þerof. And it were more licli to men, and more acording to Goddis lawe, þat men shulden be seintis in hevene for to bringe holi Chirche to þe ordenance þat Crist

It is dishonouring to Saint Thomas of Canterbury to say that he died in defence of the Church's possessions.

<sup>a</sup> At the early period (middle of the third, and early in the fourth century) at which these saints lived, no formal rules for canonization existed. Yet St. Laurence is a strange instance to choose; for though he was not formally canonized, his feast

was solemnly kept in the Roman church at least ever since the fifth century; and this was the more natural, because he was a native of Rome. See his life in Alban Butler (Aug. 10).

ordeynede; and þat was pore state of preestis. And herfore trowen many men, þat cause þat made Seint Thomas martir was, þat he spake azens wolves þat weren aboute to murþere lambren; and suffrede not, for defaute of preching, Goddis vynezerde passe to a wortþerd. And þus bishopis and clerkis, wiþ kingis, holden stiffli azens Thomas; and þus we redyn<sup>1</sup> of Seint Thomas, and trowen it betere, but lesse þan feiþ. And þus shulde we not stryve, as foolis, how hye þis Thomas is in hevene, and what seintis in hevene he passip; as done þes newe foundun ordris of her patrouns<sup>a</sup>, for whom þei stryven how hie seintis þei ben in hevene. And 3it þei can neiþer teche bi resoun ne bi bileve þat þei ben seintis in hevene, ne þat þei passe þe leste in hevene. But men mai trowe, whoso wole, þes fablis for which foolis stryven. God 3yve us grace to love him, and kepe his lawe, and love it; for þat is betere to Cristene men, þan kepe þes festis of þes seintis. For ech preier to þese seintis moot be knytt wiþ helpe of God. For, if we loven Crist in his ordre betere for love of siche seintis, þanne þes festis profiten to us; but comunli þei done us harm. But al oure craft were for to knowe what we shulden take as bileve, and what þing we shulden suppose, and what þing forsaken as fals.

<sup>1</sup> *reden, E.*

<sup>a</sup> *as done þes newe foundun ordris of ber patrouns.* This looks like a reference to the famous *Liber Conformitatum* of Bartholomew of Pisa; but if it be, this sermon was not written by Wyclif, for that work, according to Gieseler (*Eccl. Hist.* vol. iv. p. 155) was not written till 1385. In it is said, (I quote from Gieseler) that the brother Pacificus had seen in a vision many seats in heaven, 'inter quas vidit unam em-

inentiorem aliis et prae omnibus gloriosius fulgentem, et ornatam omni lapide pretioso;' of which seat it was told him,—'haec sedes fuit Luciferi, et loco ejus sedebit humilis Franciscus.' It is, however, probable that the exaltation of their founder in Paradise was a favourite theme with Franciscan preachers in all countries, long before the appearance of the *Liber Conformitatum*.



ÞE GOSPEL ON ÞE SIXTE DAY AFTER CRISTMASSE DAL.

[SERMON XCIV.]

*Erat Joseph et Maria.*—LUC. ii. [33.]

The writer prefers expounding Holy Writ to amusing the people with stories about the Saints.

To sum men it plesij for to telle þe talis þat þei fynden in seintis lyves, or wiþouten holi writt; and sich þing plesij ofte more þe peple. But we holden þis manere good,—to leeve sich wordis and triste in God, and telle sureli his lawe, and speciali his gospelis; for we trowen þat þei camen of Crist, and so God seiþ hem alle. And þes wordis, siþ þei ben Goddis, shulden be taken as bileve; and more wolen þei quykene men þan oþer wordis þat men knowen not. And þus þes festis of þes seintis han þis good biside oþer, þat man mai wel telle in hem þe understanding of þe gospel.

Þis gospel tellij a treuþe to us, how *Joseph and Marie*, Cristis eldris, *weren woundringe of þes þingis þat weren seid þanne of Crist*; for alle þes wordis weren newe to hem, and seid of God, as we bileven. And as Austin seiþ on þe Psalm<sup>a</sup>: Trowe it not, for Y seie so; but, ȝif Crist seie so, wo is him þat trowij it not. And as we shulden have bileve þat alle Cristis wordis moten nede be trewe, so we shulden have bileve þat þis sentence was seid of Crist; which sentence is told to us bi figuris and bi mannis writing. And þis is þe leste bileve þat we shulden have in al oure feiþ. And ȝif we ben disseyved in þis, oure owne synne is in cause. We shulden not trowe in þis ynke, ne in þe skynnes þat is clepid book<sup>1</sup>, but in þe sentence þat þei seien, which sentence is þe book of liif. For, al if þer ben many treupis and dyverse resouns in þe gospel, nepeles ech of þes treupis is þe substance of God himsilf.

The prophecy of Simeon.

*Symeon* was an oold man, and *blessid Marie and Joseph*; for he bilevede þat Jesus hir sone was togidere God and man, and so he trowide þat bi him Marie and Joseph couldn<sup>2</sup> be saved.

<sup>1</sup> a boke, E.

<sup>2</sup> schulden, E.

<sup>a</sup> I have not been able to verify this reference.

Þis *Symeon seide to Marie*, þat he trowide was *Goddis modir*<sup>1</sup>: *Lo, þis child is putt here into falling down and rysyng up of many folk þat ben in Israel, and into a signe to which it shal be azenseid, of wickide men; and þi soule, which is his, shall passe swerd of compassioun.* For Marie suffride in herte wiþ Crist and hadde myche sorewe in þis world. For to sich folk wolde Crist ȝeue blisse, and þus þer blisse savouride more; for it is seid comunli þat man may not passe fro þis joie streijt unto þe joie of heven, for þanne hevenli joie savouride him not. And þus ech man of worldli lust, ȝif he shal after come to hevене, mote nedis have a litil space to purge him of his worldli lyf; and þanne shal blisse savoure him, whanne he is purgid þus fro þis world. And so Crist, wiþ his modir and alle hise apostlis, hadden here sorowe; and þus þei weren disposid here to take betere þe blisse of hevене. And it is no drede to clerkes þat ne þe spirit of oure Ladi, þe which is lyf of hir, and in which Crist was wlappid, was a spirit of Crist; as alle þingis moten nedis be hise. Lord! siþ sophistris graunten þat þis<sup>2</sup> fadir of þe<sup>3</sup> hound is myn, and ȝit he is not my fadir<sup>4</sup>, whi shulde we not graunte also þat oure Ladies soule is Cristis; and so myche more, as Cristis wille and hir wille was ever at oon? Þe eende whi oure Ladi suffride þus, was herfore ordeyned of God, for she shulde be more hooli, and more disserve to Cristene men, and beter printe Cristis dedes, and telle hem hise evaungelistis.

And þus many men tellen þis cause to dyvers ententis; þat oure Ladi shulde have sorewe, *þat þouȝtis be shewid of many hertis*. Sum men construen þis þus: þat oure Ladi, bi þis sorewe, lovede more tendirli mankynde, and made hem shewe her pryvy synnes. And so, bi þis merit of oure Ladi, þouȝtis of apostlis and oþer weren shewid of many hertis to God, bi confession; or ellis, þat þus oure Ladi þouȝte betere on dedes þat Crist dide, and shewide hem to Luke and oþer, to witnesse hem of many hertis.

<sup>1</sup> So in E; A italicizes the words *Goddis modir*.    <sup>2</sup> þe, E.    <sup>3</sup> þis, E.

<sup>4</sup> On the fallacies arising from ambiguity of the middle term, see the chapter on Fallacies in Whately's Logic, §§ 8-12, and the collection of examples in the Appendix, Part II.

The witness  
of Anna.

*And þer was an oold womman, Anna, þat was a prophete in þis tyme: she was douzter of Fanuel, of þe kynrede of Aser. Þis Anna wente wel in her daies, and she lyvede sevene 3eer wiþ hir hosebonde þat was weddid wiþ hir fro her maidenhod. And þis Anna was widewe unto foure score 3eer and foure, þat wente not out of þe temple, but servede þerinne, boþe niȝt and dai, bi fastinge and devoute preieris. And þis Anna cam þe same tyme, and made hir confession to God, and spake of Crist, as<sup>1</sup> of God and man, to alle oþer, þat camen to hir and weren in bileve, and abiden þe biȝng aȝen of mankynde. Here men douten comunli how old þis Anna was, and wheþer þes foure score 3eer and foure ben countid in hir two eeldis bifore, as in tyme of hir maidenhood, and in tyme of hir wedlok. But leve we þis witt to God, and wite we wel þat þis Anna was an old womman; and so Crist wolde have witesse of ages and statis of folk. Crist wolde have witnes of old folk, as weren Anna and Symeoun; and he hadde witesse of 3ong folk, as weren Innocentis martrid for him; and he hadde witesse of myddil folk, as weren his fadir, and modir, and herdis. But comunli Crist hadde witesse of just folk of good name.*

*And whanne þei hadden do alle þingis in þe temple, þat fel to be done bi Goddis lawe, þei turneden aȝen to Galile, to þe citee Nazareth. For, siþ Crist was circumcisid, and pore offringe was maad for him, þer was no more þere to do bi Crist, of so tendir age; but whanne he was of twelwe 3eer, he cam aȝen wiþ his eldris and enfourmede þe doctours of þe temple, as þe gospel of Luk seip. And in þe meene while, þe child wexide and was confortid, ful of witt, and þe grace of God was wiþ him.*

<sup>1</sup> So E; A reads *and*.



ÞE GOSPEL ON NEWE 3ERIS DAY.

[SERMON XCV.]

*Postquam consummati sunt.*—LUC. ii. [21.]

Þis gospel telliþ of Cristis circumcisioun, þat was done on þe eiȝtþe<sup>1</sup> daie fro þat Crist was bore. And þis religioun bigan at Abraham þe patriark; and þis religioun was done in hem longe after þer eiȝtþe daies<sup>2a</sup>. But þis was kept speciali among þe Jewis; but now we kepen it not, but þing þat it figurijþ. Þe first book of Goddis lawe telliþ of Adam and Eve, how þei lyveden nakid in tyme of þer innocence. But fro þei hadden synned, þei wisten þat þei weren nakid, and þei founden in lymes of gendrure rebelloun to resoun; and þei shameden herof, and hiliden þes lymes, for man shameþ kyndeli of workes of synne. And þus God bad Abraham to þenke on þis synne, þat men shulden kitte away þe skynne of þer 3erde; and þis kitting awei is clepid circumcisioun. Many causes þer ben whi þis prophytid to Jewis; for, bi þis þei þouȝten betere on þe synne of Adam; bi þis þei fledden more þe foule synne of lecherie. And to þis synne weren þe Jewis ful redi; and herfore swynys fleish was forfendid Jewis<sup>b</sup>. And bi þis obedience þat Jewis maden to God, weren þei knowen from oþer men, whanne þei weren slayn in bataile. Siþ Crist myȝte not synne, and algatis in lecherie, Crist was circumcidid, to fulfille þe lawe, and to telle men aftir how he clensiþ þer hertis fro synnes þat þei han done, in dede, in word, and þouȝt.

The Circumciston.

<sup>1</sup> *eyȝtþe*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *þe eyȝt dayes*, E.

<sup>a</sup> For (Gen. xvii. 10) Abraham was ninety years old, and Ishmael thirteen, when the rite was practised on them, and on all the men of the houshold.

<sup>b</sup> Nicholas de Lyra (*Biblia Sacra*, in Levit. cap. xi.) explains that the flesh of the camel, the hare, the Hyrax Syriacus, or choerogryllus,

(translated 'coney,') and the swine, was forbidden to the Jews, because by the first is mystically signified pride, by the second timidity, by the third avarice, and by the fourth filthiness,—vices which are respectively opposed to the four cardinal virtues, prudence, courage, justice, and chastity.

And þis is þe first earnest<sup>1</sup> þat Crist ʒaf for mannis kynde, and seide þat he wolde save it bi blood of þis Goddis lomb. Men seien þat Crist þries shed his blood for man: first, in circumcisioun of þis tendir membre; þe secounde tyme, longe after, whanne Crist swette his blood whanne he praiede for man, and dredde to suffre deþ; þe þridde tyme, and moost, whanne þe blood of Cristis bodi was drawyn out in many maneris bi violence of turmentouris. Þe blood in his fleish was drawyn out bi scourging; þe blood in his veynes was drawyn out bi nailis; and þe blood of his herte, where Cristis liif was tresourid, was drawyn out bi persing of spere of a knyzt. Lord! siþ Crist seiþ þat þe blood of just Abel shal be requyrid of Cayn, myche more þis blood of Crist. And siþ suffring bi charite is meritorie and helpyng, myche more þis suffringe of þe persone of Crist. And þus goostli circumcisioun was evermore nedeful; and it hadde vertue and ende in þe blood of Crist.

The name  
Jesus.

Þis gospel telliþ shortli of þis circumcisioun. Luk seiþ, *Whanne eiȝte daies weren endid, þat þe child shulde be circumcidid, his name was clepid Jesus, þat was clepid of þe aungel bifore he shulde be conceived in wombe.* It is knowun to trewe men þat Crist was þries clepid þus; oones, whanne he was circumcidid, as we clepen children whanne þei ben baptizid<sup>2</sup>; þe toþer tyme, whanne Gabriel spak wiþ oure Ladi, and telde hir how she shulden conseve Crist, and he shulde be clepid Jesus. Þe þridde tyme was Crist clepid Jesus in þe Trinite wiþinne; and þis was hiȝest cleping, and moost of vertu. For by<sup>3</sup> þe ordnance of þis oþer han þer power; and bi þis seiþ Poul, þat in þe name of Jesus ech knee is bowid, of hevene, of erþe, and helle; and ech tunge confessiþ þat oure Lord Jesus Crist is in þe glorie of God his Fadir. And so þis word Jesus, seid of trewe men, is of gret vertu aȝens þe fendis. And, as sum men speken, þis name is often teld, sum tyme privyli, and sum tyme apertli, and it was ofte figurid bifore þat Crist was bore. Jesus is as myche to seie as Savyour. And so Joseph in Egipt was figure of oure Jesus. Josue, þat ledde Goddis folk, and

Phil. ii. 10

<sup>1</sup> *ernes, E.*

<sup>2</sup> *baptymed.*

<sup>3</sup> *So E; bifore, A.*



partide þe lond of biheste, figuride oure Jesus bi many pro-  
pirtees; and so dide Jesus Sidrakis sone; and Jesus Nanes<sup>1</sup>  
sone<sup>a</sup>.

And, as men seien, in þis word 'Unneþe shal þe just man  
be saved,' is menyd þis word Jesus, whoso coude undirstonde  
it. For in þis word Vix ben but þree lettris, V, and I, and X.  
And V bitokeneþ fyve; I bitokeneþ Jesus; and X bitokeneþ  
Crist. And so þis resoun seiþ þat þe just man shal be saved  
bi þe V woundis of Jesus Crist oure Lord.

Mystical mean-  
ing of the  
word VIX.

ÞE GOSPEL ON TWELFÞE EVVN.

[SERMON XCVI.]

*Defuncto Herode.*—MATT. ii. [19.]

ÞIS gospel telliþ how Crist cam from Egipt. For in tyme  
þat Crist was þere, þat is not made to us to knowe, was þe first  
Heroude deed, þat slouþ þe children for Cristis sake. For in  
meke abiding sendiþ God remedy; and þus seiþ þe gospel þat,  
*Whanne Heroude was deed, lo, þe aungel of oure Lord apperide  
to Joseph in sleep, and bad him ryse, and take þe child and his  
modir, and go into þe lond of Israel, for þei ben dede þat souzten  
þe childis liif.* It is seid bifore, þat God is good maistir, þat  
sendiþ siche messangers to confort his disciplis, and telliþ but  
litol at oones, þat þei shulden not forþete; but evere as þei han  
nede, þei shulden ben newe confortid. God woot al þing bifore  
þat it be done; and so he ordeynede his angel to come to  
Joseph in Egipt anoon, whanne Eroude was deed, to telle him  
þes tipingis. And so Joseph dide noþt but þat þat God tolde  
him. And 3if Eve hadde do so, she hadde venquishid þe  
fend, and not hadde daliance wiþ him til þat she hadde ben  
disseyved.

The Return  
from Egypt.

And wite we wel, þat not oonli Heroude souzte þe liif of  
Jesus, but many of his servauntis for love of him. And þus

<sup>1</sup> *mannes*, E.

<sup>a</sup> That is, Joshua the son of Nun.

lordis seien, we wolen þat it be so. Two maneres of sekyng þer ben of men: sum men seken men to do hem good and worship; and þus þre kingis souzten oure Lord Jesus; and sum men seken a man to do him harm and dispit; and þus Heroude and his servantis souzten Jesus Crist; and þei wolden have kilid Crist. And þus þei souzten Cristis liif; for his spirit þei myzten not dere; and his bodi þei tolden litil bi, but þei wolden not þat his spirit hadde quiked his bodi.

*And Joseph roos and took þe child and his modir also, and cam in to þe lond of Israel; but warli, as þe aungel tauzte him. And, whanne Joseph herde þat Archelaus, Heroudis sone, rengnede in Judee for his fadir, he dredde for him to go þidir. And Joseph was amoneschid in sleep bi angel how he shulde go; and wente into Galile. And Joseph cam and dwelle in a citee of þat contre, þat was clepid Nazareth; for to fulfille þe prophecie þat Jesus shulde be clepid of Nazareth. And so he was; for Pilat wroot upon his cros þis writing, as þe gospel telliþ; Jesus of Nazareth, King of Jewes. And so, as Luk telliþ, oure Ladi was grett in þe citee of Nazareth, and þer she concevede Crist; and þus bi many resons was Crist clepid of Nazareth.*

Christ is still,  
and ever will  
be, persecuted  
in his membres  
here on earth.

Beside lettre of þis gospel, mai men meeve<sup>1</sup> doutis of scole; but me þinkþ now, it is bettre to touche lore of vertues. We shal bileve þat al þe gospel, be it nevir so literal, techiþ what þing shal bifalle, and how þat men shal lyve. And so, as Crist in his 3oungþe was pursued by many men to dispise him and slee him in his owne persone; so, unto þe dai of dome is he pursued in his membres, and algatis in Goddis cause, bi resoun of Goddis lawe. We shulden not presume, but hope, þat we ben membris of Crist; but wel we witen, 3if men haten us and pursuen us for Cristis cause, þanne þei pursuen Crist in his membris, and haten þe cause of Crist. For betere cause myzte not Crist have þan defending of his lawe; for þis cause made Crist be deed many weies bifore oþer; and Crist, for þe beste cause, suffride here martirdome. Studie wel Goddis lawe, and þe treuþe þat sueþ ofit, and defende it booldli,—þoþe to preestis and to þe world,—and þou shalt have enemyes to

<sup>1</sup> move, E.

pursue þee to þe deþ. And as Crist was pursued boþe of preestis and knyztis, so þou shalt be pursued of þes twoo bi diverse resouns. Sum tyme knyztis ben chevetaynes, as it fel of þe eemperours, and sum tyme preestis ben maistris, as it was in Cristis tyme. And so it mai falle now, boþe of popis and bishopis. For 3if men þenken Goddis lawe sharp<sup>1</sup>, and to lette avauntage of þis world, men of þis world, bi þe fend, wolen haten hem þat puplisshen it. And so slouþe and cowardise ben cause of þis fals pees; and so wanting of þis pees is signe to many þat God loveþ hem. Ech word of þis gospel mai be told to þis entent; but it suffisþ to have þe roote, and go lýtli to oþer wittis. And muse we not how þis kingdom cam from Archilaus to Heroude; for if it hadde be profitable, God wolde have tolde it in his lawe. And so many treuþis profiten more while þei ben unknowen to men þan þei shulden profite knowyn; as Goddis lawe techþ us.

ÞE GOSPEL ON TWELFÞE DAL.

[SERMON XCVII.]

*Cum natus esset Jesus.*—MATT. ii. [1.]

Þis gospel tellþ, how þre kyngis camen afer out of þe eest to do worship to Jesus Crist, as þei weren tauzt bi Goddis lawe. And þus seiþ Mathew in þis gospel, þat *whanne Jesus was born in Bedeleem of þe lond of Judee*, for diversite of anoþer Bedeleem, *in þe daies of Heroude þe Kyng*. (And þis was þe first Heroude, more þan þe two after, and he was kyng of Judee bi þe eemperour of Rome; and he hadde it in pees, þat tyme þat Crist was bore. And þus seiþ þe testament of Jacob, whanne he tolde of Judas his sone: 'Þer shal not be taken aweie þe ceptre<sup>2</sup> fro Judas kynde, ne a duke þat shal come of him, til þat Crist come, þat is to be sent<sup>3</sup>; and he shal be abiding of heþene men,' þat he shal turne. And þus it bifel

The Epiphany.

Gen. xlix. 10.

<sup>1</sup> to *scharp*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *septre*, E.

<sup>3</sup> So E; *seint*, A.

Num. xxiv. 17.

of Heroude, for þe tyme þat Crist was bore; for þanne regalie of þe Jewis was taken aweie, and ȝovun to Heroude.) And þes þre kingis weren wise men, and lyveden in worship after þer astat, and tauzten her peple Goddis lawe and resoun, as þei hadden be þree men of hevene. And fro þe tyme of Balam, þat was profete of Moab, þer weren kingis in þat contre to asprie his prophecie. For he seide þat a sterre shulde springe of þe kynde of Jacob, and Gentil folk shulde loute þat child þat shulde be bore in tyme of þis sterre. And so, whanne þis sterre apperide on Cristemasse niȝt, or bifore, þes þree kingis ordeyneden hem to come and worshiþe þis child. And so þei camen upon dromedis wiþinne þe þrittenþe daie; for her weie was ordeyned redi, wiþouten letting, how þei shulden come. And, for þei wisten þat þe Child was greet, þei camen to Jerusalem, þat was þe heed citee of þe contre, and hopiden þat Crist was bore þere. And þere þei<sup>1</sup> axiden opinli, *Where is he þat is bore Kyng of Jewes*, as Balaim tolde in his prophecie, *for we sawen þe sterre of him in þe eest, þat hap led us, and we ben comen wiþ ȝiftes to loute him*, as we shulden. And whanne Heroude herde þes wordis, he was disturblið, bi many causis, and al þe citee of Jerusalem was disturblið wiþ him. He pouzte þat so grete men wolden not come so fer þidir, but ȝif þei hadden wist bi certeyn tokenes þat a kyng of Jewes were bore; and þis kyng shulde reve him þe kyngdome þat he hadde. Men seien þat þis sterre was sich þat it was bineþe þe moone in þe overmeste<sup>2</sup> part of þe eir, and movede as God wolde þat it movede. And so þes þree kingis weren meved bi liȝt and leding of þis sterre; and so þei myzten in litil tyme come to Jerusalem.

The worship of the Magi.

*And Heroude gedride alle princis of preestis þat weren in Jerusalem, and alle þe scribis of þe peple, to wite where Crist shulde be bore. And þei seiden to him, þat he shulde be bore, In Beedleem of Judee; for so was it writun bi þe prophete, þat seide þus, of þis toun:—And þou, Bedeleem, in þe lond of Juda, art not lest among þe princis of Juda; for of þee shal come out a duk þat shal reule my folk of Israel. Þanne Heroude made*

<sup>1</sup> So E; not italicized in A.<sup>2</sup> overmoste, E.

*privyly clepe þese þree kingis, and lernede of hem þe tyme of þis sterre þat apperide to hem, and sente hem into Bedelem, and seide to hem, (but falseli):—Go ȝe, and axe bisili of þis child, þat is bore; and whanne ȝe hæw foundun him, telle ȝe me aȝen, þat Y come and loue him. And whanne þei herden þe king þus speke, þei wenten out of Jerusaleem; and lo, þe sterre þat þei sawen in þe eest meevede bifore hem til þat place þat it stood, evene above where þe child Jesus was. And whanne þes kingis sawen þis sterre, þei hadden myche joie wiþal. And þei entriden in to þe hous, and foundun þe child, wiþ Marie his modir; and þei fel down bifore þe child, and loutiden him, devouteli. And þei openeden þer tresouris, and offriden to him þree ziftis, gold and mirre and encense;— as þei weren tauȝte to trowe of Crist þat he was boþe king and preest, and shulde die for mankynde. And þei token answeere in þer sleep, þat þei shulden not turne aȝen to Heroude; and so bi anoþer weie þei turneden aȝen to þer lond.*

Bi þis gospel mai we lerne, how Crist coveitide honest poverte; for he was not bore in þe kingis citee, but in pore uplondish toun,—not in þe beste place of þe toun, but in a pore comune stable. And þes kyngis weren enfourmed bi tymes what alle þes þingis menten. And so we singen in þe chirche, þat þes þree ziftis of þe kingis weren ȝovun of ech of hem, and bi certeyn causis ordeyned of God. Bi þe gold þei miȝten bie þingis þat was nedeful for Crist, and bi þe mirre þei myȝten strengþe þe membris of Crist, and bi þe encence þei myȝten putte away þe stynke of þe stable. And Crist ordeynede bi his lawe, þat he shulde not þus begge, but lyve in an honest poverte lik to þe state of innocence. And þat þe þre kingis camen so fer to bringe þes goodis unto Crist, bitokeneþ Cristis lordship þat he hadde wiþ his povert. But me þinkij þat þe witt is betere þat þe Chirche singij of þis; gold is Cristis regalie, in encence his presthode, and in myrre his sepulcre<sup>a</sup>. And þus alle men shulden worshiþe hem. Seculer lordis shulden worshiþe Crist, and þat þis gold shulde teche hem; preestis also

Lessons taught by this gospel.

<sup>a</sup> The writer no doubt refers to the following passage in the Sequence used on the festival of the Epiphany (Sarum Missal):—

Hinc Magi munera deferunt praeclara,  
Aurum, simul thus cum myrrha;  
Thure deum praedicant, auro regem magnam,  
Hominem mortalem myrrha.

shulden worshipe Crist, bi þe lore of þis encence; and alle comunes shulden worshipe Crist, for we ben alle dedli, and in tyme of oure deþ and aftirward we haue noon helpe but him. And þis shulden we do in liȝt; for we shulden worche discretli. And, as Gregory techiþ<sup>a</sup>, we shulden wenden fro þe fend al bi anoþer weie þan we camen into þis world. For bi synne we camen hidir, and contynned here in synne; but we shal wende fro þe fend unto oure countre, þat is hevene, bi þe weie of vertuous<sup>1</sup> liif, and þanne we suen þes þree kingis.

ÞE GOSPEL ON CONVERSIOUN DAI OF SEINT POUL.

[SERMON XCVIII.]

*Ecce reliquimus<sup>2</sup> omnia.*—MATT. XIX. [27.]

Þis gospel telliþ of þe meede þat Crist bihiȝte to his knyztis. Petre was of greet bileve, and hardi in axing, and axiþ þus Crist:—*Lo, we hav forsaken alle þingis, and we hav sued þee; what mede shal be to us for þis suyng?* Here men douten comunli, how Petre seide soþ; siþ men forsaken not but þing þat þei have hadde, and Petre was a fishere, and hadde but litil þing. Also þer ben many þingis þat Petre þouȝte nevere on; but how shulde he forsake þing þat nevere cam in his þouȝt? Also, Petre forsoke nevere þe Holi Trinite, ne þe manheede of Crist, þat ben many þingis. How approveþ Crist þes false wordis of Petre? Here it semeþ to many men þat Petre undirstood þus,—þat þei forsoken alle þingis<sup>3</sup>,—for alle þes worldli goodis; siþ þei helden þer bisynesse and þer wille fro þes goodis. And þis witt mente Crist, in his speche

<sup>1</sup> So in E; A has *vertues*.    <sup>2</sup> So in E; A has *relinquimus*.    <sup>3</sup> The words *þat—þingis* are om. in E.

<sup>a</sup> St. Gregory, *Homil. X.* 'A regione nostra superbiendo, inobediendo, visibilia sequendo, cibum vetitum gustando, discessimus: sed ad eam necesse est, ut flendo, obediendo, visibilia contemnendo, atque

appetitum carnis refrenando, redeamus. Per aliam ergo viam ad regionem nostram regredimur; quoniam qui a paradisi gaudiis per dilectamenta discessimus, ad hæc per lamenta revocamur.'

aftr to Petre. And þus biddiþ Crist bi Luk and Joon to forsake and hate seven goodis. And þes wordis mai serve wel to þis undirstonding; and þis witt was soþ of Petre and oþer apostlis; siþ a manere of forsakyng is to leewe wille to siche goodis, and þei hadden not suyd Crist þus, but zif þei hadden left sich will. And it is lizt to assoile objectis azens þis<sup>a</sup>. To þe firste we seien, þat Peter, bifore he suyd Crist, hadde in his affeccioun al manere of sich þing; and þis desire he lefte, and so alle siche þingis. To þe secounde word we seien, þat þer ben many þouztis and many desiris to þingis, as special or general. Petre hadde general desire to al manere of siche þingis, and general forsakyng axiþ sum mede. And clerkis seien, þat special mai not be wiþouten general, and þis forsaking makij hem to have þes þingis þe which þei forsoken,—zhe, betere þan þei hadden bifore; as, zif a man forsake for Crist his fadir and modir, he haþ hem þanne betere þan whanne he lovede hem fleishli.

Difficulties  
solved.

The þridde obiect þat here is maad goiþ not azens oure sentence. For ech man mai wel wite þat Petre þouzte not to leve Crist, siþ Petre seiþ, next aftr, þat þei suen Crist; and þat is verri tokene þat þei forsaken not þus Crist, siþ þei forsaken al manere of erþeli þingis for Crist; and þis axiþ grete mede, siþ it is myche, and wilful; and mede bihizt to travailours makij hem traveile betere. Oþer chartris he nedij not but þe word of Crist; for wordis of þe firste treuþe passen alle oþer chartris.

*Jesus seide to hem, to whom he spak þes wordis: Sopeli I seie to zou, þat ze þat þus hav suyd me, in þe laste making of men<sup>1</sup>, whanne mannis sone shal sitte in sete of his majeste, ze shal sitte in twelve setes and juge twelve kynredis of Israel.* Here shal we wite þat Crist spak not oonli to þes twelve, but generali to oþer seintis þat passingli suen Crist; for zif Crist bihizte þis to Scarioth, and lefte to zeve þis mede to Poul, what truþe were in Cristis wordis, or what mede to oþer men? It semeþ þat Crist undirstondiþ his sitting at þe dai of dome; for þis seete of juging is propre to him, boþe God and man; and þerfore it is

Final reward  
for such  
leaving.

<sup>1</sup> So E; A excludes *making of men* from the italics.

<sup>a</sup> It is easy to solve the objections raised against this text.

wel clepid, a seete of his majeste. Þis noumbre of twelve is noumbre of alle passinge seintis, þat nyȝ suen Crist in staat of apostlis, and algatis forsoken<sup>1</sup> þe world for the love of Crist. Þe noumbre of þes seintis shal be partid in twelve, and juge alle lesse seintis, which ben also partid in twelve. And alle þes ben Jacobis sones, and seen all clereli God. And þus seien men comunli þat þre manere of men shal come to Cristis jugement. Sum, passinge seintis þat sueden nyȝ Crist, as patriarkis, and Baptist, and oþer Cristis disciplis. And þes, for þei weren liȝt and ensample to oþer, shal juge oþer þat sueden hem to þer boþe<sup>2</sup> worship. And þis jugement shal not be but þis witnessinge of treuþe. Þe secounde part þat shal come to Cristis laste jugement shal be seintis þat shal sue þes grete seintis. And it is no contrariouste<sup>3</sup> þat þes same seintis ben of þes boþe partis, bi dyverse resouns. Þe more part of men, in þe laste jugement, shal be men þat shal be dampned, and þis is a greet part. Of þes men seiþ þe Psalm, þat þei risen not up in jugement; þei shal be jugid of God, and of alle hise seintis, for to go to helle for her wickid liif. And þis mede, bihiȝt of Crist, passiþ alle þes worldli goodis. Blessid be þis duke of bataile, þat þus rewardiþ his knyȝtis; for þis is more comfortable, and betere bi a þousand part, þan wages ȝouun in erþeli batailis of knyȝtis or of clerkis. Lord! siþ þis suyng for<sup>4</sup> Crist is forsaking of worldli goodis, and profiting in poverte after þat Crist lyvede, how myche shulden we preestis drede þat we failen in þis!

Ps. i. 5

And for þis myddil part þat shal come to þe jugement, bihotiþ Crist, þat *ech þat forsakiþ for him* ony of þes eiȝte þingis<sup>5</sup>, *shal have an hundred fold here in þis lyf, and, after, pesible possessioun of þe liif of blisse*. Scorne we þes foolis þat seien, bi þes Cristis wordis, þat ech seint shal have here a hundrid wyves at þe laste, and so of oþer sevene þingis þat þe gospel rehersiþ. Here mark we alle þes eiȝte, which ben *hous and breþeren, sistren, and fadir, and modir, wif or children, or feldis, wiþ oþer rentis*. And marke we þe fruyt þat man haþ of worldli havyng of þes eiȝte, and, on þe oþer side, havyng þat just men have here; and

<sup>1</sup> forsaken, E.      <sup>2</sup> broþeres. E.      <sup>3</sup> contrarioste, E.      <sup>4</sup> of, E.  
<sup>5</sup> So E; om. A.



we shal wel undirstonde þat þis secounde havynge passij an hundrid fold þe first in fruyt and profit. And here we taken two þingis as Cristyn mennys bileve :—oon, þat sich men han al manere of þingis ; anoþer, þat sich goostli havynge passij worldli havynge. And þanne mai we telle scornge by sich asse argumentis :—ʒif a man shal have here an hundred fold so good þing as is þis wif, þanne he shal have an hundrid wyves ! Kepe we wordis of þe gospel, and witt of it þerwiþ, and alle þe fendis or false men mai not disprove a word þerof.

ÞE GOSPEL ON CANDILMASSE DAI.

[SERMON XCIX.]

*Postquam impleti sunt dies.*—LUC. ii. [22.]

It is seid comunli, þat oure Ladi haþ fyve festis : Concep-  
cioun, Nativite, Annunciacioun, Purificacioun ; þe fiste is As-  
sumpcioun, whanne oure Ladi was deed. Þe ferþe of þes  
festis is seid in þis gospel, and is clepid comunli þe feste of  
Candilmasse ; for Jewis hadden a lawe,—and we kepen ʒit  
sumwhat þerof in purifynge of wymmen,—þat a womman, after  
þat she was deliverid of a knave child, shulde, in sixe wokes  
after, come to þe temple and be purified þere, after þat þe  
law lymytide. And al ʒif oure Ladi nedede not to be þus  
purified, ʒit, bi conseil of God, she fulfillide þus þe lawe.  
For her sone seiþ after, I cam not to undo þe lawe, but to  
fulfille it ; and so he made his modir do. And so tellij  
Luke, þat, *fro þe daies weren fulfillid of purifying of Marie,*  
*after þe lawe of Moises, þei brouzten Jesus in to Jerusalem to*  
*sette him bifore God.* For al ʒif God be everywhere, ʒit we  
seien he is in chirchis on a special manere, as he is in juste  
souls. *And so þei offriden Crist to God ; as þe law axide þat*  
*every male þat openeþ wommans bodi to his issue shal be halewid*  
*to þe Lord ; and offride for him a certeyn þing,—as a peire of*  
*turturis or two briddis of dowves.* For riche folk shulden offre  
for purifying of wymmen a ʒong lomb of o ʒeer, as Goddis

The Purifica-  
tion.

lawe tellip; and it sufficde to pore folk to offre a peire of turturis, or two dowve briddis, for þe child þat was born. And so we mai not denye þat ne Crist and his eldris weren pore folk, for þei chosen þe secounde.

*And þer was a man in Jerusalem þat was clepid Symeon; and þis was a just man, and hadde drede of Goddis lawe. And þis man abood conforting of Israel; and þe Holi Goost was in þis Symeon. And þis man hadde answeere of þe Holi Goost þat he shulde not se dep, but ȝif he saw first Crist. And he cam into þe temple bi leding of þe Holi Goost. And whanne þei brouȝten þe child Jesus, his eldris, into þe temple, þat þei shulden do after þe custom of þe<sup>1</sup> lawe for him, Symeon toke him in his armes, and blessid God, and seide: Now, Lord, þou levest þi servaunt after þi word in pees, for myn ȝen han seen Crist, þat is helpe to þe world. And he is þi owne Sone, þe same God þat þou art. And his helpe þou hast ordeyned bifore þe face of al manere peple, to be liȝt to shewing of folk, and glorie to þi folk of Israel.*

To þis feeste of oure Ladi answerip þe fourþe vertue, þat is, hope of hevenli blisse. And it was fulli in hir; for, as bileve lastide in hir whanne it failide in apostlis, so she hopide ever more þat she shulde come to blisse of hevene. For siþ she trowide þat hir Sone shulde rise fro deep to lyve, and how and whanne he shulde rise, as God himsilf hadde tauȝt hir, how myȝte þis Ladi myshope þat ne she shulde come to hevene? In þis we shulden sue þis Ladi, and þenke ever on hevenli blisse, and traveile þefore, niȝt and dai, in hope for to gete þis blisse; and what woo þat we have here, take it in ful pacience, for þe joie þat we hopen to gete in þe blisse of hevene. Lord! siþ a tiliyng man hopip ofte to have his fruyt, how moche more shulden we have hope to come to blisse of hevene. And þis hope is of þis kynde, þat it mote be contynuel, and ever more meritorie, to large a mannis blisse in heven. It makip a man mery and glad, and suffre al þat fallip to him; for it is groundid in riȝt bileue þat God doip al for þe beste. No man failip þis hope<sup>2</sup> but if he synne on oþer syde; and algatis but if he forȝete to þenke on hevenli blisse. Men

Simeon prophesies.

Lesson of the gospel,—that we should hope for heavenly bliss.

<sup>1</sup> So E; om. A.

<sup>2</sup> in þis hope, E.

þat ben stoppid wiþ worldli þouȝtis, or wiþ lustis of her fleishe, failen to plesen þis Ladi here, and folwe her in þer þouȝt; and þus þei maken not þe<sup>1</sup> Lord myche, ne hir spirit is glad in God. But þus dide oure Ladi Marie, as þe gospel telliþ of hir. And þus fewe men in þis liif wanten ernes of dispeire; for þei þat ben depid in synne, and þenken not but on þes worldli goodis, wanten hope of hevenli blisse, and þus þei growen in dispeire. And on þis shulden we prestis þenken; and algatis prestis of þe world, þat suen not Crist in poverte, but þenken how þei mai be riche here. And þis synne is more in coventis þat ben groundid in her goodis, and ever ben depid in þer synne for defaute of riȝt hope.

ÞE GOSPEL ON ÞE CHAIRINGE OF SEINT PETRE.

[SERMON C.]

*Venit Jesus in partes Cesarie*<sup>2</sup>.—MATT. xvi. [13.]

Þis gospel telliþ how Petre apostle passide in bileve oþer apostlis, for he was more sad and hardi to trowe of Crist þat he shulde. Matheu telliþ þat *Jesus cam into þe contre* þat siche a cite was inne sett<sup>3</sup> þat was clepid *Cesarie of Filip*<sup>4</sup>. And of two men it hadde þe name. Þis citee hadde þree names; first, it was clepid Lachis; and siþ it was clepid Dan, after þe kinrede of Dan; and after of Philip, Heroudis broþir, þat hadde þe fourþe part of þis rewme, it was clepid Cesarie of Philip, in worship of þe emperour and him<sup>a</sup>. And þis citee was divers

The faith of Peter.

<sup>1</sup> þis, E.

<sup>2</sup> *Cesaree*, E.

<sup>3</sup> *sett synne*, E.

<sup>4</sup> *Philip*, E.

<sup>a</sup> If the writer had consulted St. Jerome, he would have found (see Smith's *Bible Dict.*) that Dan and Cesarea-Philippi were two different places, standing about four miles apart, at two different sources of the Jordan. But perhaps his authority was F. Brocardus of Strasburg, a Dominican friar who visited the

Holy Land in 1283, and whose description of his journey is given in Canisius's *Theaurus*, vol. iv. Brocardus similarly confounds the position of Dan or Laish (he calls it Lesem), with that of Paneas or Cesarea-Philippi, to which he gives the additional appellation of Balenas.

fro Cesarie of Palestine, in which dwelte Centurio<sup>a</sup>. But alle þes weren worldli names; and þes men, to gete þer name lastinge here, but not in hevене, lesten sich dedis here in erþe, over þe state of innocence. And þus done þes newe ordris, in cloistris and in oper housis, and þenken to myche on hir liif here, and to litil on hevenli liif. We shulden þenken on goode workes, to make men to forsake þis world, and þenken on Crist and on his liif; for sich þouztis wolen lasten wiþ us.

The people's  
opinion of  
Christ.

And þus *axide* Crist here, for greet witt þat was in him, among *his disciplis, who he was*, bi his manhede. For it is seid ofte tymes, þat on foure maneris is man brouzt forþ. Þe fourþe manere, and propre to Crist, is, þat he cam of a virgine oonli. And so to make mede in apostlis, and to teche þe Chirche after, Crist brouzte in þis questioun, *and axide what men seide of him*. As men hadden dyverse opynyons of Baptist, what he was,—sum men seiden þat he was Heli, and sum men þat he was Christ, and sum men þat he was anoþer prophete, as techiþ Joones gospel,—so weren many opynyons of Crist. And herfore seiden Cristis apostlis bi oon witt, how dyverse men hadden here dyverse opynyons. For *sum men* seiden þat he was *Baptist*; as Heroude, and men of his opynyon, seiden þat Joon was risen to liif, and he hadde vertue to do miraclis, as þe dedis of Crist shewiden. *Oper* men seiden of Crist þat he was old *Heli*, þe prophete; for Heli was taken up in a chare of fire, and aftir he apperide no more. Þe *þridde* men seiden, bi Cristis workis, þat he was *Jeremye* þe prophete, *or anoþer grete prophete*. Somme seiden oon and sum anoþer. *But Crist axide his disciplis*<sup>1</sup>, *whom þei seiden him to be*. But *Peter answeride* gloriously, as a trewe man, for alle þe apostlis, *and seide* on þis maner, *þou art Crist, Sone of God lyvyng*. Bi þat þat Petre clepid him Crist, he knowelichide þat he was þe greet prophete, þe which was bihiȝt bi Moises to þe folk in þe oold lawe. And so Petre knowelichide þe manheed of Crist. In þat þat Petre seide after, þat Crist was þe Sone of God lyvyng, he knowelichide Cristis Godhede fro þes fals Goddis. Imagis and

Peter's con-  
fession.

<sup>1</sup> *apostlis, E.*

<sup>a</sup> The writer seems to have mistaken the 'Centurio' of the Vulgate (Acts x. 1) for one of the names of Cornelius.

mawmetis ben falseli clepid Goddis, but þer is but oo lyvyng God, as þer is but oon þis Goddis Sone oonli.

*And Crist answeringe seide unto Petre, Blessid art þou, Symount Barjona, for fleish and blood tolde þee not þis, but my Fadur þat is in hevene.* Here we trowen, bi Cristis wordis, þat Petre moot needis be blessid; and so he hadde bileve wiþ charite ordeyned to blisse. And so, as Petre moste nedis synne, but he myzte not synne deedli, so þe boot<sup>1</sup> of Petre, þat is holi Chirche, mote nedis suffre tribulacioun, but it mai not perishe. Petre is now clepid Symount, bi his propre name, and now clepid Barjona, or sone of Johanna, and now clepid Petre, as Crist clepid him here.

Christ's promises to Peter.

*And þus Crist seip to him here, þat he is Petre, and upon þis stoone shal he grounden his Chirche.* Þis corner stoone is Crist, of whom Petre haþ þis name; and on þis same stoone is hooli Chirche grounded. And þus Petre and ech man signifieþ þis stoon. And aftirward Crist telliþ þe strengþe of þe Chirche, and bihetiþ first to it, *þat þe zatis of helle shal not have myzt azens it.* Cristis Chirche mai here be troublid bi þe fendis lymes, and þes lymes mai be clepid zatis of helle. For bi þes many fendis comen in and out, and þei ben zatis to many men to entre in to þe weie of helle. Þese zatis mai kille þe membris of Crist, but þei mai not harme hem, for Crist kepith her soule, and victorie of it is betere þan bodili deþ. And þes zatis in þis turmenting doen harm to hem silf, and profit to Cristis Chirche which þei weenen to distrye.

Þe secounde pryvylege of Petre stondiþ in þis; *þat Crist shal zeeve him þe keies of þe rewme of hevene.* Þes two keies ben sopli seid witt and power, to teche men þe weie to hevene, and to opene hem þe zatis. And þes keies hadde Petre wiþ many oþer seintis, for alle men þat comen to hevene have þes keies of God. And so we shal not undirstonde þat þes ben keies of metal, þat oonli Petre beriþ, to opene hevene zatis to men; but þei ben lore and power, þat men have goostli of God. And so þis laste word seid is nede to be undirstonden wel, þat, *What kyn þing þat Petre bindiþ upon erþe shal be bounden in hevene,*

<sup>1</sup> buot, E.

*and what kyn þing he unbindiþ upon erþe shal be unbounden in hevene.* And þes wordis weren not oonli seid unto Petre, but comunli to þe apostlis, as þe gospel telliþ after, and, in persones of þe apostlis weren þei seid to prestis, and, as many men þenken, to alle Cristen men. For, if man have mercy on his soule, and unbinde it, or binde it, God bi his jugement in hevene jugiþ þe soule sich. For ech man þat shal be dampned is dampned for his owne gilt, and ech man þat shal be saved is saved bi his owne merit. And þus men seien comunli, þat wordis of Crist ben undirstonden, whanne þes keies erren not fro þe keies above. And so it were nede here to wite what is holi Chirche, and what ben þe keies of hevene, or whanne prestis bynden or unbynden. In þis þrefold disseit ben many men blindid; for as bi þe firste leesyng was mankynde lost, so bi þis secunde lesyng is þe Chirche disseyved. Þe first lesyng was of þe fend, whanne he reverside God, and seide to Adam and Eve þat þei shulden not die. Þe secunde lesyng is of þe fend, and of<sup>1</sup> Anticrist his viker; þe which lesyng is poudrid wiþ ypocrisie. He seiþ þat he is next Crist bi manere of lyvyng, and sō whatever he seiþ mote nede be soþ; and bi þis foule heresie is þe Chirche disseyved.

ÞE GOSPEL ON SEINT MATHIES DAL.

[S E R M O N C I.]

*Confiteor tibi, Pater, Domine.*—MATT. xi. [25.]

ÞIS gospel telliþ how Crist answeride to feyned wordis of þe peple, and telde many hie treuþis to lore of his Chirche. And þes treuþis ben pertinent to chesyng of Mathi<sup>2</sup>, for þis feste telliþ how Mathi was chosen in þe stede of Scarioth, aftir þat he hadde hanged himsilf. And so telliþ Matheu, how Jesus in þat tyme answeride to þe peple, and seide on þis manere:—*I confesse to þee, Fadir, Lord of hevene and of erþe, þat hiddist*

God's wisdom  
given to the  
meek.

<sup>1</sup> So E; om. A.

<sup>2</sup> *Matby, E.*

*þes treuþis fro worldli wise men and ware, and shewidest hem to meke men,* and dispisid of þe world. And þe laste<sup>1</sup> cause herof is told þus of Crist: *3he, Fadir, þou didist þus, for þus it was liking to þee.* We shal undirstonde here, þat not ech confessioun is rounyng in an eere of a mannis owne synne, but graunting of treuþe wiþ graunting of God. And þus spekij Crist, þat is of more auctorite þan alle þes popis þat ordeyneden confessioun of rounyng. And here mai we see how God is Cristis Fadir wiþouten ende, wiþinne, bifore þat he be Lord; but he is ever Lord of þis brode world; and þis world is understonden bi hevene and bi erþe. Þis treuþe þat Crist confessij, falling to þe apostlis, stondij in þis word; þat þei cowden many trewþis þat weren hid to olde<sup>2</sup> wise men and war of þe world, as weren Scribis and Fariseis, and oþer worldli men. And cause of þis dede of God is open to trewe men; for God wole shewe to men how al wisdom is of him, and he wole 3eve it freeli to meke men þat he loveþ. So þat nouȝt likij to God but for certein enchesoun.

And þus, for Mathi was meke, God chees him apostle. For it is not leweful, for vertue of bileve, to denye þat God wrouȝte in castinge of þes lottis, and in alle dedis of þes apostlis, þe whiche chosen Mathi. And, as it is seid bifore<sup>a</sup>, þis chesing were ȝit betere, for mannis affeccion is falsly varyed, and speciali whanne worldli wynnyng is knyttid to þe chesing. And ȝit men trowen þis heresie as if it were bileve, þat ȝif ony be chosen bi mannis lawe þanne he is treuli chosen. And ȝit boþe þe cheseris, and he þat is chosen, in þis displesen to God. And praktik of þis heresie doij myche harm in chesing, as we mai see at eye in chesing of þes popis. Lyve þe cheseris a meke liif, and leewe þei to chese a worldli state, and kepe þei þe fourme of þis chesing, and þei shal chese wel. For, no drede, sich disturblyng cam never of chesing of þes popes, ȝif þei weren pore and meke, and lyveden as þe apostlis.

And, for disciplis of Crist shulden trowe to his speche, he tellij what fallij to him bi vertue of his Godhede. Crist seij<sup>3</sup>,

<sup>1</sup> So in E; *lest*, A.

<sup>2</sup> So E; A has *boldun*.

<sup>3</sup> So in E;

A gives the words 'Crist seij' as part of the quotation.

<sup>a</sup> See p. 304.

Mathias chosen  
an apostle for  
his meekness.

All things de-  
livered to  
Christ.

*þat alle þingis ben ʒouun him of his Fadir, and no man knewe fulli Goddis Sone but his owne Fadir, and no man knewe þis Fadir but his Sone, and opere men to whom he wolde shewe.* Þe firste of þes þree wordis techiþ þat Crist is God, for ellis þe Fadir myzte not ʒeve him alle þingis. For ʒif we undirstonden bi alle þingis, alle creaturis, ʒit þe Sone is bifore þat he have alle creaturis; and in þat beyng bifore he mote nede be God. And ʒif we undirstonden al þing wiþinne in God, þat Crist haþ al þis þing ʒouun of his Fadir, ʒit Crist moot nedis be God, ʒif þis gifte be trewe; for þanne Crist haþ þe Holi Goost, and propirtees of þre persones, and þe Fadir of hevene in a manere, þe which mai oonli acorde to God. And so, for þe first word is soþ, Crist mot nedis be God. And of þis wole it sue þat Crist is almyzty, all witti, and al wilful, as þe Trinite is; for Crist is þe same God þe which is þe Trinite. Of þis wole sue þe toþer word after, þat no resonable þing knowiþ þe Sone at þe fulle but þe Fadir of hevene; for þei ben algatis evene. And after þis speche of þe Trinite, þe whiche is even in himsilf, shulde Crist speke of þis cunnyng, þe which is þe most þat mai be. Þe þridde word sueþ of þes: þat no man knowiþ þe Fadir but þe Sone, and þes men to which þis sone wole shewe þis knowing. Þe peple myzte se at iʒe how þat Crist was verri man. And so Crist comeþ doun to mannis speche of knowing. Þe Sone, bi his Godhede, knowiþ evenli þe Fadir; and, bi þat þat he is man, he knowiþ as myche as man may knowe; and so his knowing moot be comuned to men after þat þei ben able. Þe Holi Goost is þe same kynde þat is þe Fadir and þe Sone, and þerfore Crist, supposing þis, leeveþ to speke of þis Goost.

And of þis may men gadere how men shulde trowe here Cristis wordis, siþ he is God þat mai not lye, ne faile to man in his lore. And, for Crist is boþe God and man, and haþ breþeren of his lesse kynde, þerfore he turneþ him to his breþeren and confortiþ hem in þer travaile. *Come ʒe alle to me, seiþ Crist, þat travailen and ben chargid, and Y shall refete<sup>1</sup> ʒou. Take ʒe my ʒok upon ʒou, and lerne ʒe of me þis lessoun,*

<sup>1</sup> *refreesche, E.*



*þat Y am mylde and meke of herte, and sue 3e 3oure Fadir in þes two, and þanne, shal 3e finde reste to 3oure soulis, in 3oure travail. For my 3ok is swete, and my charge is lizt. And þes wordis of Crist, to conforte religiouse men, ben betere þan alle þes newe-reulis þat ben cloutid to Cristis wordis; for, in what staat þat þou be in Cristis religioun, lerne wel þe lessoun of myldenes and mekenes of Crist, how he kepte him in al his lyf, in what troubling þat he was inne. And 3if þou be on Goddis half, þou shalt lyve mekeli aftir Crist.*

DE GOSPEL OURE LADY DAY IN LENTE.

[SERMON CII.]

*Missus est Angelus Gabriel a Deo.*—LUK. i. [26.]

Þis gospel telliþ to þe Chirche how þe aungel grette oure Ladi, and how she, bi hir mekenesse, abide hir to conseve Crist. And þis þridde feste of oure Ladi is a wondir hi3e feste, for in þis was Crist maad man, and Crist passiþ alle oþer seintis. And so men seien comunli, þat oure Ladi hadde fyve joies. Þe firste was at þis tyme whanne she conceyvede Crist bi mekenes. Þe secounde was whanne she bare Crist wijpouten peyne at Cristemasse; þe þridde was whanne it was shewid to hir þat Crist was risen fro deep to lyve; þe ferþe was whanne she saw hir sone stie in to hevене; and þe fifþe joie was whanne she was deed and take to blisse. And to þes fyve joies ben answeyngge fyve vertues þat we mai have; and 3if we wolen worshipe þis Ladi, holde we þes vertues wel. Þes fyve vertues ben in þis ordre: mekenesse and chastite, bileve and hope, and charite; and 3if we kepen hem we plesen God. And siþ Crist and his modir moten nedis be of oo wille, þus shal we plesse to Marie, þe which is Goddis modir.

The Annun-  
ciation.

Luk telliþ how, *Gabriel was sent fro God to grete Marie.* And, for sum men ben clepid Gabriel, þerfore þe gospel specifieþ þat, *þe aungel Gabriel was sent fro God to Nazareth, þat was, a citee of Galilee, in which citee oure Ladi dwelte. And þis maiden was*

The greeting  
of the angel.

weddid to Joseph, þe which was of Daviþis hous, and name of þe virgyn was Marie. And wel she is clepid a virgyn so ofte in þis Gospel, for she was virgyne whanne she was weddid, and a virgyn after to her deþ. And a litil before þis wedding, þis aungel grette þis maiden þus; and so was Crist conseyyed of hir in verri matrimonie of Joseph. It semeþ þat Ambrose, upon Luk, seiþ<sup>a</sup>, þat þei weren weddid bifore, and soone, bitwixe þat tyme and nyzt, þe aungel cam and grette Marie þus. And algatis, on ech wey, oure Ladi was weddid in þe same hour, or nye þat hour þat she was greet<sup>1</sup>. Suppose we þat þis greting cam after, and neiþer wordis ne resoun semeþ to aȝen seiþ þis. Þis aungel cam in to þis maiden, and seide to hir on þis manere, *Hail, ful of grace, God is wiþ þee; blessid be þou among wymmen.* Þis angel clepide not now Marie bi hir propir name, þat she was clepid, for common uss<sup>2</sup> wiþ lordis and ladies axiþ, þat comun servauntis of hem clepen hem not bi propre name, but bi name of excellence; as men þat speken of oure Kyng leeven to clepen him Kyng Richard, but seien þat þis is þe wille of þe Kyng, or þus þe Kyng biddiþ to do<sup>b</sup>. And clouting of þis word Marie to þis gretinge of þe angel is not worþ ful myche pardone, but ȝif it be<sup>c</sup> two þousand ȝeer; as men seien þe pope haþ grauntid<sup>d</sup> for þe seiying of an orisoun bitwixe þe sacryng and Agnus Dei. But many þenken þat þe Pater noster is þe bettere. And so it semeþ to many men þat God and þe pope varien, siþ God doiþ al þing upon resoun, and not but for certeyn causis.

<sup>1</sup> gret, E.<sup>2</sup> use, E.<sup>a</sup> S. Ambros. *Comment. in Lucam*, Lib. II, cap. 1.<sup>b</sup> This indication of date, which confines the composition of these sermons within the years 1378-1399, has been considered in the Introduction.<sup>c</sup> 'but ȝif it be' appears to be used here in the sense of 'much less.' But perhaps the sentence should be punctuated thus,—'myche pardone; but ȝif it be, two þousand ȝeer, as men seien, þe pope haþ grauntid,' &c.<sup>d</sup> I have searched the *Bullarium* (that of Cocquelines, Rome, 1739),

which however is very meagre for the pontificate of Urban VI, and toiled through the numerous proclamations of indulgence of that pope, which are thickly strewn over the pages of Raynaldus, the continuator of Baronius, but without finding anything to support the statement in the text. The usual indulgence granted to those who took up arms against the anti-pope was a plenary indulgence, on the same conditions and with the same privileges as were customary in the case of crusaders to the Holy Land.

Oure Ladi, whanne she herde þis greting, was troublid in þis word, and þouzte, as a wise maiden, what manere shulde be þis greting. Þis troublinge in þis gretinge puttij no synne or blame in Marie, siþ Crist seiþ þat his soule is troublid, bifore his dep. And þis angel seide to hir, Drede þe not, Marie, for þou hast foundun grace bifore þe Lord of alle Lordis. And here þis aungel, for confort, clepide Marie bi hir propre name, to telle þat he knewe hir wel, and eke þe Lord þat sente him. For whoever haþ founden grace of a lord is loved of him. Lo, þou shalt conseve in wombe, and þou shalt bere a sone, and þou shalt clepe his name Jesus. And he þis<sup>a</sup> shal be greet, and he shal be clepid þe sone of þe hizeste Lord; and þe Lord God shal zeve him Daviþis seete, þe which Daviþ is his fadir; and he shal rengle in Jacobis<sup>1</sup> hous wipouten ende<sup>2</sup> and of his rewme shal be noon ende. Bi þis mai men undirstonden þat Crist was king, as Daviþ was, but more spirituali, as his kyngdom was more spiritual. For ech worldli lordship mote nedis have an ende; and þus renglewng wipouten eende in þe hous of Jacob, and þat of his rewme shal be noon eende, tellen how Crist renglewng spirituali, and not contrarie to worldli lordis.

And Marie seide to þis angel, On what manere shal þis be, for I knowe no man fleishli? And þis angel answering seide to hir, Þe Hooli Goost shal come above in þee, and þe vertue of alþer hizeste Lord shal make umbre unto þee. Þe vertue of God makij umbre, whanne in a lowe place it lettij heete<sup>3</sup> of synne, as it fel in oure Ladi; for she was lower in kinde þan aungels, and she consevede wipouten synne. And þerfore þat holi þing þat shal be born of þee shal be clepid Goddis Sone, singulerli bifore oþer. And lo, Elizabeth þi cosyn, and she haþ conseved a sone in hir elde; and þis moneþ is þe sixte to him þat is clepid bareyne<sup>b</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Jacobs, E.<sup>2</sup> So in E; om. A.<sup>3</sup> þe bete, E.

<sup>a</sup> 'He this' is the reading in this place of a single MS. (Bodl. 277) of the later Wycliffite version.

<sup>b</sup> to him that is clepid bareyne. Both A and E concur in this reading, and the expression a few lines below, 'Zacharie in represe was clepid bareyne,' leaves no doubt that it is correct. But it is not easy to

understand why the writer adopted this most erroneous version of the original, or where he found any countenance for it. The very numerous MSS. of the two Wycliffite versions all read 'hir,' and the rendering of the Vulgate is 'illi quae vocatur sterilis.' Did the writer inadvertently read 'qui' for 'quae'?

For Zakary, Baptist fadir, hadde geten Joon sixe monepis bifore; and so bi a litil tyme Joon was man bifore Crist. But evene bi sixe monepis was Joon born before Crist; for Crist was man, but not Joon, fro þe<sup>1</sup> tyme þat he was conceived. And Zacharie in reproof was clepid bareyne, wiþouten fruyte. *For no word þat God seiþ shal be impossible to him*; and so, siþ God wole have it þus, it mote algatis be so.

The Con-  
ception.

*And Marie*, as ful ripe in mekenesse, *answeride þus to þe aungel*: Lo, here *þe handmaiden of God*; *Be it done to me after þi word*. And, as men seien comunli, in þis tyme Marie consevede Crist. For, as Eve, for þe tyme þat she was moost proud, loste mankynde, so Marie, for þe tyme þat she was most meke, won mankynde. And here, ȝif þou wilt plesse Marie, or God hir sone, be algatis meke; for mekenes wole plesse to Marie, siþ she woot it plesip to God. And herfore she seiþ in hir song: God bihelde þe mekenesse of his maiden, and certis, herfore, lo, alle kynredis shal seie þat I am blessid. And so, ȝif þou wilt plesse oure Ladi, traveile þou to growe in mekenes. Also, siþ ech hie þing mote have a good and stable ground, and ȝif þou wilt come to hevene þou moost make a tour þidir, and so, if þou wilt come to hevene, stable þee in Cristis mekenesse. And so as þe sentre is lowest of alle þingis, so Crist is þe mekeste þat mai be. Also, þe lower þat a vessel is, þe more of licour wole it take; and so þe mekere þat a man is, þe more of grace wole he take. And so, ȝif þou wilt have grace of God, meke þee wele in þi soule; for mekenes meveþ to pacience, and to al oþer manere of vertues.

The example of  
Mary teaches  
meekness.

<sup>1</sup> So E; for tyme, A.



ÞE GOSPEL ON PHILIPPIS DAI AND JACOB.

[SERMON CIII.]

*Non turbetur*<sup>1</sup> *cor vestrum.*—JOHN xiv. [I.]

Þis gospel telliþ, how Crist confortide his disciplis upon Shire Þursdaie, as he dide comunli in wordis þat he seide hem þanne. Joon telliþ in fyve capitlis wordis þat Crist spake after his soper; and, among oþer þingis, he tolde hem how he shulde be bitrayd, and how he shulde be after turmentid and deed, and how þei shulden have drede boþe wiþinne and wiþouten. And herfore he medlide wiþ al wise wordis of confort. Crist biddiþ first in þis Gospel, þat *her herte be not troublid* wiþinne, *ne drede* for perils wiþouten, for confort þat þei shal have of him. 3if þei ben sad in þis bileve, þat alle þes þingis moten nedis falle, and for þer betere afterward, boþe here and in hevene, þei shulden not be troublid wiþinne to leese ony vertue; for þanne þei shulden falle fro vertues, for good þat God made to hem. And, bi þis same resoun, þei shulden not drede of bodili peril; for al þis shulde turne hem to good bi þis same bileve. And, for to make hem siker of þis, Crist seiþ þis word, *3e trowen in God, and trowe 3e in me.* As who seiþ, 3e moten nedis trowe in God, or ellis 3ou failiþ charite; and 3e mai not trowe in God, but 3if 3e trowen in me, for Y am þe same God, þat is God þe Fadir. And so wordis þat Y telle 3ou moten nedis be soþ. 3if God telle us a þing, who of us wolde drede þerof, siþ we ben certyn of bileve þat God mai not disseyye us? And oonhede in Godhede, wiþ Trinite in persones, is ofte seid in þis gospel, and in oþer boþe. And þus bileve shulde be ground to conforte men in þis weie.

And men shulden not muse on þis, þat ne þer ben diverse meritis. For, as þer ben in ech man diverse degrees of bileve, so þer ben in Cristis apostlis diverse degrees of merit. And

Christ's discourses at the Last Supper.

<sup>1</sup> Many mansions,<sup>2</sup> degrees of merit and reward.

<sup>1</sup> So in E; A has *turbetur*.

for to quiete hem in þis Crist seiþ to his apostlis, þat *in þe hous of his Fadir ben many dwellingis*; as who seiþ, Have ȝe sum degree of feiþ and hope and charite, and laste ȝe, creessyng þerinne to ȝour lyves eende, and ȝour place is ordeyned in hevene after þat ȝe ben worþe. What man shulde herfor lette to serve God wel, but raþer he shulde enforse him to encesse in Goddis service. And þes disciplis shulden truste in þis meene persone Crist; for, as he seiþ sopli, *ȝif ony þing in hevenli blis were lesse, or defauty, he wolde have teld hem.* And in proof of þis þing, *he stiep up* in his tyme, to make hem a place *redi þere*, as he dide aftirward. And siþ he is boþe God and man, he woot wel how it is þere; and gabbing in sich a Lord were more synne þanne ever was.

Final bliss, and the way to it.

And, for Crist mai not bigynne a þing but ȝif he make an eende þerof, þerfore he seiþ, þat *ȝif he wende þus to hevene he shal come aȝen and take þes apostlis to him.* And þis shal be verified at Cristis comyng at þe dai of dome, *þat where Crist is evermore, boþe in stede and in blisse, þei ben þere wiþ him* after þis dai wiþouten eende. *And ȝe witen whidir Y go, and also ȝe knowe þe weie.* And þus Crist certefiede hem þat þei witen þe ende, and þe weie how þei shulden come to blisse, over þat þe fadirs wisten in þe olde testament; and þus þei may truste in Crist as meene persone of God and man. *But Thomas seid here to Crist, Sire, we witen nere whidir þou goist, and how mai we knowe þe weie?* And Jesus seide to him: *I am weie, truþe, and lyf.* As ȝif he wolde meene to Crystene men: Knowe ȝe me, and love ȝe me, and ȝe knowe alle þes þingis. For Crist wole teche his disciplis bi litil and litil alle þes. And so þe liif þat Crist ledde here is þe weie to come to hevene; for but if we suen him in þis liif, we shal never come to blis. And þe trewe reule þat he ȝaf is truþe, to teche men þat wolden ellis erre. And he is liif many weies to susteyne men yn þis traveile.

Christ's meditation.

And so Crist seiþ sopli<sup>1</sup>, *þat no man comeþ to þe Fadir but bi him*; for his manhede is nedeful meene to make aseþ for mannis synne, and his Godhede mote nedis meeve to come þis weie, so fer fro erþe. And muse we not of þe knowing þat

<sup>1</sup> So E; A includes the word in the quotation.

we moten have of þis Fadir. For Crist seiþ soþli, *þat 3if þei hadde knowen him, certis þei hadden knowe his Fadir.* For whoso knowiþ Cristis Godhede, he woot how God seiþ al þing; for þis word of God is his Sone and Crist, þat we shulden knowe þus; and þanne he knowiþ him þat seiþ, þe which is God þe Fadir. *And after 3e shal knowe þe Fadir beter þan 3e 3it done; and 3e have saien him, bi bileve þat bringiþ in þis knowing.*

And, for þese wordis weren woundirful, þefore *Philip seide to Crist: Sire, shewe us þe Fadir, and it is ynow3 to us. And Jesus seide to Philip þanne, So longe tyme I am wiþ 3ou, and 3it 3e knowen not me, Philip. Whoso seep me, he seep my Fadir; how seist þou, shewe us þe Fadir? Ne trowest not þou þat I am in þe Fadir, and þe Fadir is in me? þes wordis þat I speke, I speke hem not of mysilf: but, certis, þe Fadir þat dwelliþ in me is þat ilk þat doiþ þe werkes. Ne trowe 3e not þat Y am in þe Fadir, and þe Fadir is in me? ellis, trowe 3e my Godhede, for þe werkes þat Y do. Sopeli, soþli, I seie to 3ou, þat man þat trowiþ in me shal do þe werkes þat Y do; and þe moste of hem<sup>a</sup> shal he do, for I go to my Fadir, and my chirche, þat is my bodi, dwelliþ 3it stille in erþe. And I shal not be idil in hevene, for whatever 3e axen þe Fadir in my name, þat shal Y do.*

Alle þes wordis þat Crist seiþ here axen sutil undirstonding, 3he, more þan we mai have while we lyven in þis liif. It is nedeful here to knowe, how þe Godhede of Crist is oþir in kynde þan his manhede, al if þei boþe ben oo persone. And þis Godhede is so sutil þat it is comune to þre persones. And so, whoso knowiþ þis Godhede in oon mote nedis knowe it in ech of hem; for þes þree persones ben not diverse, as þree men, or þree oþer substances, but ech of hem mai nother be, ne ou3t do, wiþouten ech oþer. And þis mannis witt mote be clene þat shulde knowe wel þis matere.

<sup>a</sup> 'Majora horum faciet;' Vulg.

DE GOSPEL ON ASCENCIOUN DAY<sup>a</sup>.

## [SERMON CIV.]

*Recumbentibus undecem discipulis.*—MARK XVI. [14.]

Christ's last  
appearance to  
the apostles.

Þis gospel telliþ in what form Crist toke his leve at his apostlis. Mark seiþ, þat enleven apostlis restiden after þat þei hadden eten, and Jesus apperide unto hem, and reproveden untreuþe of hem, and hardnes of þer herte, for þei trowiden not to hem þat sawen þat he was risen from deþ. And Crist seide to hem, Go 3e into al þe world, and preche 3e þe gospel unto alle maner of men. He þat shal trowe and be baptisid shal be saaf; and certis he þat shal not trowe shal be dampned. And þes signes shulen folowen hem þat shulen bileve in my name: Þei shulen caste out fendis, þei shulen speke wiþ newe tungis, þei shulen take awei addris, and 3if þei drynken ony dedeli þing, it shal not noie hem; þei shulen putte þer hondis on syke men, and þes seke men shulen fare wel. And soþeli þe Lord Jesus, fro he hadde spoke þus wiþ hem, he was taken in to hevene and sittip on Goddis riht side. And þei wenten her weie, and prechiden everywhere, and þe Lord wrou3te wiþ hem, and confermede her *wordis wiþ þes signes suing*.

His practice  
authorizes our  
breaking our  
fast before  
communion.

Here men shulden note þes wordis, for ech of hem beriþ greet witt; first, how Crist toke leve at his disciplis fro þe tyme þat þei hadden eeten. He 3af þe sacrament to hem after þer mete comunli, and Crist spak wiþ hem comunli after þat þei hadden sumwhat eten. And no drede to Cristene men þat ne Crist dide þus for certeyn cause. O cause was herfore, þat men shulden eten in good mesure, þat þer wittis weren more sharp, and þei more able to serve God. And Crist wiste þat men shulden ordeyne reversingeli to Cristis dede, and herfore he ordeynede þus, to telle þat þe contrarie is lefevel. And þis shulden þes men note þat proven þat þe ost is not breed; for

<sup>a</sup> This sermon is not found in MS. E (Douce 321).



panne, þei seien, man brake his fast, etinge þe oost whanne it is sacrid, and þanne he shulde not take aftirward Goddis blood þat is sacrid in þe chalis. Lord! whi witen not þes foolis þat þer accidentis maken men drunken whanne þei taken hem above resoun, as Poul witnessiþ? And witt proveþ where þis man be excusid of gloterie, for he is drunken of an accident. And siþ taking of þis þing in mesure was no synne in Cristis tyme, what vertue haþ mannis statute to make þis be synne more þan þanne? Þes founed wordis fordone Cristis fredom, and bileve þat men shulden have. 3if þis be no synne to God, it is no synne for to charge to eeten in mesure bifore þe masse, and after to syng and use.

1 Cor. xi. 21.

Aftirward we shulden wite, how Christ reproveð unbileve and hardnes of apostlis hertis, þat weren bifore, and þanne weren taken awei, for þei hadden not sorewe ynow; for þese errours þat þei weren inne. And þei shulden note þe wordis of Crist þat he spak þat tyme to hem. And þis is anoþer note, how Crist bad hem þanne go and preche þe gospel freli to alle manere men. And wo be to hem þat letten þis, for jurisdiccioun or oþer cause; as wo is to hem þat leven þis, and prechen dremys, fablis, and gabbingis. And it is not ynow to have nakid bileeve, but men moten have charite, þat shal fourme oþere vertues. And þis baptisiþ men wiþ bapty m of þe Holi Goost.

But 3it men douten of þes wordis þat Crist spekiþ aftir. It semeþ þat alle men þat bileven moten nede have þes fyve signes; and siþ noon of us haþ hem, noon of us haþ bileve. Here men seien comunli, þat seintis at þe first tyme hadden alle þes fyve signes betere þan we have now. But trewe men have in a manere alle þes signes now. For whanne þei dellyveren hem of synnes, þei casten out fendis in þe name of Crist. And þei speken wiþ newe tunges, for alle þingis þat men done in grace be newe bi titil of grace. And Crist seiþ, in Apocalips<sup>a</sup>, þei taken awei addris þat þei have of þer fleish; for þer will is awei to displese God bi þer lust. And dedli drynke, 3if þei taken it, or oþer þing þat comeþ to hem, anoieþ

<sup>a</sup> Is the reference to Apoc. xii. 9?

hem not, but bringiþ hem to blisse þat God haþ ordeyned to hem. And ȝif þei blessen men, or what þing þat þei done, Cristene men shulen be beterid, wheþer þei be saved or dampned. And so it semeþ þat þes men oonli trowen þus, þat God haþ ordeyned to blisse; for oþer men ben in greet synne and in greet unbileve, alȝif it be florishid for a tyme.

But men noten last here, how Crist sittip on þe riȝt side of his Fadir, siþ his Fadir is oonli Godhede, and haþ no figure as man haþ. And here men knowen as bileve þat Christ sittip not on þe bodili side of his Fadir in hevene, for his Fadir haþ noo sich side; but þe Fadir haþ sum men ordeyned to dampnacioun, as ben fendis in helle and men þat shulen be dampned þere; and þes ben þe left side of þe Fadir, on which Crist shal not sitte. Sum men ben on þe riȝt side; as alle men þat shulen be saved, and ordeyned to come to blisse after Goddis firste ordenaunce. And þus Crist bi his manhede sittip on his Fadirs riȝt side, for no þing mai be nerre Godhede ne more blessid þan is Cristis manhede. And so he sittip on his Fadirs riȝt side on oþer manere þan ony oþer mai sitte.

ÞE GOSPEL ON MYDSOMER EVYN.

[SERMON CV.]

*Fuit in diebus Herodis.*—LUC. i. [5.]

Þis gospel tellip a playen<sup>1</sup> storie how þat Joon Baptist cam forþ. Luk tellip, how þer was in daies of Heroude kyng of Jude o prest clepid Zacarie, of þe gendrure of þe preest Abia. And loot<sup>2</sup> fel to þes preestis to mynistrer in þe eiztiþe woke. And Zacaryus wif was of Aarons douȝters, and hir name was Elizabeth. And boþe þes two weren just bifore God, going forþ in alle Goddis mandementis and in alle justifying of þe Lord wipouten pleint. Fadirs of þe olde lawe weren myche chargid over men now; for þei kepten þes same ten mandementis, þat we kepen

The writer denounces those who had turned the freedom of the New Law into a bondage.

<sup>1</sup> pleyn, E.

<sup>2</sup> So E; lo u, A.

in þe newe lawe, and over, 3if þei wolden be juste, þei mosten kepe cerymonyes, and many lawis judicialis, þat us nedip not noqw to kepe. And, for þes two kepten al þis wipouten grete blame of God or man, þerfore Luk preisip Baptistis eldris in keping of þe olde lawe. But woo is to hem in tyme of grace, þat þus have chargid þe newe lawe, þat we have now more to kepe þan þei hadden in þe olde lawe. For<sup>1</sup> þes men have destroyed freedom, and pervertid Cristis Chirche, and so, as myche as in hem is, þei have maad Crist unfree, and þis unfredom is worse þan al þe richessis of þis world.

*And þei hadden noo child 3it, for þe womman was bareyne, and þei weren boþe olde, passid wel in tyme of her eelde. And it fel þat Zacarie dide his preestis office in þe temple, as it fel to his tyme, and custom þat þanne was. He wente herbi aloone to offre ensence in þe inner part of þe temple; and al þe peple was wipouten preiynge in þe tyme of þis ensence. And oure Lordis aungel apperide to him standing on þe rizt side of þe auter. And þis preest Zacarie was disturblid, and dredde herfore. But þe aungel seide to him, Drede þee not, Zacarie, for þi preier is herd; and Elizabeth þi wyf shal bere to þee a child, and his name shal be clepid Joon, and joie and gladnes shal be to þee, and many shal enjoie in his birþe. He shal be greete bifore God, and wyn and sidir<sup>2</sup> he shal not drynke; and he shal be fild wip þe Holi Goost 3it fro his modir wombe. And he shal turne many of þes children of Israel to þe Lord God of hem. And þis Joon shal go bifore Crist, in spirit and vertue of Helye; for Joon was Hely in figure, as Christ seiþ þat mai not lye. And þis Joon shal converte þe hertis of þe formere fadris in to þe love of þer sones, þat tellen hem þat Crist is comen; and men out of bileve Joon shal turne to prudence of juste men. For it was a greet prudence to trowe þe signes of Crist, þat he was þe prophete bihi3t to þe fadirs of þe olde lawe. And so Baptist made redi to þe Lord a perfect folk in rizt bileve.*

<sup>1</sup> So E; And for, A, which leaves the construction incomplete.

<sup>2</sup> *sydre*, E.

<sup>a</sup> Both Wycliffite versions render the *siceram* of the Vulgate in this place by *sydir*. Ducange identifies *sicera* (other forms of which are

*sisara*, *cicera*, and *cisara*) with the French *cidre*, whence comes our 'cider.'

Christ condemns both church-endowment and the celibacy of the clergy.

Here mai men douten, and trete of þe staat and liif of prestis; how þei ben dowid and wyfleees aʒens Goddis autorite; for Crist forfendid dowyng boþe in him and in hise apostlis, and approvede wedding in apostlis and many oþer. And þis is þe caste of þe fend, to kyndle fir in<sup>1</sup> heerdis; for or þei moten boþe brenne, or þe kepere mote leewe his craft and traveile to kepe þis fir<sup>a</sup>. And preestis shal not do boþe wel.

ÞE GOSPEL ON MYDSOMER DAI.

[SERMON CVI.]

*Elizabeth impletum est tempus pariendi.*—LUC. i. [57.]

The nativity of John the Baptist.

Eccles. iii. 1.

Þis gospel telliþ of þe forme þat Joon Baptist was born inne, and seiþ; *To Elizabeth was tyme fulfillid to bere child.* For þe Wise man seiþ þat alle þingis have þer tyme. And siþ al þing mote nedis come in tyme þat God haþ ordeyned it, muche more þe tyme of Joon, þat God ordeyned<sup>2</sup> so speciali. *And þus Elizabeth bare þis child. And her neiȝboris and her cosyns herden þat she was delyverid, and helden þat God hadde maad his mercy greet wiþ þis olde wiif, and joiefulli þankide God wiþ hir. And it fel in þe eiztiþ daie, þei camen to circumcide þe child; and þei clepiden him Zacarie after his fadirs name. And his modir answeride and seide, Nay, but he shal be clepid Joon. And þei seiden to Elizabeth, þat no man was in hir kyn þat was clepid bi þis name; whi shulde he be clepid so? But þei bekeneden to his fadir, what he wolde þat he were clepid, and he axide a metal pointel<sup>3</sup>, and wroot, and seide, Joon is his name.*

Zacharias recovers his speech

And so miracle was wiþ Joon Baptist, boþe bifore his birþe and aftir; for, as men taken of þe gospel, Zacarie trowide not

<sup>1</sup> and, E.

<sup>2</sup> So E; *ordeyneþ*, A.

<sup>3</sup> *poynfel*, E.

<sup>a</sup> The meaning appears to be:— it is a wile of Satan to promote the celibacy of the clergy, because thereby he kindles the fire of unlawful passion ('*melius nubere quam uri*') in Christian pastors,

who then either continue to burn with it (and so fall into sin), or have to leave their proper pastoral work in order to take such measures as may keep this fire under control.

to þis aungel, and þerfore bi þe wille of God he was doumbe til þis tyme, and here he recoveride his speche, and tolde what þe child shulde hatte<sup>1</sup>. For boþe his eldris helden in þer mynde how Gabriel wolde þat he hiȝte Joon. *And herfore woundride folk al aboute. And anon his mouþ was opened, and his tunge was unboundun, and he spak and blesside God for þe þing þat bifel þus. And drede was on alle her neizboris. And þes wordis weren publishid upon alle hiȝe coostis of Judee. And alle þat herden of þis þing puttiden in þeir herte and seiden, Who, trowist þou, shal þis child be? for þe hond of oure Lord was wiþ him.* Sacarie was a famous man, wiþ Elizabeth his wyf, and many myraclis weren bifallen aboute þe birþe of þis Joon; and þus þe contre preiside him muche, for many causis þat weren in him. It was a miracle þat þe aungel telde him in so holi a place; it was miracle þat Sacary was dombe, for he wolde not trowe þis aungel; it was miracle þat so oold folk brouȝten forþ þis child in her olde daies; it was miracle þat his eeldris on þis manere namyde þe child; and al þe lyf þat Joon lyvede was ful of miraclis bifore and after.

*And þus his fadir profeciede, bi filling of þe Holi Goost; Blessid be þe Lord God of Israel, for he haþ visited and maad þe blyng aȝen of his peple.* And so Joones fadir and his modir and he himsilf weren maad prophetis. And here mai trewe preestis touche how þis world is blyndid bi foli, when it sueþ men as patrouns þat weren foolis and ful of synne, and leven Crist and Baptist þat weren bigyneris of oure ordir. And herof pleynede Crist in þe gospel, þat þei singen neiþer wiþ him ne wipen<sup>2</sup> wiþ Baptist, but wiþ oþer foolis whos liif is biside bileve.

Against the patrons of new orders.

<sup>1</sup> *bote*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *wepen*, E.



## ÞE GOSPEL ON PETRIS AND POULIS EVYN.

## [SERMON CVII.]

*Dixit Jesus Symoni<sup>1</sup> Petro.*—JOHN XXI. [15.]The calling of  
St. Peter.

Þis gospel telliþ how Petre and opir preestis shulden love God, and travailen in his chirche. And, for þis love stondiþ in þe grace of God, þerfore *Crist clepiþ Petre, Symount, Joones soone*. For whoso prechiþ to þe peple and techiþ hem Goddis lawe, he is þat ilke in whom is Goddis grace; and juste eldris may disserve grace to þer children, as it is teld bifore of eldris of Joon Baptist. Crist in his laste speche wiþ Petre apostle axide him þris where<sup>2</sup> he lovede him; and his bileve is aweie, þat troweþ not<sup>3</sup> þat Crist seide þus for to prynte his love in Petre, and his successouris.

Christ's charge  
to him.

And þus Christ axide first, *Symount, Joones sone, lovest þou me more þan þese?* And Petre seide to Crist: *þhe, Lord, þou wost þat I love þee*. Petre<sup>4</sup> was here curteys and temprid fro presumpcioun, for he seide not þat he lovede Crist betere þan any oþer apostle, but he seide, Crist wiste wele þat he lovede him. And here Petre confesside þat Crist knewe al þing. *But Christ seide to Petre*, in shewing of þis love, *þat he shulde fede his lambren*, bi þe lawe of Crist; as who seiþ, if þou love me, þou most do þis dede. *Þe secounde tyme axide Christ where Symount Joones sone lovede him*. And Petre seide to Crist, *þhe, Lord, þou wost þat I love þee*. And Christ seide to Petre, to conferme þis word, *þat he shulde fede his lambren*, in lore of þer soule. For as mannis soule is betre þan is þe bodi of him, so feeding of his soule is betere þan is feding of his bodi. And siþ lambren of Crist ben oo bodi wiþ Crist, more love myzte no man shewe þan þus for to fede his lambren. *But 3it Christ axide þe þridde tyme, where Symount Petre lovede him*. And Petre hadde sorewe *þat Christ axide þis þus ofte, and seide aȝen to Crist, Lord, þou*

<sup>1</sup> So E; Symony, A.  
þat troweþ not are om. in A.

<sup>2</sup> *wbeþer*, E.

<sup>3</sup> So E; the words

<sup>4</sup> So E; Petre is italicized in A.

*woost alle þingis, þou wost þat I love þee. And Crist bad him shewe þis in dede, and fede his sheep, þat is more þan þes oþer, as sheep passen lambren.*

No man þat is in bileve dredip of þis gospel, þat ne Crist chargide þes wordis ech bi resoun; and so he tauzte apostlis to feede his sheep in pasturis of holi writt, and not in roten pasturis, as ben fablis and lesingis and lawes of men. Þe pasture everemore grene wiþ treuþis þat nevere more failen, is þe lawe of holi writt, þat lastip in þe toþer world. But, for a good heerde shulde kepe his sheepe fro wolves, and defende hem fro scabbis and fro rendinge, þefore Crist bad Petre þries þat he shulde kepe his sheepe. Crist tauzte not to his heerde to reise up a croyserie and kille his sheep, wiþ his lambren, and spoilen hem of þeir goodis; but þis is lore of Anticrist, þat þe fend haþ now brougt in; and bi þis it is knowen þat þes ben not Petris vikeris.

Peter was charged to feed, not to kill, Christ's sheep.

And Crist techip Petre, and in him alle his vikeris, how it fallip to him to do azen his firste will. *Sopli, sopli, I seie to þee, whanne þou were zonge þou girdist þee, and wentist whidir þat þou woldist; but now, whanne þou wexist oolde, anoþer shal girde þee, and shal lede þee þe weie which þou wolt not, of þi silf.* And þis word seide Crist for to telle to þe Chirche bi what dep Petre shulde clarifie God. For Crist seiþ bifore, in þe gospel of Joon, þat þe moste propirte þat followip a good herde is, þat he putte his lyf for his sheep, for þus dide Crist, and wolde þat Petre þus suede him. And þe moste contrarie condicioun, þat sueþ Anticrist, is to putte his sheepis lyves for his cursid lordship.

ON OCTAVE OF MYDSOMER.

[SERMON CVIII.]

*Dixit Zacarias.*—LUK i. [18.]

Þis gospel tellip þe middil of a storie of Seint Joon Baptist. Þe vigile of Baptist tellip how Gabriel bihihte him, and þis

The unbelief of Zacharias.

storie telliþ how Zacarie mistrowide. And so Luk telliþ, how *Zacharie seide to þe aungel, Wherof shal Y wite þis, þat Y shal gete a child; for I am an oold man, and my wif is passid in eelde* <sup>p</sup>. Here þis Zacharie trowide not to þe aungel; but Marie trowide to þis aungel þat he seide her sop, but she wolde be certefied more of þe manere. And þus sum men reden as two wordis þis axing, On what manere shal þis be, for I knowe not man. But þis Zacarie mistrowide, and maad þerto his evy-dence; and so boþe þes weren troublid, but Zacarie more, for þe troubling of hym reſte him bileve. *But Gabriel telde him, wherfore he shulde trowe. For I am Gabriel, þat stonde bifore God, and I am sent of him to telle þee þes good tþingis*; and siþ it is þus, I mote nedis seie sop, for I mai not see but treuþe in þe book of liif, and an aungel þat is confermed mai not lye to a man. *And lo, þou shalt be domb, and þou shalt not moue<sup>a</sup> speke unto þe dai þat þes þingis be done*; and þis penance shalt þou have, *for þou trowedist not to my wordis, which shal be fild in þes tyme*. And here mai we se, bi logik of þis aungel, how al þing mote nede be; for noþing mai ever be but þat þat <sup>1</sup> God haþ ordeyned to be in his tyme; for ellis hadde Gabriel seid fals, þat he myzte not speke til þanne.

*And þe peple abood Zacarie, and wondride þat he tariede in þe temple. And whanne he cam out, he myzte not speke to þe peple; and þei wisten þat he hadde seen sum visioun in þe temple. And he was bekenynge to hem, and dwelte dombe for þe tyme. And whanne þe daies of his office weren fulfillid, he wente hoom to his hous, and þanne was Joon geten. And after þes daies conseved Elizabeth his wiif; and she hid hir for shame fyve moneþis aftir. And she seide to hirsilf; For þus haþ oure Lord do to me, in þe daies þat he caste to take away my reprofte among men. And þus cam Elizabeth hoom, whanne she feelide þat Joon was quike; and so he myzte witesse þe comyng of Crist in þe wombe of Marie, whanne she cam to Elizabeth. For Joon made þanne joie in manere of dansing in presence of*

<sup>1</sup> So E; om. A.

<sup>a</sup> 'mowe' is the lost infinitive of the verb 'may'; it is the English form corresponding to the German 'mögen.' It occurs in this place in both Wycliffite versions.



Crist, as þe gospel seiþ. And so trowe not to hem þat seien, þat it is six moneþis bifore þat þe soule<sup>a</sup> be couplid wiþ þe bodi, and bifore it haþ plantid soule<sup>1</sup>, and siþ soule of beeste<sup>b</sup>; but as we bileven þe wordis of þe gospel, þat Baptist was glad in comyng of Crist, so we supposen þat he was on lyve a litil bifore þat Jesus was conseved, but we musen not how muche, siþ it is Goddis privyte.

Of þis gospel mai we take, how it is grete synne to mystrowe to holi writt, siþ God punishide Zacarie for he trowide not to his aungel; and more ben wordis of God þan wordis of þis aungel. And þus defaute in bileve is bifore alle oþer synnes, and siþ God seiþ al treuþe, no treuþe shulde be denyed; but summe may men doute, and sum trowen wiþ drede, for God seiþ þis treuþe, or ellis God seiþ it not. O how myche ben þei to blame þat seien þat Goddis lawe is fals, for mysturdirstanding of a fool or an heeretik! Certis, bi þe same skile þei myzten seie þat God is fals, siþ God signifieþ to hem fals undirstonding, in peyne of þer former synne, bi which þei ben blindid, and þus God were þe falseste þing þat evere was in þis world. For þei seien þat falshede is no defaute in a þing, whi seien þei not þat God is fals for perfeccioun of God, siþ God meveþ fals men, for þer former falshede, to undirstonde

Reflections on the sin of unbelief.

<sup>1</sup> *plautis of soule, E.*

<sup>a</sup> That is, the rational or human soul.

<sup>b</sup> The writer appears to repudiate, with Aquinas, the doctrine which held that before the rational soul,—*anima intellectiva*,—in virtue of which man is man, was joined to the embryo, it had been animated successively by a vegetative and a sensitive soul, so as to be conformed to plants during the first, to animals during the second period of gestation. In the treatise *De Spirituali Creatione* among the *Quaest. Disputatae*, Aquinas writes (art. 4) 'Quidam vero dixerunt quod a principio inest anima vegetabilis, et illa eadem cum fuerit magis perfecta fit anima sensitiva, et tandem fit anima intellectiva.' But the Christian philosopher, holding out for the oneness and in-

corruptibility of the human soul, will not admit this; he looks upon the embryonic changes as indicating successive stages of the one soul, but no more. 'Sic cum in embrione primo sit anima vegetativa tantum, cum perventum fuerit ad majorem perfectionem tollitur forma imperfecta, et succedit forma perfectior, quae est anima vegetativa et sensitiva simul, et ultimo cedente, succedit ultima forma completissima, quae est anima rationalis.' To these three elementary stages St. Augustine, in the *De Quantitate Animae*, adds four more, that of moral effort, in which the soul is seeking virtue, that of moral perfection and rest, that of spiritual effort or tendency towards God, and that of the soul's union with and rest in God

falsly? and þanne þei seien þat God is fals. And þus God schulde meve men falseli, whanne evere þey synnen<sup>1</sup>, and þus he were a fals God in punishing of sinful men. For, siþ fals-hede in God is good, 3eve we him ynow<sup>3</sup> þerof; for God mai not have a name, but 3if he passe al oþer þing. Blessid be treuþe, þat made us passe alle sich fals fantasies, and wite þat alle creaturis ben trewe in þat þat þei ben of God.

ON TRANSLATION OF SEINT MARTIN<sup>a</sup>.

[SERMON CIX.]

*Nolite timere pusilus*<sup>2</sup> *grex*.—[LUKE xii. 32.]

Christian  
courage.

IN þis short gospel Crist confortid his servantis, and biddiþ hem not drede; for treuþe is strengere þan alle þer enemyes. Men shulden not drede but for synne and lesing of vertues, for peyne is just and of Goddis wille; whi shulden men drede or sorewe þerfor? And þus sinful men shulden have drede and hope togidere, of diverse þingis; as þei shulden have sorowe and joie togidere of dyverse þingis. And þus synne concludiþ men moost of al þing þat mai be; for it bringiþ man<sup>3</sup> to fyve markis<sup>b</sup> more noyousli þan oþer skilis. Crist seiþ here to hise apostlis, þat *þei shulden not drede*, al 3if þei ben *a litil flok*. For to rekene þe firste treuþe, and alle þe aungels þat ben wiþ him, þe part of a just man is betere þan fals part of a þousaund; and þus biddiþ þe prophete his child, þat he schulde not drede him, for many moo ben wiþ hem þan wiþ þe contrarie part. Stonde a man in vertu and treuþe, and al þis world overcomeþ not him. For if þei over comen him

<sup>2</sup> Kings vi. 16.

<sup>1</sup> So E; *be synnep*, A.

<sup>3</sup> om. E.

<sup>2</sup> *pusillis*, E; a clerical error for *pusillus*.

<sup>a</sup> The feast of the translation of St. Martin's relics (July 5) is not in the Roman missal, the office for the day being of the octave of SS. Peter and Paul. The gospel which the Sarum use appropriated to this festival is found in the Roman missal

among the gospels for the Common of a Confessor not a Bishop.

<sup>b</sup> *bringiþ man to fyve markis*. This seems to be a proverbial expression, used of a person who was brought to poverty, or into any desperate strait.

wiþ þis, þei overcomen God and his aungels; and þanne þei shulden make hym<sup>1</sup> not God, but betere þing shulde make þis.

But here men seien comunli, þat þer þen þre manere of dredis: kindeli drede, and drede of sones, and þerwiþ drede of servantis. Kindeli drede was in Crist, whanne he dredde to suffre deef. But þis drede cam 3it of synne, for ellis no man shulde have suffrid peyne. And þus peyne is unkindeli, for to loke to bigynnyng þerof. Þe secounde drede haþ many degrees, after þat men ben betere wiþ God. Sum is bigynnyng drede, whanne men dreden to wrappe God; and þis is bigynnyng to fle synne, and rote of alle mannis wisdom. 3it, whanne man dredif more for to synne aʒens his God, and his tempting is overcomen þat shulde moove him to synne, þanne haþ he chast drede; but wel is him þat haþ þis drede. Þe þridde degree is best of alle, þat men clepen holi drede; and þis dwellif here in erþe, and evermore wiþ man in blis. And þis drede haþ no peyne, but unpower for to synne. And þus aungels have þis drede more þan ony oþer þing. But þe Godhede mai not drede, for it bi kynde mai not synne. Boþe þes dredis bringen not in synne. But þe þridde servant dredde. Whanne a<sup>2</sup> man synneþ aʒens God, and mote nede be ponished of him, þis is oon<sup>3</sup> unkindeli drede, as it is unkindeli to synne; and þis drede forfendif Crist in þes wordis þat he seiþ here. And þus men seien comunli, þat man shulde not drede to fiʒte 3if his cause and manere be good, for noʒt but synne makif man coward. For 3if man fiʒte wiþout cause, to be holden an herti man, he berif wiþ him þe synne of pride, þat makif him coward aʒens God. And þus þingis þat loven pees ben moost hardi, as þingis in hevene.

And Crist tellif here a cause to make his disciplis hardi, þat þei shulden not drede þus: *For it likide to þer Fadir to 3eue hem þe rewme.* Here mai we see many treuþis in þes wordis þat Crist seiþ. First, how þe Godhede of God is Fadir of alle þat he 3eueþ blisse. Þe secounde treuþe in Cristis wordis is nede to 3yve þis blisse. For, as þingis þat ben passid nedli moten have be passid, so al þat God ordeyneþ nedeli moten

Three kinds  
of fear

Motives of  
hopefulness.

<sup>1</sup> So E; *not make him*, A.

<sup>2</sup> om. E.

<sup>3</sup> *an*, E.

have be ordeyned. And þe þridde treuþe of þes wordis is, þat Crist shewide to þes disciplis þat þei shulde come to blisse, for he telliþ þer Fadir likede so. Here may we gadere opun resoun þat Cristis children shulden not drede; for ȝif God ȝeue a betere þing, he ȝeueþ al þat sueþ þerof; as God mai not ȝeue a bodi, but ȝif he ȝeue quantite and figure. And so, siþ pees sueþ of þis blisse, God mote ȝeue pees whanne he ȝeueþ blisse. Also, siþ God is almyȝtti, alwitti, and al wilful, no þing þat is aȝens God mai overcome him þat is wiþ God; for siþ God seþ þis fiȝting<sup>1</sup>, or him failiþ power or wille, ȝif his seruaunt be overcomen in fiȝting for Goddis cause. And þus trewe men ben confortid to putte awei þis þridde drede; for be þei never so fewe or feble, þei bileven þat þei mai not be disconfitid. And þus þe cause þat Crist here telliþ makिþ his knyȝttis to be hardi.

The possession of riches tends to make men cowardly.

And þus Crist confortid his apostlis, for to sue him in povert: *He biddiþ hem sille þat þei have and ȝeue almes prudentli.* For certis, among alle cowardis, cowardise of riches is þe moste. For many men þat have richessis dare neiþer seie a soþ, ne defende a soþ seid, for drede of leeing of þis riches. And so men loven riches more þan þei loven treuþe of þer God. And in þis cowardise ben freris and oþer ordris þat ben dowid. And unneþe ony riche man wantiþ clene þis cowardise. And þis is more þan cowardise of bodi, þat comeþ to man for drede of bodi; for a man shulde kindeli love more his bodi þan his goodis, siþ goodis of kynde ben mouche betere þan ben goodis of fortune. But Crist telliþ ofte to his martirs, þat þei mai not be his disciplis but ȝif þei loven more him þat is treuþe þan loven þer owne liif. And wiþ þis feiþ was Baptist armed, and oþer apostlis, wiþ Cristis martiris; for þei wisten wel þei myȝten not faile in victorie, to die þus. And þus, for riches of þis world makिþ moost cowardise, Crist bad his knyȝttis be pore, and sille her possessiouns, and of þat priis ȝeue almes, or ellis of meeblis þat þei hadden. But wite wel, it is noon almes to make ypocritis more cowardis, or to ȝeue þes newe ordris þingis þat þei ben chargid bi, for þis is not work of almes<sup>2</sup>, but work of unmercy to men.

<sup>1</sup> God is fiȝting. E.

<sup>2</sup> mercy. F.

And þus Crist meeveþ to be pore bi resoun of surete. *Make ze to zou sachelis þat wolen not waxe oold, but tresour þat, failiþ not in hevene, whidir þe þef comeþ not, ne þe mouzþe distriþ; for, certis, where is þi tresour, þer is þi herte, and þi wille.* Tresour is clepid comunli, prescious þing þat man telliþ muche bi and hidip sumwhere. And so men þat shal be saved maken þer tresour in God; for þis tresour is of oþer kynde þan ben þes riche men, and it is prescious good, for it is good of grace. And siþ Crist is al þing þat seintis have nede of, þis tresour is more nedeful þan al þis erþeli tresour; for þeves mai not stele þis, as jewels or moneie, and mouztis mai not feble þis, as þei mai cloþis or jewelis. And so, siþ þis tresour is more prescious and more sikir, what man shulde not traveile moost for to have þis tresour? 3if þou traveile treuli to have þe blis of hevene, þou hidist þis tresour where it mai not faile; for God shal be þi cloþing þat mai not wexe old, for he is charite; and he shal be þi peny þat mai never be rusty; and þeves mai not come to hevene, ne take of hevenes blis. Þis is eende of wisdoms, to traveile for sich a tresour. And drede we not þat ne man mai bi good liif wynne him God, þat is al maner of tresour, to make him blessid in hevene. For þis is kyndeli eende to which man is ordeyned; for man is ordeyned<sup>1</sup> to blisse, and to laste ever more, and have wiþout defaute al þat hem nedip.

Treasure in heaven.

ÞE GOSPEL ON OCTAVE DAI OF PETRE AND PAUL.

[SERMON CX.]

*Jussit Jesus discipulos ascendere in naviclam*<sup>2</sup>.—MATT. xiv. [22.]

Þis gospel telliþ a storie that ech man shulde wite, but speciali apostlis and vikeris of hem. *Crist bad his disciplis stie into a bote, and go bifore him on þe water til þat he lefte þe peple. And Crist lefte þe puple and stiede in to þe hil, for to preie aloone*

Peter walking on the water.

<sup>1</sup> So E; A om. the words *for—ordeyned*.  
ascendere and *naviclam*.

<sup>2</sup> errors of the scribe for

for staat of his Chirche. *And so, whanne þe evenyng cam, he was þer aloone; for his disciplis were in þe water, and þe peple hadde left him. And þe boot, amydde þe water, was shaggid<sup>1</sup> wiþ wawis, for þe wynd was contrarie to hem. And þe fourþe vigile of þe nyȝt, þat was nyȝ þe dai, Crist cam to his disciplis walkinge on þe water. And þe disciplis, seeyng him walking upon þe water, weren troublid among hemsilfe, and seiden it was a fantum<sup>2</sup>. And for drede þei crieden. And anoon Jesus spak to hem and seide to hem þus: Have ȝe trust, I am; drede ȝe not. And Petre answeride and seide, Lord, ȝif þou be Crist, comande me to come to þee upon þe waters. And Crist seide to Petre, Come. And Petre wente down out of þe boot, and walkide<sup>3</sup> on þe waters, for to come to Jesus. But Petre, seeyng þe wynd grete, dredde him of þe peril; and whanne he bigan to drenche, he criede and seide, Lord, mak me saaf. And anoon Crist held forþ his hond, and toke Petre, and seide to him, Þou of litil bileve, whi doutidist þou here? And whanne Crist steie in to þe boot, þe wynd cesside, and þei þat weren in þe boot camen and loutiden Crist, and seiden, Verrili þou art Goddis Sone.*

Dis storie men tellen to þe secounde witt of Goddis word, and seien, þat þis boot travellinge in þe water is þis Chirche here þat wandriþ to þe daie of dome. Þis wending of Crist to þe hill is his styng to hevене. Þere he preieþ aloone for mankinde here; for alȝif oþer seintis preien þere in spirit, neþeles in bodi and soule preieþ Crist ȝit aloone. And whanne þe sunne wente down, was Crist aloone preiyng þus. But he visitide his Chirche þe fourþe vigile of nyȝt, whanne he shewiþ perilis to his Chirche þat fallen to men here in erþe. But Crist goiþ upon þe water, for worldli soris<sup>4</sup> noien him not. And þis boot is troublid here, but it drenchiþ not uttirli. Petre is þe moste man þat sueþ Crist in his Chirche; and he wolde sue Crist here, but he failiþ in bileve. But he mai not be drenchid, for Crist wole have his Chirche saved. Crist comeþ into þis boot whanne he haþ alle þes men to hevене, and þanne ceessen alle þe tempestis þat men suffren here in erþe, and þei knowen verrili how þat Crist is Goddis Sone.

<sup>1</sup> *scboggyd*, E.  
walking, A.

<sup>2</sup> E om. the words *and—fantum*.  
<sup>4</sup> *sores*, E.

<sup>3</sup> So E;

And þis witt applieþ þe pope, wiþ his cardinalis, to hem, and seien þat þei ben Cristis Chirche þat flooteriþ<sup>1</sup> þus in þis boot; and þei mai nevere be drenchid, al if þei fallen in many perilis. But þes men shulden wite, first, þat þei sue<sup>2</sup> Crist in lyvyng in poverte and mekenesse, and in lore of þe gospel; for ellis þei gon not bifore Crist on þis water, to make redi to him, but ben raper drenchid in þis water, and seken after worldli goodis; or ellis ben þe peple þat Crist leeveþ, þat disturblen him and hise. Bileve techiþ trewe men þat þis Chirche goiþ not bi kyn, but bi manere of suyng of Crist in perfit weie of vertues. But as preestis weren worse til þei weren at lowest degree, as preestis of þe olde lawe þat weren fordone in Cristis tyme, so mai þis court drede for liif contrarie unto Crist, leste þei ben þe worste men þat lyven here in þis Chirche. For ypocrisie makih hem not good, but more stynke bifore treuþe. And þei ben not porest here, making hem tresour in hevene, for al þer breeþ and þer liif is about worldli goodis; and þus þei lasten not in þis boot, but ben drenchid in þis see. And þus þei axen not Crist helpe, as dide Petre, whanne he sank; but al þer hope and desire is in þingis þat ben bineþe. For 3if þei lyven contrarie to Crist, in þis world ben no falsen men. And neiþer kynrede ne place maken men Cristis vikeris, but suyng in weie of vertues, what manere men þat ever þei ben. Errour in sich wittis makih many dremeris to faile, for þei taken noon hede to good liif, but to fals opynyouns here.

How applied by the Roman Court.

This application refuted.

PE GOSPEL ON ÞE FEESTE OF SEVENE BRIÞEREN,

[SERMON CXI.]

*Loquente Jesu ad turbas.*—MATT. xii. [46.]

Þis gospel tellih a storie þat touchih mouche witt, and tellih how Cristis children ben knyttid here in charite. Matheu tellih, how *Jesus spake to þe peple; and to, his modir and his breþeren*

Christ's true kindred.

<sup>1</sup> *stotep*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *sueden*, E.

*stonden wipouten to speke wip him. And sum men seien þat Cristis breperen weren men of his kynrede. But his apostlis weren wip him, and herden him speke to þe peple, as þei weren in streitere place, and more hard to come to. And oon seide to Crist, Lo, þi modir and þi breperen stonden wipouten, sekyng þee. And Crist answeride to him þat tolde him þis, and axide who was his modir and his breperen. And Crist stretching his hond to his disciplis seide þes wordis of witt: Lo, here my modir and my breperen. For who ever doþ þe wille of my Fadir þat is in hevene, he is my broþer, and my sistir, and my modir also.*

This gospel  
misinterpreted  
by many.

The writer's  
interpretation.

Þes wordis of Crist ben scorned of gramariens and devynes. Gramariens and filosofhis seien, þat Crist knewe not his gendris; and bastard dyvynes<sup>1</sup> seien algatis þat þes wordis of Crist ben false, and so no wordis of Crist bynden, but to þe witt þat gloseris tellen. But here we seien to þes trouauntis þat þei blaiberen<sup>2</sup> þus for defaute of witt. Leewe we þes heretikes as foolis, and seie we sum witt þat God haþ ȝovun us. Sopli, Crist techiþ here þe preciousite of his preching, þat man schulde not, for fleishli kyn, lette to teche Goddis word. And þes wordis seiþ Crist to him þat was aboute to lette his lore. And þus telliþ Crist a sutilte þat is of goostli breperen in God; for, be it man or be it woman þat serveþ God treuli, he is on þes þree maneres knitt to Crist in sibberide<sup>3</sup>. For distinccioun of kynde is litil to telle bi in þis matere. First, he is Cristis broþer bi<sup>4</sup> his soule, þat is his spirit; siþ, he is Cristis sistir bi his fleish, þat is worse; and after, he is Cristis modir bi þis hool kynde, made of hem two. For þis modir haþ conseved Crist, and norisiþ Crist wipinne hir; and þis is betere cosyngage and more sutil þan is of kynde. And make þes gramariens sorewe þat þei knowe not þes gendris, and so þes founed filosofhis schulden sorowe of þer error, þat þei witen not of oo man þat he is ech of þes þree þingis; he is soule, he is bodi, he is man, maad of þes two. But to þe hool man is merit or demerit proprid. Leewe we here þese trouaunt doutis, and enforce us to lerne Cristis wordis, to preche hem to þe peple, and leewe þing þat is lesse worþ, and þanne fleishli cosyngage schulde not lette us to do þis.

<sup>1</sup> So E: *dyvenes*, A.

<sup>2</sup> *blaberen*, E.

<sup>3</sup> *sybred*, E.

<sup>4</sup> *to*, E.



DE GOSPEL OF MAUDELEN DAI IS RED ON FRIDAI IN † QUARTER  
TENSE †<sup>a</sup> IN SEPTEMBRE AMONG FERIALS

ON SEYNT JAMES DAI.

[SERMON CXII.]

*Accessit ad Jesum.*—MATT. XX. [20.]

Dis gospel telliþ how fleishli kyn procuriþ ofte harm to þe soule, and how a womman, Cristis aunte, *Mary, James modir and Joones*, þat was *Sebedeus* wiif, cam to Crist for þis enchesoun. But she cam wiþ þes children and loutide Crist, and axide him; for it is seid comunli þat wymmens preier is wel herd. *Crist axide hir<sup>1</sup> what she wolde, and she seide to him, Comaunde þat þes two apostlis*, þat ben *my sones*, and þi cosyns, *sitte next þee in þi rewme, þe toon on þi riȝt side and þe toþer on þi left side*. Crist knewe wel þis wommans witt, and how it cam of þes apostlis; for þei herden bifore of Crist, how þat he shulde have a rewme, and þei trowiden þat Crist shulde be an erþeli kyng in þis world; and þere þei wolden be nyȝ Crist, for cosynnage and traveile here. Crist spekinge to þes apostlis, and levyng to speke wiþ þeir modir, seide how þis cam of hem, and how men shulden have ordre in speeche, everemore speking þere where þei hopen moost to profite. *Crist seide to þes apostlis, ȝe witen not what ȝe shulden gladli axe*; for þing þat profitiþ to mannis soule shulde he axe, and nouȝt ellis.

And, as Joon seiþ wiþ þe gildene<sup>2</sup> mouþ<sup>b</sup>, þis word of Crist liziþ þe world, and dampneþ here many men, þat coveiten hyennesse of worldli stat. For many men bi weyward witt coveiten here to be popis cardinalis or bishopis, or oþer worldli

<sup>1</sup> So E; *bere*, A.

<sup>2</sup> *golden*, E.

<sup>a</sup> The MS. has two words here inexplicably contracted; but they evidently stand for 'Quatuor Tempora,' or, as it is called in Ireland, Quarter Tense: for the gospel read on St. Mary Magdalen's day (July 22)

is the same as that for Ember Friday in September, on which there is a sermon (No. 112 of the Ferial Sermons) in the present collection.

<sup>b</sup> St. Chrysostom, *Homil. in Matth. XXXV.*

The petition of the mother of James and John.

Commentary on the gospel.

dignite, not for hele of þeir soule, but to have here worldli wynnyng. And all þis dampneþ Crist here. For þis wille is venymous; and it falliþ ofte tyme þat sich havyng of worldli worship dampneþ men ever more in helle; and so it doiþ harm to þe soule. But 3if men wolen be hye in hevene, þei moten lerne anoþer lessoun, to profite to þe Chirche þat þei mai, and to leeve worldli worship. And þis profit nedip ofte to suffre anoies here in þis world, þat þese prelatiſ fleen algatis, for þei wolden here have þe contrarie. Þerfore Crist axide of þes disciplis a questioun pertinent herto, *Mai 3e two drynke, seiþ Crist, þe chalis þat I shal drynke?* And wiþouten drede Crist undirstood bi þis chalis his passioun. And þes two disciplis myzten not for shame denye to drynke of þis coppe. *And þus þei grauntiden to Crist, þat þei myzten drynke of his coppe;* for it were al azens skile to coveite sich a prelacie, but 3if men have þe ende þerof wherefore þei shulden coveite it. And siþ Crist is al wiys, and drinkiþ himsilf of þis coppe, what man shulde bi resoun forsake to drynke herof? For bi þis is þe soule fed, and disposid to come to blis, but bodili fode is for þe bodi, and makip wormes mete redi. And þus *Crist grauntip þes apostlis þis betere drynke,* and leeveþ þe toþer. But 3it Crist, of his curtasie<sup>1</sup>, interpretiþ þer wordis to goode; and doiþ worship to his Fadir bi trewe wordis, as he shulde. Supposing þat þei undirstonden sitting in þe rewme of hevene, *Crist seiþ, þat it falliþ not to him to graunte hem sich sittinge, but sich sitting shal þo men have to whom it is ordeynid of his Fadir.* Here grutchen Anticristis disciplis and seien, þat Crist seiþ here fals; for siþ Crist is þe same God þat is þe Fadir and þe Goost, whatever þe Fadir 3eveþ or grauntip, þe same þing grauntip Crist. But here þese foolis moten undirstonde, þat Crist spekeþ ofte bi his manhede; for þe peple knewe his manhede, and undirstood it speciali. And þus, whanne Crist biheetip to hem þat him falliþ not to 3eve hem þis, he undirstood þes wordis þus, þat he shulde not, bi his manhede principali, 3eve þem þis; but he shulde 3eve to hem þis, to which it is ordeyned of his Fadir. And so, 3if þei disserven þis, he sikerid hem þat þei shulden have þis.

<sup>1</sup> *curtesie, E.*

And þus spekiþ Ambrose<sup>a</sup>, saynge comun speche of Crist, þat þe sacrid oost is not breed, for it is not principali breed. And such error blindiþ many, in þe sacrament of þe auter, to seie þat it is an accident wiþouten suget, and no breed, as Ambrose seiþ. But þes foolis myzten bettere seie þat neþer James ne Joon ben blessid for Crist seiþ þat him falliþ not to graunte hem ony degree of blisse. But þis is ful of eresie, as falskede in which it is groundid. And defaute of undir- standing þat shulde be of Goddis lawe and of þis doctour, Ambrose, blyndiþ here þes etetikis.

## ON ASSUMPCIOUN EVYN.

## [SERMON CXIII.]

*Loquente Jesu ad turbas.*—LUC. xi. [27.]

Þis gospel telliþ how it is more to heere Goddis word and kepe it, þan to bere Crist bodili and norishe him, as Mary dide. And so a litil storie is told in presing<sup>1</sup> of our Ladi; and after is knitt a blessid sentence bi distinccioun of Crist. Þe storie telliþ *how Crist spak to þe peple of soule helpe. And a womman of þe puple hadde devocioun in his wordis, and burst out in an hyze vois, and seide on þis manere to Crist: Blessid be þe wombe þat bare þee, and þe tetis þat þou didist soke. And Crist answeride to þis womman, and tolde a more presciouse treuþe, and seide þat, but bi more resoun, blessid be þei þat heeren Goddis word and kepen it.*

But we shal undirstonde here, þat on two maner is Goddis word herd,—first bodili, bi eeren of bodi, and eke goostli, bi eeren of soule. Þe firste heeringe is litil worþ, but in as mouche

<sup>1</sup> *preysyng*, E.

<sup>a</sup> St. Ambrose, *De Sacramentis*, lib. iv. cap. 5: 'Antequam consecratur, panis est; ubi autem verba Christi accesserint, corpus est Christi.' Wyclif in his *Confessio* (*Fasciculi Zizaniorum*, p. 127) quotes

a passage from the same work, differing slightly in words, but precisely to the same effect. The 'for it is not principali breed' is Wyclif's gloss upon the words of St. Ambrose.

Those truly blessed who hear the word of God and keep it.

Two ways of doing so.

as it helpiþ to þe toþer; siþ Scarioth herde Crist þus, and beestis and briddis myzten also. On þe toþer manere heerþ no man but ȝif he knowe sentence of Goddis word. And on þis wise seiþ þe Psalme<sup>1</sup> þat I shal heere what þe Lord God spekþ in me; but wel Y woot þat he shal speke pees and love to his peple. And þus, on two maneris, may a man kepe Goddis word; first, to printe þe witt in his soule, and after to reule his liif þerbi. And þus shulde ech Cristen man heere and kepe þe word of God. But over þis kepyng shulde preestis kepe wiseli þe word of God, and shape hem for to preche it, for profit of þe Chirche; and þis is þe beste work þat ony man mai trauaile here. And þus mai we liȝtli see how þis sentence of Crist is soþ; siþ no man mai come to blis but ȝif he heere and kepe Goddis word; but many men and wymmen ben saved þat baren not Crist bodili; ne oure Ladi myzte not come to blisse, but ȝif she hadde herd and kepte þis word.

Ps. lxxxv. 8.

The privileges of Mary.

And herfore God ordeynede hir to be maistresse to his apostlis, for she fel not fro þe feiþ, ne fro þe wordis of hir sone, but kepte hem wel in her herte, and caste wel what þei menten. And herfor it is no wondur ȝif she be more blessid þan oþer. Þe Chirche singiþ of oure Ladi þat she haþ distroied alle heresies<sup>a</sup>, for she is special maistresse to distroie þes heretikis. And siþ she is aftir þe dai of dome, whanne þei shal no more noie þe Chirche, it is soþ to þis entent þat she haþ distroied alle heresies.

Against letters of fraternity.

And siþ she was occasioun of þe wordis þat Crist seide here, se we how þes wordis helpen men to distroie þes vices. A comune heresie þat now rengneþ in þe Chirche is lettris of fraternite, generali among þes ordriþ<sup>b</sup>. And herfor se we how þes lettris stonden wiþ Goddis lawe. Heryng and kepyng of Goddis word is betere þan þe birþe of Crist; þis birþe is betere þan þes lettris; and so heeryng and kepyng of Goddis word is algatis betere þan þes lettris. But Cristis word in no place techiþ þat men shulden have þes lettris; and þerfore

<sup>1</sup> So E; *Salm*, A.<sup>a</sup> 'Gaude Maria virgo, cunctas haereses sola interemisti.' Tract used in Masses of the B. V. M.

from Christmas to Easter.

<sup>b</sup> See p. 67, note B.

shulden men reste in þes wordis, and traveile not aboute þes lettris. For as ful and sufficiaunt is Cristis lawe as his manhede; but his manhede is ynow<sup>3</sup> wiþouten oþer to come to hevene; and so his lawe is ynow<sup>3</sup>, to here his word and to kepe it, for to come to blisse of hevene, wiþouten ony sich lettris. And þis þing mai be confermed. For ȝif a man have a þousand of sich lettris, but ȝif he kepe Goddis word, he shal be dampned in helle. And ȝif he kepe wel Goddis word, wiþouten havyng of sich lettris, he shal be savyd in hevene, as oure bileve techiþ us. And so havyng of siche lettris is oþer impertinent to blis, or ellis it is harmful, letting men to come to blisse. Also bi siche lettris is not sibbirede<sup>1</sup> getun of Crist; but ȝif þei brouȝten a man to hevene, þei maden þat man Cristis broþir and sister and his modir, as þe gospel beriþ witnesse. For Crist seiþ, Whoever doiþ þe wille of his Fadir þat is in hevene, he is Cristis broþer, and his sister, and his modir. Also, ȝif sich lettris diden þis good to men, brennyng or dstroi yng of hem shulden pryve þes men fro sich good, ouþer in bodi or in soule. And so, ȝif we hadden þes lettris brent, or eeten wiþ myis<sup>2</sup>, or distroied, we shulden wante þe profite of þes lettris; ȝhe, ȝif we weren þanne betere wiþ God. Bi siche resouns þinken many men þat þes lettris mai do good for to covere mostard<sup>3</sup> pottis, but not þus for to wyne men blis; siþ sich men þat graunten þes lettris wyten not wheþer þei ben fendis lymes, or þat her preier shal ouȝt availe to hem silf or to oþer. And þes resouns letten many to chaffre wiþ þeir preier. For preier of men mai profite to oþer, but not þus bi chaffaring; siþ parting of merit is of men hangiþ oonli in Goddis wille, and not in shewing of sich lettris, neiþer to God ne to man; siþ we oblischen not us bi hem to þing þat is not in oure power. And þus þis help is newe feyned to injurie of God, siþ it is propre to God to graunten sich help to whom he wole. And þes lettris helpen not þerto, but raþer letten, for blasfemye. And sich broþirheed of blasfemes shulden be fled, for fendis sibreden.

<sup>1</sup> sibreden, E<sup>2</sup> mys, E.<sup>3</sup> mustard, E.

ÞE GOSPEL ON ASSUMPCIOUN DAL.

[SERMON CXIV.]

*Intravit Jesus in quoddam castellum.*—LUC. x. [38.]

Jesus in the  
house of  
Martha and  
Mary.

Þis gospel telliþ a storie of Crist, how he tauzte to his Chirche which is þe beste stat here. Luk seiþ, þat *Jesus entride in to a castel, and a womman þat hiȝte Martha toke Crist in hir hous*, to fede him and his apostlis. And manye men þinken here þat þis castil was a wallid toun, for ofte tymes þe gospel clepiþ sich wallid touns, castels. Men supposen over þis, þat þis Martha and hir sistir, and Lazarus þer broþir, hadden al þing in comune; and þis Martha was beste hous-wyf, and best coude ordeyne for hir hous; and þus she hadde speche to men bifore hir broþir and hir sistir. *Þis sister was Marie Mawdeleyn*, þat was a ful devout womman fro þe tyme þat she was purgid of Crist, and sett in þe weie of hevene. And so þis *Marie Mawdeleyn*, fro þe tyme þat Crist cam to hir hous, *sat mekeli at Jesus feet, to heere Goddis wordis* of him. For Jesus hadde þis maner, to speke ever Goddis wordis whanne he wiste þat þei shulden profite to ony peple þat herden hem. And so Crist prechide ofte, now at mete, and now at soper, and what time þat it was covenable ony peple to heere him. And so Martha fedde Crist bodili, but he fedde hir sistir goostli. And so he ȝaf þe beter for þe worse, as it falliþ God to ȝeve. *Martha enforside her bisili to serve Crist and his disciplis*, but Marie sat stille at Cristis feet to heere þe wordis þat he spake. *And Martha stood bifore Crist*, and playnede to him of hir sistir<sup>1</sup>. *Sir, she seiþ, takist þou noon heede þat þis Marie, þat is my sistir, haþ left me aloone to serve to þee, and to my gúeestis? I preie þee, sei to hir, þat she rise and helpe me.* And þus Crist, þat was taken for juge to acuse Mawdeleyn, was maad avocat of þis Marie; for he holdiþ ever for trewe part<sup>2</sup>. And þus many trewe men, boþe aprentis

<sup>1</sup> So in E; A includes *of bir sistir* in the italics.

<sup>2</sup> þe trewe part, E.

and *avocatis*<sup>a</sup>, wolen no<sup>1</sup> procure in a cause bifore þat þei heeren it, and þis cause to þer witt haþ þe part of riȝtwisnes; for ellis þei maden hemsilf *avocatis* aȝens treuþe wiþ þe fend. And aȝens þis foule synne shulden men speke upon resoun. For al ȝif Goddis lawe teche þat procuraturis shulden have hire, and jugis shulden have noon hire of men þat þei travaillen fore, neþeles þis is mys-turned, for riȝt is turned to coveitise. *Crist spak* a meene weye, and tauȝte þe Chirche in þes wymmen, and spak in þes wordis: *Martha, Martha, þou art bisie and troublid aboute ful many þingis; but certis, o þing is nedeful, and betere þanne þes many þingis: Marie haþ chosen þe beste part, þat shal not be taken from hir.*

It is seid comunli, þat þes two wymmen ben two lyves, actif and contemplatif; þe first is Martha, and þe toþer Marie. And actif liif axiþ in mesure bisynesse aboute worldli þingis; and alȝif þis liif be good, þe toþer liif is moche better. And so, for men failen ofte in þis liif fro love of God, Crist doublþ þis word Martha, for two passen fro unyte. Crist telliþ how actif liif mut nede be troublid for many þingis; but contemplatif liif stondiþ in oo þing, þat is, God, and haþ no bisynes aboute þingis of þis world. For as a man bisieþ him not how his shadewe shal passe þe water, so men þat ben contemplatif bisie

<sup>1</sup> not, E.

<sup>a</sup> *aprentis* and *avocatis*; that is, barristers practising in the common law courts, and pleaders belonging to the church courts. By the term *Apprentitius* (from the French *apprendre*, to learn), as applied to the legal profession, was originally meant, according to Ducange, a law-student merely,—one who frequented the courts and universities in order to gain legal knowledge. But at an early period it became, in England at least, a more honourable appellation. In *Fleta*, the author of which wrote under Edward I, the *Apprentitius* appears as the lowest kind of legal practitioner admitted to the king's courts;—'in curia autem regiã sunt servientes, narratores, attornati, et *apprenticii*' (lib. II. cap. 37). In the reign of Edward II, the term seems to be

used much in the same way as 'barrister' is now-a-days; thus the jurist, Andrew Horn (on whom see Selden's *Dissertatio ad Fletam*), dedicates his treatise *Speculum Justitiarum* (*Justitiariorum*?) to the 'Apprentitii ad barras.' Spelman (*Glossarium in voce*), says that the *Apprentitius*, after a course of legal training extending over seven years, was permitted 'cancellos salutare,' i.e. to come up to the bar, and there to plead. He thus corresponded to the 'outer barrister' of modern times; and so completely is this the case, that Fortescue (quoted by Spelman), with Selden, Plowden, Sir Henry Finch, and Sir Edward Coke (quoted in Cowell's *Interpreter*), speak of *Apprentitius* as being only another name for barrister-at-law.

The two sisters signify the active and the contemplative life.

hem not aboute worldli goodis, but þei trusten and hopen in God þat alle þes þingis shal falle to hem. And oonli in swetnesse of God þei bisien hem, and taken þe toþer in mekenes and in povertē, as Crist haþ tauȝt in word and dede.

Some think that three modes of life are here approved ;

But men supposen over þis, þat Crist approveþ here þree lyves. Þe first is good, as children lyven whanne þei ben cristened. Þe secound liif is þe betere ; and þis is clepid actif liif, whanne men travailen for worldli goodis and kepen hem in riȝtwisnesse. And þis is hard, but it is possible ; and alȝatis ȝif covetise be left ; for Crist techiþ bi Matheu þat men shulden not be besie aboute her fode and hilyng, but bisynesse shulde be for hevene, þat shulde be eende of mennis traveile. And exces of þes goodis lettij ofte tymes þis eende. Þe þridde liif is þe beste, as Crist seiþ þat mai not lye. And þis is sumwhat here in erþe, but fulli in þe blisse of hevene. And here douten many men wheþir of þes two lyves is betere. But men þat biholden<sup>1</sup> bileve of Crist witen þat þis þridde liif is best ; for Crist seiþ þus þat mai not lye, and chees to lyve ever þis liif. For, alȝif Crist dide erþeli workes, neþeles he dide on sich mesure þat his soule was ever fed in contemplacioun of God. And in þis many apes weenen to sue Crist here and þei slippen into þe fendis weies for defaute of Cristis lore.

but of these the third, the contemplative life, is the highest.

Þree resouns ben comune þat þis þridde is þe beste liif. Oon, for Crist þe beste maistir seiþ þus, and mai not lye. Also, þis lif mote nedis laste in blis of hevene wiþouten ende ; but þes oþer two lyves moten nedis be eendid here. And so þis liif þat makij men betere, and more lastij wiþ hem in joie, mote nede be betere þan þe toþer þat algatis moot be taken from man ; and þis is þe resoun of Crist in þe laste word of þis gospel. Also, an eende þat kinde ordeyneþ to come to men, bi certeyn meenes, is alȝatis betere þan þes meenes, þat comen nevere but for þis eende ; as, siþ mannis liif is eende of his eting and oþer dedis, þis liif is betere þan þis eting, or ellis kynde ordeyned amys. And so, siþ þes two firste lyves ben meenes to þis þridde liif, algatis þis þridde is þe beste, þat God ordeyned to ende þes two. And in no persone ne ony stat ben þes first<sup>2</sup> lyves for

<sup>1</sup> *bolden*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *two first*, E.



to preise, but ȝif þei ben quykened bi þis þridde, þat shal laste evere perfilti.

And ȝif þe pope haþ maad a lawe contrarie to þis sentence, or ȝif an aungel come from hevene or from helle, reversing it, trowe not to þes aungels, but trowe to Crist þat seiþ þis sentence. And resouns aȝens Crist ben not worþi to be rehersed; as sum men seien, þat<sup>1</sup> ellis þe pope lyvede evere a synful liif, siþ he chesiþ þe worse and þe hardere for þe betere. But here we graunten to þes men þat þis is soþ whanne þei have proved þat þe pope leeevþ þe þridde liif for<sup>2</sup> þe secounde. For þe Chirche shulde beter be governed ȝif alle preestis lyveden þis þridde lif; for þus it was in Cristis tyme, and in tyme of his apostlis.

and no authority is to be listened to on the other side.

ÞE GOSPEL ON SEINT BARTULIMEW DAL.

[SERMON CXV.]

*Facta est contencio inter*<sup>a</sup>.—LUK. xxii. [24.]

MEN seien þat Seint Bertolomew was nobleste of þe apostlis<sup>b</sup>: and herfore in þis daie is þis gospel red. Men seien þat Cristis apostlis streven for a good cause; for þei wolden have a captain aftir þat Crist was deed. But I can not excuse hem of a vein wille. But however it be of þis, þis gospel semeþ to teche us þat synne of prelatiſ now-a-daies passiþ þis presumpcioun. For *apostles streven* þanne, not who shulde be more to God, ne more to þe world, but, *who shulde be holde more*; for ellis miȝte strif be among hem which shulde be put bifore, and decisioun of þis miȝte oonys for ever ceesse þis discord. But

The strife among the apostles.

<sup>1</sup> So E; and, A.

<sup>2</sup> or, E.

<sup>a</sup> In the Roman Missal this gospel is assigned to the feast of St. Apollinaris (July 23); that for St. Bartholomew's day is taken from Luke vi. 12-19. The writer of these sermons, like the Prayer-book, follows the Sarum use.

<sup>b</sup> Referring to this legend, Cave

says, in his *Antiq. Apostolicae*,—'By some [St. Bartholomew] is thought to have been a Syrian of noble extract, and to have derived his pedigree from the Ptolomies of Egypt, upon no other ground, I believe, than the mere analogy and sound of the name.'

now, among oure prelatiſ, we moven not who ſhulde be holde more, but which is more, uttirli, boþe to God and to þe world. And here we ſynnen doubli, denieng þat we knowun not, and reversing Criſtiſ ſentence of moreneſſe þat he ſpake of. But oure goode maiſtir, Criſt, determyneþe þiſ diſcencioun; and seiþ þat þer is double gretnes among men here in erþe,—gretenesse among knyztis, and gretenesse among clerkiſ. Criſtiſ diſcipliſ ſhulden not coveite gretnes of knyztis, but gretenes of clerkes is moreneſſe of mekenesse and moreneſſe<sup>1</sup> in ſervice, wiþouten ony booste.

Temporal  
greatness with-  
held by Christ  
from his dis-  
ciples.

*And þus seiþ Criſt, þat kyngiſ and gentilefolk have lordſhip of hem, and þo þat have power on hem ben clepid goode doeriſ. But 3e ſhal not þuſ lyve, in noon of þeſ þre pointiſ. For worldli lordſhipiſ ſhal not be among 3ou; ne power to priſoune ſhal be in oon upon oþir; ne 3our goode dedis ſhal not ſtonde in 3yvyng of worldli goodiſ; but he þat is more amonge 3ou be maad as 3onger, and he þat goiþ bifore, be he as a ſervere. Þat is to seiþ, þe mekere of 3ou is more of 3ou, and oon ſhal go bifore anoþir, not for worldli worſhip, but to ſerve more mekeli to oþir of hiſ felouſhip. And þiſ mai 3e ſe, seiþ Criſt, bi my lyf among 3ou: *Wheþir holde 3e more him þat ſettiþ, or him þat ſerveþ?* Certain 3e holde more *him þat ſittiþ at þe mete. But Criſt is among hem as a good ſervere.* On þe day bifore, Criſt waſhide her feet and wipte hem wiþ a cloiþ, as þe goſpel of Joon telliþ; and þanne he putte in dede ſoilyng of þiſ queſtioun. *And ſiþ apoſtliſ ben þo ilke þat weren wiþ Criſt whanne he waſ temptid,* and Criſt ordeynede ſiche meenes to aʒenſtonde pryde, preeſtiſ ſhulden þenke on þiſ lore, and traueile aboute mekenes. And þiſ lyf is not wiþoute mede, bi wiſſeſſe of Criſt. And herfore he ordeynede hem þe kingdom of hevene, as hiſ Fadir ordeynede hym, for mekenesse þat Criſt hadde. And þanne ſhal þei ete and drynke upon Criſtiſ bord in hiſ rewme; and þiſ is mede wiþouten eende, more þan ony worldly mede. For þanne ſhal þei ſitte upon troones and juge kynredis of Iſrael; whiche kynredis ben ſeintiſ in hevene, þat ſhal knowe bi apoſtliſ þat more mekenesse in þiſ world axiþ more hyeneſſe in hevene.*

Their ſupe-  
riority is in  
meekneſſe,

<sup>1</sup> So E; *moresse*, A.

And wel were him þat coude þis lore, ʒif þe gospel tauȝte him no more. And reversing of þis lore now, bi dowyng of þis Chirche, haþ maad al newe preestis and oþer ordir fro Cristis Chirche <sup>a</sup>. For more worldli lordship axiþ þe more service to preestis, and lettij hem to be more servauntis, and more hie in Cristis rewme. And þus, whanne Crist biddiþ þat his preestis shulden not lyve þus, þat preest is now holden betere þat lyveþ more lordli. And þis pride of þe fend distrieþ myche of þe Chirche; and Y can see no more mede þan to distrie þis<sup>1</sup> preestis pride. Take awei þes brondis ʒif þou wole quenche þe fier.

though the lives of the clergy set aside this truth.

ÞE DECOLLACIOUN DAI OF SEINT JOHN BAPTIST IN HERVEST,  
ÞE GOSPEL.

## [ S E R M O N C X V I . ]

*Misit Herodes.*—MARK vi. [17.]

Þis gospel telliþ þe cause and forme whi þat Baptist was do to deþ, and seiþ, how þat *Heroude þe kyng sente and held Joon Baptist, and bonde hym in prysoun for a womman, Herodias, which was wiif and weddid to Philip, Heroudis broþir. For Joon seide to þis Heroude, It is not leeveful to þee for to have þi broþeris wiif, while ʒe boþe ben on lyve. And herfore þis Herodias aspiede Joon many gatis, how he myȝte be do to deþ. But alȝif she wolde do þis, ʒif she myȝte not come þerto. Þe cause of envie to Joon was his tellinge of treuþe, þat shulde be profitable to Heroude and eke to þis wickide womman. And þis cause shulde glorifie martirdome of a man; for it touchiþ Goddis riȝt, and profit of þe yvel part, and charite of þe martir þat telliþ þis for Goddis sake. And beter cause haþ no man in suffringe of martirdome. Þis Heroude dredde Joon Baptist, for*

The beheading of John the Baptist.

<sup>1</sup> þes, E.

<sup>a</sup> That is, — church-endowment, clergy, as well as the cloistered orders, from the true Church of Christ, has separated the modern

he wiste þat he was a just man, and þerto an hooly man, and kepte him more tenderli. For men have kyndely drede of God and of his lawe. And þerfore Heroude herde Joon, and aftir him dide many þingis, and herde Joon wiþ good wille, in þingis þat touchide conscience. And whan a covenable day fell to Heroude and þis wickide womman, Heroude, in þe daie þat he was born inne, made a feste to tribunes and to princis of þe temple, and to þe gretteste maistris þat dwelten in Galile. And þus many men penken þat Heroude was an ypocrite; for he caste to slee þis Seint Joon, and florishide it wiþ falskede. And as men supposen, al þis cast cam first of þis false womman. For as wymmen, where þei ben goode, passen oþer creaturis, so, where þei ben turned to yvel, þei passen many oþer fendis.

And whanne þe douzter of þis womman was entrid in to þe halle, and pleside to Heroude and his gestis bi tumbleris lepyng<sup>a</sup>, þis kyng seide to þis wenche þat she shulde axe what she wolde. And he swore to þis wenche þat whatever she axide him he shulde ȝeve it to hir, if it were half his rewme. And bi þes wordis it semep þat þis fraude was cast bi þis womman and Heroude; or ellis he were to greet a fool, to ȝve half his rewme for lepyng of a strumpet. And þis wenche wente forþ and axide at hir modir, what she shulde aske of þis kyng Heroude. And hir modir bad hir axe þe heed of Joon Baptist. And whanne þis wenche cam in anoon wiþ haste to þe kyng, she axide and seide, I wole anoon þat þou ȝeve me þe heed of Joon Baptist in a dishe. And þe kyng was sori; for his grete oob and for his gestis he wolde not make þis wenche sorowful, but sente for a man-sleere, and bad brynge to him þe heed of Joon Baptist. And he girde of his heed in prisoun, and brouzte his heed in a dishe and ȝaf it to þis wenche, and she ȝaf it to hir modir. And whanne þis þing was herd, þe disciplis of Joon camen and token his bodi and putten it in a sepulcre.

<sup>a</sup> The ὀρχησαμένης of the original is rendered in the Vulgate 'quum saltasset,' which the first Wycliffite version naturally translates, 'whanne the douzter . . . hadde lepte,' and the present writer understands of a tumbler or female acrobat. Such

displays were common in the middle ages. Chaucer, in describing a festive meeting (*Romaunt of the Rose*, near the beginning), speaks of 'sail-louris:—

'There was many a tymbester,  
And sail-louris that I dar wel swere  
Couthe her craft ful parfitly.

What man wolde not suppose, þat ne al þis þing was done bi fraude of þis fals womman, for treuþe of Joon displeside hir? And doying of Heroude was not wiþouten blame, for he shulde not swere þus to a ʒong strumpet; and ʒif þis fool hadde swore þus, he shulde not fulfille þis oop; for folie hepid upon folie greueþ God more. She axide þis heed in a dishe bi feyned addicioun, for so she myzte more liʒtli brynge þis heed in to þe kyng, and wite more sikirli bi þe siʒte of many men þat it was Baptistis heed þat she hadde in þe dishe. And men þat sawun þis done shulden not rebelle aʒens þe kyng, for it was done in þe prisoun pryvyly fer from men.

And feyned treuþe of þe kyng semeþ to foolis to excuse þis deed, and so it semede no help<sup>1</sup> to venge þe dede þat was done. And sich a cautil of þe fend is in many grete synnes. For men feynen bi ypocrisie þat þis þing moste nede be done, and goodnesse wiþ treuþe of hem excusij hem of þe dede. And, for wymmen ben of short witt, þei ben meenes to siche dedis. But folie and lustis of men ben often more to blame þan wymmen. As, ʒif wymmen knewun not Goddis lawe in dowyng of preestis, and it semeþ to wymmens witt boþe almes and merci, and þei meeven lordis herto,—as þes wymmen diden Eroude,—þis synne is in þes proctours, but more in þes lordis. And þus fendis wilis of freris aqueynten hem wiþ ladies, and þei ben meenes to lordis to have þat þes fendis axen. And þus is fiʒting brouʒt in, and Goddis lawe reversid. For who may denye þat ne lordis done aftir ladies, or þat freris conseilen wiþ ladies, or myche synne is now up bi workes of lordis? And knytte alle þes togidere, and freris ben ground þerof, more sutil and sinful þan þis lepynge strumpet. But unknowynge of Goddis lawe excusij hem not here, for þat shulden lordis trowe, and not þes fals meenes. For fendis and þer giles shulden be put bihinde God, and treupis of Goddis lawe shulden be taken in worshiþe.

<sup>1</sup> So in E, which has the word *boote*, crossed out, before *help*; A reads *no but to venge*.

Application  
of the conduct  
of Herod and  
Herodias to  
modern times.

ÞE GOSPEL ON NATIVYTE AND CONSEPCIOUN DAIES OF OURE  
LADI; AND ON CRISTEMASSE NYȝT BIFORE TE DEUM.

[SERMON CXVII.]

*Liber generacionis.*—MATT. i. [I.]

The genealogy  
of Christ.

Þis gospel telliþ þe *gendrure bi which Crist cam* of Jewes. For he cam of his modir, and she and Joseph weren of oo kynne. Matheu<sup>1</sup> was tauȝt of God to write þus þis booke, and in þre fourtenes to eende þus þis gendrure. He takiþ two *bigynneris, Daviþ* and *Abraham*; for to þes two was speciali Jesus Goddis Sone bihiȝt. Daviþ was putt bifore for worshipe and acordaunce, alȝif Abraham was bifore and brouȝte forþ holi kynredis. *Abraham gat Isaac, and Isaac gat Jacob; Jacob gat Judas and his oper breperen*, And þes þre patriarchis weren þree holi men. Of þes twelve Jacobis sones Judas was þe beste; neiþer þe firste, ne þe last, but cam of his first wyf. And of him tolde Jacob þat Crist shulde come. *Judas gat Phares and Zaram of Thamar*. Þis Phares and Zaram weren boþe getun togidere; and þis Thamar was not þe firste wyf of Judas. *Phares gat Esrom, and Esrom gat Aram; Aram gat Amynadab, and Amynadab gat Nasoun; Naasoun gat Salomoun, and Salomoun gat Booz*, of a womman þat was *Raab*<sup>2</sup>, þe which was an alien, and helpide mouche Jewes; *Booz gat Obeth of Ruth*, þat was an alien; *Obeth gat Gesse, and Gesse gat Daviþ þe king*. And in þis firste fourtene ben aliens and synful folk, for Crist wolde save aliens and oper synful men. Daviþ þe laste of þes fourtene is clepid a kyng; for God made him kyng; and bifore þis Daviþ weren patriarkes and jugis, and no kyngis of Jewis, as Goddis lawe telliþ. Saul was þe firste kyng of Jewis bifore Daviþ, but he was a wickide man, and Crist cam not of him.

*Daviþ gat Salomon of hir þat was Uryus*<sup>3</sup> *wyf; Salomon gat Roboam, and Roboam gat Abias; Abias gat Asa, and Aza gat*

<sup>1</sup> So E; *Matbu*, A.

<sup>2</sup> þat *biȝte Raab*, E.

<sup>3</sup> *Uries*, E.

*Josephat*; *Josephat gat Joram, and Joram gat Osias*; *Josias*<sup>1</sup> *gat Joathan, and Joathan gat Achaz*; *Achaz gat Ezechie, and Ezechie gat Manassas*; *Manasses gat Amon, and Amon gat Jose*; *Jose*<sup>2</sup> *gat Jeconie, and opir breþeren whanne þei weren taken to Babiloyne, bi werre of þe kyng. Þis is þe toþir fourtene þat Matheu telliþ, and leeveþ here foure kyngis wipouten liyng. For he þat bigetiþ a sone bigetiþ his sones sone; and so foure kingis weren left<sup>a</sup>, soþli for greet cause.*

And whanne þes kyngis weren ceessid of worship of þer kyngdom, but not of þer gendrure, *Jeconie gat Salatiel*; *Salatiel gat Sorobabel*; *Sorobabel gat Abyut*; *Abyut gat Eliachym*; *Eliachym gat Azor*; *Azor gat Sadok*; *Sadok gat Achym*; *Achym gat Elyut*; *Elyut gat Eliazar*; *Eliazar gat Mathan*; *Mathan gat Jacob, and Jacob gat Joseph, Maries housebonde; of which Marie is Jesus born, þe which is clepid Crist.* And so, to counte Joseph Marie and Crist, is þis þridde fourtene fillid þat þe gospel spekiþ of. And alþif we have not þis þridde gendrure in holi writt, 3it we trowen þat it is soþ<sup>3</sup> bi autorite of Mathew, as we trowun þe firste gendruris boþe bi autorite of Genesis. Mathew comeþ downward in rekenyng of Cristis eldris, and Luk goiþ upward, rekenyng of more fadris. For it sufficid to Mathew to telle how Crist bicam man bi þes þree fourtenes, biginnyng at Abraham. But Luk, figure of preestis<sup>b</sup>, telliþ more diffuseli how man stieþ up to God, from Adam to þe Trinite. And varyng of names, wip leevyng of sum fadris, techiþ how Matheu and Luk varien not in sentence<sup>c</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> *Osias, E.*<sup>2</sup> *Josy, E.*<sup>3</sup> *So E; A has soþ.*

<sup>a</sup> The four kings left out are—Ahaziah, Joash, Amaziah, and Eliakim. See the note on the subject in Dean Alford's Greek Testament.

<sup>b</sup> *Luk, figure of preestis.* The figure of the calf in the Apocalypse (ch. iv.) was very early associated with St. Luke, who was thought to treat more fully than the other Evangelists of the priestly office of Christ. See Cave's *Antiq. Apost.*, p. 169. In the *Legenda Aurea*, it is said, 'Lucas figuratur in vitulo, agens de Christi

sacerdotio;' and it is shown at great length how this evangelist was 'recte ordinatus,' in relation to God, to his neighbour, to himself, and to his office of writing the gospel.

<sup>c</sup> Dean Alford (in his notes on Matt. i. and Luke iii.) thinks that no attempt to reconcile the two genealogies has succeeded, laying stress at the same time on the fact that both give the line of Joseph, not that of Mary.

And þis text moten preestis knowe, to undirstonde Goddis lawe, and to defende it from false men þat arguen aȝens it. For siþ it is our bileve, we trowun fulli þat it is soþ<sup>1</sup>; and many helpis þer ben to undirstonde þis gendrure. For we may wite how Crist cam of aliens, and how þis comyng was figurid in oþir dedis þat Crist dide; as þe gospel of Luk telliþ how Crist cam to Jerusalem, boþe þourȝ Samarie and þe cuntre of Galile; and siþ Samarie was þanne in þe hondis of gentile men, and Galile was þanne in þe hondis of Jewis, þis comyng bitokeneþ þe gendrure of Crist, how he cam boþe of Jewis and gentil folk. And þis bitokeneþ over, how he wolde save hem boþe. Crist cam not evere of þe firste sone, but ofte of þe toþer sone; to teche us þe lore þat spiritual gendrure is figurid by Cristis comyng, and God telliþ more þerof þan of kyndeli gendrure. And þus ech word of þe gospel were lore to Cristene men, to travaile and to undirstonde þe privytees of God. And þus shulden preestis ȝyve hem to contemplacioun, and leve worldli occupacioun, wiþ vanytees of þe world. For wordis of Poul techen us þat what kyn þingis ben writun ben writun to oure lore, and to confort of us. And so bi suche confort we shal growe in hope.

Romans xv. 4.

ON HOOLI ROODE DAY IN HERVEST.

[SERMON CXVIII.]

*Nunc iudicium est mundi.*—JOHN xii. [31.]

Þis gospel telliþ how þat Crist in al his liif was aȝens þe fend, and speciali in his passioun þat he suffride of so greet love. And þus seiþ Crist of greet witt; *Now is jugement of þe world, now þe prince of þis world shal be cast out.*—Here men undirstonden þe world, þo men þat lyven worldli, and mesuren hem not bi Cristis lawe, for to go þe weie to hevене. Al þe folk of þis soort is a world þat shal be dampned. Al þe liif þat

Christ contending against Satan and judging the world.

<sup>1</sup> So E; A has soþ.



Crist lyvede here was a jugement of þis world, for it was an open mater to juge it at þe dai of dome. For no man may excuse þis, siþ God and man lyvede þus to teche men þe weye to hevene and fle þe falsnesse of þe fend, and ȝit man leveþ Cristis lore, and goiþ þe weie þat þe fend techiþ, þat ne þei leden<sup>1</sup> a liif here to make hem dampned aftirward. And so dampnacioun is taken now for dampnyng executid. And now, for cause of þis dampnyng, as þis gospel spekiþ here, þis world þat þus shal be dampned haþ a capteyn, þat is þe fend, þe which is clepid kyng and prince; for he is kyng of alle þe children of pryde, and he is prince of þis world, for he lediþ his lymes þis weie. But Crist seiþ here þat þis prince shal be cast out bi him. For Crist overcam þis fend, and tauȝte anoþer good lore, how þat men shulden come to hevene, and leeve þe fendis weie þat he tauȝte. For alȝif þe fend have children þe whiche he bigiliþ þus, neþeles þe ground is Goddis, siþ þei have her<sup>2</sup> kynde of God. And so þe fend, in al his werkes, is a tirant and a þeef.

But here shal we undirstonde þat al þat God haþ ordeyned to peyne moten nedis be dampned in helle; but many, bigilid bi þe fend, weren ordeyned to turne to Crist; and þes weren ever ordeyned to blis, and nevere to be dampned in helle. And to þis entent spekiþ Crist in þe word þat cometh aftir, þat *ȝif he be hiȝed fro þe erþe, he shal drawe alle þingis to him silf*. No doute Crist spekiþ here of his passioun of þe crosse; for þanne Crist is hiȝed fro þe erþe to many undirstondingis. And ȝif Crist semede þanne faile power to do ouȝt, ȝit he was þanne almyȝti, and his drawing was ful strong, for þanne he drowȝ bi his vertue alle men þat he shoop to blis. And so he drowȝ fro þe fend many þat he wenede to have, and so þes þat leeven undrawun wanten þe eende þat þei shulden have, and so þei ben clepid nouȝt oftetymes in holi writt. And þus spekiþ Crist here, þat þei ben alle þingis þat he drawiþ. Defaute is not in þis drawer whi þes fendis lymes ben not drawun, but defaute is in hem, þat þei fasten not on þis drawere, siþ noon is drawun but wilfulli, and he wantiþ good will; þei ben so slipre and so hard þat Goddis word takij not in hem.

<sup>1</sup> and þus þey leden, E.

<sup>2</sup> þe, E.

drawing all  
men and things  
to himself.

þis same gospel expownep to what entent Crist seide þes wordis. *Certis Crist seide þis, to telle what deep he shulde die. But þe puple answeride to Crist, and seide þat þei have herd of þe lawe þat Crist dwelliþ wipouten ende, and how seist þou þat mannis Sone mote be hized? who is he þis mannis Sone, and how shulde he suffre þis deþ? But Jesus saw how þis peple undirstood sumwhat bileve, and þei failiden on oper side of þingis þat þei shulden undirstonde. And þerfore seiþ Crist þus: 3if a litil lizt is in 3ou. Walke 3e while 3e have lizt, þat derknesse take 3ou not. It semeþ þat þis peple wiste how Crist tolde þat he shulde die upon þe crosse for mankynde, and þerbi drawe his children to him; but it semeþ þei wisten not now þat Crist was boþe God and man, and bi his soule he mai not die, as he dieþ not bi his Godhede; but whanne he is deed bi his fleish, his soule passiþ and drawiþ from helle. And þus Crist seiþ þei have a litil lizt, for þei have but litil bileve. But þei shulden walken in þis bileve, and so come to more lizt; for 3if þei walkyn in derkenesse of unbileve, þei gone amys, siþ al þat is not of bileve mote algatis be synne. For Crist seiþ afterward, þat, He þat walkiþ in derknes, he woot not whidir he goiþ. And so it is in goostli walking; he þat wantiþ bileve of Crist woot not for þat tyme wheþer he goiþ to hevене or helle, for lizt of feiþ wantiþ him.*

Rom. xiv. 23.

And, for Crist is bileve, þe which þat men shulden trowe here and se aftir clerli in blisse whanne þei ben clene come to hevене, *þerfore, seiþ Crist aftirward, þe while 3e have lizt, bileve 3e in lizt, þat 3e ben children of lizt;* þe which lizt is God himsilf. Here mai we se, in bileve, how feiþ is nedeful for to have, and how fleishli lif here is contrarie to Cristis crosse, and how þat worldli liif is dirk and makij men go from God.



DE GOSPEL ON SEYNT MATHEU EVYN.

## [SERMON CXIX.]

*Vidit Jesus publicanum*<sup>1</sup>.—LUC. v. [27.]

Þis gospel telliþ how Matheu was chosen, and how heretikes grutchiden herfore; for treuþe haþ evere aduersaries, þat beren hevy þat it shulde shyne. Þe gospel telliþ þat *Jesus saw a publican þat hiȝte Levy*. And þis Levy was Mathew<sup>2</sup>, as many men have diverse names,—as þis Mathew<sup>2</sup>, Petre, and Poul, varieden þer names whanne þei weren apostlis. And þis manere have þe popis, whanne þei ben newe maad popis. But God wolde þat þei changiden to vertues as dide apostlis of Crist. But sum men seien þei changen to synnes, for her chesyng is not of God; þei ben not clepid of Crist to mekenesse, but to pride and worldli liif. And þus al is ypocrisie, and no fruyt to þe Chirche þat þei done, in þis chesing bi ordenance of mannis lawe; and þis envynemeþ myche of þe Chirche bi process of tyme. Jesus siȝ þis Levy *sitting at þe tol-boþe, and seide to him, Sue me*. And wiþ þis word he ȝaf him vertue.

And here þe fend blyndiþ men whanne þei proven bi Goddis lawe þat þei shulden make siche chesing, for Crist clepide his apostlis. But certis an ape is not so blynd in knowing of diversite. It semeþ þat bi Goddis lawe men shulden purge first þe popis state, and algatis þat he were pore and witti, and willi<sup>3</sup> for to profite to þe Chirche after Goddis lawe; and þanne chese him, as Mathi<sup>4</sup> was chosen. And þis were sum similitude to sue here Crist and his apostlis. For wel Y woot þat alle þes cheseris witen not wher þei chesen a fend; as þei witen not wher þei lawe be evene aȝens Goddis wille<sup>5</sup>. And þes two ben to dirke weies to lede alle Cristyndoom to hevене.

Þe storie telliþ how þat *Mathew*<sup>6</sup> *forsok al þat he hadde, and*

<sup>1</sup> So E; *Vidit Jhesus publicanum*, A.

<sup>2</sup> So E; *Matbu*, A.

<sup>3</sup> *willy*, E.

<sup>4</sup> *Matbi*, i. e. Mathias, is the reading of E, and seems preferable; A has *Matbu*. Compare Sermon CI.

<sup>5</sup> *lawe*, E.

<sup>6</sup> So E; *Matbu*, A.

The call of  
Matthew.

Popes should  
be chosen in the  
same way that  
St. Matthias  
was chosen.

Gospel con-  
tinued.

*suede Jesus, boþe in place and in vertues. Þis Leevy made Crist a greet feeste in his hous, wiþ mouche folk; for, as þe gospel telliþ, þer was moche puple of puplicans, and of oper men, his aqueintis, þat weren come to ete wiþ him. And Phariseis and scribis of hem grutchiden azens Crist, seiying to his disciplis, Whi etin 3e and drynken boþ wiþ puplicans and sinful men? Sich men ben puplicans þat traveilen aboute comune work, to gadere tollis and comyne rentis, to þe use of þe emperour. And þis travail dampneden Jewis, as traveile of sinful men; and for using of þis work þei dampnyden<sup>1</sup> men þat comuneden wiþ hem. And Jesus answeyng seide to hem, Hool men have noo nede of leche, but seke men in þer bodi. And so, siþ Crist cam to heele men, and seþ þat sich men mai be hool, he moot bi resoun comune wiþ hem, and maken hem hool as he disposiþ. For Crist cam not to clepe just men, but sinful men to do penaunce.*

The modern Pharisees, from covetousness, hinder poor priests from communing with the poor and sinful.

Here mai we see þat it is good to sum men to comune wiþ sinful men; but þei moten be as Crist was, not to be worsid wiþ þes men. But whanne þei mai do hem good, it were synne to lette þis good. But þes scribis and Phariseis magniefiden þer owne stat, þat no man shulde take from hem, but encrease in worldli goodis. And þus seien now oure Phariseis, boþe religiose and preestis. But Crist telliþ not bi þis sentence, for it is nest of coveitise. For stat þat Crist 3af to his apostlis is now to generali dispisid, þat men shulden be apaied wiþ foode and wiþ hilyng to her bodi. And al mennis bisynesse shulde<sup>2</sup> be sett to gete vertues to þe soule, for þanne þei seken þe rewme of God, and rihtwisnesse of þis rewme. And wiþ þis God mai not faile of þes two þingis to mannis bodi; as Crist proveþ bi Matheus gospel, boþe bi foulis and bi lilies. For if men failen in foode or hilyng, þat is for her synne bifore. And þat is more for þer profit, 3if þei ben wise and pacient; for a betere wey to hevене is algatis more profitable, and he is an overmyche fool þat wole have al his goodis here.

<sup>1</sup> So E; *dampnen*, A.

<sup>2</sup> So E; *shul*, A.

THE GOSPEL ON SEINT MATHEUS DAY.

[SERMON CXX.]

*Cum transiret Jesus.*—MATT. ix. [9.]

Þis gospel þat Mathew seiþ here is nyȝ al oon wiþ þe laste ; but ȝit oo gospelere<sup>1</sup> expowneþ anoþer, and varieþ sumwhat to oure lore. Mathew<sup>2</sup> telliþ, *þat Jesus passinge saw a man þat was clepid Matheu*<sup>2</sup>. And þis he meneþ bi himsilf, for it sowneþ to Goddis worship and to reproof of himsilf. What worship shulde þis Mathew have, þat he sat in þe tol boþe, occupied wiþ þe worldli workes, and þus fer fro þe liif of Crist? Grace and mercy is in Crist þat he wolde clepe þus siche a man, boþe bi vois and bi wille, to leewe siche worldli workis, and to go riȝt þe weie to hevene *in sunge þis good duke*. Mathew leeveþ of his feeste, for it sowneþ to worldli fame, and telliþ *how, Jesus eet in þe hous, and publicans and many sinful wiþ him*. And þis word sowneþ not to boost of Mathew<sup>2</sup>, but to mercy of Jesus Crist. But *Fariseis* of Cristis tyme *hadden desdeyn* of þis dede, *and seide to Cristis disciplis*, in reproof of him and hise, *Whi etip your Maistir wiþ publicans and sinful men*, þat is unleeveful? For who shulde comune wiþ cursid men, lest þat he were foulid wiþ hem? And þis word wolde be litli seid now of men þat we feynen cursid ; for we holden a more synne to ete and drynke wiþ sich men þan us<sup>3</sup> to do a cursid dede þat were aȝens Goddis worship. For Phariseis coveiten þer owne wynnyng, and leeven þe worship of God. But *Jesus herde þes blynde wordis, and seide to þes Phariseis, A leche is not nedeful unto men þat faren wel, but to syke men þat faren yvel* ; and so it is goostli. *And Crist bad þese men go forþ and telle folk what it is, þat he wolde mercy and not sacrifice*.

And who so cam þis dai in þe Chirche, and tolde þis ordre

Humility of  
St. Matthew  
exemplified in  
his account  
of his own  
conversion.

The modern  
clergy perse-

<sup>1</sup> *gospeller*, E.

<sup>2</sup> So E; *Matbu*, A.

<sup>3</sup> þus, E.

cute those who,  
like Christ,  
preach mercy  
before sacrifice.

wiþ þis<sup>1</sup> sentence, preestis wolden clepe him ertike, and moven oþer men to holden him siche, for þei tellen more bi þer wynnyng þan bi treuþe of Goddis lawe. Ȝif þou wolt asaie þis now, preche opinli to þe peple þat God telliþ more bi workes of mercy, þe which ben in a mannis soule, þan bi offering, or by dymes, or oþer goodis ȝovun to freris, and þou shalt have enemyes anoon to bere heresie on þee. For þei holden as bileve þat Ȝif þe ordre þat Crist ordeynede were holden streitli, as he bad, holi Chirche were distroied. But Crist seiþ þat he cam not to clepe just men from þer weie, but to clepe sinful men from þer errour þat þei ben inne. Here mai we wel witen þat Crist moveþ alle good men; sum yvel men Crist clepiþ from wrong weie þat þei ben inne; and sum good men Crist mooveþ to go gladlier her riȝt weie. And so Crist moveþ ever to good, and from errour þat men ben ynne.

ON MYꝞHELMASSE DAL.

[SERMON CXXI.]

*Accesserunt discipuli ad Jesum.*—MATT. xviii. [1.]

Who is the  
greatest in the  
kingdom of  
heaven.

Þis gospel telliþ how Crist loveþ men þat dwellen in þis world. And we shulen take as bileeve þat Crist loveþ more vertuous men, whiche he haþ ordeynede to blisse, þan all þe men þat shal be dampned, for Crist loveþ ech þing aftir þat it is good. And þus seiþ þe storie of Matheu, how, *Discipulis cam to Jesus and axiden him, who, he hopiþ, is more in þe rewme of hevene?* Leeve we gramariens doutis<sup>a</sup> wher 'quis putas' be two wordis or oo word, and of what part, and what is þe witt þerof; for here us þinkþ it is o word and þis is þe witt þerof; What is þi jugement, which man is more here; for hope of Crist, þat

<sup>1</sup> So E; þese, A.

<sup>a</sup> De Lyra mentions no such doubts, and it is difficult to realize the state of mind of that 'gramarien,' who should speculate on the possi-

bility of 'quis putas' being one word. Both Wycliffite versions translate, 'Who, gessist thou.'

mai not erre, is his riȝt judgement, and þis word wantiþ noumbre and persone and <sup>1</sup> witt of wordis bi hemsilf.

And Jesus tauȝte his answeꝛe in dede, for it is profitable to men; siþ whomever Crist jugiþ more is more algatis, siþ judgement of þe world and of men failliþ ofte. *Jesus toke a litil child*, in quantite and in soule, for he was litil in bodi, and þerwiþ he was meke. Rekke we not who þis man was, ne trowe we not to mennis talis þat þis was Marcial, or Joon, or anoþer apostle<sup>a</sup>; for ȝif Crist wolde þat we couden þis, he wolde have tolde þis in his gospel. But kepe we us in mekenesse þat Crist wolde put us inne. For ignorance of þis doute doiþ noon harm to Cristen men, and knowyng þerof shulde do no good to geting of þe blisse of hevене. Crist toke þis litil man, and *putte him in myddil of apostlis, and seide to hem, Sobli, but ȝif ȝe ben convertid, and be maad as litil children, ȝe shal not entre into þe rewme of hevenes*, for ȝour pride. For, ever as a man is more meke, evere þe betere man he is. And so, as Crist is beste man, so is he þe mekeste man. And as nouȝt mai be lowere þan centre, so noon mai be mekere þan Crist. And it is oon to suppose þat þis is þe mekeste man and þat þis man is Crist, ouþer on o manere or oþer. Alle men of þe rewme of hevене drawun to þis centre, to make þis rewme. And þis centre holdiþ up al þing, and put <sup>2</sup> it in his degree. But þis centre is everywhere, and not only in oo point.

Þis word of Crist may wel be proved undirstonding sadnesse in vertues; for no man mai have ony vertue but ȝif he have mekenesse, ground of alle. And siþ no man mai come to hevене, but ȝif he be clopid in vertues, it is open to trewe men þat no man mai come to hevене, but ȝif he have mekenes to grounde his toure up to hevене. And siþ bileve techiþ us þat holi Chirche is a bodi, and þis noble bodi is ordeyned of Crist, bi every part and joynture þerof, it semeþ to many men

<sup>1</sup> as, E.

<sup>2</sup> putteþ, E.

<sup>a</sup> St. Jerome, in his commentary on this passage, is silent respecting the identity of the little child. But Petrus Comestor in the *Historia Scholastica* (cap. xc.), and Nicholas de Lyra, both give the tradition

referred to in the text, namely, that this little child grew up to be a certain St. Marcialis, who was sent into Gaul by St. Peter, and preached the faith to the people of the Limousin.

Christ's answer to the question.

þat alle þes newe ordris ben rotyn postumes, and tatered cloutis. Lord! siþ freris blamen wel tating of mennis cloþis, how myche were it to blame tating of þe Chirche cloutis. But þat þat þes newe ordris leeven in manniss sijte, þei fulfillen in oure modir, þat is a betere persone. For alle þes ordris ben cloutid bi Cristis religioun wiþouten his autorite, and departid among hem silf. And it semeþ to many men þat þei ben þe charge<sup>1</sup> of þe chirche, and enpeiren Cristis ordre his lawe and his ordenaunce. And þus þenken many men þat þei shulden be suspect, bifore þat þei hadden groundid her liif in Cristis lawe. And many men have conscience to forþere þes ordris, in word and in dede, bifore þat þei ben tauzte þat Crist approveþ þes ordris; for ellis þei reversiden Crist and weren wiþ Anticrist. And so alle þes novelries, þat ben not groundid in Cristis lawe, men supposen as heresies til þat þei ben tauzte þe contrarie. And dymes, and offringis, and defending of þis persone þat doiþ azens Goddis lawe, semen bi lawe of conscience to be azens Goddis wille, and so shulden men leeven hem. But leeve we þis matere, and trowe to Cristis word, *þat whoso mekiþ him, as þis zong man, he is þe more in þe rewme of hevenes. And whoso takip sich a litil oon in þe name of Crist, he takip Crist; at þe leste in his membre.* For we supposen þat Crist preiseþ not þe fend in þis zong man. *And whoso slaundriþ oon of þes litil þat trowen in me, it spedip to him þat a mylne stoon be tied in his nekke, and þat he be dreint<sup>2</sup> in þe depenes of þe see.* And, as Gregori seiþ<sup>a</sup>, it spedip to þis man þat he have hevvy worldis charge to depe him in worldli traveile; for þanne he shulde mekelier in caas be dampned in helle þan he now shulde. *Woo be to þe world of sclaundris! For it is nedeful þat slaundris comen, but nepeles woo be þat man bi whom slaundre come.*

<sup>1</sup> grete charge, E.

<sup>2</sup> dreynt, E.

<sup>a</sup> Commenting on this passage of St. Matthew in his *Moralia* (lib. vi. § 57) St. Gregory says that by the sea we must understand this world,—by the mill-stone, worldly business,—and that there are some who, forsaking the common life of the world, and betaking themselves to spiritual contemplation, not only go astray themselves, but mislead the

little ones of Christ. 'Qui ergo unum de minimis scandalizat, melius illi fuerat, alligata collo mola asinaria, in mare projici; quia nimirum perversae menti expeditius esse potuisset, ut occupata mundo terrena negotia ageret, quam per contemplationis studia ad multorum perniciem vacaret.'



Slandre is wrong dede, þat makij man falle in synne. And þis fallij boþe in worldli men and oþer, and speciali in ypocritis of þes newe religiouns; for þei done woo to oþer<sup>1</sup> ordris, and jugement of oþir men for her ypocrisie makij many men be sclandrid. For novelries in oure lawe maken errours in jugement, and so þei harmen þe Chirche boþe in soule and bodi. Crist biddij aftirward, *ʒif þi hond or þi foot sclauindir þee, kille it of, and caste it fro þee.* Here men seien sopli, þat bi her bodili lymes ben undirstonden mennis workes and mennis affeccions; and þes ben kittid fro men whanne þe vertue of þeir soule wantij sich workes, and occasioun to do þus. *It is betere to þee to be here feble or crokid, and, wip þis, come to hevenli liif, þan to have here þes lymes and after be sent to helle.* Þis word is ful dredeful to men þat wolen here be greet, and have many servantis, or many of her ordre, and after, for parting of her synne, ben dampned to helle. And þus was Joon Baptiste wipouten hondis or feete here<sup>a</sup>, and so he was myʒty in hevene for his symple meeknesse. And to þis entent seiþ Crist, *ʒif þin iʒe sclauindre þee, pyke it out, and caste it fro þee.* Bi þis iʒe we undirstonden yvel sizte of a mannis eye; as lecherous and coveitous have ofte wickid iʒen. Caste awei þes wickide workis, and turne þee to medeful sizte. And ʒif þou be a greet maistir, as bishop or erchedekene, and þou have a wickide servaunt þat turneþ þee to coveitise, putte him out of his office and remeeve him fer away. *It is betere to þee to come wip oon iʒe to þe liif, þan here have two iʒen and after be sent to þe fier of helle,* as it is betere to men to lyve here a simple liif, and come after to hevene for mekenesse of þe herte, þan after myche myrþe here be dampned in helle.

*Be ʒe war þat ʒe dispise not oon þat is litil here; for sopli I seie to ʒou, þat her aungels seen evere þe face of my Fadir which is in hevene.* Alʒif men seien comunli þat ech man haþ two aungels, a good and an yvel, to do him good and traveile him,

<sup>1</sup> So E; *ber*, A.

\* The words must not be taken literally, for no such astounding legend was ever afloat concerning John the Baptist or his martyrdom, so far at least as I can discover,—

but simply as meaning, 'in this sense John the Baptist, after he was thrown into prison, was helpless and resourceless, reaping thereby a greater reward in heaven.'

The poor and simple of Christ ought not to be despised.

nepeles men þat shal be saaf have algatis blessid angels which in al her worching seen evere God clereli, for God is everywhere, and seep syche gode werkis<sup>1</sup>. And þis meeveþ many men to dispise not þes pore men<sup>2</sup> and of simple state here; for we witen not how God loveþ hem. And among evidence þat shulde meeve men to mekenes, bileve of þis gospel shulde meeve men to flee dispite. For ȝif a man were ayre aparant<sup>3</sup> of Englund or of France, many men wolden do him worship for þis worldli titil; myche more ȝif a man be eire of þe blisse of hevene. And apparaunce of þis heritage is more licli to trewe men, bi good lyf of men after þe lawe of Crist, þan apparaunce of worldli lordship bi dissence of heritage. And so wickid liif of men makip hem serve þe fendis children; as it is seid þat a bishop haþ a þousand ȝen to noie, but he haþ not half an ȝe to profit after Goddis lawe. And þus many men supposen þat þes ben blynde fendis children. For many men have molworpis<sup>4</sup> ȝen, þat þinken evere of worldli goodis, and þes ben no good lederis to teche men þe weie to hevene.

DE GOSPEL ON ALLE HALWEN EVYN.

[SERMON CXXII.]

*Respiciens Jesus in discipulos.*—JOHN xvii. [II.]<sup>a</sup>

Þis gospel tellip how Crist preied for his apostlis upon þe Þursdai þat he shulde die on þe morewe. And so he medlip many treupis, boþe hiȝe and sutil. Joon seiþ þat, *Jesus lokynge upon hise disciplis seide: Holi Fadir, kepe hem in þi name which þou hast ȝovun me, þat þei ben oon, as we two ben oon.* And here it is seid comunli, þat ech oonhede is of sum fourme. And so þer ben foure oonhedis þat men speken of comunli.

<sup>1</sup> So E; A reads *seen wiþ sicke workes*, which makes no sense. <sup>2</sup> So E; om. A. <sup>3</sup> *beyr apparaunt*, E. <sup>4</sup> *molwarpis* or *mollis*, E.

<sup>a</sup> In the modern Roman missal this gospel belongs to the mass 'for the removal of Schism;' the gospel

for All Hallows eve is taken from Luke vi. 17-23.

De leste oonhede is in peple<sup>1</sup>, þe which ben oon in kynde; and ȝif þei ben oon in vertues þan þei ben more oon. Þe secounde oonheede is of man; þat many partis of him ben knitt in oo soule and governed bi þe vertue of it. Leeve we oþer oonhedis of oþer bodies bi her fourmes. Þe þridde onhede is of þe Chirche and of her partis, oon in God; and þis is more woundirful þan ony man can her<sup>2</sup> telle. Þe ferþe oonhede and þe moste, þat is rote of alle oþir, is oonhede of þe Trinite, in þe fourme of oo Godhede. And þus þree per-soones ben oon, and noon oþer mai þus be oon. Neþeles Crist preieþ þat hise apostlis ben oon, as þe Trinite is oon; but not in þe same manere; but as þe Trinite is oon in oonhede of substaunce, so Cristis apostlis ben oon in þe same Godhede, and mai nevere after be severid, as þes þree per-soones mai nevere be severid. And þis is sum similitude, al ȝif it be fer fro God. And betere preier miȝte no man preie to God for synful men. *Crist seiþ of his apostlis: Whanne he dwelte wiþ hem, he kepte hem in his Fadirs name, and noon of hem perishide but þe child of lesyng, þat moste nedis be lost, for he was a quyk fend, to fulfille Holi Writt.* And here men douten comunli whi Crist chees Judas, siþ Crist wiste þat he shulde be dampned. But here we seien þat<sup>a</sup> for helpe of þe Chirche þat Crist wiste þat he shulde do, and, as Crist himsilf seiþ here, to fulfille holi writt. And þe same questioun maist þou axe, whi God made men þat shulde be dampned, siþ þat God wiste of þese men al þat shulde befall of hem? siþ God ordeyneþ good for hem, and good þat falliþ to his Chirche; for þei have levere þus to be dampned þan nevere to have be; but þei wolen not þis expresli, alȝif þei wolen þis pryvyli. And myche good cam of Judas, wherefore we shulde þanke God, and dampne þis traitour to Crist, and flee siche bi ensaunple of him. Lord! siþ Scarioth was ordeyned to be in Cristis religioun, þe which is þe beste þat mai be, and Crist suffride him to go out þerof, whi shulden not þes newe ordris suffre men to go from hem, and speciali whanne þei synnen

<sup>1</sup> þe puple, E.<sup>2</sup> here, E.<sup>a</sup> Understand, after þat, the words 'Christ chose him.'

and men wolden go out for vertues? And many of þes newe ordris passen Scarioth in coveitise, and for averise of goodis þei ben traitours to treuþe.

Many þingis telliþ þe gospel of Crist and of Scarioth, þe which ben liȝt to men after, ȝif þei wolden take hem. Crist telliþ bifore of traierie of Scarioth, and how he shal be dampned to helle, notwiþstonding his ordre. *Crist seiþ* aftirward, *þat he comeþ to his Fadir, and spekiþ þes þingis to his disciplis, þat þei have his joie fulfillid in hem.* And, as Crist myȝte not faile of þis, so þei myȝten not faile of þis ende. And alȝif Crist was evermore in wending to his Fadir,—for he myȝte not gon abak, ne erre in his weye bi synne,—neþeles, in tyme of his dep, he wente out of þis worldli lyf. *Crist ȝaf to his disciplis Goddis word for to preche, and þe world hatide hem, for þei ben not of þe world,* as Crist is not of þis world; and þerfore weren þei goode prechours. He þat loveþ worldli goodis and worldli dwelling, as propre to him, is lettid to seie þe treuþe, as we mai se in þes ordris. *Crist preieþ not to take hem ȝit out of þe world, but to kepe hem here fro þe greet yvel,* and þat þei profite to þe Chirche in þe name of þe Trinite. Crist seiþ of hise apostlis, *þat þei ben not of þe world as he is not of þe world.* And þis men undirstonden þus; þis world is alle þo men þat ben dampned for love of þe world. And þanne þis word of Crist is open, for þei loven heven and litil þis world. For sich as is þis fadir and priour of þe ordre of Cristyn men, sich ben his children of his covent, and haten þe welþe of þis world. And bi þis mai men knowen which ben disciplis of Crist.

And Crist preieþ to þis ende, *þat his Fadir stable hem in treuþe,* and þanne he stabliþ hem in *his word; for his word is þe firste treuþe.* He biddiþ not stable hem in worldli wordis, as ben fablis and feyned lesingis, but in treuþe of Jesus Crist, which þei shulden trowe and teche. And, to conferme þis preier, Crist spekiþ to his Fadir, *As þou sentist me in to þis world, so I sente hem in<sup>1</sup> þis world<sup>2</sup>.* Crist cam in to þis world to witnesse treuþe, and to liȝte þis world; and as Crist boþe God and man cam hidir to þis entent, so alle his disciplis

Strength  
through truth.

<sup>1</sup> into, E.

<sup>2</sup> So E; in A the words *As—world* are not italicized.

traveilen þus unto her deef. How shulde treuþe not kepe hem þat stonden þus to defenden treuþe? Crist, and Baptist, and oþer moo hadden not here reward for þis, but in hevene blis, hid fro men, for þe world is unworthi to take it. And trowe we not þat clepid miraclis þat ben maad at þe tumbis of seintis maken hem more blessid in hevene þan oþer þat done not here sich miraclis. And to conferme þis word of seintis, seiþ Crist of himsilf: *For hem I conferme mysilf, þat þei ben confermed in trupe.* Alle þe dedis þat Crist dide here weren so stabled in God, þat boþe þei and manere of hem moten nedis come as þei camen. And þes dedis of Cristis liif weren maad ensauple to his disciplis, þat þei shulden sadli do Goddis workes, and take þerto ensauple of Crist.

Crist 3eþeþ us after a confort and seiþ, *He preiþ not oonli for hem, but for alle þat comen after and bileve in Crist bi her word.* And þes wordis seid of Crist shulden quykene men þat ben dede, and, 3if bileve stood in hem, make hem do as apostlis diden. For alle men þat shal be saf, riht to þe dai of dome, moten nedis in þis sue Crist, and ellis þei shal not make oo Chirche.

And þus seiþ Crist, þat his preier moot nedis make alle seintis oon; for o bodi, þat is holi Chirche, drawiþ<sup>1</sup> to Crist, as erþe to þe centre. For as it is seid bifore, *holi Chirche moot nedis be oon, as þe Fadir is in þe Sone, and þe Sone is in þe Fadir;* and so, bi stabilnes of Cristis membris, *þat þe world trowe þat God sente him*<sup>2</sup>. And now prelatis traveilen to litil to maken men trowe þis bileve, for þei gon not in Cristis weie, neiþer bi word ne bi dede. And Crist seiþ of þes membris, *þat he 3af hem þe clarite*<sup>3</sup> *þat his Fadir 3af hem; þat þei ben oon after oonhede of Persones;* and so þis oonhede be þus maad,—*þat Crist be in his lymes, as þe Fadir is in Crist. And so þei ben endid in oon, be fillid*<sup>4</sup> *in þe blisse of hevene, for þus shal þe Chirche wite how þe Fadir sente his Sone and lovede membris of þe Chirche, as he hap loved Crist. Fadir, þo þat þou 3avest me, Y wole þat þei be þere þat Y am, þat þei see my clarite*<sup>5</sup> *which*

Comfort for  
Christians who  
have believed  
without having  
seen.

Christ's prayer  
for unity.

<sup>1</sup> So E; þat drawiþ, A.

<sup>2</sup> So E; the clause is not italicized in A.

<sup>3</sup> cbarite, E; clerenesse in both Wycliffite versions.

<sup>4</sup> and so þey ben in

one, and þis endyng in one scbal be fulfilling, E.

<sup>5</sup> cbarite, E.

*pou hast ȝouun me. And confermyng of þis preier is treuþe of þes wordis, þat þe Fadir lovede Crist bifore þe making of þe world. Juste Fadir, þis world haþ not knowun þee, but Y have knowun þee, and þes knewen þat þou sentist me. And Y have maad knowun þi name to hem, and I shal make it knowun, þat þe love þat þou hast loved me be in hem and Y in hem. And in þis hiȝe unite is endid þe blisse of þe Chirche.*

ÞE GOSPEL ON ALLE HALEWEN DAY.

[SERMON CXXIII.]

*Videns Jesus turbas ascendit.*—MATT. v. [I.]

ÞIS gospel telliþ of eiȝte blesis þat answeren to eiȝte vertues in þe weie, and bi þes shulden Cristyne men dispose hem to come to blis. *Jesus seying þe puple stiede in to an hil, and whanne he was sett his disciplis camen to him. And he openede his mouþ and tauȝte hem and seide, Blessid be þore men in spirit, for hern is þe rewme of hevene.* Ech word of þis gospel is of greet wisdom. For it is ful notable þat Jesus saw þis puple able to be lerned, and hadde mercy on hem, and ȝaf hem so plentenusly þes ȝiftis of goostli mercy, for þes ȝiftis ben betere þan ȝiftis of bodili mercy. Crist wente into an hil, and his disciplis wenten wiþ him, to teche þat þei shulden be nyȝ hevene þat shulde teche or lerne þis lore. And þus molde-worpiþ<sup>1</sup> þat wroten þe erþe ben unable to þis loore. Sitting of Crist in þe hil bitokeneþ stabilnes in þis lessoun. And herfore seintis writen mouche of þis sermoun of oure Lord in þe hil, for auctorite of þe doctour, and many circumstanciis of him, makij þis lore notable to alle Cristene men aftir. For what man of bileve trowij þat Crist openede þus his mouþ, (and he is wisdom of þe Fadir and þe same God wiþ him, and as he openede his mouþ to speke, so he openede hertis of men to heere and undirstonde þes wordis, and teche hem men þat camen aftir), þat ne

<sup>1</sup> *mollis*, E.

On the eight  
beatitudes.

Immense sig-  
nificance of  
the Sermon on  
the Mount.

he wolde forse<sup>1</sup> him to knowe hem, boþe for worshiþe and for profit?

Crist seiþ first, Blessid ben þo þat ben pore in spirit; and here Crist techiþ mekenesse, aþens pride of worldli men. And here men seien sopli, þat Crist clepide povert in spirit, for bodili povert is noȝt, but ȝif it have þis povert. For boþe vertues and synnes ben first in þe spirit. And wanting of goodis standiþ wiþ a dampned man; as beggeris and þeves ben ofte porer þan Joob was; but povert in spirit stondiþ in mekenes,—whanne a man knowiþ þe makere above, how he is riche wiþouten eende, and we ben pore beggeris,—and puttiþ hem<sup>2</sup> mekeli in þe ordenaunce of God. How þat God wole ordeyne for his servaunt ouþer do or suffre, he holdiþ him wel paied; siþ God is a ferour<sup>3</sup> and he is Goddis instrument, redi wher God wole make him hamer, or tongis, or a stiþie, to suffre howevere þat God wole. And certis noon cometh to hevene but ȝif he be þus pliable; for a ferour formeþ not his metal, but ȝif it wole be temperid, and þis vertue lastiþ boþe here and in hevene. And þefore seiþ Crist, þat sich pore men have þe rewme of hevene. For þe blisse of hevene falliþ not to a creature but ȝif he be þus pore; as Crist, and aungels, and oþer blessid seintis have fulli þis povert, and þefore þei ben blessid. And no man myȝte here lerne more nedeful lessoun þan bigynne at þis povert, and grounden him wel þerinne. And so shulden men note þe firste proude noumbre<sup>a</sup>, and aþen ech part of it grounden hem in mekenesse. Sum men ben proud for holynesse þat þei feynen; and þes men ben ypocritis moost perilous of alle oþere. Sum men ben proud for cunningȝ þat þei have; as þe laste friend of Joob seide, his beli was ful as

The first  
beatitudo.

<sup>1</sup> *bisyn*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *putten bym*, E.

<sup>3</sup> *ferour*, E.

Job xxxii. 19.

<sup>a</sup> The number 2 is probably meant by the 'firste proude noumbre.' The Pythagoreans called it *τάλμη* among other things, and assigned to it various revolutionary attributes. But no author that I have consulted speaks of the number 6 otherwise than as synonymous with perfection, as symbolizing matrimony, creation, and a hundred other excellent things. The num-

ber 9 on the other hand was treated with great indignity; Peter Bungus says that it denotes the ruin of the angels, who fell through pride, and of whom there were *nine* orders, that it embraces all heretics, and characterizes infidels and idolaters, &c., &c. See the *Denarius Pythagoricus* of Meursius in Gronovius' *Thesaurus*, vol. IX, and the *Numerorum Mysteria* of Petrus Bungus.

a toune fillid wiþ must þat wantide aventing. And þus seien wise men, þat Crist, in þe firste word, undirstondiþ bi spirit þe wynd þat a man haþ, for it falliþ to meke men to be wiþouten bostyng, for sich proude bostours hav to mouche of sich wynd. But ȝit oþer proude men bosten of bodili strengþe; and summe of beute of bodi, as Roboam and Absolon. Þe fifþe pride, and þe laste, is pride of worldli richesse,—as þe gospel telliþ of bosting of a proude man, how he wolde reste in his goodis and alarge his bernes. And as many ȝiftis as man haþ of God may he be proud of but oonli of vertues. And so sum men tellen sixe þe secound proude<sup>1</sup> noumbe<sup>a</sup>, how sum men ben proud for nobley of her kyn. But povert of spirit is medecine for alle sich. Bigynne here þis poverte and ende it in hevene. For ȝif þou be þus pore, þou dispisist þis world.

The second.

Þe secounde vertue in þis weie nedeful to us here, *is myldenes in beryng*, þat sueþ of þe firste; for whoever is pore in spirit is mylde to his neizbore, boþe in word and in dede, and not fel as a lioun. And as pride is quenched bi poverte of spirit, so bi þes two vertues ben quenched envie and ire. And Crist seiþ wiseli þat mede of þis vertue *shal after be, havyng of þe lond of lyf*. And þis is for to come, as þis myldenes is here; for in hevene mai no man be austerne to oþer. And alȝif sich myldenes makip men here lordis, neþeles bi þis lond Crist undirstondiþ þe lond of blisse. For alle þes eiȝte vertues have for her mede þe blisse of hevene by diverse resouns.

The third.

Þe þridde word of þis eiȝte is seid in þis maner: *Blessid be þei þat weilen, for þei shal be confortid*. Ȝif a man avise him how Goddis wille is reversid by synne þat rengneþ in þe world, in persones and comynetees, he shal have mater to morne, and litil to be glad. For, siþ ech man is holden to confourme his wille to Goddis, he is not on Goddis side þat is glad of sich synne. For alȝif God sew not as men maken sorowe, neþeles, bi Goddis lawe, God is seid to be ireful, and algatis wiþ sovereyne joie God ordeyneþ for peyne; and þis is mater to morne to men þat ben in charite. And ȝif a man be glad for

<sup>1</sup> So E; om. A.

<sup>a</sup> See note on preceding page.



sich synne, wiþ oþer men of his lond, for him þinkip þat hardynesse or worldli profite comeþ þerof, he assentiþ on two maners to þe synne of hem. And for sich assenting God poneship juste men wiþ shrewis, boþe in pestilence and werris, and oþer comyne veniauncis. For fewe or noon ben in þe<sup>1</sup> rewmes þat ne þei assenten þus, ouþer faillinge in helpe to distrye siche synnes, or faillinge in repreef of men þat synnen þus. But in blisse, where we shal see þat God doip al for þe beste, and men shal be confortid boþe of joie and peyne, men shal be fulli confortid for sich weiling here. And þis mooveþ many men to seien her Pater nosters, and preie in þe þrid<sup>2</sup> word þat Goddis wille be done. And so of þe same þing men mornen and have joie. And so, ȝif we þenken of weiling of oure owne synne, and mournyng of oure neiȝboris synne þat we dwellen wiþ, and tariyng of oure blisse þat we shal have in hevene, we have litil mater for to lauzhe, but raþer for to morne. For companies and castelis maken us not syker here.

Crist seiþ in þe ferþe word: *Blessid be þei þat hungren and þirsten riȝtwisnesse, for þei shal be fullid in þe blisse of hevene.* And as þe nexte, mornyng, lettiþ slouþe in Goddis service<sup>3</sup>, so þis fourþe, hungring, lettiþ men fro covetise. For ȝif we þenken on Goddis lawe, and speciali of preestis, how þei defoulen Cristis ordenaunce, turnyng aȝen to synne of fleishe þe world and þe fend, a just man shulde hungre and þirste þe riȝtwisnesse of sich men. And more desire þat man shulde have to perfourme þis riȝtwisnesse can Y not see here, þan wille þat Cristis ordenaunce were fillid in mesure and noubre and weiȝte þat Crist haþ ordeyned for his Chirche; and algatis in poverte of spirit þat his preestis<sup>4</sup> shulden have. For ȝif þe state of preestis be more worldli þan knyztis state, who dredip þat ne pride wole sue, wiþ averice and lecherie, and leevyng of þe office þat Crist bad his preestis do? And so, in stede of heerdis þat shulden teche þe weie to hevene, þe Chirche is ful of wolves þat sinken and drawun men to helle. For Cristis ordenaunce was riȝtwise, and speciali of preestis poverte; alȝif newe sectis seien now þat Cristis ordenaunce were now ful of venym. Þis

The fourth.

<sup>1</sup> om. E.<sup>2</sup> þridde. E.<sup>3</sup> *servauntis*, E.<sup>4</sup> So E; *prest.* A.

shulden lordis þenken on, and traveilen to amende þis; for ellis þei shal not be fillid in hevене bi blisse of þe lymes of Crist. For whoso seiþ þat þei consenten not to þis synne, þat is rote of oþir, he disseyveþ þes lordis in lore þat schulde<sup>1</sup> be her soulis helpe. But alȝif sum men mornen, and crien of þis defaute in þe Chirche, ȝit þe fendis part is so strong þat grete and harde gobetis wolen laste to þe tyme of þe laste dome. And so we shal hungir here and after drynke softeli riȝtwisnesse. For after domes dai, we witen wel þat þe fendis part shal not be þus strong.

The fifth.

Þe fifte word of Crist is þis: *Blessid be merciful men, for þei shal sue<sup>2</sup> mercy*, þat shal be comyn to al þe Chirche. And here þe fend bindiþ men, and telliþ hem þat mercy axiþ ȝyving of riches and of worldli þingis þat mooven men to do aȝens God. Þese heretikis þenken not how Crist ponishiþ here his children, which he wole be pore here, to be riche after in hevене. And þis vertue serveþ aȝens al synne, but alȝatis aȝens averise.

The sixth.

Þe sixte word þat Crist seide stondiþ in þis forme: *Blessid be men of clene herte, for þei shal see God*. And þis vertue is bridil aȝens fleishli synnes, and alȝatis aȝens leccherie. For love of sich men, which ben as beestis, is fer from þe love of God. And alȝif men changen her willis after her eldis, neþeles þee willis ben here to oure purpos. Sum men have childis wille, þat feden her wittis wiþ sensible þingis and ȝaping<sup>3</sup> a of childis gamen, as ȝif þei weren foolis, and after þis comen to mannis witt þat holdiþ al þis foli. But þei ȝyven hem to justing and sheeting<sup>4</sup> and wrastling<sup>b</sup>; and þes suen ofte more foli þan doiþ

<sup>1</sup> So E; *shulden*, A.<sup>2</sup> *have*, E.<sup>3</sup> *japing*, E.<sup>4</sup> *scbeting*, E.

\* *ȝaping* or *japing* is trickery. Chaucer says of his Pardoner (Prologue to Canterbury Tales),—

'And thus with fained flattering and japes,  
He made the persone and the peple his apes.'

And we read in Gower (*Confessio Amantis*, lib. II),—

'This Geta forth bejaped went,  
And yet he wust he what it ment.'

<sup>b</sup> *to justing, sheeting, and wrastling*; in other words, to the favourite pastimes of the upper, the middle, and the lower class respectively.

With regard to the first, it must be remembered that our author wrote but a few years after the death of Edward III, the reviver of the Round Table, and the founder of the order of the Garter, whose reign was the culminating period in England of the spirit of Chivalry. Justing was then, and continued to be for a century and a half afterwards, the favourite amusement of persons of condition. It was usually practised with 'arms of courtesy,'

þe firste elde. In þe þridde eelde men have fleishli willis, and wille of worldli goodis to maynteyne hem longe. And þis lastiþ in worldeli men wel nyȝ to her eende. But sum men, after þes þre, have good wille or yvel, as men þat delitin hem in riȝtwisnes of God, or ellis in þe fendis synne, þat ben calendis<sup>1</sup> to þe toþer liif. And peril in þis liif is moost for to flee. For whanne fleishli likyngis passen from a man, ȝif he shulde be dampned, he haþ pride, envie, and ire, and coveitise of worldli goodis lastiþ ever wiþ him; and þis he beriþ in his soule aftir þat he be deed. And men of sich unclene hert ben leed<sup>2</sup> in to tempting. And liif þat men shulde lede evere is begunne in þis eelde; and þus it were ful nedeful to lyve wel in þis laste elde. For as worldli lustis ben fer from aungels, so worldli desiris ben passid fro þis eelde. Lovyng of clenenesse and riȝtwisnesse for þis tyme shulde occupie mannis soule, as it doiþ in hevene: for ellis he haþ a fendis liif, and occupieþ him in þes foure,—in pride, envie, and ire, and coveitise, þat never is fillid.

þe sevenþe vertue þat man haþ is for to make pees, or to procure pees, or ellis to preie for pees, or to lyve riȝtli for to procure men<sup>3</sup> to pees. And of þes *pesible men*, Crist seiþ, *þat þei ben blessid, for þei shal be clepid aftir Goddis children*. And meede of alle þes sixe is markid for to come, for eende of hem

The seventh.

<sup>1</sup> *kalendis*, E.

<sup>2</sup> *led*, E.

<sup>3</sup> *riȝtwisly for to stire men*, E.

that is, headless lances, and blunted swords without points; but sometimes, as when certain knights undertook to maintain the honour of their country in a foreign land, weapons à l'outrance were, though under regulations, employed, and most often with deadly effect. Chaucer gives us the whole order and regulation of a tournament in the Knight's Tale. (See Scott's *Essay on Chivalry* among his *Miscellaneous Prose Works*.)

Shooting with the bow was an out-door occupation which was well-nigh universal among the middle and lower classes in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. The men exercised in shooting regularly, to keep their hands in as archers.

Even ladies, as the illustrations of old MSS. shew, were much given to the use of the bow, both with the sharp-headed arrow in the pursuit of deer, and with the blunt arrow in bird-bolting.

Wrestling was a popular amusement with our forefathers as far back as the Saxon times; in the Middle Ages it is mentioned along with bull and bear baiting, putting the stone, throwing the bar, football, and the like. It does not appear that they were sufficiently brutalized at that time to enjoy boxing. See Wright's *Domestic Manners in England during the Middle Ages*.

alle is first in þe toþer world. But it is ful myche to be clepid þanne Goddis child; for þanne a man is eire of Crist, and so confermed in blis; for alle þes vertues ben not fulle, but 3if blisse sue hem.

The eighth.

Þe eiztþe word and þe laste þat Crist spekiþ in þis mater is seid, *þat þei ben blessid þat suffren pursuyng for riȝt, for hern is þe rewme of hevene*, as it is of þe first men. For he þat is pursuid to deþ for defence of riȝtwisnesse haþ here sum sizt of blis, and sum telling of sikirnesse, and so he haþ here in eernes<sup>1</sup> oþer wise blisse þan þes oþer; and as men seien comunli, þei passen to hevene wiþouten peyne. And, for þis is a nedeful vertue, and more hard þan þes oþer, þefore mede of þis vertue is wel þus joyned to it. For certis, 3if men wolden stifli stonde, and many togidir, for riȝtwisnesse, þe fendis part shulde be ful feble, and pees, wiþ welfare, shulde men have. And so it were ful nedeful to moove many to þis vertue. And siþ wanting of þis vertue bringiþ in contrarie synne, drede of cowardise hereof shulde meeve men to þis vertue. For many ben traitours to God, and proctours to þe fend,—ouþer privy or apert,—þat wolen not stonde for Goddis lawe. And þus Crist applieþ his wordis speciali to hise apostlis, and techiþ hem how pursuyng þat men dreden here moost, shulde be comfortable to hem þat stonden for Cristis lawe. *Blessid shal 3e be, seiþ Crist, whanne þat men shal curse 3ou, and whanne men shal pursue 3ou, and shal sei al maner of yvel azens 3ou; lyng, for me. Joie 3ee and be glad; for 3our hire is mouche in hevenes.* And þis word confortiþ men to stonde azens Anticrist, for he wole faste curse men and pursue hem as etekis; but he is cursid þat leueþ herfore to telle Goddis lawe and his wille.

<sup>1</sup> *ernes*, E.

